



MARTIAL WORLD

BOOK 11

Cocooned Cow

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Martial World

(Wuji Tianxia)

(武极天下)

by

Cocooned Cow

(蚕茧里的牛)

Synopsis

In the Realm of the Gods, countless legends fought over a mysterious cube. However, after the battle it disappeared into the void. Lin Ming stumbles upon this mysterious cube and begins his journey to become the hero of the land.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Hyorinmaru @ [Wuxia World](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1001 – Smelting Trial Rewards

The truth was that comprehending the Blue Lotus Domain wasn't much at all.

When a heroic young elite comprehended the third level Concept of Fire Laws to the peak, and also had great potential and a great destiny upon them, anyone could successfully form the Blue Lotus Domain. As long as they didn't perish on their road, their future achievements wouldn't be low. Thus, the Blue Lotus Domain was considered a type of phenomenon that symbolized someone with the life of an Emperor.

But as things stood, there were countless geniuses within the Ancient Phoenix Clan that had comprehended the Blue Lotus Domain. With a hundred billion clansmen, the base number was simply too great!

The Ruby Sovereign had guarded Fire Spirit Star for many years now and it was difficult to measure how many geniuses had comprehended the Blue Lotus Domain. But, no one had managed to comprehend the Blue Lotus Domain in such a way that left the Ruby Sovereign so surprised!

When Lin Ming first arrived at Fire Spirit Star, the Ruby Sovereign could see that Lin Ming had just traced upon the threshold of the Concept of Creation – he was far from reaching large success. It was inferior to a normal genius disciple, much less those like Yan Littlemoon or Huo Yanguang.

In ordinary circumstances, one had to slowly accumulate understandings for years or even decades to comprehend each level of the Fire Law. Lin Ming's perception was extremely high. With the support of Fire Spirit Star's atmosphere, it would already be good if he could comprehend the Blue Lotus Domain in a year and a half. But now, in his first trip into the Hells of Flame, he had undergone a single period of sudden enlightenment to walk the same distance that should have taken him a year and a half!

How could the Ruby Sovereign not be stupefied by this!

Moreover, the quality of the Blue Lotus Domain that Lin Ming condensed was at the peak of all peaks!

The Ruby Sovereign had impeccable judgement. He had seen countless talents from the Blue Lotus Domain over the years, but there were very few that could compare to Lin Ming's degree.

“The reason that the Blue Lotus Domain was condensed to such a degree should be because of Lin Ming's solid foundation. Once he entered sudden enlightenment, he managed to achieve this. Another reason should be because of that strange and mystical power within his body. After absorbing so many Law fragments, it would be strange if his Blue Lotus Domain didn't reach such a high caliber.”

The Ruby Sovereign thought out loud. A state of sudden enlightenment could only be found through a stroke of fate. A single period of sudden enlightenment that lasted for one or two quarter hours of time was the same as a long period of seclusion. But even so, for Lin Ming to produce such an impeccable Blue

Lotus Domain after a single period of sudden enlightenment, the Ruby Sovereign thought this was simply incredulous.

As the Ruby Sovereign was wrapped up in his imagination, he saw that Lin Ming's scorched skin, and even the parts where the oil was baked out of his body, began to peel away, revealing new and tender skin beneath. Some places were severely burned with even the meridians and flesh scorched black, but a blue-green energy wrapped around those wounds. The flesh underneath slowly wriggled, glowing with vitality as it regenerated at a speed visible to the eye.

This was the most important aspect of the Blue Lotus Domain – healing. Especially with the Heretical God Sprout supporting him, the healing effect of the Blue Lotus Domain was even better! At this time, within Lin Ming's dantian, the blue lotus-shaped leaf on the Heretical God Sprout began to glow with a misty light. The speed at which his wounds regenerated was actually faster than the healing from the Gate of Healing!

If the Blue Lotus Domain and the Gate of Healing combined together, the effects could be imagined!

Moreover, the Blue Lotus Domain could heal more than just Lin Ming's own injuries – it had a healing effect on anyone within the range of the domain. As long as Lin Ming desired it, he could expend some of his true essence to shroud others in his Blue Lotus Domain, saving them from injury and harm.

“His restorative ability is too extraordinary. However, that should also be because there is the Gate of Healing added on that

such an effect is produced. This boy's Blue Lotus Domain can likely even compare with Yan Littlemoon's! And Yan Littlemoon has already begun to touch upon the fourth level Concept of Fire. In this Fire Spirit Star's smelting trial, she should be able to comprehend the fourth level of the Fire Concepts. If Lin Ming wants to catch up to her, he'll have to work hard for it." The Ruby Sovereign thought out loud.

And at this time, Yan Littlemoon had already penetrated 23,000 miles deep into the Hells of Flame!

In fact, this wasn't Yan Littlemoon's limit. The only problem was that if she passed down to the deepest depths she could, she would only be able to stay at that limit for an incense stick of time before she would be forced back. If she stayed at the 23,000 mile area, she would be able to reluctantly absorb the fire origin energy here and comprehend the Fire Laws. In other words, this was the depth limit at which she could reasonably train.

Within the third level, the fire origin energy was no longer lifeless, but had a mind of its own.

Endless fire origin energy turned into vicious beasts and saint beasts that charged towards Yan Littlemoon. But at this time, Yan Littlemoon was similar to a descended goddess. Her entire body was wrapped in flaming golden light. This flaming golden light was similar to the golden light that appeared between Lin Ming's eyebrows when he burnt the blood of the Ancient Phoenix.

But when Lin Ming burnt the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, only a wisp of golden light shot out. As for Yan Littlemoon, her entire

body was shining in radiant glory!

When the beasts formed by fire origin energy met this golden light, they immediately melted away, turning into pure energy that was absorbed by Yan Littlemoon.

Compared to Lin Ming, Yan Littlemoon may not have entered the state of sudden enlightenment, but the speed at which she absorbed fire origin energy was a rate Lin Ming could not hold a candle to! The perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline was well known for its strength; how could it be empty talk?

If Lin Ming wanted to reach Yan Littlemoon's speed of absorption, he would have to use the Heretical God Sprout. But, the fire origin energy that the Heretical God Sprout absorbed wasn't his own.

In the 8000 Mile Black Swamp's Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion, The Heretical God Sprout had even absorbed the heavenly retribution divine thunder left behind by Empyrean Thunder Punishment. Afterwards when Lin Ming fought Yang Yun in the final battle, he has used that divine thunder to break through Yang Yun's master move and cause him to suffer deep losses. It had a miraculous effect on the battle. However, this heavenly retribution divine thunder was in the end not part of Lin Ming's own strength. Once he used it up it was impossible to use again.

Thus, the Heretical God Sprout was only a cultivation method in the end. No matter how powerful it was, it could only play a supporting role. It was impossible for him to rely on a single set of

cultivation methods to comprehend the source Laws of the universe.

Time passed minute by minute, second by second. Yan Littlemoon training at the 23,000 mile distance was still extremely difficult for her. She quickly reached her limit as fragrant sweat dripped down her body.

This training state continued for two incense sticks of time. Then, with an explosive shattering sound, Yan Littlemoon's protective true essence broke apart. Wild and turbulent fire energy crazily impacted towards her.

However, Yan Littlemoon did not need the Ruby Sovereign to rescue her. An invisible layer of energy emitted from the surface of her body, shielding her from the fire origin energy.

This was Yan Littlemoon's top grade saint artifact vestment. This vestment was also a peak top grade saint artifact; its value was no worse than the Phoenix Blood Spear. With this vestment on, any non-Ninefall Divine Sea master could forget about breaking through this defense. Even if Yan Littlemoon stood still and allowed others to freely strike her, they wouldn't be able to harm a single hair on her body, until both Yan Littlemoon and the top grade vestment's energy was depleted!

“Good, Littlemoon, you have done well!” Chu Redcloud freely sprinkled praise on Yan Littlemoon. “In this smelting trial of junior disciples, whether it was your foundation from the start or your training speed, you are far and ahead number one!”

Those with a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline had a monstrous compatibility with Fire Laws. If others took several years to comprehend the Fire Laws, it would only take Yan Littlemoon several months, if not less. Not just that, but Yan Littlemoon's perception was also exceedingly high. With these two conditions combined together, Chu Redcloud really couldn't imagine how anyone could surpass her in training speed. Moreover, Yan Littlemoon's starting point was higher than the others' to begin with. While most disciples were diligently training in the second level, Yan Littlemoon had already penetrated 23,000 miles deep into the Hells of Flame. If she didn't care about training, she could even reach a depth of 25,000 miles!

“Aunty, in another month I should be able to reach the 26,000 mile depth. After that is the 29,000 mile depth and then after that is the fourth level!

“Aunty, please rest assured. I will definitely win that Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron for you. That smelly nincompoop Lin Ming is still stuck in the second level! Hehe, I want to see just how he'll compete with me! With the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron's help, Aunty will easily break into the late Divine Lord realm, and you might even reach perfection of the late Divine Lord realm. There may even be a chance that you will break into the Holy Lord realm and truly control the Heavenly Dao!”

Yan Littlemoon blithely said. Even so, Chu Redcloud was all smiles as she listened.

“Haha, you little girl, you still want to trick me with your

flattery? Breaking through to the late Divine Lord realm isn't a problem, but reaching the peak late Divine Lord realm is extremely difficult. As for breaking past the Divine Lord realm, the chances of that are too faint for someone like me. There are countless Divine Lord realm powerhouses that cannot pass that moat. Compared to that mountain, even the ninth stage of Life Destruction seems weak.

“However, I am confident in you, Littlemoon. You really have potential to break through the limit of the Divine Lord realm! However, I have to remind you again, do not look down on that Lin Ming boy. If he was able to defeat the ninth stage Life Destruction Huo Yanguang with a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation, then he definitely has his strengths. Even if Lin Ming loses in this smelting trial to you, that may only be in the aspect of Fire Laws. In terms of comprehensive combat strength, I fear he is no weaker than you are! Do not forget, your cultivation is higher than his by a single stage of Life Destruction.”

“Of course I know that. Humph, you also shouldn't forget that I am younger than he is! The reason my cultivation is one stage of Life Destruction higher than his is all because of my diligent and torturous training. If I reached the seventh stage of Life Destruction two years faster than him, then I can reach the Divine Sea realm three years ahead of him. Then, when I reach Divine Transformation or the Divine Lord realm, my lead against him will become greater and greater! I do not believe that with my perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline my cultivation speed will be lower than his!

Yan Littlemoon pursed her lips. She acknowledged Lin Ming's talent in combat, but in terms of cultivation speed, there was no

way for Lin Ming to defeat her.

“Mm, what you said is right Littlemoon. Very well, this round of the Hells of Flame smelting trial will continue for a few more days. We should leave soon. That’s right, as a junior disciple there will be rewards for you breaking into the third level. Although they aren’t worthy of mentioning to you.”

“Rewards? What rewards?” As Yan Littlemoon heard the word ‘rewards’, she suddenly perked up.

“Haha, just a single drop of phoenix plume blood sent down from the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters. It is intended as a reward for those junior disciples with excellent results.”

“What! That’s too cheap!” Yan Littlemoon already had a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Why would she still care about a single drop of phoenix plume blood now?

“You certainly wouldn’t care about the rewards for entering the third level. But if a junior disciple can enter the fourth, fifth, or even sixth level, the rewards will become exponentially greater, to the point where it can make others go crazy. Not just you, but even I would be tempted by them. You must rush ahead with all your strength. The further you can go, the better your rewards will be. And after your first smelting trial is over, you will not be able to experience such treatment again!”

Chapter 1002 – Totem Tower

The Ancient Phoenix Clan placed the greatest importance upon the junior disciples. Only the junior disciples had the greatest potential. And to those disciples with great potential, the Ancient Phoenix Clan was willing to generously reward them.

No matter what hall the disciples came from, they would all be on even ground the first time they entered the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. If they were able to fully reveal their talent and potential, they would be able to enjoy great rewards from the Ancient Phoenix Clan. However, if they couldn't grasp this chance then they would be eliminated from consideration, and later they might not even earn the qualifications to participate in future Ancient Phoenix smelting trials.

And in truth, after a smelting trial was completed, 99% of the disciples would be eliminated. These people would mostly stop at the Divine Transformation realm, and they would reach the end of their lives after 20,000-30,000 years.

The first testing round of the 18 Hells of Flame only lasted for several days. On the last day, Lin Ming completely gathered his thoughts and began to rush as deep into the Hells of Flame as he could. Without using the Heretical God Force and without using the grandmist space, he wanted to see how many miles he could penetrate into the Hells of Flame.

Gathering his energy, Lin Ming rushed downwards at full speed.

15,000 miles...

16,000 miles...

The raging fire origin energy continually bombarded Lin Ming. However, all of this energy was blocked out by the Blue Lotus Domain. Once the devastating energy entered the Blue Lotus Domain, it was actually transformed into blue-green creation energy. This creation energy was astoundingly gentle as it entered his meridians and was easily absorbed by him.

Up to 18,000 miles, Lin Ming felt the entire process was extremely relaxed. But as he reached 19,000 miles, he suddenly felt a massive increase in pressure.

At this distance, the temperature would rise every 100 miles he traversed. The fire origin energy heavenly winds also became far more turbid and fierce. Lin Ming finally understood just what impact Yan Littlemoon had faced when she reached this distance.

“The perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline really does live up to its fame.” Lin Ming exclaimed. As he reached 19,800 miles, the Blue Lotus Domain that surrounded him was compressed by the fire origin energy to three inches away from his body, unable to expand any further out. His protective true essence had also reached its limit; this was the deepest that he could go.

Lin Ming wasn't in a hurry. There was a great deal of time until the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ended; he could still slowly catch up.

At this moment, a loud sound echoed throughout the entire 18 Hells of Flame. The first stage of the Hells of Flame smelting trial had ended. All disciples were required to leave the 18 Hells of Flame and enter the Totem Tower.

Fire Spirit Star's smelting trial was concentrated into two locations: one was the 18 Hells of Flame, and the other was the Totem Tower.

Only those disciples that reached at least 5000 miles deep into the 18 Flames of Hell had the qualifications to enter the Totem Tower.

The Totem Tower was a place used to store Ancient Phoenix Testaments, totem stones, and chaos stones. When Lin Ming was at Timeworn Phoenix City, the area where the totem stones were located was also similar.

But, the totem stones and chaos stones stored within Fire Spirit Star's Totem Tower were of much richer variety and quality. A massive number of totem stones here were left behind by past Patriarchs of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. There were even many complete sets. When these sets were combined, they produced magnificent vast images of mountains and rivers, the greatest of which was 100 feet wide and tall. In Timeworn Phoenix City, the largest totem stone Lin Ming saw was only a square foot – they were simply incomparable.

At this time, all disciples with the necessary qualifications had converged in front of the Totem Tower. Fire Spirit Star's Totem

Tower was a hundred miles tall. It was extremely grand and magnificent when compared to structures that mortals built, but compared to the 18 Hells of Flame, it wasn't anything at all.

“All young trial challengers, you have done well. You have managed to earn the qualifications to enter the Totem Tower. Before entering, I will first hand out rewards to the most outstanding disciples.”

In front of the many disciples, a black-robed messenger slowly floated down from the Totem Tower. He was the guardian of Fire Spirit Star. He was not an artifact spirit but a human, and also part of one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's most unique clans, the Justice Clan.

“Reward?”

As the junior disciples heard this, they were stunned. They hadn't known that there would also be rewards passed out in the 18 Hells of Flame.

“Hehe, of course the 18 Hells of Flame smelting trial has rewards. During every Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, headquarters will pass out immense rewards. Depending on how great your ability is, your rewards will be equally great! And of you all, the junior disciples who have come here for the first time have the most luxurious rewards. Starting from the third level, every 5000 miles you reach will have rewards. The further you go, the better the rewards. If you can rush to the fifth level or even the sixth level of the 18 Hells of Flame, the rewards will be rich enough to make any of you go crazy. There is Ancient Phoenix blood, top grade saint

artifacts, heavenly materials, Fire Elementals, source strength left behind by old Palace Masters before they underwent nirvana, Law fragments, and all sorts of other rewards of which you can choose depending on your strength!”

As the black-robed messenger spoke, many senior disciples who had already participated in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial several times revealed envious looks. This sort of treatment was only given to the junior disciples. As for the senior disciples who had come to Fire Spirit Star multiple times already, the degree of rewards they received were much smaller.

“Enough. I shall now start passing out rewards. First will be the senior disciples. White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun have entered the eleventh level of the Hells of Flame. They will each be rewarded one top grade saint artifact!”

To a disciple on the level of White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun, they definitely did not lack top grade saint artifacts. But, it wasn’t easy to obtain another top grade saint artifact. Among the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there wasn’t anybody that hated having too many top grade saint artifacts.

However, this revealed the differences between the degree of rewards between the junior disciples and the senior disciples. The senior disciples had to enter the eleventh level to be rewarded with a top grade saint artifact. They weren’t like the junior disciples who had greater rewards every 5000 miles.

“Next will be the junior disciples. The only one who obtained rewards is Yan Littlemoon. Yan Littlemoon has managed to reach

6000 miles deep into the third level of the Hells of Flame, and she has earned rewards for entering the third level as well as rewards for reaching another 5000 miles after that. The prize is a single drop of phoenix plume blood as well as a high-grade saint artifact. Of course, you may exchange them for treasures of equivalent value.”

After the black-robed messenger spoke, the disciples of the three branch palaces were shocked. Yan Littlemoon had actually managed to penetrate 6000 miles deep into the third level! They thought that Yan Littlemoon had just barely managed to enter the third level; they never imagined that she would continue so far. That sort of achievement was simply impossible to imagine!

“This Yan Littlemoon is too fierce! She reached 6000 miles deep into the third level! I just managed to enter the second level. This sort of difference is...”

A Praying Phoenix Palace disciple gulped. He was a disciple of Praying Phoenix Palace’s Phoenix Hall and was considered an outstanding individual amongst his peers. But when it came to Yan Littlemoon, it was simply impossible to compare them.

“No joke. The gap is just too great. This is the first time she entered the Hells of Flame, and yet besides her, no one else managed to obtain rewards. That includes even our Praying Phoenix Palace’s Xiao Whitesnow, Phoenix Cry Palace’s Lin Ming, and all the other Ninefall Divine Sea geniuses. No one among them was able to enter the third level; they were all defeated by Yan Littlemoon!”

“The perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline lives up to its name. There’s no need to mention Yan Littlemoon starting even farther than we did, but in the next two years of training, I fear her progress will soar into the heavens and the gap between us will only become greater!”

The disciples of the three branch palaces discussed amongst themselves. This was a result that they couldn’t even be envious of if they wanted to. Against Yan Littlemoon, all these disciples felt powerless and defeated, as if they would never be able to catch up to her.

And at this time, Yan Littlemoon had started to pout, not seeming happy at all. This was a result that was natural for her to obtain, but the rewards were simply too junky. She had no interest at all in a high-grade saint artifact and a drop of phoenix plume blood.

Near Yan Littlemoon, Chu Redcloud smiled and said, “There indeed aren’t many rewards in the Hells of Flame’s third level. This is because most disciples will be able to enter the third level after one year in the smelting trial and similarly obtain these rewards. Thus, it’s impossible to reward anything that’s too valuable. The difference will truly show up at the fourth and fifth levels.”

The Ancient Phoenix Clan’s reasoning was to focus resources on the most extraordinary of talents. This was the practice that nearly all sects followed. As they said, the best steel should be used on the sword’s edge.

Thus, upon reaching the fourth and fifth levels, the degree of rewards rose by a dramatic scale! Of course, amongst the junior disciples of the three branch palaces, only the rarest and most amazing of individuals could obtain them.

This was Yan Littlemoon's first time entering the Hells of Flame and she had gone 6000 miles deep into the third level. It was already a settled matter that she would enter the fourth and fifth levels. There might even be a faint hope that she could enter the sixth level!

“Alright. All disciples enter the Totem Tower and choose a totem stone that you wish to perceive through meditation! The totem stones of Totem Tower have been left behind by previous Great Elders and Patriarchs of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. They are divided into three ranks of mortal, earth, and heaven. There are also the most source chaos stones amongst them. Now, you shall enter according to the results you obtained in the first round of the Hells of Flame smelting trial. The first one to enter and choose will be Yan Littlemoon. Then, the disciples that entered the Hells of Flame's second level will choose, and finally the disciples that entered the Hells of Flame's first level will choose.”

The black-robed messenger led the many disciples into Totem Tower. As Lin Ming entered Totem Tower, he immediately felt an incomparably rich fire origin energy rush over him, leaving his heart racing.

The walls of Totem Tower were all a vivid fire red. They had been built with fire spirit jade, and the crystalline structures glowed with light. Every brick of the tower was sealed with an

array formation. They were able to automatically absorb fire origin energy from Fire Spirit Star. As one investigated them, they could feel endless flames burning within.

The areas deep within the Totem Tower were covered with layers of space mazes and time mazes. Each maze was connected with encrypted array formation portals, and many paths led to illusions. There were countless array formation traps that littered the tower. Without a guide, if one went just a single step off track then they would be lost forever within the mazes of space and time, unable to come out.

“What rich and pure fire origin energy. Even if I didn’t come to meditate on the totem stones, just training here would give me twice the results for half the effort.”

“Indeed. This Totem Tower is one of the most precious treasures of our three branch palaces. Although it isn’t a spirit artifact, its value is actually above that of an ordinary spirit artifact. In order to construct it, there were countless fire-attribute materials that were used in doing so.

As the junior disciples of the three branch palaces saw this scene within the Totem Tower, all of them sighed in praise. Just training in this place could be considered a lucky chance.

The black-robed messenger led the disciples through the layers of twisting space. Finally, they stopped in front of a magnificent main hall. He said, “We’ve arrived. You will now begin to choose which totem stone you wish to meditate on. The first one to choose will be Yan Littlemoon!”

Chapter 1003 – 100 Foot Royal Skyseal

The Totem Tower contained a collection of chaos stones and totem stones. The chaos stones were a kind of natural totem stone that were formed within the primordial chaos as the universe formed; they contained the inherent source Laws of the universe.

But the totem stones were carved by senior supreme elders who had spent a great deal of effort to do so. They contained the understandings that these supreme elders had towards the Great Dao Laws.

For the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the totem stones they meditated on only concerned the Fire Laws. The Fire Laws had a total of nine levels of Concepts. If one could understand these Concepts to the limit then they could even burn down the world.

Although the totem stones from Totem Tower were mostly carved by past Patriarchs, they were also separated into those that were better and those that were worse. The poorer totem stones might be casually carved by a Patriarch, and the Laws and Concepts they contained might be lacking. But for those excellent totem stones, they might be masterworks of an Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch that took painstaking effort and hundreds of years to complete. They might be several tens of feet or even a hundred feet large. That was a size and quality that ordinary totem stones could not compare with.

However, only one trial challenger could be meditating on a totem stone at any given time. This was because when a trial challenger was meditating on the totem stones, they had to fuse

their own senses into it and combine their consciousness with the Law fragments within. If two people were to simultaneously do this, they would interfere with each other and it would result in a great deal of wasted effort.

Thus, the priority in choosing a totem stone was extremely important. The higher quality totem stone someone could select, the more beneficial it would be for the speed of their cultivation.

“So it really is Yan Littlemoon who chooses first.”

“Of course. Priority in choosing totem stones only looks at talent and the results of the smelting trial. Yan Littlemoon has a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, and her results were much better than ours, so it’s only natural that she goes first. I bet that she will choose the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal; that is Totem Tower’s best totem stone!”

The so-called 100 Foot Royal Skyseal was a totem stone that the 18th Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan had carved after spending an entire 360 years to do so. The totem stone was 100 foot wide and tall, and it was an earth-shaking treasure of Fire Spirit Star’s Totem Tower! Although this was the first time that many disciples had attended this Fire Spirit Star smelting trial, they had already heard of the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. It was something that all of these disciples longed for in their dreams, even if they knew it was impossible for them to have the chance to perceive it.

“Yan Littlemoon, you have one hour to select either a totem stone or a chaos stone. You may start now.”

“No need, I will choose the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal!” Yan Littlemoon faintly smiled as she spoke clearly for all to hear. In fact, like some other disciples, she had already studied the data on the different totem stones that were at Totem Tower before she arrived here. Since she had already made her choice, there simply wasn’t any need for her to look. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal was at least 30% superior to the next best totem stone in terms of meditative effects. Since this was the case, why wouldn’t she choose it?

“She really chose the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal!”

“The best totem stone was chosen by Yan Littlemoon. Others can only choose the ones that haven’t been chosen. Compared to the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, the other heaven-step totem stones are far inferior. I wonder which ones Lin Ming and Xiao Whitesnow will choose. Lin Ming has yet again been cast away by Yan Littlemoon!”

“Yeah, this Yan Littlemoon’s foundation was originally much more solid than Lin Ming’s, moreover, she also has the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. It was impossible for him to compare to her in training speed, but now she even chose the best totem stone, the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. How could Lin Ming possibly have any hope of winning?”

“There wasn’t any hope to begin with. This is how the Ancient Phoenix Clan raises talents; the best resources are focused on the best disciples. If they can manage to raise someone on the level of a Palace Master, that is far more valuable than raising 100 ordinary Divine Lord realm powerhouses! Thus in every Ancient Phoenix

smelting trial, they only have a single totem stone that rises above all others. The rest are simply too inferior! Now Yan Littlemoon is the greatest focus target for raising in this smelting trial, and we are only collateral thoughts...” A disciple sighed. Even under the same circumstances he would be cast insurmountably away by Yan Littlemoon, let alone in a situation where their circumstances were so different.

“The 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, are you sure?” The black-robed messenger wasn’t surprised, but he asked again in accordance with tradition.

“I’m sure!” Yan Littlemoon said, glancing at Lin Ming with a bragging light in her eyes.

But Lin Ming didn’t look back at her. At this time, his head was lowered. It was unknown just what he was thinking.

“Alright. Then, Xiao Whitesnow, Lin Ming, you two may go and choose.” The black-robed messenger looked towards Lin Ming and Xiao Whitesnow.

Xiao Whitesnow was standing beside Lin Ming. He glanced at Lin Ming and wryly smiled, shaking his head. “Brother Lin, if you will. Let’s go and have a look. Although I don’t want to say it, I must admit that we might have lost in this round of the smelting trial. Among Totem Tower’s totem stones, besides the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, the other totem stones are far worse. Thus we have no need to struggle with each other; we can slowly choose whichever one we want.”

Xiao Whitesnow slowly said. Then, he walked towards the main hall. Lin Ming remained calm and followed him.

The ancient and solemn totem hall had a gilded bronze door directly in the front. When this door was opened, the aura of the Great Dao Laws came surging outwards!

Behind this door was a separate dimension of time and space. Within this dimension, there were countless large and small totem stones floating in the air, both close and far away. There were ones that were dozens of feet large and ones that were only a few feet small.

These totem stones were mostly carved from extremely exotic and bizarre materials. Some were made from an unknown type of spirit jade, filled with fire origin energy. Some were carved from metal that was rarely found between the heavens and earth, able to be forged into spirit artifacts. There were even some carved from divine stone, and this stone originally had the mysteries of the world represented in the stone's texture.

All kinds of rare materials were carved with the Great Dao Fire Laws. They resonated with each other, bathing and enhancing each other's light and beauty, causing all who saw them to be shocked!

Normally, the larger a totem stone was, the more Laws it would contain. And in this separate dimension of space and time, the most obvious totem stone was a square one located in the dead

center of the space. It was 100 feet tall and wide, and it stood upright with sharp and defined corners. This was the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal!

The 100 Foot Royal Skyseal contained the complete first seven Concepts of the Fire Laws, part of the eighth level Concept, and even slightly traced upon the ninth level Concept.

This totem stone still wasn't able to completely manifest the eighth and ninth level Concepts. This was because the one who carved the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal hadn't been able to completely understand the mysteries of the last two Concepts.

Although the junior disciples present couldn't even perceive the fourth level Concept, that didn't mean it was completely impossible or useless. The effect of the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal was far superior to the other totem stones'. This was just like gathering spirit essence stones from different spirit essence stone mines. Although it was impossible to fully excavate these mines, digging through a top grade spirit essence stone mine was still much better than digging through an ordinary spirit essence stone mine.

Xiao Whitesnow looked at the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal floating in the air, his face filling with envy and desire. As for Lin Ming, he glanced at it once before no longer bothering with it. His eyes slowly swept over the totem stones left behind by these Ancient Phoenix Clan seniors. Finally, his gaze fell upon the chaos stones.

Chaos stones were totems naturally formed in the chaos of the forming universe. The natural evolution of source energy had been left behind in the traces of the chaos stones. They were considered

objects that directly peered into the source of the Great Dao.

Chaos stones carried with them the history from the formation of the universe. They were considered history books of the universe!

If one could fully comprehend these chaos stones, they would be able to see the history of the forming universe and the evolution of Laws. By completely comprehending these chaos stones, one could become someone with one of the deepest comprehensions of Laws in the entire Divine Realm!

However, it was far too difficult to meditate on these chaos stones. As natural objects, they hadn't been processed by human hands, and they remained prohibitively obscure and difficult to understand. In addition, countless billions of years had passed since the forming of the universe. Grandmist energy had more or less disappeared from the world, and there was nowhere to find it. Wasn't wanting to meditate on the source Laws of the forming universe easier said than done?

So, even though chaos stones were incomparably precious, the truth was that most chaos stones were only gathered for a collection display. Some Divine Realm supreme elders who encountered a bottleneck in their comprehension of Laws would meditate on these chaos stones, hoping to encounter some inspiration and be suddenly enlightened.

As for these disciples of lower boundaries, they would generally not choose to meditate on the chaos stones. As disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, they excelled and focused on Fire Laws. But, these chaos stones served as the basis for all Laws. They were

etched with the rules of revolution that preceded the five elements. If they tried to meditate on them, just how much would they actually be able to learn?

Thus for all these years, of the 12 chaos stones stored in Totem Tower, only those Divine Transformation realm disciples like White Daohong would choose to occasionally look over these chaos stones. However, it was only looking at them for a month or two; they would never choose to do so for an extended period of time.

Xiao Whitesnow followed Lin Ming's line of sight and was startled for a moment. He was a bit surprised as he asked, "Brother Lin, you aren't interested in these chaos stones, right? These things might be known as objects that contain the source of the Great Dao, but the truth is that it is just far too difficult to comprehend them. To the likes of us, their level is far too high. There were genius disciples that tried to perceive something about them before, but in the end they all failed."

As the saying said, the Great Dao was the simplest concept. But in truth, all the complex variations and diverse wonders of the universe could be reduced to the simplest attributes. Those things that seemed simple might not be simple at all.

"I'm only taking a casual look. I thank Brother Xiao for the advice." Lin Ming's impression towards Xiao Whitesnow was quite good. This person was relatively low key, and the advice he gave him came from a good heart with no dark intentions behind them.

Lin Ming slowly approached the chaos stones. Totem Tower had a total of 12 chaos stones, the largest of which were ten feet in size.

Compared to the countless shining totem stones that were carved from all sorts of heavenly materials, these chaos stones seemed very plain. One could even call them rough!

The ash gray chaos stones looked like ordinary stone. The depths of the patterns and lines within the chaos stones varied; there were even some parts with deep cracks. They looked as if they had been slowly eroded by wind and frost over a long time.

But in these rough traces, Lin Ming could actually feel an inexplicably familiar feeling. This feeling seemed to be close to him, as if it were a profound and majestic memory that had been engraved into his very bones.

“This is grandmist aura...”

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. He slowly closed his eyes and entered an ethereal state...

Chapter 1004 – The 12 Chaos Stones

Lin Ming immersed himself within the chaos stones. He soon entered a selfless state and lost sense of everything around him.

Xiao Whitesnow was a bit stunned as he watched from the side. They were only given several quarter hours to choose a totem stone and they had to make their choice within that time. There were still many others waiting outside. If everyone took too long then it would take several days and nights for all the geniuses of the three branch palaces to choose their totem stones.

“Brother Lin, you really aren’t planning to choose the chaos stones right? We don’t have much time left.” Xiao Whitesnow tentatively asked. But, Lin Ming didn’t reply. His consciousness was still immersed within the chaos stones, feeling the boundless and ancient grandmist atmosphere coming from them.

This was the taste of the years. Carved at the forming of the universe, these chaos stones had accumulated the infinite years of time. They were objects that had existed longer than anything else in the world. Every trace upon the chaos stone told a story about the myriad changes of the universe. They recorded the birth of countless celestial bodies, their glory, their radiance, and even their death!

At the same time, this chaos stone also carried it with the aura of endless space. This universe was truly infinite. 3000 boundless worlds and the 3000 Great Worlds of the Divine Realm did not account for the entirety of the universe! Within this world, there were countless mystic realms and too many unknown enigmas and

riddles that were waiting for mankind to explore. A simple Law could evolve into countless mysterious and limitless incomprehensible phenomena. Even an Empyrean would find it difficult to fully understand all the Laws of the universe.

The universe with its three axis held infinite space. From ancient times until now, countless eons had passed and would continue to pass without end! The largest of the 12 chaos stones was a 10 foot square; it was only 1% of the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal's size. But, the mysteries contained within were everlasting and interminable. It was not what the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal could ever compare with.

That wasn't to say the one who carved the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal was insufficient in boundary. In truth, the weakest of the Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarchs was a powerful Holy Lord level existence, and the most outstanding amongst them neared becoming a World King. The one who carved the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal was an existence that approached a World King. This existence had used up 360 years of time to carve the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. From this alone, the number of mysteries within could be imagined!

But, no matter how powerful that Patriarch had been, he was still a martial artist and he still wasn't able to compare with an Empyrean. And an Empyrean couldn't compare with the universe! This was because what an Empyrean perceived was the Laws of the universe!

The chaos stones were carved by the universe itself! How could a totem stone carved by human hands be comparable to a chaos stone carved from the universe?

Thus, this 10 foot square chaos stone recorded the most source Laws of the universe. In just Fire Laws alone, it was far more profound and mystical than the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal!

The reason that Lin Ming could faintly feel the endless mysteries within these chaos stones was not because his perception was high. In fact, there were countless geniuses within the Divine Realm with abnormally high perception, but there had never been a heroic young elite among them who could sense the mysteries within the chaos stones during the Life Destruction realm.

The only reason Lin Ming was able to accomplish this was that he had once entered into the Road of Emperor's grandmist space. The opportunities he gained there were the equivalent of inheriting a portion of Empyrean Primordius' inheritance!

Lin Ming looked over every chaos stone. His soul had entered into a deep empty state.

And in Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the nearly gold level battle spirit trembled. A hazy mist condensed around the spear-shaped battle spirit. That was the elementary form of grandmist energy!

Grandmist was primal chaos. When the universe was forming, before the heavens and earth had been formed, the universe had been filled with energy and impossibly dense matter. This was grandmist energy.

A wisp of grandmist energy could crush a star!

This was because if a star was condensed and turned into grandmist energy, it would only be the size of a walnut!

Lin Ming could feel that this chaos stone seemed to form a resonance with the grandmist battle spirit in his spiritual sea. This sort of resonance allowed him to swim within the mysteries of Laws within the chaos stone, deriving sustenance from within.

“This is the feeling of yin yang!”

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. The first chaos stone only contained two black and white stripes. These stripes curved and twisted together like twin snakes. When he first looked at them, he couldn’t identify what these abstract lines were. But, as he sank his consciousness into them, he felt as if he could actually make out the sundering of the universe when yin and yang both split apart and formed.

“Atlas World’s chaos stone number one is the Yin Yang Chaos Stone. It contains the Yin Yang Laws...” The name of this chaos stone emerged from within Lin Ming’s mind. These 12 chaos stones did not have illustrious names like those totem stones left behind by supreme elders of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. For instance, the Extreme Dao Tablet, 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, and all the others with their wonderful names.

These chaos stones were only numbered from one to 12, with their respective domains announcing them.

“Chaos stone number two, the Endless Years Chaos Stone, it

contains the power of endless years!”

Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred. Chaos stone number two recorded the passing of time. On the surface of this chaos stone was inscribed the power of time. Compared to the traces on the Yin Yang Chaos Stone, the traces formed from the power of time were even more ethereal and faint. As he casually swept over them, the phantom images were produced in his spiritual sea. But as he investigated more carefully, they became far more faint until they finally vanished from his mind without a trace of having ever been there! This was as uncertain as time itself. Although the past couldn’t be altered, it could still be buried in the sands of history. If one tried to look, they could see that the future was misty and uncertain, hidden behind infinite variables. These variables were endless, to a degree that even an Empyrean could not solve them!

“Chaos stone number three, Universe Space Chaos Stone. This chaos stone contains the boundlessness of space!”

The element that paired with time was space. Lin Ming’s grandmist space was able to annihilate all Laws, but its effects against the Laws of Space and Time were actually greatly weakened. Time and Space were known as the most mysterious Laws for a reason. Before the universe had formed, time and space were compressed within the grandmist. At this time, the universe didn’t have the Concepts of Space and Time. But after the universe formed, before yin and yang separated, before the world was sundered open, and before the five elements were created, space and time had already existed. They had existed before the yin yang primal chaos!

On the Universe Space Chaos Stone, the traces were shallow and deep, long and short. Some lines diverged to the limit of the chaos stone, as if their end lay somewhere in the endless void. Some lines ended and collapsed within a single spot, as if the space inherent had returned to a point of singularity. The many mysteries were impossible to clearly see.

“Chaos stone number four, the Five Elements Chaos Stone, it contains the power of the five elements!”

The power of the five elements was birthed at the final stage of the creation of the universe. When the universe evolved, first there was chaos, then there was space and time, then there was yin yang, then there were five elements, and finally celestial bodies were formed. On these celestial bodies, all forms of life were bred.

Although the Five Element Laws didn't appear to point towards the source of the universe like yin yang and chaos, this didn't mean that they weren't mysterious. In fact, things that came later may have been even more complex.

The power of the five elements; metal, wood, water, fire, earth, as well as wind and thunder that were derived from them. Every single one of them was the most direct application of energy. In terms of speed, in terms of destructive power, in terms of regeneration, or even in terms of defense, each of these elements had reached the peak in some aspect. In just these extreme points, the power of the five elements was the most incomparably simple Laws of the Great Dao. In order for source Laws to be converted into striking power, they first had to pass through the power of the five elements.

“Chaos stone number five, the Star Chaos Stone, it contains the power of the stars...”

Lin Ming continued to look over the chaos stones. Stars existed all over the universe. The power of stars was the power to annihilate all matter. Although they seemed weak and not dangerous, that was because they were too far away. If one approached them, the power was incomparable! Not just that, the stars contained the winding path of destiny. This was because the movement of and rotation of stars contained the Heavenly Dao. By understanding their movements and positions, one could learn to faintly see through the fog of the future.

“Sixth chaos stone, All Life Chaos Stone, it contains the Laws of Life...”

Lin Ming continued to look through all 12 chaos stones, immersing himself in their secrets until he finally woke up from his ethereal condition. As his consciousness perked up, he found that Xiao Whitesnow had already been calling out to him for a long time.

“Brother Lin, hello, can you hear me? It’s time for us to leave. Have you chosen a totem stone yet?”

As Lin Ming heard Xiao Whitesnow’s voice, a reflective and contemplative feeling washed over him. It was like being within the chaos stones was a completely different time and space.

Xiao Whitesnow saw Lin Ming's confused look and couldn't help but say, "Brother Lin, I want to advise you that while these chaos stones are profound and mysterious, they are simply not practical at all. We are mainly involved in perceiving the Concepts of Fire, and these chaos stones are far too large and expansive. If you want to meditate on them you will need to expend a great deal of effort to just understand a tiny bit. Even then, you might not be able to use these understandings on the Concept of Fire."

Xiao Whitesnow was aware that Lin Ming hadn't looked at any totem stones, thus he reminded Lin Ming out of kindness. He certainly didn't know of Lin Ming's luck or fortune. In his mind, although Lin Ming was indeed talented, that talent mostly manifested in his combat strength. As for his perception, that was relatively normal, otherwise how could his understanding of Fire Laws be so bad?

If Xiao Whitesnow had to be extremely blunt about this situation, then he would say that Lin Ming was a simple-minded man with a very strong body. Of course, Lin Ming being simple-minded was only in comparison to peak talents such as Yan Littlemoon. Even Yan Littlemoon wasn't able to perceive these chaos stones, much less Lin Ming.

He naturally wouldn't believe that Lin Ming would have a deep impression and understanding of these chaos stones. "Brother Lin, I know that you haven't chosen yet but our time limit is over and we must leave. How about this, if you trust me then I can recommend you a totem stone that will undoubtedly be good for you. What do you think?"

Among Totem Tower's totem stones, besides the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, the other heaven-step totem stones weren't too different in quality. Xiao Whitesnow had given a cursory glance over them just now and had settled on three or four of them. In any case, he was only able to choose one, so recommending one to Lin Ming as a good way to befriend him was fine also.

Lin Ming knew that Xiao Whitesnow was trying to be helpful. He smiled and said, "No need Brother Xiao, I've already chosen."

"Okay, then let's go." Xiao Whitesnow thought that Lin Ming might have already read up on these totem stones beforehand and had made his decision long ago. It didn't matter too much in any case.

He left Totem Tower with Lin Ming.

At this time, outside of Totem Tower, the disciples of the three branch palaces were waiting. The black-robed messenger stood high above a platform outside Totem Tower and patronizingly looked down at Lin Ming and Xiao Whitesnow.

"You two, have you made your choice?"

Chapter 1005 – Lin Ming's Choice

“We have already chosen, Lord Messenger.” Xiao Whitesnow said. He was satisfied with his own choice of totem stone. Although it was a bit regrettable that it couldn't compare with the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, it did match up with his Concepts more. It could be considered passable.

“Mm. Then speak out what you have chosen. Once you have made your choice you cannot change it, so think well over your decision.” The black-robed messenger said without expression.

“Reporting to Lord Messenger, this disciple has chosen the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet!” Xiao Whitesnow spoke out loud. The 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet was 90 feet high, so it seemed only 10 feet shorter than the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. But, the truth was that the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet was shaped like a rectangle and it was only 20 feet wide. Thus, it was less than a fifth of the size of the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal.

Even so, the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet originated from the ninth Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. This person was called Burning Heaven, and he had an extremely grand and famous history within the Ancient Phoenix Clan. When Lin Ming had gone to Timeworn Phoenix City, the Burning Heaven Totem Stone he meditated over also came from this person. At that time, Lin Ming didn't possess the ability to perceive the chaos stones, thus he stepped back and requested the next best totem stone – the Burning Heaven Totem Stone.

The 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet and the Burning Heaven

Totem Stone were both works created by Patriarch Burning Heaven. But, the Burning Heaven Totem Stone in Timeworn Phoenix City only recorded the most preliminary Concepts of the Fire Laws. As for the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Totem Stone, that was etched with the first eight level Concepts of the Fire Laws. The mysteries inherent within were far superior. Of course, this was to be expected. The 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet was 1800 times larger than Timeworn Phoenix City's Burning Heaven Totem Stone.

“Alright. The 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet.” The black-robed messenger recorded Xiao Whitesnow's choice on a jade slip and then turned to Lin Ming. “Lin Ming, what choice have you made?”

As the black-robed messenger asked this question, everyone's eyes turned to Lin Ming. They wanted to hear just what he chose. In their opinion, Lin Ming and Xiao Whitesnow had similar talent, but Lin Ming was more oriented towards actual combat, and Xiao Whitesnow was oriented towards comprehension of Laws. Originally, with Yan Littlemoon here, no one would have cared about Lin Ming so much. But now that Chu Redcloud and Sun Cyprestar had made a bet, that bet had pushed Lin Ming to the crest of the waves.

“Lin Ming is in a bind. The best 100 Foot Royal Skyseal was taken by Yan Littlemoon, anything he chooses will just be leftovers.”

“Yah, but that's just how things are. Who let Yan Littlemoon have the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline? I think that Lin Ming will choose the Extreme Dao Heaven Tablet. That stone tablet is 120 feet high and 15 feet wide; it's similar to the 90 Foot Burning

Heaven Tablet. Since it comes from Senior Xiao Daoji, it is also an extremely high quality work!”

“I think so too.”

Several disciples discussed amongst themselves. At this time, Lin Ming finally opened his mouth to speak. However, he didn’t state his choice directly. He first asked the black-robed messenger, “Lord Messenger, I have a question. If I choose those stone tablets that no one else has chosen, can I choose more than one?”

“Mm?”

Lin Ming’s suddenly question left all the martial artists present dumbfounded. What was the meaning of this? Lin Ming wanted to choose totem stones that no one else had chosen?

Fire Spirit Star’s Totem Tower had an incomparably rich collection of totem stones. There were far more totem stones than disciples that had come, this was without doubt. But, those totem stones that no one chose did not originate from Patriarchs of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, but from the hands of Elders.

A true Ancient Phoenix Clan Elder was on the same level as a branch palace’s Palace Master. It was more accurate to say that there were far more Elders than there were Palace Masters. This was because the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters had a great number of Merit Elders, Disciplinary Elders, Highest Elders, and all sorts of other Elders. When combined with the 72 Palace Masters, there were well over a hundred Elders.

One could look at the number to see what the difference in strength was between a Patriarch and an Elder. The Ancient Phoenix Clan only had a single Patriarch, but there were over a hundred Elders!

The Ancient Phoenix Clan had existed for countless tens of thousands of years. When all past and present Elders were added together, they had to be counted with 10,000 as the base unit!

Of these Elders, many would leave behind totem stones before they died. These totem stones certainly couldn't compare with one made by the Patriarch. Thus, most of them were used by martial artists of the lower realms, and only the highest quality ones would be kept in the Divine Realm Totem Towers.

Of course, the so-called highest quality totem stones still couldn't compete with those like the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Totem Stone.

So when Lin Ming suddenly asked this question, the black-robed messenger and the other disciples had all been extremely shocked.

“What's Lin Ming trying to do? Is he going to wait until all the other disciples have chosen before he chooses again?”

“How could that be? Do you think that he is an idiot? Even if 100 of those poor quality totem stones are combined, it still wouldn't match up to a single top quality totem stone!”

Lin Ming's words left all the disciples scratching their heads. Even Yan Littlemoon was puzzled as she stared at Lin Ming. "What sort of tricks is this fellow trying to play?"

The black-robed messenger was a bit startled as he looked at Lin Ming. Then he gently smiled and said with some interest, "If you choose the totem stones that no one else has chosen, then I will allow you to choose multiple!"

"Great! Thank you Lord Messenger for the help. This disciple has chosen four totem stones. They are respectively: Atlas World's chaos stone number one, the Yin Yang Chaos Stone! Atlas World's chaos stone number two, the Endless Years Chaos Stone! Atlas World's chaos stone number three, the Universe Space Chaos Stone! Atlas World's number chaos stone four, the Five Elements Chaos Stone!"

Lin Ming's clear voice spread throughout the entire audience. For a time, a pall of stunned silence fell over the entire crowd. All of the disciples were stunned silent. Lin Ming had listed four stone tablets in a single breath, and all of them were chaos stones!

The chaos stones had always been mostly ignored in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, and there were rarely any trial challengers who chose them. But, there was still the occasional person, and those people tended to be Divine Transformation realm powerhouses on the level of White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun. They had already meditated on the other totem stones many times, and it was difficult to make further breakthroughs. Only then would they choose a chaos stone in the hopes they would obtain some inspirations and make a breakthrough. But now, a junior disciple

had actually chosen the chaos stones, and moreover, he had also chosen four. This had simply never happened before.

“Just what is Lin Ming thinking? He actually chose four chaos stones, and listening to their names, Yin Yang Chaos Stone, Universe Space Chaos Stone, Endless Years Chaos Stone, and Five Elements Chaos Stone, only that last Five Elements Chaos Stone has anything to do with the Fire Laws. Is he planning on perceiving the Fire Laws through the Five Elements Chaos Stone?”

This was what all the martial artists present were thinking. Even White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun weren't too sure just what was happening. Yan Littlemoon's eyes were wide like plates; she didn't think Lin Ming would make this choice.

As for Xiao Whitesnow, who had entered Totem Tower with Lin Ming, he was looking at Lin Ming with a floored expression, as if he were trying to say, “Are you kidding me here?” However, even though he opened his mouth, no words came out. He had been left speechless. He had already mentioned this point to Lin Ming, and since this was the choice Lin Ming had made, he naturally couldn't say anything else.

Those that walked down the road of martial arts most respected and admired characters with great ambition and drive. The Laws within the chaos stones were undefined and mysterious, without any specific content. To make an analogy, the totem stones left behind by all the previous Patriarchs of the Ancient Phoenix Clan could be considered extremely rare and detailed martial arts manuscripts. But, the chaos stones represented a general outline of every single martial arts manuscript that existed in the world. If

one didn't even learn martial arts but wanted to see the general outline of everything, this sort of approach even had Sun Cyprestar frowning, and Sun Cyprestar was the one here with the most confidence in Lin Ming. He simply didn't understand Lin Ming's reasoning behind all this.

“Lin Ming, do you know what you are doing? Those chaos stones are normally for Divine Lord realm powerhouses to meditate on, and that is only occasionally too. We cultivate the Fire Laws, and the Laws within the chaos stones are simply too general and mysterious. Even if you meditate on them for a long time, you still won't be able to learn much from them; you will only be able to use them as a reference point. You are a first time rookie disciple so you have the advantage within Totem Tower. Didn't you notice that even White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun have lower priority of choice than you? This is your most precious opportunity. If you miss this chance then the next time you come here you won't be a rookie disciple anymore, and it will be more difficult to choose a totem stone that you like. I know that you don't feel too well about not being able to choose the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, but the Extreme Dao heaven Tablet is also a very good choice. Many disciples who want to meditate on that totem stone don't ever have the chance to do so.”

Sun Cyprestar sent Lin Ming a true essence sound transmission, sincerely worried for him.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and responded with a sound transmission, “I thank Senior Sun for the advice, but since I have made my choice I naturally have confidence in myself.”

“Well... okay.” Sun Cyprestar thought of saying something else but shook his head. Thinking about it, up until now, everything Lin Ming did or said had a clear goal behind it. In the past when no one believed in him, he had still emerged victorious. Perhaps he also had a special reason this time too?

As Sun Cyprestar thought this, he no longer stopped Lin Ming. He only ordered him, “Put your best into it!”

“This disciples understands.”

In the square of Totem Tower, the black-robed messenger had waited for 20 breaths of time. He meaningfully gazed at Lin Ming and said, “Lin Ming, have you determined your choice? Once you’ve made it, you can no longer change it. Do not regret the decision you made!”

“This disciple has chosen.”

“Good, then I shall write them down!” The black-robed messenger flourished a brush and drew a seal mark on a jade slip. “The third group of people to enter the Totem Tower – White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun!”

Amongst talents of the same level, junior disciples went first. The black-robed messenger had used this method to tacitly signify that Lin Ming and Xiao Whitesnow were on the same level as White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun. But, Yan Littlemoon was yet another level higher than them.

White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun quickly flew into Totem Tower and made their choices.

After them was Huo Yanguang. Huo Yanguang was the only Ninefall Life Destruction martial artist of Phoenix Cry Palace, moreover he was also a four layered heavens Ninefall martial artist. In Phoenix City Palace, he was second only to Lin Ming within the group of junior disciples. All other geniuses that were superior to Huo Yanguang were no longer junior disciples.

After Huo Yanguang, the Ninefall Divine Transformation senior disciples went to choose.

Everyone slowly filtered in and out. It took a full day and night for the disciples of the three branch palaces to complete their choices.

“Very well. All disciples have finished their choices. From this point on, you may freely cultivate. Whether it is the 18 Hells of Flame or the Totem Tower, you may do as you wish. Two years from now we shall test your final results. This smelting trial is divided into two aspects. One is the 18 Hells of Flame that tests your comprehension of Laws and Concepts and the other is the Illusionary God Combat Array that tests your actual combat prowess! Those with extraordinary trial results may obtain rewards passed down from the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters! Fire Elementals, top grade pills, top grade saint artifacts, phoenix heart blood, phoenix plume blood, and even phoenix coronet blood and transcendent saint artifacts! As long as you have the ability, everything is yours for the taking!

“Now, you are all dismissed! Cultivate as you will!”

Chapter 1006 – Lotus Blooming Step By Step

“Freely cultivate? That’s great, too great! I just chose a totem stone so I’ll have to focus on perceiving it. If I can close up for a year or so before returning to the 18 Hells of Flame, I’ll be able to go even deeper. And the deeper I go, the more benefits there will be!”

“That’s right. When I was at Praying Phoenix Palace I had the chance to meditate over a totem stone, but that was only for several days. These totem stones are also of a much greater quality than the ones I saw.”

As the black-robed messenger said that they could freely cultivate as they wished and decide how to arrange their own time, all of the junior disciples were extremely excited.

“Close up for a year? Yah, keep on dreaming. The reason that the totem stones allow people to perceive the Laws within them is that they have Law fragments condensed within them. These totem stones are in essence a sort of array formation. Only someone with an extremely deep understanding of Laws can carve them down and gather the truths of the Heavenly Dao within them. As long as you touch your mind to them, you will be able to slowly absorb the Law fragments within. But as that continues as, less and less Law fragments are there, the effect will become increasingly worse. Once there are about 70% of the Law fragments left, you normally have to stop training and let the totem stones recover and gather more Law fragments before you can use them again. Otherwise, why did you think that only a single disciple was able to choose a stone tablet and no one else was able to choose it afterwards?”

Some Divine Transformation realm disciples said that had already participated in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial several times. They immediately shattered the dreams of the junior disciples.

This was also the first time the junior disciples had heard of such a thing. But as they thought of it, it made much more sense. No wonder the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial was only held once every four years; this was obviously to give the totem stones time to recondense Law fragments. Otherwise, the Ancient Phoenix Clan would have made full use of their resources and sent new disciples to Fire Spirit Star every year.

As for the reason a totem stone was assigned to only one person, this was because the Law fragments within them were difficult to divide. If it wasn't for this, several people could meditate on a stone tablet together, or they could even take turns.

“Let's meditate on the totem stones first and absorb some of the Law fragments before we head back to the 18 Hells of Flame.”

A disciple suggested.

“Mm, that sounds like a good idea. We can go to the 18 Hells of Flame whenever we want, but the Law fragments within the totem stones are limited. We have to make full use of them.”

The disciples all flew towards Totem Tower, Lin Ming included.

In Totem Tower, all the totem stones were already separated and sealed in different spaces by the black-robed messenger according to what he wrote down on the jade slip. Every space corresponded to a totem stone, each with a disciple assigned to it.

Of course, Lin Ming was an exception. The space he trained at had four chaos stones. They were the Yin Yang Chaos Stone, the Universe Space Chaos Stone, the Endless Years Chaos Stone, and the Five Elements Chaos Stone!

The four chaos stones floated in the air, suspended around Lin Ming. His surroundings vaguely shined with a starry light. The place where Lin Ming stood now seemed to be somewhere in the empty boundless universe.

With no sound around him, and an endless stretch of space extending past what his eyes could see, it was extremely easy to adjust his mental state in this environment to one of peace and serenity. He was able to wholeheartedly invest his mind in meditating on the Laws.

Lin Ming separated out a part of his divine sense and touched it upon the Five Elements Chaos Stone.

The grandmist battle spirit faintly trembled within Lin Ming's spiritual sea. That boundless and simple aura that originated from the most ancient of times immediately reached into Lin Ming's mind.

When Lin Ming had been choosing the chaos stones, he already perceived them to a preliminary degree. He was able to vaguely feel the Concepts within the chaos stones, something that not even a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse could comprehend, and he had gained many benefits in the process.

However...

That still wasn't Lin Ming's limit!

If he weren't pressed for time and if he hadn't also had to worry about Xiao Whitesnow's presence, Lin Ming would have been able to perceive even more things.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and sunk his mind into the chaos stone. In his spiritual sea, the spear-shaped battle spirit began to shine out with a silver gray radiance.

A blood red lotus flower began blooming behind Lin Ming.

Prime Emperor martial intent – grandmist space!

Hu – !

In that moment, Lin Ming completely enveloped the four chaos stones around him with the grandmist space. A faint trace of elementary grandmist energy emerged, echoing through space. It was like a faint mist that slowly wrapped around the chaos stones.

Grandmist space was the chaotic state that existed before the forming of the universe. And these chaos stones were formed at the beginning of the universe and were carved with the revolution of the universe's source energy. Both of them complemented each other.

Although Lin Ming couldn't fully reproduce the chaos that existed before the universe formed, he could still rely on the grandmist space to stimulate the mysteries within the chaos stones. This was similar to waking up the ancient memories slumbering within them!

Underneath the quickening effect of the elementary grandmist energy, the traces upon the chaos stones seemed to come to life. Law fragments slowly overflowed from within them, falling into Lin Ming's mind and etching themselves on his consciousness.

The Law fragments contained within the chaos stones were far richer in number than those in the totem stones!

One reason was that the chaos stones were originally of a far greater quality than the totem stone tablets. Even the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal could not compare with the chaos stones.

Another reason was that very few martial artists chose the chaos stones, and it was difficult for them to perceive them. It was difficult for them to even understand the most minute knowledge from them. Even if a Divine Lord powerhouse were to meditate over them for a long time, they still wouldn't be able to perceive

many of the mysteries within. Thus, the Law fragments they absorbed were also extremely limited.

After accumulating for so many years, the Law fragments within each chaos stone were at a near-saturated state. Lin Ming was able to use the Primordius martial intent to freely extract them.

Currently Lin Ming's perception was at the peak of the highest echelons within all the geniuses of the Divine Realm. In addition, with his saint artifact bracer supporting him, Lin Ming's speed of understanding the Chaos Laws could be said to be to be astronomical.

Lin Ming unconsciously entered the ethereal intent state. He forgot the passage of time, forgot existence, and even forgot himself...

Cultivating passed as if time didn't exist. In the blink of an eye, three months had gone by.

In Fire Spirit Star, all the disciples were busily training. Some disciples even left Totem Tower just two months in. This was because there were insufficient Law fragments in the totem stones for them to continue perceiving them. If they continued then their speed would be extremely slow. Thus, they entered the 18 Hells of Flame and withstood the baptism of the power of fire there, slowly tempering their learnings.

Although training within the 18 Hells of Flame was worse than training within Totem Tower, it was still an important and

indispensable part. The 18 Hells of Flame focused on practicality while Totem Tower focused on theory. Both of them complemented each other.

On the third month, many talented disciples such as Huo Yanguang, Zhou Fei, and some of the more amazing senior disciples left Totem Tower and entered the 18 Hells of Flame.

This reflected the amount of benefits within the totem stones. The larger the totem stone, the more Law fragments that were condensed within. For instance, the Extreme Dao Heaven Tablet and the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet both had more Law fragments within them than the ordinary totem stones. This also meant that the time a martial artist could meditate over them for was longer.

This was the reason why Huo Yanguang, Zhou Fei, and other such talented disciples were able to last for three months before leaving.

They had all obtained great benefits from this smelting trial. On the same day that they left seclusion and entered the 18 Hells of Flame, they were actually able to dive 9900 miles deep into the second level, almost breaking into the third level! And before now, 5000 miles into the second level had been their limit.

However, before they could enjoy their happiness for too long, they came under tremendous attack. Praying Phoenix Palace's most talented junior disciple, Xiao Whitesnow, finally emerged from seclusion after three months and broke through to the third level of the Hells of Flame in a single attempt. He even made it

3000 miles into the third level and cultivated there for an entire day before he exhausted his true essence. This caused all the other junior disciples to feel weak and frustrated. They had thought they were able to catch up to him a little bit, but they didn't expect for the gap between them to grow even larger!

However, this couldn't be helped. Xiao Whitesnow was originally the number one talented junior disciple of Praying Phoenix Palace and the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet he chose was only inferior to the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. With such an advantage, how could the speed of his progress be compared with other disciples'?

After perceiving the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal for half a year, Yan Littlemoon finally left seclusion. At that time, she seemed to be an entirely different person. Her blue clothes fluttered in the wind, and with every step she took in the air, blue lotuses would bloom underneath her feet!

The blue lotuses were formed by pure fire origin energy. After these lifelike replicas appeared in the sky, they didn't fade away for a long time!

This was a type of phenomenon, one called Lotus Blooming Step by Step!

If a martial artist was able to comprehend the third level Concept of Fire, the Concept of Creation, to the peak of perfection, and if they could gather a great destiny onto themselves, then they would be able to comprehend the Blue Lotus Domain. But, Lotus Blooming Step by Step was actually on a higher level than the Blue Lotus Domain!

This meant that she had completely fused together with the fire origin energy around her. She had reached a boundary in which her body was able to move the Laws itself. Every movement she took, every word she said was able to resonate with the Laws of the world and the origin energy around her.

When Xiao Whitesnow first saw Yan Littlemoon again, he knew that the difference between them had grown even greater, to a point that it was impossible to ever overtake her. To a genius, the proud arrogance in their hearts was a vital aspect of themselves. They could lose everything else besides their arrogant nature, because if they did, they would also lose the courage to chase after others' footsteps.

But Xiao Whitesnow had no choice but to admit a truth, and that was that there was little hope that he would ever manage to surpass Yan Littlemoon's shadow.

The boundary of Lotus Blooming Step by Step was something that almost existed only in legends. Many of the present Elders, including Sun Cypressstar and Chu Redcloud, had never witnessed Lotus Blooming Step by Step before. But now this phenomenon had actually manifested within the body of a seventh stage Life Destruction young woman. This was simply unbelievable!

"I never thought this was possible... that I would be able to witness Lotus Blooming Step by Step! This young woman is simply a monster! If I had to lose to such a phenomenon then that could only be the fate given to me!"

Sun Cyprestar wryly shook his head and forcefully smiled. No matter how he calculated it, he never would have thought that Charming Phoenix Palace would actually produce such a monstrous talent with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. This sort of bloodline was not easily born even in the three great family clans.

Moreover, even those with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline might not be able to comprehend Lotus Blooming Step by Step!

Yan Littlemoon was originally beloved by the heavens to begin with. And with her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, it perfectly complemented her in perceiving the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. As long as she didn't perish in the future, she would become an existence no less than a Palace Master!

Chapter 1007 – Phoenix Blood Essence

As Chu Redcloud saw the current Yan Littlemoon, it was no longer possible for her to conceal her smile. Yan Littlemoon surpassed all her expectations. At this time, she no longer even cared about the bet; it was better to say that she assumed the bet was already won. Now, what she cared about was Yan Littlemoon's results in this smelting trial. With such talent, it was possible for Yan Littlemoon to become a pivotal figure within the Ancient Phoenix Clan. If so, then at that time she would be able to rely on her relationship with Yan Littlemoon to obtain great benefits for the Chu Family.

Compared to winning the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron, this was far more valuable.

After Yan Littlemoon left seclusion, she dove into the 18 Hells of Flame. In the first two levels, the fire origin energy heavenly winds breezed past her like gentle winds, unable to hinder her movement at all. She turned into a blue beam of light that shot 9000 miles deep into the third level. Here, her speed slowed down, but it was only by a little bit.

She rushed through to the fourth level without pause. In the fourth level, the fiery wind became even stronger and the temperature rose by another level. But even this was not able to stop her!

Fourth level 1000 miles, fourth level 2000 miles, fourth level 3000 miles...

Yan Littlemoon rushed all the way to 5000 miles into the fourth level before she stopped and began training. There, she trained for an entire day!

If Yan Littlemoon could stop 5000 miles into the fourth level to train, then that proved that distance wasn't her limit. She was likely capable of reaching 7000-8000 miles deep into the fourth level; that was almost at the fifth level!

In just half a year of practice, she was able to near the fifth level. This result was like a massive mountain that appeared in front of everyone else, making it so that no one could approach her.

"She's too strong... it's hard for anyone to summon the courage to chase her."

"Yeah, she has a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline and she even perceived the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. Compared to her, let alone us, even characters like Lin Ming and Xiao Whitesnow cannot compare to her. In fact, if Lin Ming and Xiao Whitesnow had come in past years, they would have already been considered peak talents. But now that this perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline Yan Littlemoon appeared during this smelting trial, both of them are destined to be overshadowed by her."

As Lin Ming was mentioned, everyone's thoughts changed. Lin Ming still hadn't emerged from Totem Tower. He had actually closed up for almost half a year without a peep coming from him.

In the fourth and fifth months, there were some lower ranking

disciples that had already entered Totem Tower for the second time to perceive the Fire Laws again. But Lin Ming still hadn't emerged.

“Now that you mention it, Lin Ming still hasn't come out of training. What's going on with him?”

Many disciples were confused. In their opinion, the longer someone stayed in, the more amazing their performance would be after coming out. But now Yan Littlemoon had already emerged and yet Lin Ming was still secluded within Totem Tower. This was an extremely mysterious situation.

“Maybe he didn't manage to perceive anything so he's too embarrassed to come out?”

“That might be true.”

“It might be another reason. Lin Ming chose four chaos stones to meditate on, but the power of the Laws within those chaos stones is very difficult to comprehend; even a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse would have to spend several years to do so. Even then they might not gain too much. Lin Ming has only been inside for five months. Do you think he really could have cleanly absorbed all the Law fragments in the chaos stones?”

“Lin Ming is indeed a chosen pride of heaven, especially in the aspect of combat strength. With a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation he was able to defeat a four layered heavens Ninefall martial artist. That isn't something that the average person could

hope to accomplish. But, the choice he made this time is really puzzling. For these last months, just how much could he have perceived? I feel like he's just wasting his time in there and wasting the chance that he's been given. A rookie disciple only gets one chance. The next time he comes, he won't be a rookie disciple, even if he isn't 33 years old yet."

"Who knows what these geniuses are thinking. It could be that Lin Ming did so because of the bet and because he needs to defeat Yan Littlemoon, thus he chose to take such a dangerous risk. The best 100 Foot Royal Skyseal was already taken by Yan Littlemoon, and she also has the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Her foundation is better than Lin Ming's. If he chose the Extreme Dao Heaven Tablet then he would certainly lose. Maybe that's why he took the chance and chose the chaos stones..."

"Choosing the chaos stones is also a losing method, and a much uglier way of losing." The disciple that was previously speaking was interrupted. Indeed, the Laws contained within the chaos stones were simply too general and vague. It was impossible for lower realm disciples to perceive anything from them, and even if they did, it might not help increase their understandings of the Fire Laws.

At this point, no one spoke about Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon's bet anymore. To them, victory and defeat had basically been decided. Now, the topic that people were discussing was what rewards Yan Littlemoon would obtain for entering 5000 miles deep into the fourth level of the Hells of Flame!

When Yan Littlemoon had entered 5000 miles into the third

level, she had obtained a drop of phoenix plume blood and a high-grade saint artifact. To Yan Littlemoon, these rewards weren't useful at all. They were simply garbage in her eyes.

However, this couldn't be helped. Because by the time the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ended, many people would be able to reach that depth and obtain similar rewards. If the rewards for such levels were too precious, then even the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters would find that hard to withstand.

But the fourth level was different. Starting from the fourth level, that was a domain that only peak talents could reach.

As for the fifth level, that was a point which even Xiao Whitesnow might not be able to achieve at the end of the smelting trial. In the past 100 years, only White Daohong, Lu Xiaoyun, and Praying Phoenix Palace's Fang Qiren had been able to reach the fifth level as rookie disciples. Fang Qiren had already reached 120 years of age and was no longer a disciple, instead becoming a Hall Protector.

As for the sixth level, that was a legend. Someone entering that level as a rookie disciple might not occur even every one or two thousand years.

From the fourth level upwards, the rewards became much richer.

If one could enter the fourth level, they would obtain one top grade saint artifact!

If one could reach 5000 miles into the fourth level, they could obtain a mortal-step Fire Elemental!

As for the fifth level and the legendary sixth level, the rewards were even more terrifying. One could obtain a full set of top grade saint artifacts, or perhaps even spirit artifacts! There were even bottles of phoenix plume blood, phoenix heart blood, phoenix marrow blood, and maybe even phoenix coronet blood!

In the legends, tens of thousands of years ago there was even a drop of phoenix blood essence given as a reward!

Blood essence could not be compared with ordinary phoenix blood. A phoenix was thousands of miles long, even 10,000 miles long. If its blood were to fall it could drown entire cities and cause great rivers to overflow!

If one could raise a phoenix, then it was possible to gather the extremely precious phoenix coronet blood every day, obtaining endless amounts of it.

But, phoenix blood essence was different. That was a phoenix's life blood essence. It was similar to a martial artist's blood essence. Once it was lost, it was overly difficult to restore!

Thus, the value of phoenix blood essence was impossible to measure!

Even if Yan Littlemoon was able to produce the phenomenon of

Lotus Blood Step by Step, if she wanted to produce an amazing heaven-shocking result that was able to qualify her for a drop of phoenix blood essence, that was far, far too difficult!

As the young disciples saw Yan Littlemoon receive the rewards from the black-robed messenger, many of them were filled with envy. For them, even by the time they left Fire Spirit Star it would still be impossible for them to set foot in the fourth floor.

“Incredible. Yan Littlemoon’s smelting trial might even alert the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters. Moreover, Yan Littlemoon has already reached the age of marriage. If she is willing to marry someone, then her wedding will become a grand and important event of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. I have no idea just how many handsome and heroic young elites will be chasing after her with dreams of marriage.”

“Yes, and I think that the Yan Family will marry Yan Littlemoon off to someone else who also has the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. That would be the best method of producing descendants that also have the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline.

In the Ancient Phoenix Clan, great importance was placed upon the idea of bloodlines. Bloodline was often considered more valuable than talent or strength.

This was because a strong martial artist might be strong only because of their destiny, and the children they had might not have the same strength they did. But, a martial artist with a pure and rich bloodline would definitely give birth to children with a similarly rich bloodline.

The richer the parents' bloodline was, the higher the chances that a child with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline would be produced.

Unfortunately, the richer a martial artist's Ancient Phoenix bloodline was, the more difficult it became for them to have children. Long ago, there had been a husband and wife that both had perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodlines and were also important figures of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. But, they still weren't able to produce a child even after 10,000 years of attempts.

The glory and dazzling radiance of Yan Littlemoon's Lotus Blooming Step by Step completely covered the halo of all other geniuses. Xiao Whitesnow, Lin Ming, and even the Divine Transformation realm disciples, White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun, were all cast away, only able to act as foils to her success.

"Littlemoon, this time headquarters have rewarded you with a top grade saint artifact as well as a mortal-step Fire Elemental. The Fire Elemental can wait until you break through Ninefall and undergo a baptism of the Heavenly Dao before you absorb it. It will help you increase your understandings of the Fire Laws. As for the top grade saint artifact, that will increase your combat strength. The more the better, but don't depend on them too much. In this smelting trial, the goal I've set for you is to become the top talent with the best results in the last 10,000 years! If that happens, I can represent Charming Phoenix Palace and apply for a drop of phoenix blood essence from the Ancient Phoenix Clan for you. That is the most vital goal!"

Chu Redcloud said after Yan Littlemoon received her rewards.

“I know Aunty. I will try my best.” After Yan Littlemoon comprehended the Lotus Blooming Step by Step phenomenon, she was also very excited and giddy. This was affirmation and recognition of her talent towards the Fire Laws. Since she had reached this step, she naturally had to try and earn the reputation of the top genius of Fire Spirit Star’s last 10,000 years. She wanted to see whether or not she could earn a drop of phoenix blood essence!

Yan Littlemoon already had the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Half of her blood was human and the other half was that of a phoenix. If her Ancient Phoenix bloodline became any richer, she would become a Fey.

It sounded as if Yan Littlemoon’s bloodline had reached the peak, but that was in fact untrue. The perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline was also divided into different grades. If two people had the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, but one had ordinary Ancient Phoenix blood and the other had phoenix plume blood, would they still be the same?

If she could use the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s special bloodline transplant technique, then she would be able to raise only the quality of her bloodline without affecting the quantity.

In that way, let alone a single drop of phoenix blood essence, Yan Littlemoon would be able to absorb a hundred drops of phoenix blood essence without it affecting her bloodline density.

As Yan Littlemoon, Xiao Whitesnow, and the others had all left seclusion and were dazzling others with their newfound abilities, deep within Totem Tower, Lin Ming's training had entered into a critical period.

At this time, Lin Ming was completely immersed within the grandmist space. A light fog floated around his body; this was the elementary form of grandmist energy.

Lin Ming fluttered in space, motionless. His breath and his heartbeat had both stopped as if he had died, a stone carving that remained unmoved for a trillion years...

Chapter 1008 – Gold Battle Spirit

The four chaos stones were boundless, solemn, and mysterious. They circled in the air around Lin Ming, slowly gushing out with vague Law runes that fused together with the faint traces of grandmist energy around. As they flowed through space, they seemed to come from the nothingness of ancient times, bringing with them the highest truths of the infinite Heavenly Dao, containing the burden of arcane Laws.

Chaos represented the limitless, and limitless represented the world before heaven, a reality without beginning nor end. No one could guess the meaning behind it. Besides the universe itself, no one was able to understand its cryptic mysteries.

First there was the infinite exhaustible void, then there was primal chaos, then there was yin yang energies, which later divided into the five elements, which grew into celestial bodies, and which finally gave birth to all life and creation.

From the hazy void, grandmist energy emerged, an energy that surpassed a star in weight. On these stars, countless complex life forms evolved, growing and changing. Just how many Laws of the Heavenly Dao were observed in these changes? Just how many truths of the Great Dao were contained within?

It was simply unimaginable!

And the most complicated truths also extended from the infinite arrangement of the simplest truths. Evolution, combination,

transformation, the process really made one praise the heavens!

Perhaps even for an Empyrean level character, in the face of all the Laws of the universe, the totality of their comprehensions were nothing more than a drop in the ocean, simply unworthy of mentioning!

And at this time, Lin Ming was actually unknowingly swimming in such an ocean. It was as if his soul had left his body and his mind was swimming through endless space.

Vaguely, through a dim haze, he could see the world filled with infinite chaos. This chaos energy was vast and endless. As it flooded the universe, it seemed great without limit, and yet it also seemed infinitesimally small, as if it could all be concentrated into a single spot without any volume at all.

This absurd illusion caused Lin Ming to feel flummoxed. But as he thought over it carefully, a feeling of awareness appeared in his mind. This was the state of chaos that the universe existed in before it was formed.

In chaos, there was neither space nor time, there was nothing to hear or anything to feel, so how could anything be called large or small?

Such a state continued for an unknown time. It seemed to last for an infinitely long period of time, a period of time where the entire evolution of the universe could be followed, where the universe was born and destroyed. It seemed to last for an infinitely short

period of time, a period of time so short that even an instant couldn't describe it, a period of time so short that it couldn't be described in words at all.

But whether it was a long time or a short time, in this moment, the chaotic state of the universe was torn apart!

A terrifyingly high temperature, a tyrannically crazy explosion!

In that moment, it was as if all the energy within the vast Divine Realm, all the energy throughout the infinite boundless universe was completely released at once!

Even an Empyrean or divine god wouldn't be able to resist one-billionth trillionth of this energy!

In this horrifying explosion, that grandmist energy that was heavier than the stars was actually sundered apart!

Infinite matter, infinite energy, all of it began within this terrifyingly high temperature. All of it was ejected out from this jumbled state of chaos.

As the temperature cooled down, a miraculous change began to occur.

As the chaotic state of the universe slowly disappeared, everything began to move and slowly evolve. This was the primal chaos!

Primal chaos was the source of change.

The primal chaos gave birth to the vigorous yang and the calm yin. Like this, the two yin and yang energies came into being.

In that blazingly high temperature, Lin Ming could see yin and yang energy being produced. They were originally a single pure energy. Yin energy and yang energy slowly evolved into the smallest particles, particles so small that they were a billion trillion times smaller than a speck of dust! Even if a Divine Lord powerhouse poured all of their supernatural power into their eyes, they still wouldn't be able to see them!

But Lin Ming, who was meditating on the chaos stones through his grandmist space, was actually able to see them.

He saw energy evolve into yin thunder and yang thunder. The particles that contained yin thunder and yang thunder were mutually attracted to each other, latching onto one another and maintaining a most delicate balance.

Since ancient times, yin and yang did not mix. If they collided they would annihilate each other. But, in these smallest particles, yin thunder actually revolved together with yang thunder. Both energies complemented each other, supporting and restraining the other.

After the yin and yang particles were split and paired together, they began to condense, combining and arranging themselves in a

series of patterns that exhibited countless properties and characteristics.

And these were the five elements.

The five elements were not solely five different types of matter. Rather, they were the ultimate embodiments of matter. With the five elements as a foundation, they could be combined into all of life and the infinite energies of the world.

These were the truths contained within the Heavenly Dao. The infinite nothing gave birth to primal chaos, primal chaos divided to yin and yang energies, yin and yang energies transformed into the five elements, and the five elements formed all life!

“So this is the primal chaos... it was originally yin and yang energy as well as the power of the five elements...”

Lin Ming took a deep breath, an unprecedented clarity appearing within his mind. The Heavenly Dao was incomparably abstract. The five elements could be partly understood, but as for what yin and yang were, and what primal chaos was, that was an extremely abstruse and philosophical idea. Even if a supreme elder tried to explain it, they would say that one could only understand it and not put it into words.

But today, Lin Ming was finally able to see that the primal chaos was the evolution of the limitless nothing, and that the primal chaos contained the most source Laws from the beginning of the universe. As for yin and yang, they were not abstract ideas, but

rather particles that truly existed as the tiniest manifestation of matter.

Yin and yang transforming into all of existence was not empty talk. Those infinitesimally tiny yin and yang particles truly existed in all things. This included the stars, this included mountains and rivers, seas and lakes, this included all the people of the world! Even Lin Ming was no exception. Even the chaos stones here were formed by yin and yang energies. In all matter, yin and yang energy existed equally. Otherwise, if they were in an imbalanced situation then they would produce thunder.

The divine thunder of fire, water, metal, earth, wood – that was how the five elements divine thunder was produced. Although thunder was tied to the five elements, it in truth didn't belong to the five elements. Rather, it was the evolution of the five elements.

In this short period, Lin Ming was enlightened to many truths. He personally saw the evolution of the universe. Watching this was the same as bearing witness to billions of years of the universe compressed into a short moment. This experience itself was a massive lucky chance. Even a Holy Lord or World King might not have the good fortune to experience it!

In that moment, Lin Ming's mind was filled with knowledge. He felt his spiritual sea suddenly tremble. A boundless aura surged into the world, accompanied with countless Law fragments that overflowed from the chaos stones and poured into Lin Ming's body.

These Law fragments were constantly absorbed by Lin Ming,

turning into mysterious runes within his body.

And in the skies above Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the silver gray grandmist battle spirit began to transform.

A faint trace of elementary grandmist energy gathered above the spear-shaped battle spirit. This made the battle spirit emit a brilliantly dazzling radiance. This radiance started silver but slowly began to mix with a golden light. As time passed, more and more golden light appeared, becoming brighter and more abundant until it completely engulfed the silver light!

In that moment, the spear-shaped battle spirit within Lin Ming's spiritual sea finally turned from silver to a sparkling gold. After a long period of accumulation, his battle spirit finally broke through the bottleneck of silver perfection and became a gold battle spirit!

A gold battle spirit could be projected into the world and form a space of will. At this step, a battle spirit would have a tremendous effect on one's combat strength!

A gold battle spirit was no longer just a supportive attack method but could also be used as a main attack method.

However, Lin Ming's gold battle spirit was different from that of an ordinary martial artist. It was not a brilliant shining gold, but had the dark color of grandmist energy fused into it.

It was a dark gold color!

The dark gold battle spirit contained an ancient and boundless aura; this was the atmosphere of chaos. Because Lin Ming had perceived the Chaos Laws, his grandmist battle spirit contained an aura of grandmist energy that was far more vivid than before.

Because of this special attribute, Lin Ming's battle spirit was only at the formative gold level, but it was actually far more powerful than a normal small success gold battle spirit!

A martial artist with a mere sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation actually had a battle spirit comparable to that of a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse. This accomplishment couldn't even be described with the words monstrous genius!

At this time, as Lin Ming recalled the jade slip that Fairy Feng had left behind to him, he felt as if all the truths within there were easily seen and understood!

Indeed, the Chaos Laws were not directly related to the Fire Laws. But, the Chaos Laws were all-encompassing. From time, space, yin and yang, the five elements, stars, life – all of it was included within the Chaos Laws. This was the universe originated from chaos, and all matter and energy within the world was part of the universe.

Chaos was the foundation of the universe. Once one comprehended it, that was the same as grasping the very nature of the universe!

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that from this moment on, Lin Ming had truly stepped into the divine pantheon of the universe's source Laws.

As for all other geniuses, they were kept outside of the door, waiting anxiously to catch the little fragments of Laws that overflowed from this divine pantheon of Laws. As they were happy and complacent with their own achievements, Lin Ming was actually swimming within that divine pantheon of Laws, starting his journey to comprehending the origin of the universe!

This was the very essence of disparity. This difference wouldn't manifest too obviously at the start, but as time passed, the distance between him and others would begin to become increasingly large. At that time, Lin Ming would truly step towards the peak of martial arts. As for other geniuses, including even the once in a millennium talent Yan Littlemoon, they would at most be guaranteed to become someone like a future Palace Master of one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's branch palaces. As for becoming an even higher Holy Lord and becoming a ruler of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, they would have to put forth enormous effort. In this process, if their mind, mentality, will, destiny, or strength ever fell just a single point short, they would fail!

Time slowly passed. Without knowing it, Lin Ming had already been in Totem Tower for an entire year. In this year, there were still many Law fragments within the chaos stones. What Lin Ming managed to absorb was only a very tiny portion of them. He lay suspended in the air as before, withstanding the baptism of Law fragments.

And outside of Totem Tower, many great changes were occurring once more.

White Daohong, Lu Xiaoyun, Yan Littlemoon, and Xiao Whitesnow had all completed their second period of seclusion in Totem Tower. Now, they were all training within the 18 Hells of Flame. They had finished two seclusion rounds within Totem Tower, but as for Lin Ming, he hadn't even finished his first.

After the second period of seclusion, the Divine Transformation realm disciples like White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun didn't have that great of a change. This was also to be expected. At their boundary, it would take them a very long time to perceive the Laws, and they had to do so in an ordered manner, step by step. Wanting to rapidly increase their understandings of the Laws in a year or two was actually impossible.

However, Yan Littlemoon and Xiao Whitesnow had made tremendous progress...

Chapter 1009 – Headquarters Envoy

After Xiao Whitesnow finished his second period of seclusion, he was finally able to enter the fourth level, and even made it an additional 2000 miles in. This result neared the distance Yan Littlemoon reached after she left her first period of seclusion.

But as for Yan Littlemoon herself, she was even more amazing. After she left her second period of seclusion, she broke through to the fifth level of the Hells of Flame and reached an additional 4000 miles in!

This depth already surpassed the distance that White Daohong reached in the 18 Hells of Flame smelting trial when he first arrived as a rookie disciple!

70-80 years ago, when White Daohong was also a junior disciple, he had passed through two years of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial and his final result was 3000 miles deep into the fifth level. This result had been surpassed by Yan Littlemoon in just a single year!

This result was enough to alarm the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters!

Whether it was the phenomenon of Lotus Blooming Step by Step, or reaching 4000 miles deep into the fifth level after just one year, both of these were results that stunned and amazed all. These results even surpassed those of the talented geniuses of the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters!

It could be said that as long as nothing happened to Yan Littlemoon, she would become a future Palace Master of one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's 72 branch palaces, controlling a territory of her own. That would be an extremely easy goal to accomplish. And if she trained well, there was even the faintest of hopes that she would become the next Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

That was a Holy Lord level character of the Divine Realm!

Such a talent was definitely worthy of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's attention. Moreover, some Elders from headquarters even had thoughts of having Yan Littlemoon marry into their family.

“What? Headquarters is sending some people here?”

Whether it was Sun Cyprestar, Chu Redcloud, or any of the disciples from the three branch palaces, all of them were surprised as they heard this news from Fire Spirit Star's black-robed guardian.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters was the center of power for the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan!

In the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters, there were all sorts of great Elders that wielded great amounts of power and authority. There were Disciplinary Elders, Merit Elders, Alchemy Elders, Refiner Elders, and all sorts of other Elders. These Elders were no weaker than the Palace Masters of the 72 branch palaces. There were even some Elders in important positions that were above the

Palace Masters in power and authority.

In addition, there were also the Highest Elders. These Highest Elders were all old monstrous fellows that no longer bothered with worldly affairs. They were old Patriarchs or Vice Patriarchs that had stepped back from their position and had wholeheartedly dedicated their efforts to cultivating. Thus they became Highest Elders.

Their cultivations had long ago reached an unimaginable boundary. There were those among them that had stepped back from the position of Patriarch tens of thousands of years ago. Their strength could be imagined!

Thus, let alone Chu Redcloud and Sun Cyprestar, even characters like Xiao Jiuyang and Fairy Feng had to be respectful to those from the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters. In the world of mortals, this was just like an imperial minister visiting a local magistrate!

“Headquarters have sent visitors. All disciples come out and greet them!”

The black-robed messenger issued out an order. For such a serious matter, besides the disciples that were still closed up in Totem Tower, all disciples were required to gather at the 18 Hells of Flame and wait for the review of the headquarters envoys. There were even some disciples still in Totem Tower that had ended their seclusion early to see the glory and majesty of these people from headquarters. After all, this was an extremely rare opportunity.

On this day, red clouds suddenly gathered above Fire Spirit Star. These red clouds surged out for thousands of miles with fiery heavenly winds howling beneath them. Then, ripples began to appear in space, and the sky itself seemed to be ripped apart. A massive golden crow head emerged from the space crack, slowly tearing it further and further apart. Space fluctuations rippled out for thousands of miles.

After the head emerged, a blazingly beautiful crown of feathers appeared, wrapped around a gorgeous neck. This bird had a back like a mountain range and its wingspan extended for hundreds of miles. As its wings unfurled, they were wide enough to blot out the skies and sharp like unrivalled divine weapons. Its claws gleamed with a cold light as if they were pillars that supported the heavens.

This was a massive golden crow with a body several hundred miles long. It had an appearance similar to that of a phoenix. This golden crow's Ancient Phoenix bloodline was undoubtedly extremely rich. In order to raise this sort of golden crow, the amount of resources necessary was mind-boggling!

As the great golden crow appeared, the endless fiery heavenly wind that blew around Fire Spirit Star suddenly stopped moving. In front of this golden crow, the fire origin energy of Fire Spirit Star was like soldiers bowing to a general, all of them surrendering of their own volition.

And above this golden crown was a male and female envoy. In addition, there were also a number of maids.

Of these two envoys, the man was extremely tall and he wore a red set of armor. His figure was commanding and grand. As for the female, she was more petite: her height only reached the man's chest. And, what was most peculiar was that she even had a long fox tail. It was clear that she was not a pure human.

This wasn't strange. There were many non-human races in the Divine Realm. For instance, Giant Demons, Imps, Fey, and so forth. Deep beyond the Divine Realm there were even worlds completely comprised of different races! But because they were so far away, they basically existed independently from the Divine Realm's 3000 Great Worlds. Although their scale was far from comparing with the Divine Realm's 3000 Great Worlds, their total size added together was still far larger than a single primary world of the Divine Realm.

This fox-tailed woman clearly had the bloodline of a monster beast within her. She also had a human bloodline and the Ancient Phoenix bloodline, for a total of three different kinds of bloodlines.

However this didn't matter at all. The Ancient Phoenix Clan considered anyone with the Ancient Phoenix Bloodline as one of their clansmen.

“Envoy Duke Golden Sword! Monarch Sweetfox! I never thought that those two would come!”

Chu Redcloud instantly recognized the two arrivals. These two were around 10,000 years old and were highly famous and prominent figures within the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters.

To be more specific, they were successors of important positions at headquarters. Without accident, Duke Golden Sword would become the next Disciplinary Elder, and Monarch Sweetfox would become the Internal Affairs Envoy.

Although the Internal Affairs Envoy wasn't an Elder, their power and influence actually exceeded most Elders'.

The position of Internal Affairs Envoy was the same as being the majordomo of the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan. They were responsible for arranging storage of resources and distributing them outwards. This was the equivalent of caring for the daily basic necessities for the 100 billion clansmen of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. The authority of such a position could be imagined!

Every single one of the 72 Palace Masters had to be extremely flattering and pleasant to the current and future Internal Affairs Envoy. Otherwise, if any one of them managed to offend the Internal Affairs Envoy, they would find the resources they were given to be reduced by 20-30%, and there would be nothing they could do to change that no matter how much they cried!

Before this, Phoenix Cry Palace's relationship with the Internal Affairs Envoy was far inferior to Charming Phoenix Palace's. That was the reason why Sun Cyprestar had been so ornery about the pentatic metal essence and had been severely swindled by Chu Redcloud. He had brooded over this for years.

As everyone saw Envoy Duke Golden Sword and Monarch

Sweetfox, Chu Redcloud, Sun Cypressstar, and the rest of the Elders of the three branch palaces came to respectfully welcome them, their faces all covered with smiles.

This was something they couldn't help. The difference in status was simply too great!

The statuses of the Disciplinary Elder and Internal Affairs Envoy were just above those of the 72 Palace Masters. As successors, their futures were already decided, and thus they had a status far higher than Palace Master candidates like Fairy Feng and Sage Jiuyang.

But as for Chu Redcloud and Sun Cypressstar, one was a Palace Elder of Charming Phoenix Palace and the other was even worse: he was only a Vice Hall Master of Phoenix Cry Palace's Phoenix Hall. Their status was not just different by a little bit, there was simply no comparing them.

The black-robed messenger in charge of Fire Spirit Star appeared undisturbed. He calmly said, "Golden Sword, Sweetfox, I never thought that this Fire Spirit Star smelting trial would be enough to bother the two of you."

"Hahaha, Blackwood, it's already been 3000 years since we last met, right? You came to Atlas World's Fire Spirit Star to cultivate, but our ambitions have always been different. Me and Sweetfox here have always wanted to serve the clan from within and hold positions. From Protectors, we will become Elders and continue trying to crawl upwards. If we can become Vice Patriarchs then even our laughs in our dreams will wake you up. As for you, you have wholeheartedly committed your life to cultivation. I'm afraid

that your cultivation has already surpassed ours now!” Duke Golden Sword laughed gaily as he saw the black-robed messenger.

With these words, Chu Redcloud, Sun Cypressstar, and the rest all felt their hearts jump. They looked at the black-robed messenger with incredulity in their eyes. They never imagined that such a low-key, ordinary-looking Fire Spirit Star guardian would actually have such a great background. Could this person have regarded Fire Spirit Star as a wonderful place to cultivate and thus applied to be the guardian of this place?

“Golden Sword, what sorts of jokes are you making now? I was originally inferior to the two of you to begin with, and during the selection process I was eliminated. I wasn’t able to compare to you, thus I didn’t receive the key focus from headquarters like you did. Your future is far better than mine. But, the truth is whether I chose to cultivate in seclusion here or chose to hold a position in the clan like you do, both of us are only trying to walk as far as we can on our road of martial arts. We are both travelling to the same goal with different roads.”

The black-robed messenger casually said.

Monarch Sweetfox brightly laughed and said, “Okay, okay, we can reminisce about the past some other time. We’ve come here for a reason, and that is to see that so-called Yan Littlemoon with her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. I heard that this young woman already comprehended the phenomenon of Lotus Blooming Step by Step. That would make her far stronger than I was in the past!”

Monarch Sweetfox had not comprehended Lotus Blooming Step

by Step and had only formed a perfect Blue Lotus Domain. This proved just how rare the Lotus Blooming Step by Step phenomenon was – it clearly deserved to be called a legend!

“This young girl Yan Littlemoon surprised me. She doesn’t come from the three great family clans and only has a background of Charming Phoenix Palace’s Yan Family. Her life experience can’t be regarded as too rich but she was still able to have such achievements. This is a result of her great destiny; it isn’t easy at all! We’ll have to have Fairy Chu explain this one to us.”

As Blackwood spoke, he turned to Chu Redcloud.

Chu Redcloud was usually a very intelligent and scheming person with multiple contingency plans. She had even managed to trick someone like Sun Cyprestar several times. But Facing Monarch Sweetfox, Duke Golden Sword, and this Blackwood, who seemed ordinary but was actually just as powerful as the two arriving envoys, she couldn’t help but be nervous!

It wasn’t a surprise for her to be nervous. In a mortal kingdom, this was just like a countryside magistrate suddenly learning that an imperial envoy was visiting to assess her work. How could she not be nervous about this? This was a question that concerned her future and whether or not Yan Littlemoon could obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence!

That was phoenix blood essence! Let alone her, even a great figure like Charming Phoenix Palace’s Palace Master couldn’t obtain it!

Phoenix blood essence was only bestowed upon the unparalleled greatest genius of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

And the Monarch Sweetfox in front of her was the future Internal Affairs Envoy. She had the authority to control almost all resources within the Ancient Phoenix Clan! Of course, that didn't mean she had the jurisdiction to assign something like phoenix blood essence. However, she could apply to headquarters for a drop and have the Patriarch or the Council of Elders decide!

Chu Redcloud took a deep breath and calmed her racing heart. She said, "Reporting to Lord and Lady Envoy, our Littlemoon once traveled for fun and adventure abroad and managed to stumble upon a phoenix blood pond, achieving a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. But, besides Littlemoon's destiny being excellent, her perception is also outstanding. That is the only reason she managed to comprehend the Lotus Blooming Step by Step phenomenon during this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. Littlemoon will easily become the top disciple of this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial!"

Chapter 1010 – Requirements for a Drop of Phoenix Blood Essence

“Mm, not bad.” Monarch Sweetfox sweetly smiled and nodded, seeming quite satisfied with Yan Littlemoon. In order for a martial artist to continue walking down the road of martial arts, both destiny and talent were indispensable. There were some peak talents of the Ancient Phoenix Clan that possessed the Ancient Phoenix bloodline because of their family background. But, even though they had talent amongst talents, their destiny was lacking. In other words, they wouldn’t be able to walk as far as Yan Littlemoon could on the road of martial arts in the future. This Lotus Blooming Step by Step phenomenon was good proof of just how great her destiny was.

Duke Golden Sword then stuck in and said, “Yan Littlemoon isn’t too bad, but let me warn you that Yan Littlemoon obtaining first place in this Fire Spirit Star’s Ancient Phoenix smelting trial is nothing at all. In our view it should be naturally what happens. What she must compare with is the geniuses of the other 71 branch palaces and the Ancient Phoenix Headquarters. Her opponents are the geniuses that lived thousands or even tens of thousands of years ago. Only they are the true opponents of Yan Littlemoon.”

Those geniuses from thousands or tens of thousands of years ago had grown up by now and had become great figures within the Ancient Phoenix Clan. For instance, Duke Golden Sword and Monarch Sweetfox were both ex number one trial challengers in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial.

“I thank Sir Envoy for the guidance. Littlemoon will take it to

heart.” Beside Chu Redcloud, Yan Littlemoon bowed.

Monarch Sweetfox revealed an appreciative smile. “Yan Littlemoon, you must rush through the 18 Hells of Flame as well as the Illusionary God Combat Array. Let me see just how far you can go! If your results are good, then I can apply to Internal Affairs for extra rewards for you!”

As Monarch Sweetfox spoke, Yan Littlemoon’s heart burst with excitement. She understood that this was her chance! Her family background was excellent in comparison to other disciples’ of the branch palaces, but compared to those giant family clans at headquarters, her foundation was just too shallow. She needed to find a turning point, and this was her lucky chance to stir up the interest of headquarters!

“Littlemoon, try your hardest!”

Chu Redcloud said with a true essence sound transmission.

“Mm, don’t worry Aunty, this time I absolutely will not disappoint you, nor can I disappoint myself.” Yan Littlemoon gripped her white fists together, her heart filling with steadfast determination.

She was very clear about her limits in the 18 Hells of Flame, but she had never tried the Illusionary God Combat Array before.

That was a test of one’s comprehensive combat strength, and

usually the last test taken before the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ended.

Although she had never attempted it, she had full confidence in herself.

Blackwood faintly smiled and said, “Senior Ruby Sovereign, since headquarters has come, I ask that you open a fire spirit mirror so we can all take a better look.”

“Hahaha!” An energetic laughter suddenly filled the 18 Hells of Flame, “No problem, it’s just a tiny bit of effort!”

The Ruby Sovereign was the artifact spirit of the 18 Hells of Flame. The 18 Hells of Flame itself was a spirit artifact, and the inside was a self-contained space. If one didn’t have the Ruby Sovereign’s permission, it was very difficult to spy on what was occurring tens of thousands of miles deep within.

In the skies, fire origin energy gathered together, slowly forming a fire origin energy mirror. The image of the 18 Hells of Flame was reflected within it.

“It’s done. Yan Littlemoon was it? Enter. I am looking forwards to your performance!”

“Senior Ruby Sovereign, please look after me.”

Yan Littlemoon turned into a beam of light that broke into the 18

Hells of Flame. Through the fire spirit mirror in the sky, others could see Yan Littlemoon's figure. She flushed through the Hells of Flame like a lithe fish, easily passing through without any hindrance. All of the violet fire origin energy and the blazingly high temperature was no different from warm water to her, comfortable and relaxing.

First level, second level, third level, Yan Littlemoon continued to flush straight down!

“Good!”

Monarch Sweetfox nodded. What she was noticing was the aura of the Laws around her. By depending on just her comprehension of Fire Laws, Yan Littlemoon was able to transform all that violent and wild fire origin energy around her into a gentle energy that she was able to easily absorb. She could do this freely and easily with a practiced hand.

Yan Littlemoon didn't slow down even when she broke through to the fourth floor. It was only at the fifth floor when her speed began to gradually decline.

“Fifth level 5000 miles... 5500 miles, 5600 miles...” Monarch Sweetfox silently counted in her mind. At 5600 miles, a clear crack appeared in Yan Littlemoon's protective true essence. Once she continued down further, she wouldn't be able to withstand it.

At 6000 miles, there was an explosive shattering sound as Yan Littlemoon's protective true essence shattered. The wild and

rampant fiery heavenly wind crazily rushed towards Yan Littlemoon but was blocked by the energy barrier created by the Ruby Sovereign.

Her final result was 6000 miles into the fifth level!

“6000 miles into the fifth level is indeed quite good.” Monarch Sweetfox nodded in appreciation. “In the past when I was at the Life Destruction realm and came to the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial as a rookie disciple, I wasn’t able to reach this depth. I will have others record this reward down. When this smelting trial ends, besides the other rewards, I shall also grant Yan Littlemoon three drops of phoenix heart blood.”

Phoenix heart blood was even greater than phoenix plume blood. A drop of phoenix plume blood was equal to a hundred drops of ordinary Ancient Phoenix Blood, and a drop of phoenix heart blood was equal to 50 drops of phoenix plume blood. Now that Monarch Sweetfox had granted Yan Littlemoon three drops of phoenix heart blood, that was the same as 150 drops of phoenix plume blood.

It had to be known that when Huo Yanguang made a gambling battle with Lin Ming, he had put out 20 drops of phoenix plume blood. That price was enough to make all others go crazy.

And now Monarch Sweetfox had casually tossed out the equivalent of 150 drops of phoenix plume blood as a reward. As the other heroic young elites heard this, all of them were filled with incomparable envy. There were many among them who hadn’t even seen 10 drops of phoenix plume blood in their lives before.

But, such a reward actually wasn't to Chu Redcloud's satisfaction.

To Yan Littlemoon, who had the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, three drops of phoenix heart blood wouldn't have too amazing of an effect on her.

Chu Redcloud grit her teeth and said, "This child Littlemoon has both talent and destiny, but her family background is ordinary. The Yan Family is considered a good distinguished family in my Charming Phoenix Palace, but placed within the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan and compared with the Xiao Family Clan, Huo Family Clan, and Huang Family Clan, they aren't anything at all. Even if the Yan Family does their best to raise and train Littlemoon, the support they can provide to her is still limited at best. Thus, I humbly, and with great respect, request Envoy Monarch Sweetfox to give additional bloodline resources so that Littlemoon's bloodline power can increase even further!"

"Hohohoho!" Monarch Sweetfox gently smiled as she heard Chu Redcloud. "You want to increase the power of her bloodline even further? Yan Littlemoon already has a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. If you wish to take yet another step forwards, I fear you will need something even better than phoenix heart blood. I think that you want phoenix blood essence! But, that is something that I cannot take responsibility for!"

Envoy Duke Golden Sword gaily laughed. "Fairy Chu, ever since the current Patriarch took a single drop of phoenix blood essence tens of thousands of years ago when he ascended to his position,

there has only been a single time when a drop of phoenix blood essence has been awarded to a junior disciple because of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial! This is something that let alone a Palace Master, but not even some Patriarchs can obtain! Both I and Monarch Sweetfox have never obtained a drop of phoenix blood essence, and that is because we fall far short of having the qualifications. Perhaps we will never have the qualifications for our entire lives!

“Yan Littlemoon’s results are exceedingly far from being enough to obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence. The only way possible is if her results surpass all others from the 72 branch palaces for the last 10,000 years. Fairy Chu, you have to know that Yan Littlemoon is not the only one with a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, and she might not be the only one who can produce the phenomenon of Lotus Blooming Step by Step either. Just by relying on that minor point, she is far, far off from being able to obtain a single drop of phoenix blood essence.”

As Envoy Duke Golden Sword spoke, all the other young disciples were dumbfounded. In their minds, Yan Littlemoon’s talent was already at the peak of possibility. It was high to the point that no one had the courage to chase after her. But, listening to Duke Golden Sword’s words, even Yan Littlemoon fell far short of being able to apply for a drop of phoenix blood essence!

There was no limit in the universe. There was always a higher peak and a stronger person. In Fire Spirit Star’s smelting trial, Yan Littlemoon was a crane among chickens. But, Fire Spirit Star’s smelting trial occurred every four years, and it lasted two years each time. In 10,000 years, just how many smelting trials had been carried out here? Moreover, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had 72

branch palaces, and there were also over 20 similar smelting trial locations like Fire Spirit Star. Thus, the number of times the smelting trial had been carried out could be imagined!

Obtaining first place in an Ancient Phoenix smelting trial was simple. But, wanting to take first place and far surpass all other rivals in all Ancient Phoenix smelting trials for the last 10,000 years was unimaginably difficult.

How could Chu Redcloud not know this? She clenched her teeth and said, “I humbly request that lord and lady envoy give a target, and that as long as Littlemoon can surpass that target she can obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence!”

This was all Chu Redcloud could say to force the two envoys as well as to force Yan Littlemoon. It had to be known that wherever there were people, there would be factions and relationships between them. In the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters and the three great family clans, the relations between them were complex and inextricably linked on 10,000 different levels. The juniors of the three great family clans, through some energy and methods, might be able to obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence even if their qualifications were lacking.

But as for Yan Littlemoon, the Yan Family she came from was neither small nor great. Compared to the Ancient Phoenix Headquarters, her foundation was far too shallow. If Yan Littlemoon wanted to struggle for a drop of phoenix blood essence, the path she would have to take would be suitably difficult!

Chu Redcloud was aware of this point. She never expected that it

would be easy to successfully apply for a single drop of phoenix blood essence. She could only set up a target and then break through it in full view of everyone else, and seize this precious chance to obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence. She had to make it so that headquarters couldn't deny her request, and that those people who tried to play little tricks wouldn't have the chance to do so!

“Oh?” Monarch Sweetfox revealed a trace of surprise. Her eyes moved as she looked at Yan Littlemoon. She saw that the little girl was blushing red, her fists gripped together, obviously not backing down. She seemed full of vigor and courage. It was clear she wanted to go all out to desperately struggle for this drop of phoenix blood essence!

Monarch Sweetfox's eyes revealed an amused light. “Good. But, I can only report this matter to headquarters; I do not have the authority to promise you anything. Headquarters will need to set the standard for this target. And, I hate to be rude, but this standard will be exceedingly high. It will be so high that all of you will believe that it is impossible, that we are forcing you into a dead end!”

Monarch Sweetfox said with a smile. In truth, she didn't believe in Yan Littlemoon too much, but she still had to speak her piece.

In the last 10,000 years, just how many geniuses had emerged in the 100 billion clansmen of the Ancient Phoenix Clan? It was an uncountable number. But among them, who had managed to obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence?

The truth was that since Monarch Sweetfox had begun serving as successor to the Internal Affairs Envoy, several family clans had put forth their most dazzling geniuses and applied for a drop of phoenix blood essence from her. Headquarters had also given them a standard, but none of them had ever been able to achieve it!

This standard was outrageous even to Monarch Sweetfox. Even if those family clans used all of their connections to reduce the standards by a tiny bit, all of them had failed without exception!

Chapter 1011 – Lin Ming Leaves Seclusion

“Thank you lord and lady envoy for your help in inquiring about the standard needed for phoenix blood essence. No matter what, I will not be afraid. I have full confidence in my own abilities!” Yan Littlemoon gripped her fists together, her voice solemn. She had obtained an entire pond of Ancient Phoenix blood, so the quantity of her bloodline was already enough. However, that pool of blood hadn’t been too high in quality; she needed a drop of phoenix blood essence to round it out and put the final finishing touches on her bloodline. As long as she could obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence, the power of her bloodline would increase to another level.

Monarch Sweetfox shook her head as she saw Yan Littlemoon. With the Yan Family’s foundation and connections, it would be impossible for the standard to be reduced by even a little bit. In other words, Yan Littlemoon would face the most harsh and difficult standard possible.

If this standard was the only one, then perhaps even Xiao Chuji, who obtained a drop of phoenix blood essence 10,000 years ago, would find it unbearable.

It had to be known that Xiao Chuji was currently one of the greatest candidates to be the next Patriarch, and he was also the most illustrious figure of the entire Xiao Family!

In any case, Monarch Sweetfox would do as regulations required and report this message.

She took out an exquisite and delicate array disc from her spatial ring. Her 10 fingers linked together and produced thousands of seals in an instant. These seals combined together into complex runes as they poured into the array disc.

A character on the level of Monarch Sweetfox was already able to perform the great void shift, and that made sending messages much easier. If there were some specialized supportive array formations added on, then it wasn't difficult to send a message even past several great worlds of the Divine Realm.

Just two hours later, Monarch Sweetfox received a reply from headquarters.

Hu –

A blazing flame lit up in front of Monarch Sweetfox's array disc. It turned into countless runes that sank into her mind. The sound transmission runes that the Ancient Phoenix Clan sent back were much more convenient than sending a voice message. Not only were they easier to understand, but they also prevented the message from being leaked out.

Monarch Sweetfox's eyebrows shot up. Although she already expected that headquarters would respond with an extremely overbearing and default standard, she still let out a light breath upon hearing what it was.

She shook her head and said to herself, "Headquarters is being a bit petty. This sort of standard is no different from saying no. But,

headquarters also has their own issues. The Ancient Phoenix Clan has over 100 billion clansmen, and the resources required every year are countless. It's difficult to maintain a balance between harvesting resources and handing them out. Especially when it comes to something like Ancient Phoenix blood essence, there are countless people that are greedily eyeing it and can't obtain it. In particular the candidates to be the next Patriarch. Everyone wants a single drop, and in order for her to obtain a single drop and others not to, the standards must definitely be high."

As Monarch Sweetfox was thinking, Chu Redcloud was eagerly looking at her, waiting for her to speak.

Monarch Sweetfox faintly smiled and said, "Headquarters passed down instructions. In order to obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence, you will need to enter the seventh level of the Hells of Flame before the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ends! Moreover, you must fully complete the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array!"

As Monarch Sweetfox said this, even Duke Golden Sword ruefully smiled. Headquarters was simply playing a joke on others.

In the 18 Hells of Flame, the further down one went, the more difficult it became; the difficulty grew at a nearly exponential rate. In the smelting trial for rookie disciples, only a peak talent of a branch palace was able to enter the fourth level of the Hells of Flame.

The fifth level was reserved for talents such as White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun. During their first smelting trial here, they had

both been able to enter the fifth level by the end. But, they didn't manage to reach the 8000-9000 mile depth of the fifth level.

The sixth level was nearly a legendary domain to the branch palaces. In a smelting trial location like Fire Spirit Star, with Charming Phoenix Palace, Phoenix Cry Palace, and Praying Phoenix Palace combined together, there might not even be someone that could reach that depth in 1000 years!

But, if all 72 branch palaces of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were gathered together, along with headquarters and the three great families, it wasn't too rare of an event. Someone that could enter the sixth level would appear once every 20-30 years.

But to travel 5000 miles into the sixth level, those people nearly didn't exist. Even in the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, it was still extremely rare for one or two people capable of such a feat to appear in a thousand years.

After that was the seventh level. That was simply not a domain possible for rookie disciples to reach. Even a peak late Divine Sea genius would find it extremely difficult to go that far. Most of those that trained in the seventh level were early Divine Transformation realm disciples!

For instance, White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun both reached the eleventh level.

That was a depth that cast away all other Divine Transformation realm disciples. Most Divine Transformation realm disciples were

still only capable of reaching the eighth and ninth levels.

Of course, if one had to persist in asking the Ancient Phoenix Clan if there were any junior disciples capable of reaching the seventh level in all these years, there certainly would be. For instance, Xiao Chuji from 10,000 years ago was capable of reaching the seventh level when the smelting trial ended. But, Xiao Chuji had been at the eighth stage of Life Destruction and Yan Littlemoon was only at the seventh stage of Life Destruction.

Between the eighth stage of Life Destruction and the seventh stage of Life Destruction, there was only a difference of a single stage. But to a peak talent, there was an enormous disparity between every stage of Life Destruction!

Moreover, reaching the seventh level of the Hells of Flame was only a single aspect. There was also another aspect, and that was the Illusionary God Combat Array!

The Hells of Flame trial looked at one's comprehension of Laws. But, the Illusionary God Combat Array trial tested one's true combat strength.

And the condition to complete the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array was far more difficult than reaching the seventh level of the Hells of Flame!

Envoy Duke Golden Sword himself was a combat freak. His comprehension of Laws was ordinary, but in terms of actual combat, his talent was terrifying. It was also because of this point

that he was able to become the Disciplinary Elder successor. After all, in a true battle, what decided victory or defeat was actual combat strength. Comprehension of Laws was only an indicator of one's future potential and accomplishments. If one had great attainments in Laws, it was still useless if they couldn't defeat someone else.

True combat strength had always been the point of pride for Envoy Duke Golden Sword. During his own rookie smelting trial, he had gone through the Illusionary God Combat Array and had killed over 600 individuals. This result was enough to shock and awe the trial site guardian at the time!

As for completing the Thousand Slaughter, Envoy Duke Golden Sword only had two words to say – Ha. Ha.

The Illusionary God Combat Array also became increasingly difficult the further it went. This was because the enemies within would become increasingly strong, and every opponent would also be a peak talent!

After several hundred people, the enemies that would emerge would be on the same level of talent as White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun. Of course, their ages would also be the same as the trial challengers'. In other words, one would have to face White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun when they were in their twenties.

Facing such an opponent one on one would already be a difficult situation to win in, but facing against a crowd of them, how could one continue to fight?

No matter how one looked at it, headquarters simply didn't want to pass down a drop of phoenix blood essence. This was because there were far too many factors involved in the growth of a talent. Even if Yan Littlemoon seemed extraordinary now, there might be some problems on her future road of martial arts. For instance, maybe she would exhaust all of her potential or all of her destiny. She might even go adventuring in a mystic realm and perish there!

Phoenix blood essence had far greater advantages the earlier it was implanted in a martial artist's body. Even so, the only way headquarters would be willing to pass down a drop of phoenix blood essence would be if Yan Littlemoon's talent was so extraordinary that the Elders at headquarters all had their eyeballs pop out of their heads when they heard of it. Otherwise, they would never take such a risk.

As Chu Redcloud heard Monarch Sweetfox's conditions, her expression of anticipation suddenly froze. Screw making things tough, this was simply playing a joke on them!

"How can anyone possibly accomplish such a request!?" Chu Redcloud directly blurted out, ignoring just how great Monarch Sweetfox's status was.

Although Monarch Sweetfox agreed with Chu Redcloud, she definitely couldn't say such words publicly. She was someone from headquarters, and thus she had to respect headquarters' wishes. She said, "This target isn't something that I came up with. Moreover, in the last 10,000 years, there have been some individuals that managed to reach the seventh level of the Hells of

Flame, such as Xiao Chuji, Huang Yuefeng, and other such unrivalled geniuses. All of them were able to accomplish that. As for completing the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array, I suppose you would have to look further back in history, but it isn't like no one has ever accomplished it. The standards that headquarters have set are difficult, but they are not impossible."

"Xiao Chuji, Huang Yuefeng..." Chu Redcloud sucked in a breath of cold air. Those two people were the leaders of the Xiao Family and Huang Family. They were heroes amongst heroes!

"Great Envoy Sweetfox, I also know that those two individuals were older than Littlemoon when they underwent their rookie smelting trial. Moreover, their cultivations were also higher. Senior Xiao Chuji was at the eighth stage of Life Destruction, and Senior Huang Yuefeng was also likely at the eighth stage of Life Destruction! They are a level apart and yet the standards are still the same. How could there be such a truth? Moreover, although Seniors Xiao Chuji and Huang Yuefeng were able to enter the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, neither of them were able to complete the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array!"

Monarch Sweetfox faintly smiled and said, "Yes, that's right, that's why Senior Huang Yuegong wasn't able to obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence. But, the reason Senior Xiao Chuji was able to obtain a drop was that the Xiao Family worked their connections in the background. For this drop of phoenix blood essence, the Xiao Family paid a tremendous amount of equivalent merit points to balance out the difference in standards. If the Yan Family has earned enough merit points, then they may also have

the standards reduced by a small amount.”

Chu Redcloud’s expression stiffened and she finally shook her head. The so-called merit points were a conversion of a family’s contributions to the Ancient Phoenix Clan. The three great family clans had existed for countless tens of thousands of years, and the amount of merit points they accumulated was certainly astronomically high. But, the foundation of the Yan Family was too shallow and they didn’t have any merit points. They lacked the ability to help Yan Littlemoon lower the standards. Moreover, even if they did reduce the standards by a little, that wouldn’t make it much easier.

“Aunty, there’s no need to say anything else. There is still a year left. I won’t necessarily lose! There have been some people that have entered the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, and there have also been some people that have completed the Thousand Slaughter in the Illusionary God Combat Array. Since my predecessors were able to succeed, I don’t believe that I can’t do the same. And if I can’t, that only proves that my strength is weaker than others’ and I have no right to complain.” Yan Littlemoon said, stopped Chu Redcloud from speaking further.

“Littlemoon....” Chu Redcloud sighed.

“Aunty, since I have set my determination I will struggle as much as I can, and I also will not regret my decisions. Moreover, since these are the standards that headquarters has sent down, it’s useless for us to oppose them.”

As Yan Littlemoon spoke, Chu Redcloud could only let out a long

breath. She no longer tried to complain. Indeed, they didn't have the ability to change a decision made by headquarters. "Okay, Littlemoon, try the Illusionary God Combat Array first. Let's see how far you can go and how many opponents you can slay..."

As Chu Redcloud spoke, the protective barrier of light around Totem Tower suddenly trembled. Then, ripples appeared in the barrier as it was ripped apart by someone. A young man's figure leisurely strolled out from Totem Tower, his long hair hanging loose against his waist. At this point, he looked disheveled, but his eyes shined like stars in the night sky, incomparably bright.

"Mm? Isn't that Lin Ming? He actually stayed within Totem Tower for over a year before he came out?"

Chapter 1012 – To Find a Foil

Lin Ming flew high in the skies. Behind him, the bright moon of Fire Spirit Star hung in the heavens, illuminating his body in clear splendor. Because the golden crow's appearance had caused the strong astral winds of Fire Spirit Star to calm down, his long hair was slowly fluttering in the wind, dancing like black threads of silk.

At this time, he was like an immortal descended to the world, his temperament elegant and ethereal.

As Lin Ming saw the sight before him, his clear and bright eyes revealed an astonished light.

He had just emerged from Totem Tower and hadn't expected such a scene to be occurring. A massive golden crow hundreds of miles long floated in the skies and all the disciples of Fire Spirit Star had gathered in the square in front of Totem Tower. The man and woman flying in the skies were obviously two top powerhouses.

What special occasion was it today?

Lin Ming was puzzled. He had been peacefully perceiving the Laws within Totem Tower, so he didn't realize the changes occurring outside.

Lin Ming leaving at this time was an extremely noticeable event. Because the envoys from headquarters had arrived, the vast

majority of disciples had gathered here to greet them. Lin Ming coming out from Totem Tower himself was very eye-catching.

“Oh? There are still some people in seclusion at this time.” Monarch Sweetfox faintly smiled as she looked towards Lin Ming.

Sun Cyprestar revealed an embarrassed expression. He wanted to quickly say a few words to cover this up, but Chu Redcloud brightly laughed at this time and said, “Hohoho, it’s Apprentice Nephew Lin. He has been meditating on the chaos stones in Totem Tower and has been in seclusion all the time until now. It’s been over an entire year! Since he has meditated for more than an entire year, his harvests should have been tremendous! Apprentice Nephew Lin is after all the number one rookie disciple of Phoenix Cry Palace; his perception is extraordinary!”

Chu Redcloud deliberately emphasized the words ‘chaos stones’ as well as the fact that Lin Ming was the number one rookie disciple of Phoenix Cry Palace. As she said this, Sun Cyprestar’s face flushed red with shame. Although Chu Redcloud had said that Lin Ming must have had many harvests and outwardly seemed to be praising him, anyone who listened could understand that there were daggers hidden in her words. She clearly knew how difficult it was to perceive the chaos stones and she was also aware that Lin Ming’s harvests must have been very small. Thus, she spoke this way to draw more attention to him and embarrass him even more.

This was an especially critical strike since the two envoys from headquarters were here!

Just what was a chaos stone? And just how much could a rookie

disciple perceive from them? If one chose them and couldn't perceive anything from them, then that was simply overestimating one's own abilities, biting off more than one could chew and becoming the joke of the public.

The truth was that Lin Ming's current level wasn't enough to draw attention from headquarters. And today's matters would cause the two envoys to develop a bad impression towards Phoenix Cry Palace. After all, Lin Ming was the top junior disciple of Phoenix Cry Palace and also the glory of Phoenix Cry Palace. If Lin Ming was turned into a joke, just how could anyone from Phoenix Cry Palace hold their head up high? And since Sun Cyprestar was the person in charge of Phoenix Cry Palace's disciples for this smelting trial, he naturally would suffer the greatest shame.

“Aiyaya, Brother Lin's luck is indeed horrible. He didn't come out earlier or later, but chose this moment when all attention was focused on the lord and lady envoys to emerge. Not just that, but Chu Redcloud is also stirring up trouble. It's impossible for him to try and blend in and be forgotten. Brother Lin was stuck in meditation over those chaos stones and didn't learn anything for the last year. But, everyone has taken a detour in their cultivation before. Putting aside this year, Brother Lin's performance was still among the best. But now, I fear that he will leave a poor impression on the lord and lady envoys...”

Xiao Whitesnow mumbled to himself. His thoughts were the same as everyone else's: Lin Ming's luck was just garbage.

Something that was originally a small matter had suddenly turned into an important matter in this situation.

At this time, Sun Cyprestar really hated Chu Redcloud to the extreme. She was simply his mortal enemy. This woman was cunning and knew a bunch of dirty tricks, and she always seized every opportunity to ruin others. If it weren't for her idle talk today, then no one would have known that this was still Lin Ming's first time closing up in Totem Tower. Those two envoys would have assumed that this was Lin Ming's second or third time in Totem Tower and wouldn't have cared too much.

All Sun Cyprestar could do was suppress the disheartened feeling within him and smile, saying, "Fairy Chu is simply making a joke. How can our Phoenix Cry Palace's disciples compare with the astounding disciples from your Charming Phoenix Palace. Lin Ming is simply undergoing an impromptu session of meditation. Even if he didn't perceive anything, he still gained experience, broadening his horizons and laying down a good foundation for his future cultivation."

"Hohoho! Vice Hall Master Sun is too modest. I actually know that Apprentice Nephew Lin here was able to jump ranks and defeat a Four Layered Heavens Ninefall Master with just a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation. How could he be as horrible as Vice Hall Master Sun is making him out to be? In this smelting trial I am also looking forwards to Apprentice Nephew Lin's performance. Since Vice Hall Master Sun has said that Apprentice Nephew Lin meditated on the chaos stones to lay down his foundation, perhaps you will allow me to see just what sort of foundation this is?"

Chu Redcloud's meaning was obvious. She wanted Lin Ming to rush through the 18 Hells of Flame and the Illusionary God Combat

Array. Sometimes, no matter how bright your light was, you still needed someone else to serve as contrast so others could see how kickass you were. Lin Ming jumping ranks to defeat a Four Layered Heavens Ninefall master with a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation had sufficient qualifications to serve as a foil. She wanted others to see that if even someone like Lin Ming lost to Yan Littlemoon, that would emphasize just how amazing and unusual her talent was.

How could Sun Cyprestar not know Chu Redcloud's thoughts? She actually wanted to use the number one genius of his Phoenix Cry palace to serve as a foil. Could this woman be any more vicious and ruthless?

His inner thoughts were grim and filled with animosity, but his outer appearance was much more genial. He stroked his beard and looked a bit uninterested as he said, "Fairy Chu must be joking. Apprentice Nephew Lin has heaven-gifted talent, so how could our Phoenix Cry Palace show off our poor performance? We admit defeat, we admit defeat, haha."

"Oh? Fairy Maiden Chu said that Apprentice Nephew Lin here managed to jump ranks and defeat a Four Layered Heavens Ninefall master with a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation?" Whether it was Duke Golden Sword or Monarch Sweetfox, either one of them could make out the duel of tongues they were having.

Monarch Sweetfox faintly smiled. She had seen this sort of situation many times before; it was clear that these two Elders had a very acrimonious relationship. Since one of them had the chance to step on the other, they certainly wouldn't miss out on it.

Normally, neither of them would care about this sort of catfight, but Envoy Duke Golden Sword's interest was actually aroused by Chu Redcloud's words, and that was that Lin Ming had jumped ranks to defeat a Four Layered Heavens Ninefall master with a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation.

This was proof that Lin Ming was a genius of actual combat!

A Four Layered Heavens Ninefall wasn't too bad. Moreover, when one passed from the eighth to the ninth stage of Life Destruction and underwent a baptism of the Heavenly Dao, that was equal to half a great boundary of cultivation. In the past, if Xiao Daoji was able to rush through the 18 Hells of Flame with a Ninefall cultivation, then he would have been able to break through to the seventh level far more easily.

However, the truth was that there was an extremely small number of martial artists that would choose to enter the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial for the first time after reaching Ninefall. This was because before crossing Ninefall, the deeper one's foundation was and the more solid their foundation, the greater the origin energy cloud would be, and the more thorough their baptisms of Laws would be. And, they could develop this foundation by undergoing the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial before Ninefall.

On the other hand, there were also advantages in undergoing the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial after reaching Ninefall. That was because after stepping into Ninefall and accepting the baptism of the world's Laws, one's comprehension of Laws would be much deeper, and the gains from entering and meditating within Totem

Tower would also be greater. They would be able to go deeper into the 18 Hells of Flame and obtain more rewards. Once they went to the smelting trial the second time, they would no longer be rookie disciples and receive this treatment.

And in truth, sometimes this just didn't look at one's wishes. The Ancient Phoenix smelting trial had a gap of four years between each time it occurred, in order for the totem stones to be replenished. In such a long time, many weren't able to make early breakthroughs. For instance, there were very few people who participated in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial in their twenties. After all, not everyone was as talented as Yan Littlemoon.

Envoy Duke Golden Sword himself was originally a genius of combat. In terms of comprehension of Laws, he was nothing but an amateur. It was because of this reason that he was mocked by those geniuses who excelled in Laws, but he didn't mind those jokes. After all, strength was the only truth. If your comprehension of Laws was high but you still couldn't defeat someone else in battle, just what use was it?

Thus, he had a deep appreciation for those geniuses that had similar characteristics to him.

“Reporting to Envoy, Lin Ming did indeed jump ranks to defeat a Four Layered Heavens Ninefall martial artist at the fifth stage of Life Destruction. In terms of combat, he can be considered just a bit gifted.” Sun Cyprestar modestly said.

“Haha, Elder Sun, you are being far too humble. What do you

mean just a bit gifted? That is actually an amazing accomplishment! Lin Ming, right? You're not bad. In fact, you're very much to my liking! During this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, me and Sweetfox will be staying at Fire Spirit Star for a while. I look forwards to your performance in the Illusionary God Combat Array. I don't really care at all about how well you do in the 18 Hells of Flame, but you must slaughter at least 600 people within the Illusionary God Combat Array! If you can kill 600 people, then I will take responsibility and reward you with three drops of phoenix heart blood!"

As soon as Envoy Duke Golden Sword spoke, he also promised three drops of phoenix heart blood. That was the same as 150 drops of phoenix plume blood!

This left Lin Ming stunned. He could sense what sort of lofty status these two had from Sun Cypress's tone as he spoke to Duke Golden Sword and Monarch Sweetfox. But even so, he didn't think this man would promise three drops of phoenix heart blood without batting an eye. It had to be known that when Sun Cypress and Chu Redcloud made their bet for the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron, they had also bet a drop of phoenix heart blood.

Obviously, the status of these two people was countless times higher than that of Sun Cypress and Chu Redcloud!

Chu Redcloud faintly frowned. She could see that Duke Golden Sword had an excellent impression towards Lin Ming and he didn't even inquire about the joke of Lin Ming meditating on the chaos stones. It seemed that she wouldn't be able to successfully step on

Sun Cyprestar this time. She said, “Two envoys, how about we have Littlemoon attempt the Illusionary God Combat Array for the first time to see how far she can go?”

“Mm, alright.”

Monarch Sweetfox nodded. She naturally wouldn’t disagree to that.

Yan Littlemoon was about to attempt the Illusionary God Combat Array!

The other disciples had already been looking forwards to this for a long time. At this time, all of them couldn’t help but start talking about it!

“She’s finally going to rush through! I wonder how many people Yan Littlemoon can kill, 600? 700?”

“Don’t be an idiot. Yan Littlemoon might not be good in the aspect of combat. Do you think that it is easy to kill 600-700 people in the Illusionary God Killing Array? As for completing the Thousand Slaughter and obtaining a drop of phoenix blood essence, that is even more of a joke. It looks nice as a goal, but who can possibly accomplish it? Not even Senior Xiao Chuji of the past was able to do so!”

As some disciples were casually speaking, Lin Ming was shocked by their words. “What? Phoenix blood essence!? What are you

fellows talking about? You can obtain phoenix blood essence if you rush through the Illusionary God Combat Array?”

“Oh, Brother Lin, you might not know but Chu Redcloud applied to headquarters for a drop of phoenix blood essence for Yan Littlemoon. Headquarters didn’t directly agree. Instead, they set down a standard. If she can pass this standard then she can obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence.”

“There’s such a matter!?”

Lin Ming was bewildered. If she could pass a standard then she could obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence! If he could pass this same standard, then could he also obtain it!?!?

Chapter 1013 – Illusionary God Combat Array

Concerning the value of phoenix blood essence, Lin Ming had a clear understanding of it from perusing the texts of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. A phoenix's blood essence was the fundamental basis for its rebirthing through nirvana. Generally speaking, an Ancient Phoenix would be fine no matter how much ordinary blood was drawn out from it. But, every drop of phoenix blood essence taken away would damage the life source of the phoenix!

It was more accurate to say that blood essence was no longer blood, but the condensed form of a phoenix's life force!

How many phoenixes were there in the Divine Realm? No one could say for sure, but it was absolutely a small number. There were even types of God Beasts that had only one member. Between the heavens and earth, they were singular. Within the vast universe, they were unique!

Only when this type of unique God Beast died would the next reincarnation of that God Beast appear. This could be said to be a rule of the Heavenly Dao!

Rather than a living being, a God Beast could be called a divine god evolved from the Heavenly Dao itself. For instance, the phoenix was a divine god that represented the manifestation of the Fire Laws, wielding the power of flame!

Even though the Ancient Phoenix Clan called themselves the

descendants of a phoenix and also had the phoenix bloodline within their bodies, the truth was that the Ancient Phoenix Clan was merely a group of people within the Divine Realm that had slowly evolved with the Ancient Phoenix bloodline over time, multiplying over generations. From the very start, they never had a True Phoenix in their clan. This was because even the Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch would never have the ability to control a phoenix. They were on completely different levels!

Lin Ming was well aware of what a drop of phoenix blood essence meant. To someone like him who had such a light phoenix bloodline, this was an amazingly great lucky chance!

It had to be known that when Lin Ming first started walking down the road of martial arts, his talent was ordinary. But, after being transformed with the blood of the Ancient Phoenix and the blood of the Azure Dragon, his talent was slowly enhanced. Even so, he was far from being comparable with the peak talents of the Divine Realm. If his talent was worse than theirs, his cultivation speed would be slower. Even if Lin Ming had the ethereal martial intent supporting him and had come across all sorts of lucky chances, his cultivation speed was still far from reaching the peak!

He only needed to be compared to Yan Littlemoon to understand this point. Yan Littlemoon was younger than Lin Ming by two years, but her cultivation was actually higher than his by a full stage of Life Destruction.

If he were compared with peak talents of other Divine Realm Holy Lands, the difference would be even greater. There was always someone stronger.

Thus, Lin Ming earnestly wished for this drop of Ancient Phoenix blood essence.

He asked, “What standards did headquarters request?”

“Well, the standards are that before this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ends, Yan Littlemoon must enter the Hells of Flame’s seventh level and she must also complete the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array. Hmm, in my opinion this standard is simply making fun of others. Just who could possibly accomplish it?”

So that was the request...

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He hadn’t attempted the Illusionary God Combat Array, but he had gone into the Hells of Flame one time. He was completely unaware of what it was like in the deeper parts.

Lin Ming began to feel some excitement in the face of such a challenge. He had closed up for over a year in Totem Tower and his comprehension of Laws had soared. During the entire year of monotonous and humdrum meditation, let alone fighting, he hadn’t even moved. Lin Ming was a hot-blooded fighter who loved battle from the marrow of his bones. After being suppressed for such a long time, he eagerly looked forwards to a good challenge so that he could verify his own strength!

At this time, an explosive sound echoed out from far away. In the

center of the giant square in front of Totem Tower, the ground began to sink in and a giant portal construction slowly emerged from the ground. This portal was hundreds of feet high and the entire gateway shimmered with brilliant light, as if it were leading to another time and space.

This was the Illusionary God Combat Array, the trial within Fire Spirit Star that was used to test combat ability!

After entering the Illusionary God Combat Array, geniuses of varying levels would appear, all of them with an age similar to the trial challenger.

For instance, if a 30 year old martial artist were to enter the Illusionary God Combat Array, he would encounter all sorts of 30 year old geniuses. They would have numerous different attack styles, cultivation methods, Concepts, and all sorts of other combat aspects. If one could overcome all of them and complete the Thousand Slaughter, then they would absolutely be a mythical combat genius!

To complete the Thousand Slaughter of the Illusionary God Combat Array was even more difficult than entering the seventh level of the 18 Hells of Flame!

Yan Littlemoon looked at the vibrating stone portal in front of her and clenched her teeth before rushing inside. Her body disappeared into the Illusionary God Combat Array.

Everyone outside held their breath, waiting to see Yan

Littlemoon's performance.

On an arch on top of the Illusionary God Combat Array portal, there was a row of nine stars. Every time the trial challenger passed a certain goal, a star would light up.

These stars each respectively represented – slaying the first enemy, slaughtering 10 enemies, slaughtering 50 enemies, slaughtering 100 enemies, slaughtering 200 enemies, slaughtering 500 enemies, slaughtering 700 enemies, slaughtering 900 enemies, and finally the Thousand Slaughter.

Yan Littlemoon had just been in the Illusionary God Combat Array for several breaths of time when the first star lit up with a dazzling light. This meant that Yan Littlemoon had already struck down the first enemy.

In the crowd, White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun sighed with emotion. As they said, the new would always replace the old. People were constantly evolving. Back when they were rookie disciples, they were far from reaching Yan Littlemoon's strength.

The Illusionary God Combat Array factored in the disparity of age and would match trial challengers with opponents of a corresponding age. Thus, whenever one went inside, the situation would be the same no matter what. Currently, White Daohong estimated that he could kill just over 400 people.

Lu Xiaoyun was a bit better, but even she could only kill around 500 people.

Then, at 30 breaths of time, the second star lit up. This meant that Yan Littlemoon had succeeded in slaughtering 10 people.

An incense stick of time passed. 50 people slaughtered!

Then, a hundred people slaughtered!

Monarch Sweetfox nodded, but Duke Golden Sword seemed to be in disagreement. “Slow, she’s way too slow.”

Monarch Sweetfox sweetly smiled. “Golden Sword, I hope you aren’t using the results of your past to compare with this little girl. You originally walked straight down the path of destruction, and your aura and moves were both irresistibly strong, so you naturally rushed through the trial quickly. But Yan Littlemoon is different from you. She is focused more on comprehending the Concepts and Laws. Moreover, Yan Littlemoon’s true combat potential still hasn’t fully developed. She is currently focused on perceiving the Laws, but in the future when she gains more combat experience she will be able to go even further in the Illusionary God Combat Array.”

“Hehe, such a gentle combat style and focus on Laws is nothing more than all show and no go in my opinion. Truly what they call fancy but impractical. That Lin Ming is much more to my taste. I bet that when he enters the Illusionary God Combat Array, he will far surpass Yan Littlemoon!”

“Haha, that might not be true. Lin Ming indeed excels in combat,

but Yan Littlemoon is ahead of him by far too much in the aspect of bloodline and comprehension of Laws. I'm not sure if you heard it just now, but Lin Ming has been meditating on the chaos stones for the last year. I don't know what he was planning, but even at my boundary or your boundary, it is difficult for us to perceive anything from them. Moreover, those things that can be perceived are the highest truths of the Great Dao. In other words, they are just a general outline; it might not necessarily help in increasing his combat strength.

Monarch Sweetfox's words were reasonable, but Duke Golden Sword chuckled and said, "I still believe in what I said. That is the intuition that I developed from living through countless battlefields! I believe in Lin Ming's strength! Perhaps his performance in the 18 Hells of Flame might be ordinary, and it might even be poor, but he will absolutely surpass Yan Littlemoon in the Illusionary God Combat Array. He might even break through that critical point of slaughtering 600 people, or even close in on 700 people, surpassing the me of the past!"

"Your evaluation of him is too high, I'm not too optimistic of his chances." Monarch Sweetfox shook her head in contradiction. And at this time, on the top of the Illusionary God Combat Array, the star that symbolized 200 people having been slaughtered lit up.

Yan Littlemoon had killed 200 people within the Illusionary God Combat Array!

However, the further it went, the more difficult it would become. Even as Yan Littlemoon slowly exhausted her strength, her enemies would only become increasingly powerful and

increasingly greater in numbers. Later, Yan Littlemoon would even need to face 10 or 20 opponents at once. And all of these people were geniuses in their own right. Moreover, their attack style, their cultivation methods, every aspect of their combat ability would vary. They would come out one after another, endlessly until she was overwhelmed!

Yan Littlemoon soon found it difficult to continue. Her strongest aspect was her comprehension in Fire Laws – she didn't understand other Laws all too much. In the face of some specialized enemies, for instance ice-attribute martial artists or water-attribute martial artists, her Fire Laws were actually faintly restrained.

After slaughtering 400 people, Yan Littlemoon's enemies joined together in great formations. The several different combat styles joined together, complementing each other and multiplying their combat strength!

Yan Littlemoon suddenly felt the pressure rapidly increase. As the battle continued, her consumption of energy became enormous. Even so, she withstood it all and slaughtered her five hundredth opponent!

The sixth star lit up!

Following that, killing every person became increasingly different. Amongst Yan Littlemoon's opponents, a large number of fifth stage and sixth stage Life Destruction martial artists began to emerge. In terms of cultivation talent, they were not much worse than Lin Ming!

Of course, in terms of overall combat prowess they were far inferior to Lin Ming. Even so, they far exceeded other ordinary geniuses. If these sixth stage Life Destruction martial artists were true people then they would likely reach the ninth stage Life Destruction. In other words, they were Ninefall geniuses. If they were placed in the world of mortals, they would be able to sweep away all Divine Sea powerhouses that existed there!

To face a siege from these sorts of people, the pressure on Yan Littlemoon could be imagined!

570 people...

580 people...

590 people...

As soon as Yan Littlemoon slaughtered 596 people, she finally reached her limit. Her body shook and her protective true essence shattered. A phantom sword pierced through her chest.

In that brief moment, 10 saint artifacts thrust towards her, immediately killing Yan Littlemoon!

Hu – !

Yan Littlemoon was ejected from the Illusionary God Combat

Array, her face as pale as paper!

She had finished. The total number of people she slaughtered was... 596!

This number surpassed White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun. It even surpassed the greatest geniuses that had come to Fire Spirit Star for the last 1000 years.

This was because Yan Littlemoon hadn't fought many times in her life and thus her combat experience was lacking. She wasn't like the martial artists of the lower realms that had slain their way to the top. Most of her time was spent closed up in seclusion, cultivating. From Xiantian to Revolving Core, from Revolving Core to Life Destruction, to a mortal, these could be bottlenecks that they never passed in their life. But, these bottlenecks were simply nothing to Yan Littlemoon. She was able to break through them with a single period of seclusion. Thus, her actual experience was very little.

To slaughter 596 people, this result simply left all of the martial artists present dumbfounded. They had thought that Yan Littlemoon was weak in terms of true combat, but now it seemed that her so-called 'bad at combat' was only in comparison to her comprehension of Laws. When she was compared to other people, she had already cast them far off!

Xiao Whitesnow and White Daohong felt inferior at their own abilities. As for Sun Cyprestar, he looked at Yan Littlemoon with some envy. This wasn't envy of Yan Littlemoon, but envy towards the Yan Family that was able to produce such a talented disciple.

The Yan Family wasn't a powerful family to begin with, but because of Yan Littlemoon they were destined to rise in the future.

At worst, Yan Littlemoon would become a Palace Master. If she was just a little bit lucky then she could become a Merit Elder, Internal Affairs Envoy, or even a Vice Patriarch!

Chapter 1014 – Lin Ming's Turn

“She was just four people away from slaughtering 600. Who can still say that Yan Littlemoon's combat ability is lousy?”

“Of course it wouldn't be bad. She is a genius with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Even her worst aspect is likely something that we could never hope to catch up to. If she casually tries, she can already be the top talent of Fire Spirit Star for the last thousand years. If she can use this next period of time to temper her true combat strength then she will easily be able to break through 600 people, and perhaps even 600 and several dozen more wouldn't be too difficult.”

“Mm... however, that's her limit. The request for the phoenix blood essence is to complete the Thousand Slaughter. To slaughter a thousand people in there... that's just a joke and a half.”

All of the disciples present felt pity for Yan Littlemoon. She was already this strong and yet she wasn't fated to obtain the phoenix blood essence. Her ability was simply far from being enough and the requests were just too severe.

Chu Redcloud was also disappointed. Although Yan Littlemoon's performance was excellent so far and she had expected this result, after actually seeing this result with her own eyes, she felt nothing but despair at such a massive gap. She couldn't even fake a smile with how ridiculous the difference was. To slaughter another 400 people... that was a moat that could never be overcome!

The Illusionary God Combat Array was different from the 18 Hells of Flame. In the 18 Hells of Flame, as long as you could progress, you could go even deeper. But, the opponents within the Illusionary God Combat Array were formed based on one's age. If you made progress, the array formation's opponents would also progress.

“596 people. That's actually much better than what I imagined. How about it Golden Sword, do you still insist on your previous judgement?”

Monarch Sweetfox shot an eye at Duke Golden Sword. Duke Golden Sword smiled and said, “Of course. Did you want to make a bet? How about we have Lin Ming step up now?”

“Haha, there's no use making a bet. If Lin Ming can slaughter 600 people then I will not need your Disciplinary Enforcement Division to put out the promised three drops of phoenix heart blood. My Office of Internal Affairs will personally put forth the rewards for you.” Monarch Sweetfox casually said. Providing resources to talented disciples was part of her duties to begin with.

“Okay.” Duke Golden Sword chuckled, a joking expression on his face. He turned to Lin Ming and said, “You brat Lin Ming, do you want to enter the Illusionary God Combat Array and give it a go? The beautiful Sweetfox here has said that as long as you can slaughter 600 people, she will reward you with three drops of phoenix heart blood! That is phoenix heart blood! In addition, I will personally grant you a top grade saint artifact armor that approaches a transcendent saint artifact.”

Duke Golden Sword's words floored all the martial artists present. All of them began to be filled with excitement.

Lin Ming was actually going to rush through the Illusionary God Combat Array! There was really climax after climax today!

Originally Lin Ming had meditated over the chaos stones for an entire year before coming out, so others had a little bit of fun over him because of that, and there was also some criticism spoken against him in private. But, that was just how things there. In terms of Lin Ming's combat strength alone, no one dared to doubt him there!

A fifth stage Life Destruction martial artist had defeated a Four Layered Heavens Ninefall master. That achievement was enough to startle someone from headquarters.

Even if no one believed that Lin Ming could make it far in the 18 Hells of Flame, they all had to admit that he had the qualifications to contend with Yan Littlemoon in the Illusionary God Combat Array!

"Lin Ming is going to enter the Illusionary God Combat Array. I wonder just how far he can go? How many people can he slaughter? I don't think his results will be any worse than Yan Littlemoon's!"

"That might not be true. Yan Littlemoon's comprehension of Laws is too terrifying and her progress in this last year has been far too rapid. As for Lin Ming, he meditated on the chaos stones for

this last year and wasted all of that valuable time. Even if he managed to understand a little bit of the Chaos Laws, that is simply a general outline of the Laws. They aren't necessarily applicable to actual combat."

"I also think that Yan Littlemoon's results will be a tad better. After all, she has the Ancient Phoenix bloodline. But even if Lin Ming is worse, he won't be that much worse."

All of the young disciples present were eager and enthusiastic. They ardently waited for Lin Ming to rush through the Illusionary God Combat Array so they could see him struggle with Yan Littlemoon for superiority!

On the side, Chu Redcloud contemptuously curled her lips and said, "He's just rushing through the Illusionary God Combat Array. In the Illusionary God Combat Array, he'll barely be able to keep up with Littlemoon. And in terms of understanding of Laws, that is truly where a person's potential can be seen. The more prevailing one's comprehension of Laws is, the more amazing their future accomplishments will be. As for having extraordinary combat strength, that doesn't mean they will be able to maintain that in the future."

Chu Redcloud's voice wasn't loud, but everyone present was a top master, thus they naturally heard her clearly. Sun Cyprestar tugged on his beard in anger, his eyes wide with rage. But, he still couldn't find the words to refute her. Lin Ming's decision to meditate on the chaos stones for an entire year had left him speechless.

Everyone turned to Lin Ming, waiting for him to enter the Illusionary God Combat Array. However, what happened next left them all puzzled.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and said, “Lord and lady envoy, this disciple has a matter he wishes to discuss with you two. I wonder if that is permissible?”

“Oh? What is it? Speak as you will!” Monarch Sweetfox looked at Lin Ming. In her opinion, a young disciple like Lin Ming was hot-blooded and loved to contest with others. With such a grand opportunity laid down in front of him, he should have already rushed inside. But she didn’t think that he would smile and change the topic with such polite language. He clearly had some deeper meaning in doing so.

“This disciple has heard that the two lord and lady envoys have laid down a standard for obtaining a drop of phoenix blood essence. That is, to enter the seventh level of the Hells of Flame and also to simultaneously complete the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array. Is that true?”

“Yes. But this standard was not set by us, but sent down from headquarters. What about it?”

“Mm... this disciple wishes to ask, if I can achieve this standard, then can I also receive a drop of phoenix blood essence?”

Lin Ming’s voice was slow and unhurried, filled with energy and true essence. As he spoke, his voice spread throughout the entire

audience. For a time, everyone was stunned silent!

Sun Cyprestar and Xiao Whitesnow had their mouths hanging open, unable to figure out just what facial expression to make.

Yan Littlemoon's eyes had gone perfectly round. After rushing through the Illusionary God Combat Array herself, even she didn't have much hope of obtaining the drop of phoenix blood essence. But Lin Ming had actually asked such a question; just what was he doing?

As for Chu Redcloud, after being momentarily stunned, she looked at Lin Ming with kindness, as if she were looking at someone with brain damage. She chuckled and said, "Apprentice Nephew Lin, what kind of question are you asking! Did you also want to take that drop of phoenix blood essence?"

Lin Ming didn't respond. He had no interest in Chu Redcloud. He kept his eyes glued onto Monarch Sweetfox and Duke Golden Sword, his thoughts completely centered on the phoenix blood essence.

Chu Redcloud frowned, extremely annoyed at being treated with such contempt by a junior. She wanted to smack him around to teach him a lesson, but in this situation in front of two envoys, she naturally couldn't do anything like that.

Duke Golden Sword deeply looked at Lin Ming. Lin Ming's words had indeed startled him. "Are you saying you wish to attempt meeting this standard?"

“Yes, Lord Envoy!”

“Hohohohoho!” Monarch Sweetfox started laughing like tinkling bells. “Indeed, the baby calf does not fear the tiger. Since this is the standard sent down by headquarters, then of course it’s acceptable. If you can achieve that standard then that drop of phoenix blood essence shall be granted to you! However... do you know just how difficult it is to achieve such a standard?”

Monarch Sweetfox’s words caused all of the martial artists present to start privately speaking amongst themselves. Did Lin Ming really not know how difficult the standard was?

Thinking about it, Lin Ming truly didn’t have much of an understanding of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. He had come to Fire Spirit Star for just a brief period before holing himself up in Totem Tower. He hadn’t even been as far as the third level yet, so he naturally didn’t know how difficult it would become. As for the Illusionary God Combat Array, he had never attempted that before. Was it possible that Lin Ming was really setting himself up to be a giant joke?

If Lin Ming didn’t meet the standard then he certainly wouldn’t suffer any losses. But if the difference was too great, that would just be too shameful.

Sun Cyprestar felt his palms turn sweaty. Just what sort of games was Lin Ming trying to play today? Lin Ming choosing to meditate on the chaos stones had already given him a great shock. And now

that he was doing all of this, Sun Cyprestar really wasn't sure if his heart could withstand it. On such a grand occasion, once Lin Ming lost face, not only did that mean he would lose face, but Phoenix Cry Palace would also lose face by association.

“Lin Ming you brat, do you know what you are saying?” Sun Cyprestar angrily said with a true essence sound transmission.

Lin Ming was abnormally calm as he replied, “I only want to give it a try. Elder Sun, please rest assured.”

“Lin Ming, this standard is for one year later when the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ends. Did you want to try it now instead of one year from now?” Even Duke Golden Sword, who favored Lin Ming, didn't believe that he had even the faintest hope of success. He thought that Lin Ming simply didn't know how difficult it was.

“Now!” Lin Ming enunciated loudly. If he obtained the phoenix blood essence a year earlier, that would be a year more of benefits. Of course earlier was better.

“Hah! Okay, then start from the Illusionary God Combat Array!” Duke Golden Sword motioned towards the Illusionary God Combat Array. He estimated that Lin Ming's results in the Illusionary God Combat Array wouldn't be too bad. Although he wouldn't be able to achieve the Thousand Slaughter, his results wouldn't be too ugly.

But, Lin Ming shook his head and said, “Lord Envoy, this disciple wishes to begin at the 18 Hells of Flame.”

Lin Ming chose the 18 Hells of Flame for a reason. In this last year, he had comprehended far too many Law fragments. These Law fragments were stored in his body and mind, and he needed to verify these Laws within the 18 Hells of Flame and thoroughly master them.

Only like this could he become stronger. Then, his results in the Illusionary God Array would also be better!

But Lin Ming's words caused the martial artists present to stare at him, mouths agape.

What Lin Ming wanted to attempt was not the Illusionary God Combat Array, but the 18 Hells of Flame!

In their opinion, Lin Ming excelled at combat. As for his comprehension of Laws, no one had a good opinion of him. At best, his talent with Laws could compare with someone like Huo Yanguang.

It would have been far better for him to attempt the Illusionary God Combat Array. If he didn't fail too miserably then no one would mention him not achieving the standards and there also wouldn't be a need to try the 18 Hells of Flame.

But now, Lin Ming wanted to rush through the 18 Hells of Flame first. If this happened then his weakness with Laws would be exposed. At that time, if he couldn't even reach the fourth level then wouldn't that be a great loss of face?

Chu Redcloud also felt that Lin Ming was crazy. If this boy actually wanted to take a piece of shit and smear it all over his face, just who could stop him?

“This brat was locked up in Totem Tower for an entire year. In front of those chaos stones that are like tomes of heaven, could he have been stimulated somehow?” Chu Redcloud thought. Duke Golden Sword had given Lin Ming a way out and yet he refused it and insisted in disgracing himself. Even if he didn’t know how difficult the 18 Hells of Flame was, was he actually naïve enough to think that he could instantly rush to the sixth or seventh level?”

As Chu Redcloud was thinking, Lin Ming had already turned into a beam of light that shot towards the 18 Hells of Flame.

At this time, the 18 Hells of Flame’s artifact spirit naturally formed a light screen projection of Lin Ming as he rushed downwards.

Lin Ming was like a falling meteor as he blazed down with amazing velocity!

The first level!

The second level!

The third level!

Nothing was able to hinder him!

Chapter 1015 – The Origin of Burning Heat

When Lin Ming first arrived at Fire Spirit Star, his comprehension of Fire Laws was still inferior to that of Huo Yanguang. He hadn't even been able to reach the third level of the 18 Hells of Flame. But now, he had immediately broken through in a single go. The wild fire origin energy brushed past him like a cool breeze, not affecting him at all.

The Chaos Laws were the source of all Laws. When Lin Ming was in Totem Tower, he had witnessed the creation and formation of the universe, and was able to understand the key material structure of existence. He knew the essence of the two yin and yang energies. Such a lucky chance was something that not even a World King might be able to obtain.

Now, after having perceived the Great Dao of the universe's source, Lin Ming needed to verify his Fire Laws once again. It was like the top imperial scholar returning to his province to take a local civil examination. It would naturally be easy after having mastered everything else!

“So this is how it is... the first level of the Concept of Fire, Burning Heat, is not as simple as I thought it would be. I thought that my Concept of Burning Heat had already reached perfection, but now I understood that I had simply never understood the essence of the Concept of Burning Heat!”

Before, Lin Ming had no idea just what burning heat was. He simply thought that it was a single type of energy.

Burning heat could be conducted, it could breed fire, it could burn down all life, it could annihilate enemies. Lin Ming had once comprehended the Concept of Burning Heat to perfection in Timeworn Phoenix City, and had used that as the foundation to break through the first world of the God Transforming Mirror. But now, after looking back, he realized that his comprehension of the Concept was simply too crude and unrefined.

Not to mention anything else, he hadn't even been sure about what the essence of burning heat had been.

In fact, it wasn't just Lin Ming, but many powerhouses that excelled in the Concept of Fire didn't understand what the essence of burning heat was. They merely thought it was the manifestation of one kind of energy.

The so-called Concept of Burning Heat they comprehended was only something that they used. As for how it worked, they didn't actually know.

But now, after Lin Ming had perceived how matter and energy had been composed, he was able to look back at the Concept of Burning Heat and discover that it was the evolution of yin and yang energy.

The essence of burning heat was the movement produced by the energies coming from yin and yang particles. The faster these particles moved, the higher the temperature would be. When the speed of these particles reached the limit, so would their temperature!

There were even some Divine Transformation or Divine Lord powerhouses that had assumed they had comprehended the Concept of Burning Heat to perfection, that their understandings had reached the peak. But they never realized that above perfection was an even deeper meaning. That was... to comprehend the origin.

If Lin Ming hadn't been able to see the formation of matter then he would never have realized this. The source of burning heat stemmed from the twin energies of yin and yang. On the surface, there didn't seem to be any connection at all.

The mysteries of the universe's Laws were difficult to imagine. Even after seeing it with his own eyes, Lin Ming still wasn't able to fully become aware of it, so it was completely useless for him to tell others of what he knew. Even those World Kings who understood the composition of matter to a degree wouldn't be able to pass these understandings to their disciples. This was because only by seeing the evolution of yin and yang energies, and seeing the movement and path of the particles, could one understand the inherent revolution of energy for the Laws. The rules of the Laws were nearly impossible to describe.

Now that Lin Ming had entered the third level of the Hells of Flame, the temperature of the fire origin energy astral winds here was a hundred times the temperature of magma. Normally, if a martial artist needed to resist such a high temperature they would need to consume a massive amount of energy. But, after Lin Ming had comprehended the source of Burning Heat, all he needed to do was use a bit of his own energy and slow down the tiny particles of energy within the fiery astral winds to slow them down, lowering

their heat and thus easily resist them!

Third level, 7000 miles...

Third level, 8000 miles...

Lin Ming continued to rush downwards. As time passed, everyone who had been laughing at Lin Ming had shut up. In truth, 8000 miles into the third level wasn't much at all – it was similar to Huo Yanguang's current progress. But, none of them forgot that Lin Ming's comprehension of the Fire Laws had been extremely weak. Moreover, he had spent the last year in seclusion perceiving the chaos stones. The chaos stones did not discuss something as specific as the Concept of Fire, but were a general outline of the Laws within the entire universe. They were all-encompassing, holding all ideas, and yet being obscure and nearly impossible to discern. If one meditated on the chaos stones, just how much would they be able to enhance their comprehension of the Concept of Fire?

If it was said that Lin Ming had meditated on the Extreme Dao Heaven Tablet to reach this depth then no one would have been surprised. But he had managed to make such progress after meditating on the chaos stones; it was simply beyond anyone's understanding.

“How could this be... Lin Ming has actually made so much progress in the last year? If he continues then he'll break through to the fourth level and reach Xiao Whitesnow's level.” A Charming Phoenix Palace disciple said with incredulity in her voice.

“Humph, Lin Ming is still the number one talent of Phoenix Cry Palace after all. Even if his enlightenment in Laws is lacking, he is still able to rely on his deep true essence to make up for that deficit. This doesn’t mean anything at all. Once he reaches the fourth level, the difficulty will shoot up to another level and he won’t be able to continue so languidly anymore. When Littlemoon came out of seclusion she also reached the fourth level!” Chu Redcloud sneered.

At this time, Lin Ming had already traveled 9000 miles into the third level; he would soon pass into the fourth level.

At this depth, Lin Ming began to slow down, he didn’t blaze downwards like before. After reaching 9500 miles, his speed was only 20% of what it was at the start. This was because he needed time to enlighten himself on the source of the Burning Heat Concept. He needed to reaffirm and sort out the understandings he had obtained from the Law fragments in Totem Tower.

None of them had thought perfection was not the ultimate limit of Concepts. It was more precise to say that the comprehension of Laws never had a limit to begin with.

Even though Lin Ming had comprehended the essence of burning heat, his understanding still hadn’t reached the limit. There were different particles and they all had different properties and moved differently, and all of them needed to be carefully thought over.

The Laws of the universe were unimaginably vast. Even an

Empyrean would never be able to comprehend one ten thousandth of their complete exquisiteness. The only thing that a martial artist could do was solidify their foundation as much as possible. Only when one's foundation was solid would they be able to deduce and comprehend higher boundaries of Laws.

“Honorable Master was right. Lin Ming is really slowing down.” Many Charming Phoenix Palace disciples echoed out. “If this continues then the fourth level will be his limit.”

Chu Redcloud stroked her hair as she looked at the fire spirit mirror in the sky. She muttered to herself, “This brat has quite the ability. He was able to perceive the chaos stones to such a degree and actually reach the fourth level.”

9500 miles...

9600 miles...

9700 miles...

Lin Ming's speed became increasingly slow. What he needed was not to break through in a single go, to demonstrate his strength, nor to bathe in the adulation and praise of others. What he needed was to use the 18 Hells of Flame to temper his understanding of Laws, precipitating everything he had accumulated and make a breakthrough!

Bang!

Lin Ming officially broke through the 9999 mile mark of the third level and entered the fourth level of the Hells of Flame.

Then, fourth level 2000 miles, fourth level 3000 miles, fourth level 4000 miles! Without noticing it, Lin Ming's depth had already surpassed Xiao Whitesnow's! But, his speed also slowed down. Although he had become extremely slow, to the point that others would have thought he would stop at any moment, he still continued downwards without stopping.

At this point, the martial artists present slowly turned from surprise to stunned awe. Lin Ming had actually surpassed Xiao Whitesnow?

Xiao Whitesnow had meditated on the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet, a totem stone that was only inferior to the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. Moreover, Xiao Whitesnow was a balanced genius: he was decent in both combat and Laws. But now, in terms of Laws, he had been surpassed by Lin Ming!

How could this be? Lin Ming had clearly meditated on the chaos stones in Totem Tower for an entire year. Could he really have managed to perceive some things from the chaos stones?

On Phoenix Cry Palace's side, Sun Cyprestar was pleasantly surprised as he gazed at the fire spirit mirror in the air. Lin Ming's performance was far better than what he had expected!

“He actually surpassed Xiao Whitesnow. This brat Lin Ming, I

wonder just what he was able to perceive in this last year. It's really unbelievable. Even if he is defeated now, I'll still be satisfied in his progress." Sun Cyprestar still couldn't understand what was happening. Lin Ming had meditated over the chaos stones in Totem Tower for the last year, so how could he manage to comprehend any truths about the Fire Laws from the chaos stones?

The scene that appeared within the fire spirit mirror was only a virtual projection. With Sun Cyprestar's boundary, he wasn't able to fully assess Lin Ming's situation from this virtual projection. But high in the air, what Monarch Sweetfox was able to see was a completely different scene.

Monarch Sweetfox also had the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Without a doubt, out of everyone present, she was the one with the deepest comprehension of the Fire Laws.

She stared at Lin Ming, her thin eyebrows pressed together.

"Am I seeing things? All the way until the fourth floor Lin Ming has only used the Concept of Burning Heat. He hasn't even touched the Concept of Annihilation or the Concept of Creation."

This was completely beyond common sense. Generally speaking, in the third level one had to face a temperature so high that it would instantly evaporate tempered gold. One had to use the Concept of Creation to transform that energy into something more palatable. If one used the Concept of Burning Heat and their control was lacking, then that would be adding fuel to the fire!

“What’s wrong?” Duke Golden Sword casually asked as he saw Monarch Sweetfox frown. He had always been a greenhorn when it came to Laws and Concepts. Even if he saw Lin Ming up close in person rushing through the 18 Hells of Flame, he would only be able to come up with some general observations. And now that he was looking at this scene from the fire spirit mirror, he could only be a spectator that was watching for fun.

“No... nothing’s wrong.” Monarch Sweetfox shook her head.

Duke Gold Sword thought that Monarch Sweetfox was not too optimistic about Lin Ming. He chuckled and said, “Are you dissatisfied with Lin Ming’s results? This boy Lin Ming’s comprehension of Fire Laws is only ordinary. Of course he cannot compare to the past you. But that doesn’t matter. One’s true ability can only be seen in the heat of combat. That is the only strength that matters. This boy is exactly to my tastes. This time I will definitely give him some pointers. Perhaps in the future I can transfer him to my Disciplinary Enforcement Division.”

The Disciplinary Enforcement Division was a troop directly subordinate to the Disciplinary Elder. They were equal to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s Nine Furnace Guard. They wielded the authority of enforcing laws and their power and influence was terrifyingly great. In the Disciplinary Enforcement Division, every single member was a peak master that excelled in combat. Duke Golden Sword was the captain of the Disciplinary Enforcement Division and also the successor to be the next Disciplinary Elder. The Disciplinary Enforcement Division were treated exceedingly well and were provided with many, many resources. Duke Golden Sword had no reason to believe that Lin Ming would refuse his offer.

“This is still ordinary?” Monarch Sweetfox echoed Duke Golden Sword’s words. Her delicate and beautiful eyelids trembled for a brief moment as a ridiculous idea popped up in her mind. But she shook her head, immediately denying it. “I’m just imagining things.”

Time passed a minute and second at a time. After two hours passed, Lin Ming’s speed became increasingly slow. When he reached 7000 miles into the fourth level, he simply stopped where he was. It was unknown just what he was doing.

He seemed to be accumulating his strength and perceiving something. A moment later, he even sat cross-legged in the air, his eyes closed in meditation!

This left all the people waiting in the square flabbergasted. Just what was Lin Ming doing? Normally, a martial artist would take advantage of their momentum and rush down as far as they could in a single go. But Lin Ming had actually stopped where he was. Wasn’t he just wasting his energy?

Chapter 1016 – Another Breakthrough

On normal days, one would stay at certain depths of the 18 Hells of Flame if they planned on deliberately using the fire origin energy within to temper their understanding of Laws.

But in this circumstance with everyone watching, a martial artist rushing through was the same as a farmer picking up a massive sack of grain and rushing to drop it off. They wouldn't be able to hold the sack for long and would have to take advantage of their momentum to go as far as they could. Who had ever heard of a farmer who held onto the sack and sat down in meditation? Wasn't this just a waste of strength?

None of the present disciples were aware that Lin Ming was peacefully perceiving the Concepts of Annihilation and Creation. With the Chaos Laws as a foundation, he was able to deeply grasp the truths of these two Concepts.

Creation and Annihilation were two sides of the same coin. Even though they were opposites, they actually complemented each other, each unable to exist without the other.

If there was creation, then sooner or later there would be annihilation. In order for there to be annihilation, there first had to be creation.

From the small ants that crawled over the ground, to the beasts that wandered the woods, to the nations of the world, to the great Holy Land sects, to the giant celestial bodies in the heavens, to the

boundless universe itself, nothing was able to escape from the logic of these Laws!

Even the scene that Lin Ming saw in the chaos stones, that of the universe being born, was simply an interpretation of these two Laws.

The universe was created from nothing, and from creation it would flow towards the end of annihilation, turning into nothingness once more. Then, the universe would be created again, annihilated again, repeating endlessly and infinitely...

As Lin Ming was meditating, thousands of inspirations flashed through his mind. He slowly contrasted them to the Law fragments of the chaos stones, perceiving them one at a time. He suddenly felt as if something in his mind snapped, and in that instant he obtained mastery of those two Concepts.

From Creation to Annihilation, when all was added together, that was samsara!

After perceiving the dual Concepts of Creation and Annihilation, Lin Ming's eyes flashed open. All around him fire origin energy was annihilated and created, similar to limitless flowers blooming and wilting, growing and dying...

Every small flame was a single point of creation and annihilation. Every small flame was its own samsara!

Fifth level of the Hells of Flame, break through!

In that instant, Lin Ming's speed suddenly shot up. In just several breaths of time, his velocity rapidly increased to over a dozen times the speed of sound. He was even faster than when he first entered the 18 Hells of Flame!

“What!?!?”

No one imagined that Lin Ming's speed would shoot up like a rising hurricane. It had to be known that in the Hells of Flame, although one had to take advantage of their momentum to rush as deep as they could, the faster they went, the fiercer the fiery astral winds would become, and the greater the pressure on one's protective true essence would be.

Dozens of times the speed of sound meant that Lin Ming could pass over a hundred miles in a breath of time. Such a speed was similar to a falling meteor! When a meteor fell, its excessive speed would cause it to burn in the air due to friction. Although it didn't take long to crash into the ground, the high temperature that scorched the meteor would often completely destroy it!

And, what Lin Ming burst through was not ordinary air, but fierce astral winds of Fire Spirit Star that were over a hundred times hotter than magma. Just what would the result of that be?

The pressure that temperature put on his protective true essence could be imagined!

If one didn't understand the Concept of Fire and depended on just their own strength to resist this, then not even a middle or late Divine Transformation realm powerhouse would be able to withstand it!

A hundred miles per breath of time – that was a thousand miles per 10 breaths of time!

8000 miles!

9000 miles!

9900 miles!

Fifth level, shatter the barrier!

Bang!

With unstoppable momentum, Lin Ming directly broke into the fifth level of the Flames of Hells, shooting straight for the sixth!

“He... he broke through to the fifth level?” Chu Redcloud gulped. Her eyes were wide open as she stared at the fire spirit mirror in the sky with abject horror. She had only been a bit shocked when Lin Ming had reached 9000 miles into the third level, and even after Lin Ming broke through to the fourth level she had only been stunned.

But now, she was beginning to feel fear creeping into her heart.

Yan Littlemoon could break through to the fifth level, but she absolutely could not do it at over a dozen times the speed of sound! If this meant that Lin Ming had already surpassed Yan Littlemoon, that was something that Chu Redcloud could absolutely not accept. “He has obviously been meditating on the chaos stones in Totem Tower for the last year. The chaos stones are only a general outline of the Laws, and moreover they are extremely mysterious and difficult to perceive. And, what Littlemoon meditated on was the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, the absolute best totem stone in Fire Spirit Star. Not just that, but Littlemoon’s understanding of the Fire Laws surpassed Lin Ming’s to begin with, so how could the likes of him actually surpass her!? I cannot, I will not believe this!”

“How can this be happening? Lin Ming had obviously slowed to a crawl, so how could his speed suddenly rise by so much!” Many disciples of Charming Phoenix Palace were also confused. They had thought that Lin Ming had already reached his limits.

As for the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace, Xiao Whitesnow, or even Sun Cyprestar, all of them were bewildered. Lin Ming’s process of breaking through was too strange. He had been extremely fast at the beginning but then he had quickly slowed down, even stopping motionless for a brief moment. Then, his speed had crazily shot up and he had rushed through in a single go. Just what was going on here?

Let alone Sun Cyprestar being confused, even Duke Golden Sword was floored by Lin Ming’s performance. It was said that Lin Ming excelled in actual combat, so when did his comprehension of

Laws become so kick ass? When Duke Golden Sword rushed through the 18 Hells of Flame himself, he had only managed to reach the fifth level and that was at the very end of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. Now, Lin Ming had accomplished the same with still an entire year to go.

Duke Golden Sword's eyes were wide as he looked at the fire spirit mirror in the sky. Then, he turned to Monarch Sweetfox and asked, "Sweetfox, um... what is going on here... I'm a bit confused. Why did that boy's speed suddenly shoot up so much and so suddenly? If he had this ability to begin with then why was his speed slow like a snail just then?"

Sweetfox had an extremely complex look on her face. She looked up at the fire spirit mirror in the sky and took a deep breath. It seemed that her earlier feelings had been correct. Underneath the gaze of everyone, this brat Lin Ming was taking this attempt through the 18 Hells of Flame as his personal smelting trial. Not only did he consider this a test, but he was also training himself within it!

If this were just a test, then all that mattered was how far he could go. But in order to perceive and train in the Laws, one needed to consume strength. The results would be worse than if one solely rushed down as far as possible.

"This brat Lin Ming, the reason his speed was slower at the beginning was that he was enlightening himself on the Laws, and slowly confirming his own comprehension of the Fire Laws one at a time within the Hells of Flame. He should have used the pressure of the astral winds within the Hells of Flame to complete the final

process of sublimation and integration...”

Monarch Sweetfox had an extremely deep understanding of Laws and Concepts. When she rushed through the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial as a rookie disciple, she was a character that had managed to reach the sixth level. By combining her previous knowledge with what she saw now, she quickly came to understand what Lin Ming was doing and for what reason he was doing it.

“What? We are testing him and yet he’s taking this chance to train? This brat is too crazy! He clearly doesn’t place our test in his eyes!” Duke Golden Sword shouted out, looking a bit angry. But, this was only to maintain appearances. Deep down in his heart, he actually very much appreciated the daring and crazy nature of this Lin Ming.

Monarch Sweetfox said, “It’s better to say that Lin Ming just came out from Totem Tower and he wasn’t able to convert those comprehensions of Laws he gained into something applicable in true combat. He is grasping this opportunity, finding a turning point to completely master his understandings. It was inconceivable that he was meditating on the chaos stones for an entire year!”

What Monarch Sweetfox said was right. The reason that Lin Ming had suddenly accelerated was to draw support from the violent fiery astral winds of the 18 Hells of Flame to fuse the Fire Laws within himself, further increasing his strength.

In the first three level Concepts of Fire, Burning Heat,

Annihilation, and Creation, in just these three low level Fire Concepts, Lin Ming's comprehension of them surpassed that of all other young disciples present. His comprehension of them even surpassed that of Divine Transformation realm powerhouses like White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun. This was the difference from the heights at which they understood the Concepts. One understood the origin of the Concepts, while the other only understood how to apply them. Of course, the disparity would be great.

And having comprehended these Concepts to this degree, Lin Ming actually had a deeper idea in mind: that was to fuse the three levels of Concepts together!

When one's Concepts reached an extremely high level, they could be fused together. Lin Ming had long ago understood this point. Let alone fusing the various level Concepts within the Fire Laws, even completely different Laws could be fused together!

For instance, fire and thunder, or time and space.

However, when Lin Ming had fused a thunder-attribute cultivation method and a fire-attribute cultivation method together to create an explosive attack move, that was actually not the fusion of the Laws themselves. That could at best be called combining the Laws.

But even a simple combination was actually able to multiply their total might. If one could truly fuse them together then the power could be imagined.

Lin Ming didn't have any hopes of fully fusing the Fire Concepts together. What he wanted was to find a small chance today to slightly fuse them. Everything was difficult at the start. Just finding the tiniest starting point would be enough.

Fifth level, 2000 miles.

Fifth level, 3000 miles.

Fifth level, 4000 miles!

Every 10 breaths of time, Lin Ming would pass a thousand miles deeper. At this point, even Lin Ming felt a tremendous pressure on him. This was nearly the same as flying through the surface of the sun at high speeds. Even he found it difficult to continue.

But under such tremendous pressure, Lin Ming felt a massive advantage.

All of the Concept and Law fragments within his body seemed to melt away, fusing deeper into him, becoming one with his organs, flesh, blood, and bones!

Faint traces of inscriptions began to carve themselves into Lin Ming's bone, forming mysterious runes. In a sense, Lin Ming's body itself was becoming a totem stone, it was only that his understanding of Concepts was too shallow. If he died now and his bones were pulled out, then others would be able to meditate on them.

At 5000 miles into the fifth level, Lin Ming began to slow down. Even so, his velocity was still at least a dozen times the speed of sound.

And, 6000 miles into the fifth level had been Yan Littlemoon's limit!

If Lin Ming could break past that depth, then that meant he had surpassed Yan Littlemoon.

And with Lin Ming's current speed, it was likely he would shatter that record without stopping!

In that moment, every martial artist watched Lin Ming with breath abated.

Yan Littlemoon gripped her fists together, her large eyes shining as she stared at the fire spirit mirror in the sky.

"Lin Ming will actually eclipse me? How could that be? My Concepts and Laws were far ahead of his by a large margin at the start, and I also have the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. I even meditated on the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, the best totem stone in Totem Tower. He meditated on the chaos stones and he should have learnt nothing from those obscure and mystical objects. A year later, I should have flung him even farther away, but now, he will actually transcend me? How could this be...?"

Yan Littlemoon couldn't accept this, and Chu Redcloud couldn't either. Everyone's eyes remained wide and unblinking. Lin Ming's speed had dropped to 10 times the speed of sound, but 10 times the speed of sound was still amazing. That was 20 miles every breath of time!

No matter what Yan Littlemoon or Chu Redcloud were thinking at this moment, neither of them could affect Lin Ming. In a single final breath he rushed past the 6000 mile mark of the fifth level, breaking through without a single hitch!

Chapter 1017 – Bloom For Me, Heretical God Sprout!

“He broke through! He has surpassed Yan Littlemoon!”

As everyone watched Lin Ming rush forwards with unstoppable momentum, no one suspected that he wouldn't be able to break through the fifth level 6000 mile distance. Even so, as they watched him break that marker, all the martial artists felt as if they were caught up in a dream. Yan Littlemoon had the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline and had meditated on the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. In their eyes, she was a nearly insurmountable existence. Even so, such a person was brutally flung behind by Lin Ming!

Moreover, after surpassing Yan Littlemoon, Lin Ming's speed was still 10 times the speed of sound!

As Yan Littlemoon saw Lin Ming shatter the fifth level 6000 mile distance, she suddenly began to tremble. She bit her lips. In that instant, a strange feeling began to swell up in her heart. Although she was well aware that her talent wasn't amazing when placed within the entire Divine Realm, she still couldn't bear that the record she just set had been mercilessly broken by a youth that was around the same age she was. And a year ago this youth was still far behind her!

Yan Littlemoon could accept it if she was inferior to others from the start, but she couldn't accept that she had been overshadowed by someone who had been far weaker than she was a year ago. This severely crushed and ruined her glory and pride!

This sort of situation caused even her own confidence to waver. She inevitably developed suspicions about herself. She suspected, was she really a proud daughter of heaven within her generation? If she was, then how could she be so different from others?

Fifth level 7000 miles, fifth level 8000 miles, Lin Ming flew deeper and deeper down, passing 20 miles with a single breath of time. In an incense stick worth of time, that was 2000 miles!

At 8000 miles into the fifth level, the surrounding temperature suddenly shot up to 200 times the temperature of magma. Not just that, but as Lin Ming passed through the wild friction of the fire origin energy within the Hells of Flame at breakneck speed, it was a pressure that even a top grade saint artifact would find difficult to withstand!

But Lin Ming was able to withstand it. It wasn't that his defensive ability was tougher than a top grade saint artifact's, but he used the Fire Laws to continuously resolve the burning power of fire.

All of the martial artists present were already left speechless. This momentum... was he really going to break through to the sixth level?

A genius that could break through to the sixth level of the 18 Hells of Flame only appeared within Fire Spirit Star once in every 1000 years! In the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan with the three great families and the 72 palaces combined, that meant that such a talent

would appear every 20-30 years. These people had an extremely high hope of becoming a Palace Master in the future!

And, those geniuses had only passed through the sixth level at the end of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial.

As for now, the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial was only half finished. Yan Littlemoon had only made it 6000 miles into the fifth level, but Lin Ming would soon enter the sixth level!

If this continued, then there was a chance that Lin Ming could attack the seventh level before the smelting trial ended. This was simply an unimaginable feat!

“The seventh level of the Hells of Flame is the legendary domain of god!” A disciple mumbled to himself. To a rookie disciple, the 18 Hells of Flame’s seventh level was called the domain of god. The reason it had such a name was that anyone who managed to step into the seventh level as a rookie disciple would have a high chance of becoming the Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan in the future. That was the same as a god to the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan!

“The beast! The madman! I really can’t understand what just happened. How did he manage to perceive such exquisite Fire Laws from the chaos stones!?”

“No wonder Lin Ming dared to ask about what the standards were for the phoenix blood essence. It seems that Lin Ming really has a high chance of completing the Thousand Slaughter! Even

though he might not be able to do it now, a year from now he can achieve that goal at the end of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial!”

“Phoenix blood essence... I can’t even dream of that...”

As the phoenix blood essence was mentioned, all of the disciples revealed expressions of desire and envy. Let alone phoenix blood essence, even a drop of phoenix heart blood would make them ecstatic with joy. Beyond that, for phoenix marrow blood and phoenix coronet blood, that was even more unimaginable. And for phoenix blood essence, that was no different from a fairy tale to them. It was the same as a common farmer looking up at the throne of the emperor; it would forever be a distant dream, always out of reach.

As these disciples were speaking, Lin Ming finally broke through the end of the fifth level and flew into the sixth!

In the sixth level the temperature of the flames soared up by a ridiculous degree, reaching 300 times the temperature of magma! And in the space of the sixth level, the fire origin energy actually condensed into tiny dao diagrams that were swept up in the astral winds and impacted towards Lin Ming.

The fire origin energy in the sixth level was no longer simply blazing and tyrannical, but condensed into postcelestial dao diagrams that attacked all intruders!

If the fire origin energy before the sixth level was a group of straggling and scattered soldiers, then from the sixth level, the fire

origin energy turned into tight phalanxes, multiplying their power and rushing forwards!

The pressure of the sixth level was incomparable to that of the fifth!

Since ancient times, countless outstanding and extraordinary heroes of the Ancient Phoenix Clan had been stopped at the sixth level. There was only an extremely tiny minority that managed to break through to the seventh level. As for Xiao Daoji and Huang Yuefeng, both of them were at the eighth stage of Life Destruction when they just barely managed to break into the seventh level.

Even Lin Ming now felt the pressure on his body double and triple and his speed plummeting.

“The sixth level. Lin Ming’s speed has already slowed down to the speed of sound. He should be able to reach 1000-2000 miles into the sixth floor, but as for entering the seventh floor, that is simply impossible. However, he has a chance of accomplishing that before the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ends. There really is a chance that he can obtain the drop of phoenix blood essence. Lin Ming has the capital to challenge the standards sent down by headquarters!”

In the skies, Monarch Sweetfox said out loud as her unblinking eyes were locked onto the fire spirit mirror.

Monarch Sweetfox had an extremely accurate grasp of the Fire Laws. When Lin Ming had been hiding his strength, she had managed to see through him. She didn’t speak out at the time

because she couldn't believe her own eyes. But Lin Ming wasn't able to hide his strength any longer, because he was relying on the pressure of the Hells of Flame to fuse the three levels of Fire Concepts together.

Monarch Sweetfox also had extremely good judgement. To the present Lin Ming, the greater the pressure the better. If he hid his strength right now then the pressure on him would be insufficient and he would fail at his fusion attempts.

He had already consumed a massive amount of energy. Even with the Gate of Healing supporting him, he was still reaching his limit. With a light crackling sound, breaches began to appear in Lin Ming's protective true essence.

“Mm? He still hasn't slowed down?”

Monarch Sweetfox's eyebrows shot up. Although the speed of sound wasn't fast, the fire origin energy of the sixth level was extremely explosive and dangerous. Even at the speed of sound, the pressure he would have to withstand was tremendous. Lin Ming's smartest move was to drop down to the speed of sound. Only like this would he be able to go further. Otherwise, Lin Ming wouldn't have been able to even reach 1000 miles into the sixth level.

“I understand now. Lin Ming's fusion of Laws has reached the critical point. If he slows down now then he'll fail, but if he continues at this speed then he won't be able to withstand it either.”

If Lin Ming slowed down then the pressure on him would be reduced. But, his fusion of the three Fire Concepts was reaching the key moment. If he slowed down now then he would fail at the end. This was similar to turning down the fire right before a pot of water reached the boiling point!

If he gave up now then all his previous efforts would be wasted!

But wasn't wanting to continue easier said than done?

Now all that remained to be seen was whether or not Lin Ming could complete the initial fusion of Concepts before his protective true essence shattered. If he was able to fuse them together, then even if he failed immediately afterwards, he would still absolutely be able to break through to the seventh floor within the next year!

If Lin Ming could then complete the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array, he would be able to obtain the drop of phoenix blood essence, a treasure that could cause the countless heroic young elites, Elders, and Palace Masters of the Ancient Phoenix Clan to go crazy with want!

Ka ka ka!

The cracks in Lin Ming's protective true essence grew larger and larger even as more of them appeared. But, the fusion of Concepts was always a single step away from success. Monarch Sweetfox sighed. "What a pity. He's just a step away from success. The first attempt is always the best. If Lin Ming is able to succeed in fusing

the Concepts on his first try, then he will be able to save a massive amount of time in his comprehension of Laws.”

Monarch Sweetfox’s voice was slow and quiet. But now, because everyone was focused on watching Lin Ming rush towards the seventh level, all of them were silent. Thus, her voice was heard far and wide.

As the martial artists present heard Monarch Sweetfox’s explanation, only then did they figure out what Lin Ming was doing. As for Duke Golden Sword and Sun Cypressstar, they felt sorry for Lin Ming. Even so, in terms of achievements alone at this moment, Lin Ming was far beyond Xiao Daoji and Huang Yuefeng of the past!

As everyone thought that Lin Ming’s attempt to fuse the Concepts would have a miserable end, he was focused on his own struggle. He completely converged all of his soul force, pouring his entire being into his dantian!

Lin Ming’s star-like eyes blazed with a dazzling incandescence!

“Bloom for me, Heretical God Sprout!”

Wuu –

Within Lin Ming, his spiritual sea began to violently seethe and tumble as his gold battle spirit roared out. All around Lin Ming, the fire origin energy astral winds began breaking into his body

but were actually suppressed by a pale gold power. The wild and fierce fire energy was forcefully tamed as it rushed into his meridians, surging towards his dantian like a rising tide.

The fire origin energy of the sixth level was too rich. It gathered together at a maddening speed, and within this raging inferno of energy, the Heretical God Sprout began to slowly stretch out its leaves.

“What? What is that!?” Duke Golden Sword’s eyes widened.

“Heavens! That is... that is a gold battle spirit!!? A sixth stage Life Destruction junior actually comprehended a gold battle spirit? That is simply... inconceivable!!!”

A gold battle spirit was something that normally only a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse would be able to comprehend. Moreover, only an outstanding Divine Transformation genius would be able to do so. For instance, Phoenix Hall disciples, Phoenix Hall Protectors, and so forth.

As for those worse Divine Transformation realm powerhouses, such as the Ancient Devil that had attached itself to Yang Yun, they only managed to comprehend a perfect silver battle spirit.

Only a single step separated a perfect silver battle spirit and a gold battle spirit. But, this single step was as far away as the horizon – they simply couldn’t be compared!

And at this time, as Monarch Sweetfox closed her eyes, her voice actually had a faint tremble to it.

“Not only is that a gold battle spirit, but within Lin Ming’s body there is also some kind of Law phenomenon!”

Out of all the martial artists present, and in fact, out of all the martial artists and supreme elders that Lin Ming had ever encountered before, excluding Empyrean Primordius and the ancient goddess who had died, out of all the ones living, Monarch Sweetfox was the person with the greatest comprehension of Laws. Her understanding surpassed even Fairy Feng’s!

She could feel some sort of phenomenon occurring within Lin Ming’s body that belonged to the Fire Laws. Perhaps there was even another Law phenomenon within him! This sort of phenomenon was similar to the Blue Lotus Domain or Lotus Blooming Step by Step. But, the rank was far higher. In fact, there was no comparing them at all!

Chapter 1018 – Fusing the Three Concepts

“What? Law phenomenon?” Duke Golden Sword was startled as he heard Monarch Sweetfox speak. “What sort of phenomenon?”

“I have no idea. I’ve never seen it before!” Monarch Sweetfox shook her head.

There were all sorts of phenomena that a martial artist could produce, and they were separated into many different categories. Among them were some directly related to combat, and some related to Laws.

Martial artists had different bloodlines, talent, good fortunes, bad fortunes, destiny, physique, perception of Laws, cultivation methods, and thousands upon thousands of other variables that were always changing. Thus, there were countless different phenomena that could appear within a martial artist, so it wasn’t strange for Monarch Sweetfox to encounter one she hadn’t experienced before.

The Blue Lotus Domain and Lotus Blooming Step by Step could be considered types of phenomenon. The definition of a phenomenon was extremely broad, and even vague.

Back on the Sky Spill Continent when Lin Ming fought with Situ Yaoyue, she had the Extreme Violet Dantian, thus she could form the Extreme Violet Domain. That could also be considered a type of phenomenon. When he fought with Whitedemon, Whitedemon had been able to use his hydra bloodline to form a hydra phantom;

this was also a type of phenomenon.

Phenomena were divided into varying quality, with those that were better and those that were weaker. A low level phenomenon wasn't anything at all, but a high level phenomenon like Lotus Blooming Step by Step was impressive enough to amaze others.

And above Lotus Blooming Step by Step there were even more extraordinary phenomena. For instance, some phenomena were directly involved with a martial artist's inner world. There were some Divine Lord realm powerhouses that had a phenomenon where their inner world was 10 times greater and 10 times tougher than others'. And, the source of a Divine Lord powerhouse's strength was the heaven and earth origin energy condensed within their inner world, as well as the worship of those existences within. If there was a 10 times difference in inner worlds, then the disparity in combat strength could be imagined.

As for the phenomenon occurring within Lin Ming's body, Monarch Sweetfox had never seen or heard of it before. Even so, he was able to swallow the wild fire origin energy within the Hells of Flame's sixth level, and he was even able to affect the surrounding revolution of Fire Laws around him. Thus, the rank of this phenomenon could be imagined!

“Just what adventures has Lin Ming gone through, what experiences and what fortuitous encounters has he had? The strength of his bloodline is clearly so light, yet why was he able to comprehend such a formidable phenomenon?”

Monarch Sweetfox muttered to herself. “If it was said that Lin

Ming has some amazingly powerful Law phenomenon within his body, then in addition to his marvelous perception, him obtaining such comprehensions is... no, I still can't believe it. This can only be described as... a monstrous genius!"

As Monarch Sweetfox was marveling over the Law phenomenon within Lin Ming's body, all of the other martial artists present were gawking at Lin Ming's gold battle spirit. In truth, they simply weren't able to feel or make out the phenomenon of the Heretical God Sprout.

They knew that Lin Ming was a battle spirit genius. Moreover, he had used that as his foundation to perfectly open the Gate of Opening, gaining a perception that transcended common understanding.

But, no one imagined that Lin Ming would be able to push his battle spirit into the gold level at just the sixth stage of Life Destruction!

There was a fundamental difference between a gold battle spirit and a silver battle spirit.

A silver battle spirit could be used to strengthen a martial artist's attacks, but it wasn't a decisive and direct factor in a martial artist's combat strength. Its greatest function in a fight between martial artists of similar boundaries was to strengthen weapons, making them sharper and more durable. If two martial artists fought and one of them had their weapon cut off, how could the battle continue?

However, if both sides had a high-grade saint artifact, then the effect of a battle spirit would be greatly weakened. This was because an ordinary Life Destruction or Divine Sea martial artist didn't have the ability to destroy a high-grade saint artifact in a collision of weapons.

A silver battle spirit could be said to only be improving on perfection.

But a gold battle spirit was different. Once one achieved a gold battle spirit, the battle spirit would be so powerful that it could form a projection of their world of will and affect the real world.

From a silver battle spirit to a golden battle spirit, there was a great moat that separated them. And to cross over this moat, one needed to accumulate a massive amount of energy and experience. But Lin Ming had managed to form his gold battle spirit at the sixth stage of Life Destruction. How could this not cause the other young disciples who labeled themselves as geniuses to feel powerless and frustrated?

In the sixth level of the Hells of Flame, a sea of fire filled the world. Lin Ming was completely unaware of everything happening in Totem Tower's square as he focused his concentration on fusing the Concepts.

Heretical God Sprout – !

Three flame leaves!

Three thunder leaves!

Of the three flame leaves, one was shaped like a heart, one was shaped like a stone tablet, and the last was shaped like a blue lotus.

Of the three thunder leaves, one was shaped like a sword, one was shaped like a golden tripod with a purple lion relief carved into it, and the last was shaped like a sovereign heavy sword.

The six leaves each represented a different Law. At this time, all of these leaves emitted a luminous light, continuously swallowing up all the surging fire origin within Lin Ming's body! At this moment, the fire origin energy that was able to destroy all life was nothing but fertile land to the Heretical God Sprout!

The fire origin energy of the Hells of Flame's sixth level was extremely fierce. But, underneath the dual suppression of the gold battle spirit's world of will projection and the Heretical God Sprout, this formed a tentative balance within Lin Ming's body. And the moment that this balance was reached, there was a change within the three levels of Concepts in Lin Ming's body. In this blazing hot heat, there were all sorts of wondrous changes!

If one used their senses to investigate Lin Ming's body, then they would discover that there were runes appearing on Lin Ming's skeleton. These runes began to shine. They symbolized the first three levels of Concepts of the Fire Laws!

Originally, Lin Ming's Laws were etched onto the Heretical God

Sprout where they condensed into little totem runes. But now, Lin Ming had perceived the Laws and the Heretical God Sprout took a supporting role. Thus, the Law runes naturally inscribed themselves onto his body instead, where they formed mysterious marks on his bones.

These runes were carved onto Lin Ming's bones and flesh. But now it seemed as if they were melting together, fusing as one.

The runes on his bones were of three different colors. The rune that symbolizing the Concept of Burning Heat was a vivid red, the rune that symbolized the Concept of Annihilation was black red, and the rune that symbolized the Concept of Creation was blue green. And now, these three runes were gathering on top of Lin Ming's bones, fusing together as one. This was different from when Lin Ming created his martial skills in Thunderfire Annihilation and Penetrating Rainbow; they were only a combination of the Concepts of Thunder and Fire. But what was happening within his body, on his bones, was a true Law fusion!

“Lin Ming, he... he succeeded!?”

Monarch Sweetfox sucked in a breath of cold air. From perceiving the Fire Laws, to impacting the sixth level of the Hells of Flame, and now where he began the preliminary fusion of three different levels of Concepts, everything that happened to Lin Ming today was simply a legend!

Because of Lin Ming's abnormally fierce perception, the Heretical God Sprout's ability to control the power of fire, and also the effect that the Primordius martial intent had on the Chaos Laws that

allowed Lin Ming to perceive the chaos stones and see the evolution of matter and energy, and also the forming of the universe, all of these powerful advantages had resulted in this present miracle.

Of course, this was inseparable from Lin Ming's solid foundation. If it weren't for his impossibly deep true essence and his meridians that were tough to a ridiculous level that allowed him to withstand the violent and tyrannical power of fire, everything else would have been useless!

After less than half an incense stick of time, the three different kinds of runes that were etched into Lin Ming's body melted and reformed, slowly fusing into one.

The three different levels of Concepts had finally completed their preliminary fusion.

Lin Ming knew that this was only the start. The Laws of the universe were infinitely mysterious. In the future as his strength increased, his comprehension of the source of matter and the source of the universe would become increasingly deep, and this fusion would become increasingly thorough!

Even so, among all the disciples of the three branch palaces present, including even the Divine Transformation realm disciples, in terms of just the first three Concepts of the Fire Laws, Lin Ming's comprehension far surpassed all of theirs!

In the 18 Hells of Flame, the crazy and violent fire origin energy

astral winds gushed into Lin Ming's body. They were first weakened by the dual Concepts of Burning Heat and Annihilation, then transformed into pure energy by the Concept of Creation before being easily absorbed. With the strength of the three fused Concepts, the fiery astral winds were easily melted away. Lin Ming continued shooting down the 18 Hells of Flame with a near-unstoppable momentum!

Boom!

In that moment, an intense explosion blew up around Lin Ming. The thick fire origin energy around him was savagely thrown away by the shockwaves. Lin Ming's body shot down like a meteor, continuing to rush towards the Hells of Flame's seventh level!

The speed of sound...

Two times the speed of sound...

Three times the speed of sound...

All the way until 10 times the speed of sound!

Lin Ming's speed once again increased to 10 times the speed of sound!

Bang bang bang!

Because Lin Ming's speed was too quick and the dense fiery astral winds were crudely and rapidly separated by him, this caused rolling thunderclaps to fill the air, reverberating within the interior of Fire Spirit Star. Everyone standing on the ground could feel the earth beneath them tremble, as if an earthquake was happening!

Sixth level 2000 miles, sixth level 3000 miles, sixth level 4000 miles, the depth rapidly increased!

The three branch palace's disciples, as well as the several Elders present, were completely dumbfounded, some of them panic-stricken. They didn't know what sort of change had happened in Lin Ming's body just now. All they saw was Lin Ming coming to a near standstill in the purgatory like flames of the sixth level. Then, his speed shot up and he began rushing towards the center of Fire Spirit star with unstoppable momentum!

Fire Spirit Star was a massive planet that gathered an infinite amount of wild and raging fire origin energy from all over. Although it was a planet, the truth was that the temperature and intensity within the core was no less than that of a small sun. But now, Lin Ming was passing through the sixth level with monstrous speed, as if he were flying through the skies of a windswept prairie!

“This...”

“This defies the heavens! This goes against heaven's will!”

“Didn't Lin Ming reach his limit? Why did he suddenly break out

with such speed? Was he hiding his strength just now?” Many disciples didn’t know just what happened to Lin Ming.

“That’s impossible... Lin Ming should have completed a breakthrough just now. He is truly a monstrous genius... in the trial of the 18 Hells of Flame, everyone is giving their all to go as deep as they can go. They already thank the heavens and earth if they can display their best results. But now, Lin Ming actually used this time to make a breakthrough in such a dangerous situation... monster... he is a monster!”

The one who spoke was White Daohong. Towards this junior-apprentice brother of his, White Daohong had to admit complete defeat. After a few more years he would have to leave Phoenix Hall and become a Hall Protector. This would be his last Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. Even so, he had no regrets. He never imagined that during his last smelting trial he would be able to personally witness something that would be forever recorded in the annals of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s history.

“Is he going to break through to the seventh level in a single attempt?”

Lu Xiaoyun sucked in a cold breath as she mumbled to herself. And behind Lu Xiaoyun was Yan Littlemoon.

Yan Littlemoon was pale and her lips were gently trembling. If there was someone present that had the strongest changes in emotions due to the miracles being created by Lin Ming, that would be Yan Littlemoon.

Today would be a day that would be eternally engraved into Yan Littlemoon's mind. She would never be able to forget it!

Chapter 1019 – Hells of Flame's Seventh Level, The Domain of God

Rumble rumble rumble!

With irresistible momentum, Lin Ming broke through to the sixth level 5000 miles distance!

The Ancient Phoenix Clan used every 5000 miles as a separate grade. The sixth level 5000 miles, even in the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan with the 72 branch palaces, three great families, and headquarters added in, was a target that was only met by a few individuals every several thousand years! It was an extremely rare occurrence!

And that was only at the end of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. To reach this goal halfway through the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, that was more difficult than ascending to the heavens!

But now Lin Ming had broken through the sixth level 5000 mile distance without slowing down at all. He continued barreling towards the seventh level of the Hells of Flame!

As everyone saw this, they were shocked numb. Using a sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation to rush into the Hells of Flame's seventh level, just what sort of wondrous feat was that!

The impossible standard that had been laid down by the Ancient

Phoenix Clan was now actually soon to be met by Lin Ming!

After successfully reaching the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, no one dared to doubt Lin Ming any longer. It was likely that Lin Ming would continue onwards to complete the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array!

It had to be known that true combat was Lin Ming's strong point, and his comprehension of Laws was his weak point.

If his weak point was still enough to reach the seventh level, then what about his strong point?

Perhaps this argument was no longer accurate. It could be said that Lin Ming no longer had a weakness.

If one had to insist, then maybe Lin Ming's weak point could only be his cultivation speed. Lin Ming was 29 years old with a sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation. Compared to other top geniuses of a similar level throughout history, he was much older!

However, this wasn't an absolute. A genius' cultivation wasn't necessarily better the faster it progressed. During the process of cultivation, if one desperately impacted towards the next realm they could certainly quickly rise in cultivation realms. But, their combat prowess might not be too amazing and their foundation could be unsteady.

During the cultivation process, if one was enlightened on all sorts

of Laws and perceived many Concepts, such as Lin Ming, and also dual cultivated in body and energy, then it would be difficult to rise in cultivation realms rapidly.

But this wasn't a problem. For someone like Lin Ming, once he stepped into Ninefall, the origin energy cloud he summoned would be titanic, and the baptism of Laws he would have to withstand would also be much greater. After undergoing this baptism of Laws and slowly verifying his comprehension, his future achievements would be unimaginable!

“Can Lin Ming really succeed in obtaining the drop of phoenix blood essence?”

Sun Cyprestar gripped his fists. He could feel his palms slick with sweat. From the depths of his heart, he hoped that Lin Ming could succeed in his endeavors and leave an endlessly glorious reputation within the tomes of history!

At this time, he had a sudden thought. He turned towards Charming Phoenix Palace's direction and saw that Chu Redcloud's face was wan as she floated in the air, her fingers gently shivering.

At the moment that Lin Ming had broken through the sixth level 5000 mile distance at 10 times the speed of sound, all of her pride, all of her machinations, and all of her cunning had been mercilessly smashed apart.

In the presence of absolute strength, everything she did had become a joke.

It could even be said that the bet between her and Sun Cyprestar had already become a joke. The betting stakes were only a spirit artifact level Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron, an arctic ice immortal stamen, and a drop of phoenix heart blood. Those treasures were undoubtedly precious, and the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron was an object that even a Divine Lord powerhouse would struggle for. But compared to a drop of phoenix blood essence, all of it was nothing more than sand and wind.

When Lin Ming first involved the phoenix blood essence in this smelting trial, the bet for the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron had already lost all meaning! This was a grand milestone that would be etched into the history of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. It was destined to be a story that would be spread down for all of eternity, turned into a myth by the clansmen of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. How could a mere Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron possibly compare?

Sixth level 8000 miles!

The temperature here was already 360 times the temperature of magma, and even the surrounding space was scorched so hot that it began twisting. The fiery astral winds were far more powerful, crazily howling as they flowed all over. Even if a 10,000 foot high mountain of divine iron were placed here, it would still be turned into gas by the air currents!

Luckily, Lin Ming's three levels of Concepts had completed their initial fusion state. Moreover, no matter which one of these three Concepts was taken out, his understanding of them far surpassed that of all other disciples present. But now, in this environment,

Lin Ming still had no choice but to slow down.

From 10 times the speed of sound he plummeted to five times the speed of sound. Then, he gradually slowed to three times the speed of sound.

As his speed reduced, the pressure he had to bear was much lower and he would also consume less energy.

In truth, after reaching this depth, no matter how extraordinary Lin Ming's restorative ability was, it was impossible for him to continue with such a terrifying consumption rate of energy. He was able to maintain 80% of his strength, and the only reason for this was that he was using the Concept of Creation to transform the violent fire origin energy into a gentler form that he could use for himself.

Sixth level 9000 miles!

Lin Ming's speed fell below the speed of sound. As he no longer passed through the sonic barrier, his consumption of true essence was reduced yet again.

Wishing to break into the Hells of Flame's seventh level was more difficult than ascending to the heavens. But now, all the miracles that occurred on Lin Ming's body had allowed him to reach this step. Even so, he was still reaching the end of the line!

All of the martial artists in the square held their breath, their

eyes glued onto the light screen in the sky. They were all waiting for this historical moment to occur.

A sixth stage Life Destruction, 29 year old rookie disciple on his first smelting trial, would actually break through to the seventh level of the Hells of Flame!

At this step, all of Phoenix Cry Palace's disciples, including even Huo Yanguang, were cheering Lin Ming on. Although many of Phoenix Cry Palace's disciples had envied Lin Ming, now that his talent far surpassed all of theirs, they finally understood that it was impossible for any of them to chase after him, and all of that envy had slowly faded away.

On the contrary, Lin Ming's growth would instead bring glory and prosperity to Phoenix Cry Palace. In the future, when everyone talked about Lin Ming, these disciples could proudly brag that they came from Phoenix Cry Palace, the same branch palace that Lin Ming came from!

Also, in the future when Lin Ming became a vital figure at headquarters, he would be able to bring good fortune to Phoenix Cry Palace. For the 72 palaces of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, it was impossible to be fair and even with all of them. There would always be some palaces that received far more resources than others, and there would always be some palaces that were stretched for resources.

In such a situation, no one in Phoenix Cry Palace would dare to offend Lin Ming anymore. Even someone like Sage Jiuyang, who almost controlled the entire Phoenix Cry Palace, would not think

of moving against Lin Ming. This was because Lin Ming was now destined to become a paramount character of headquarters, someone that was the focus of attention.

9600 miles; Lin Ming's speed dropped to half the speed of sound.

9800 miles; Lin Ming's muscles bulged all over, blue veins popping up from his skin.

9900 miles; cracks began to form in Lin Ming's protective true essence once again.

However, this didn't matter. Even if some fire origin energy astral winds managed to break through his defenses, they would still be suppressed by the Heretical God Sprout and then absorbed by Lin Ming. With his tough meridians he was capable of withstanding such an impact.

50 miles... 40 miles... 30 miles... 10 miles... one mile!!!

Bang!

With a light sound, it seemed as if the entire 180,000 mile long 18 Hells of Flame quietly trembled at that moment. Lin Ming broke through the space barrier that separated the sixth and seventh levels, officially stepping into the space of the seventh level!

The seventh level of the Hells of Flame; the domain of god!

“He did it!!!”

“Too fierce... I never imagined that I would be able to witness history occurring with my own eyes...”

“Although I might never reach this boundary in my entire life, for better or worse, no matter what, Lin Ming is still a disciple who came from our Phoenix Cry Palace. I can feel proud just stating this fact in the future.”

“That’s right. Maybe headquarters will place a bit more focus on our Phoenix Cry Palace now?”

The Phoenix Cry Palace disciples spoke amongst themselves with fervid excitement. At this time, if Lin Ming were among them, he would have been surrounded and grabbed by them, tossed up into the air!

This was Lin Ming’s glory! This was also the glory of Phoenix Cry palace!

“He really reached the seventh level. It seems like the drop of phoenix blood essence will really be obtained by Lin Ming. This child, as long as he doesn’t perish in the future he will surely become an incomparably wonderful character!”

Duke Golden Sword said with zest.

“That’s right. Moreover, with Lin Ming’s background, it is already a miracle that he was able to reach this step. He has a great destiny, strong mentality, and unshakeable will. He can only be called extraordinary. It isn’t easy for such a person to perish. I believe that our Ancient Phoenix Clan is destined to produce another extreme character. Even the current Lord Patriarch could not compare to Lin Ming when he was at the Life Destruction realm!” Monarch Sweetfox gave her own evaluation.

The Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, that was a Divine Realm Holy Lord. Placed in the Divine Realm, a Holy Lord was a top character that could dominate their own stretch of the world. However, this didn’t mean that Lin Ming would inevitably become a Holy Lord in the future. After all, there were countless variables and uncertainties on the road of martial arts.

The current Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan indeed couldn’t compare with Lin Ming when he was at the Life Destruction Realm. But, the Patriarch had experienced immense lucky chances during the Divine Sea, Divine Transformation, and Divine Lord realms. These also had to be placed into consideration.

If Lin Ming wished to become a Holy Lord, he would need to continue the momentum that he currently had at Life Destruction.

This was the reason why the Ancient Phoenix Clan wasn’t willing to invest a drop of phoenix blood essence in a Life Destruction realm martial artist. There were simply too many unknown factors that could affect a genius’ future. Even if a genius died, they might be lost within the rising talents in the future. A genius needed destiny and lucky chances to continue walking down the road of

martial arts.

And at this time, Lin Ming's smelting trial still hadn't ended. This was the first time that he had entered the seventh level of the Hells of Flame. To a rookie disciple, this mysterious space was called the domain of god!

To a Life Destruction realm martial artist, this was an absolute forbidden zone!

The seventh level of the Hells of Flame no longer had fire origin energy astral winds. Rather, they were replaced by an aurora of glowing red light!

This glowing light was illusive like a dream. It filled the world, incomparably vivid, similar to a paradise of immortals. But, if a martial artist who didn't comprehend the Fire Laws was covered by this glowing light, then their entire being would evaporate without even ashes left over!

At this time, it was already Lin Ming's limit to break into the seventh level. And now that he suddenly had to bear the impact of this glowing red light, his protective true essence began to rapidly rupture!

Beams of glowing light shot into Lin Ming's body, burning through his meridians!

Lin Ming focused all of his will into the Heretical God Sprout,

resisting the impact of the multi-hued light. But, he found himself verging on the edge of collapse. His body burned. His skin was scorched black, cracking, and his flesh was cooked, emitting sizzling sounds.

Lin Ming's current condition was extremely poor. He had less than 60% of his true essence remaining. Moreover, he was consuming it at a ridiculous rate.

But Lin Ming still held on. He grit his teeth and persisted. The role of the 18 Hells of Flame was originally not to check the level of a disciple and how far they could go. Rather, it was a smelting trial that pushed one's potential to the limits. In the smelting trial of the 18 Hells of Flame, when one arrived at their limits, the longer they stayed in that dangerous zone, the greater their harvests would be.

When Lin Ming first started the initial fusion of the three levels of Fire Concepts, he had used the pressure of this environment as the turning point of his comprehension of Laws.

As they said, one had to strike the iron while it was hot. To use the 18 Hells of Flame at this time to temper his own Laws was the best method to do so. If he gave up now then his benefits would be significantly lessened and he would have to take many more detours.

Lin Ming grit his teeth and actually pulled the glowing red light into his bones and flesh, allowing that glowing light to burn the Law runes on his bones!

Zi zi zi!

As his flesh burned, the pure jade-white bones were also scorched black, and they even began to wither and crack.

To draw fire into one's body and set their own bones on fire, just what sort of pain was that? Even so, Lin Ming clenched his teeth and withstood it all!

Chapter 1020 – Seventh Stage Life Destruction

Blood flooded out from Lin Ming's cracked body. His skin was roasted black and it fell off his body like old bark. This was a pain worthy of tearing one's own skin off. At the same time that his flesh and bones were being burnt, his skin was also peeling away! The severe agony of this pain was difficult to imagine. If a martial artist's will wasn't firm, then this pain would be enough to wipe out their spiritual sea!

If a mortal were in such a situation then their mind would break and they would turn mad in just a few breaths of time. Even a martial artist, when their body was placed in a burning heat that was hundreds of times the temperature of magma, would find it hard to bear!

However, this was an extremely important aspect of training within the 18 Hells of Flame. The fiery astral winds would press down upon the limits of a martial artist's strength. In such a violent and torturous state, perceiving the Fire Laws through this method would deepen one's comprehension towards the Laws!

The longer Lin Ming was able to last in this state, the greater the benefits would be!

In the fire spirit mirror, Monarch Sweetfox watched with her own eyes as the Law runes on Lin Ming's bones were melted away by the scorching heat and sunk into his very marrow, truly fusing with his body!

Comprehension of Laws came in several stages. The first stage was to memorize the Laws with the mind. It was easy to forget or misplace memories, and when recalling these memories, there was also a slight delay. In the midst of a heated battle, responding even just a little bit slower would often have fatal consequences.

As for the second stage, that was memorizing Laws with the body. If one remembered the Laws with the body, they would never forget them in their entire life. Also, it would become a conditioned reflex, completely natural to use.

And the third stage was Lin Ming's current stage. That was to use one's bones and marrow to store the memories. To deeply inscribe the Laws into one's bones and burn them into the marrow until those Laws became a part of the body!

From that point on, the body was Laws, and Laws were the body; everything was the same!

For such a person, their body was a totem stone. By killing someone like that, others could pick up their bones and perceive the Laws from them. Every single part of their body would be a priceless treasure.

After reaching such a stage, one could freely drive the Laws, and even one's bodily movements would arouse the corresponding Laws. This was because the body itself had become a form of the Laws. Every action one took would contain the truth of the Laws, thus it was easy to foment the Laws of the world!

With the light splashing sound of falling water, the fire origin energy around Lin Ming began to condense into various spiritual life forms. There were fire insects, fire birds, fire beasts, and even humans and Fey, all made of fire energy. All of these life forms bowed towards Lin Ming, worshipping him. And underneath his feet, a blue lotus bloomed in radiant splendor before slowly withering. Each lotus was able to bloom for several dozen breaths of time. Slowly, more and more lotuses bloomed until the space underneath Lin Ming's feet was covered with them like a lush spring.

Lotus Blooming Step by Step!

This was the phenomenon of the Fire Laws. Yan Littlemoon had comprehended it, and now Lin Ming had too!

No one thought this was strange. Lin Ming had broken through to the seventh level of the Hells of Flame in a single attempt. If he wasn't able to comprehend the Lotus Blooming Step by Step phenomenon then that would be strange instead!

But with Lin Ming's current achievements, he no longer needed the Lotus Blooming Step by Step phenomenon to prove himself.

Time passed slowly. Soon, half an hour passed. Although the visions of fire appeared beside Lin Ming in an endless stream of visual beauty, Monarch Sweetfox and a few others knew that Lin Ming was actually withstanding an excruciating pain!

To use the physical body to withstand this burning hot fire that was several hundred times the temperature of magma and still withstand such a pain for half an hour, it made one's scalp tingle just thinking about it!

“It's just like a phoenix undergoing nirvana isn't it? Lin Ming is being reborn, transforming his body in the process. This test was itself a great lucky chance and smelting trial for him. Through this smelting trial, Lin Ming's boundaries of Laws have reached an unbelievable degree in a single go. From now on, no one will dare say that Lin Ming is only outstanding in combat and that his comprehension of Laws is lacking. Perhaps from this point on, Lin Ming's comprehension of Laws will instead become one of his greatest strengths! At this point, I fear that Lin Ming may have no weakness!”

Monarch Sweetfox said with a solemn expression.

Of the current Lin Ming –

In terms of the energy within him, his true essence was astoundingly deep and his foundation was extremely solid.

In terms of comprehension of Laws, he had fused three levels of Concepts and had even thoroughly melted the Laws into his marrow.

In terms of cultivation methods and martial skills, he possessed two transcendent divine mights and had already started on the road of creating his own martial skills.

In terms of speed and movement techniques, he understood the Thunder Laws' Concept of Extreme Speed. At the same time, he had the Gate of Wonder to support him.

In terms of defensive power, he was a dual body and energy cultivator and his physical body had been tempered repeatedly over the years.

In terms of willpower, he possessed a gold battle spirit that carried with it the grandmist attribute...

Lin Ming's strength had almost reached perfection!

"Mm? This is..."

Duke Golden Sword's eyes shined as he cried out in surprise. He discovered to his fascination that after the glowing red clouds of light energy from the seventh level rushed into Lin Ming's body, they had repeatedly pushed Lin Ming's body past the limits that it could bear. His mortal body was now on the verge of disintegrating. This was because the glowing red light of the seventh level had quickened the energy within Lin Ming's own body, stirring it up and completely breaking down his flesh and bones!

This was the sign that Lin Ming was crossing to the next stage of Life Destruction!

In truth, when Lin Ming had closed up in Totem Tower for an entire year, he had reached the critical point of being able to break through to the seventh stage of Life Destruction many times. But, because the timing wasn't too good, it had been forcibly suppressed by Lin Ming.

And now, the glowing red light of the seventh level had spurred the energy within his body far past its limits; he could no longer suppress it!

If it could not be suppressed then it must explode!

“Mm? Lin Ming is actually going to cross Life Destruction at this time?”

“Indeed. The power within his body has already been accumulated to its limits. Let's allow Lin Ming to cross Life Destruction first.”

After Lin Ming entered the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, he had already reached the part of the standard required to obtain the phoenix blood essence. At the same time, Lin Ming had truly reached his limits and it was impossible for him to penetrate any further down; he no longer needed to continue rushing downwards. At this time, crossing the seventh stage of Life Destruction was the most important matter.

“I ask that Senior Ruby Sovereign lends a hand and return Lin Ming to us!” Blackwood, Fire Spirit Star's guardian, suddenly spoke out. He could not allow such a talented genius like Lin Ming

to experience any problems crossing Life Destruction while he was at Fire Spirit Star. Otherwise, he would not be able to bear such a failure. Lin Ming had a high chance of becoming a figure like the Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch in the future.

“No need. He will cross Life Destruction in the Hells of Flame’s seventh level and then I shall return him. You punk Golden Sword, pretty lady Sweetfox, didn’t you each promise Lin Ming some rewards earlier? Take them all out! While Lin Ming crosses Life Destruction, this is the best time for him to fuse the phoenix bloodline within him. Also you, stripling Blackwood, since Lin Ming was able to rush as far as the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, he should have obtained many rewards. From the third level downwards, he should have received a reward for every 5000 miles. I will call the shots for Lin Ming. I have no need for any saint artifacts or fire elementals or pills. I want everything changed into phoenix blood of equivalent value. Don’t be such a scrooge about it. Take it all out!”

“Hahaha! Very well! Since Senior Ruby Sovereign says such, then I naturally cannot be cheap about it!” Duke Golden Sword heartily laughed out loud. “I had said that as long as Lin Ming could slaughter 600 people in the Illusionary God Combat Array, I would bestow him an armor nearing a transcendent saint artifact. But now it seems that such an item wouldn’t be of much use to him. I will put forth five drops of phoenix heart blood instead!”

As the captain of the Disciplinary Enforcement Division, approving the use of five drops of phoenix heart blood was naturally no problem for him.

“Monarch Sweetfox, you too! You are the steward of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, so don’t be such a miser!” Duke Golden Sword smiled as he looked towards Monarch Sweetfox. Monarch Sweetfox had said that if Lin Ming could slaughter 600 people within the Illusionary God Combat Array, she would reward him with three drops of phoenix heart blood. But now it seemed taking something of that amount out wouldn’t be enough.

“Hohoho!” Monarch Sweetfox brightly laughed. “I, Sweetfox, represent the Office of Internal Affairs and am responsible for dividing the resources of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Although I do not have the authority to approve high grade resources, I do have the power to give out ordinary resources. Golden Sword, since you’ve put out five drops of phoenix heart blood, I naturally cannot be a cheapskate. I will put forth two drops of phoenix marrow blood. This is something that I also must follow regulations for if I pass it out, but today’s circumstances are a bit peculiar. If I do some extra work in the future then this shouldn’t be a problem.”

A drop of phoenix marrow blood was almost equal to 10 drops of phoenix heart blood. If used on a martial artist with an extremely high quality phoenix bloodline, a drop of phoenix marrow blood would have an even better effect than 10 drops of phoenix heart blood. Since Monarch Sweetfox had put forth two drops of phoenix marrow blood, that was the same as 20 drops of phoenix heart blood! If converted into phoenix plume blood, that would be equal to 1000 drops!

When Huo Yanguang had taken out 20 drops of phoenix plume blood in his gambling fight with Lin Ming, that was enough to stir up a massive commotion in the entire Phoenix Cry Palace. From

this alone one could see the value of the two drops of phoenix marrow blood that Monarch Sweetfox put forth. This was a wealth that could more than bankrupt an ordinary Divine Lord powerhouse!

On this point, one could infer the difference from the contents of the bet between Chu Redcloud and Sun Cyprestar. It was simply impossible to compare the wealth of an Elder from one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's 72 branch palaces to an envoy from the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters. This was the same difference between a countryside landlord and a noble from the capital!

Following that, there was also Blackwood! As the guardian of Fire Spirit Star, Blackwood was directly in charge of all the rewards that headquarters had left at Fire Spirit Star!

Blackwood didn't speak. He only flung his hand and tossed out three jade bottles. He didn't explain what was inside. According to the rules of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, starting from the third level, one could obtain better rewards every 5000 miles they went down in the 18 Hells of Flame. At the sixth level and the seventh level, the rewards were so valuable they could drive saints to madness. The value of those rewards absolutely surpassed that of the two drops of phoenix marrow blood that Monarch Sweetfox had put forth!

“Hey! Blackwood! What did you just hand over?”

Duke Golden Sword asked as he excitedly licked his lips.

“1200 drops of ordinary Ancient Phoenix blood, 600 drops of phoenix plume blood, 10 drops of phoenix heart blood, a drop of phoenix marrow blood, and a drop of phoenix coronet blood! The phoenix marrow blood and the phoenix coronet blood comprise nearly the complete wealth of rewards that headquarters left for me. I never imagined that such a situation would appear in this smelting trial. I never thought that I would have to bring them out.”

Blackwood casually spoke, but Duke Golden Sword was silently bewildered. Phoenix coronet blood was only inferior to phoenix blood essence, and it was much higher in value than phoenix marrow blood. A drop of phoenix coronet blood was equal to two or three drops of phoenix marrow blood.

Not just that, but the rewards Blackwood took out were of all ranks. There were low level rewards and high level rewards. It wasn't just high quality phoenix blood like the phoenix marrow blood and phoenix coronet blood, but also lower level phoenix blood like phoenix plume blood and even ordinary Ancient Phoenix blood.

Those low level bloods might have seemed worthless, but the truth was just the opposite. Lin Ming's phoenix bloodline was extremely faint. If he could use the phoenix plume blood to raise the quality of his bloodline, and then transform it again with the far more precious phoenix marrow blood and phoenix coronet blood, the effects would be far better!

To a genius of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, phoenix marrow blood and phoenix coronet blood were used as the finishing touch. But in

order to have a finishing touch, one had to have a base first. Without a base there would be nothing to add a finishing touch to. First, Lin Ming had to add the lower rank phoenix blood into his body, forcibly enhancing his phoenix bloodline. Otherwise, everything else would be wasted.

Chapter 1021 – Ten Thousand Flames

Burning Sun

The different types of phoenix blood that the three masters put forth floated in the air. The blood would be used when Lin Ming was crossing Life Destruction and his body was completely disintegrated, where they would be able to completely fuse into his bloodline.

Transforming the bloodline also had to proceed in an ordered manner. Through this fusion, it would create a better foundation for Lin Ming's bloodline to withstand absorbing the phoenix blood essence and the baptism that followed it in the future.

At this time, on Phoenix Cry Palace's side, Sun Cyprestar suddenly remembered something as he watched all of this. He glanced over at Chu Redcloud and smiled very widely as he said, "Fairy Chu, I remember that you made a bet and also owe me a drop of phoenix heart blood. That drop of phoenix heart blood was originally for Lin Ming, and since Lin Ming is crossing Life Destruction right now, it is the best moment to make up for his faint bloodline. You might as well take that drop of phoenix heart blood out right now."

Sun Cyprestar's words grated on Chu Redcloud's ears like nails on chalk!

Chu Redcloud's body shook and her complexion became extremely ugly. The truth was that there was still a year before her bet with Sun Cyprestar came to a close, and it was far too early. Even so, even if Chu Redcloud was absolutely unwilling to

acknowledge it, she also realized that it was likely impossible for Yan Littlemoon to ever catch up to Lin Ming.

She had completely lost the bet. Not only had she lost the arctic ice immortal stamen and a drop of phoenix heart blood, but she lost her honor.

“Sun Cyprestar, our bet still isn’t over yet, so what are you in such a hurry for!”

“Hehe, I know that, but isn’t the result already obvious?” Sun Cyprestar was not some kind-hearted man. After being bullied by Chu Redcloud without the ability to retaliate, a fire had long been smoldering in his heart. Now that Chu Redcloud had suffered a bout of misfortune, why wouldn’t he take this chance to stomp on her a bit? “If you think that Yan Littlemoon can still catch up to Lin Ming after a year, then I’ll wait. Even so, how about you take out that drop of phoenix heart blood right now, and a year later, if Yan Littlemoon can catch up to Lin Ming, I’ll compensate you with 10 drops instead? That is if you believe in yourself so much!”

Chu Redcloud’s face turned bright red. In front of so many people, she couldn’t find the words to refuse Sun Cyprestar. Otherwise she would develop a reputation that she was a person who couldn’t pay her debts.

She suppressed the humiliation in her head and said in a grim voice, “I do not have any phoenix heart blood with me right now!”

Chu Redcloud couldn’t pull out a drop of phoenix heart blood at

the moment. She was different from Monarch Sweetfox and Duke Golden Sword. They had brought their phoenix heart blood with them as a reward all along, but if Chu Redcloud had any phoenix heart blood she would have used it already, so how could she just casually keep some with her?

“It doesn’t matter, you can borrow it from Yan Littlemoon. If I remember correctly, when Yan Littlemoon broke through the fifth level 5000 mile distance of the Hells of Flame, she also obtained some phoenix heart blood as a reward.” Sun Cyprestar said, not caring if he sounded unreasonable.

Chu Redcloud had never been so mortified before. She actually had to ask a junior to borrow the rewards she received in order to pay a bet she lost. This was simply her life’s greatest shame.

“Aunty, let it go, we’ve really lost this time.” Yan Littlemoon bit her lips as she spoke in a soft voice. She touched her spatial ring and threw out a jade bottle; this was the phoenix heart blood.

Sun Cyprestar smiled as he received the jade box. With a flick of his fingers, he threw the drop of phoenix heart blood in the air. As Lin Ming was crossing Life Destruction this time, there were around 70-80 drops of phoenix heart blood worth of phoenix bloodline in the air. But, every drop of phoenix heart blood was extremely precious; every single drop would be able to give Lin Ming that much greater of an advantage.

“Senior Ruby Sovereign, you may begin.” Blackwood said.

“Haha, good! What a luxurious bloodline power! Even a peak talent from a distinguished family of the Ancient Phoenix Clan might not have so much phoenix bloodline at their disposal. This is enough to lay down a solid foundation for Lin Ming. I believe that Lin Ming will also remember your kindness from today!”

The Ruby Sovereign laughed and a beam of red light suddenly shot out from the depths of the 18 Hells of Flame. It wrapped around the phoenix blood and dragged it all downwards.

There was 60,000 miles separating the surface from the seventh level that Lin Ming was located at. But with the supernatural powers of the Ruby Sovereign shifting space itself, the phoenix blood arrived in a mere blink of the eye.

“We’re starting!”

As the Ruby Sovereign spoke, a massive distortion occurred in the seventh level of the Hells of Flame. An immense amount of fire origin energy condensed, gathering and forming into the image of a fierce-looking man. This man had a face as wild as a lion; he was the artifact spirit of the 18 Hells of Flame, the Ruby Sovereign.

The Ruby Sovereign had already existed for countless tens of thousands of years, and no one knew just how high his cultivation was. But, just from the fact that the Ruby Sovereign was able to split his divine sense into tens of thousands of strands to look after and secure the safety of every trial challenger in the Hells of Flame, one could approximate his strength. He was simply an unfathomably powerful old monster.

As the Ruby Sovereign appeared, all of the fire origin energy of the seventh level turned docile as if it were soldiers greeting the general. No matter how high Lin Ming's comprehension of the Fire Laws was, when it came to controlling the fire origin energy within the Hells of Flame, he couldn't even compare to a single percent of the Ruby Sovereign. This was because the Ruby Sovereign was the true master of the Hells of Flame!

The Ruby Sovereign pushed his hands out. Between his hands, a massive amount of the power of fire rushed out.

When Lin Ming crossed the sixth stage of Life Destruction, he had done so with Fairy Feng's help and the aid of the Nirvanic Sacred Flame.

But now, the power of fire within the Ruby Sovereign's hands was completely different. It wasn't just a single Fire Elemental, but the strength of thousands of flames gathered together, all-encompassing!

The 18 Hells of Flame was a fire-attribute spirit artifact. Every level had a Fire Elemental, or even multiple Fire Elementals on guard. Moreover, these Fire Elementals weren't of an ordinary grade.

The first six levels of the 18 Hells of Flame each had a single Fire Elemental, the next six levels had two Fire Elementals, and the last six levels had three fire elementals, for a total of 36 Fire Elementals!

Besides Fire Elementals, the 18 Hells of Flames had a massive number of Flame Essences. Every level had hundreds of Flame Essences of different grades. With all of them added together, there was a total of 9999 Flame Essences!

These Flame Essences and Fire Elementals were all born from Fire Spirit Star after billions of years of history. With a planet that was a giant conflagration of fire origin energy, after such a long time, the amount of Flame Essences and Fire Elementals born could be imagined! And most of these Flame Essences and Fire Elementals were gathered within the 18 Hells of Flame!

The 18 Hells of Flame took myriad Flame Essences as soldiers, the 36 Fire Elementals as generals, and the Ruby Sovereign as an extremely magnificent spirit artifact!

And now, around the Ruby Sovereign, flames of all colors shot out from every level of the Hells of Flame. Every single wisp of the power of fire was pulled out from the numerous Flame Essences and Fire Elementals by the Ruby Sovereign.

9999 Flame Essences and 36 Fire Elementals, the power of fire was extracted from each one!

When the power of these flames gathered together, fusing as one, it formed a massive sun that floated between the Ruby Sovereign's hands.

“Ten Thousand Flames Burning Sun!”

The Ruby Sovereign directly poured this power of fire into Lin Ming's body!

Bang!

No matter how tenacious Lin Ming's body was, how tough his meridians were, or how much power of fire the Heretical God Sprout could absorb, it still couldn't withstand such an instantaneous impact. Lin Ming's physical body began to disintegrate. His skin, his flesh, his meridians, blood vessels, organs, muscles, bones, marrow, brain, all of it completely exploded! It turned into the purest and tiniest particles of flesh and blood that floated in the surrounding space.

The process of crossing Life Destruction was extremely risky; it didn't allow for the slightest disturbance. Crossing Life Destruction in the dangerous Hells of Flame was originally an impossible matter. However, with the Ruby Sovereign supporting him, this impossibility had become possible. Not just that, but the Ruby Sovereign had gathered the power of fire from all over to help temper Lin Ming's body.

At the moment Lin Ming's body disintegrated, his spiritual sea was also torn apart. The feeling was like a million jin steel ball smashing into his head. Along with a fierce headache, Lin Ming could also clearly feel his own soul being decomposed by energy!

The nine stages of Life Destruction were to cultivate a martial artist's essence, energy, and divine. The first three stages tempered

essence, the second three stages tempered energy, and the last three stages, the so-called 'divine', tempered the divine soul. The seventh stage of Life Destruction was the start of tempering the soul!

No matter what sort of activity it was, anything that involved the soul was extremely risky!

“This is the seventh stage of Life Destruction, shatter and reform the soul!” Although Lin Ming could feel his own soul disintegrating, his thoughts were still incomparably clear.

At this moment, the faint voice of the Ruby Sovereign floated into his ears. This voice seemed to come from some distant and imaginary world, hazy and vague.

“Lin Ming! Defend your mind! With your will as the foundation, shatter your soul. The more thoroughly your soul is shattered, the greater the baptism you will have to withstand and the greater the benefits you will receive in breaking through realms in the future! But, remember that you cannot lose yourself. There is a great risk in shattering and reforming the soul. If your soul is ruptured too greatly then your thoughts will fall into confusion and you may even lose your spirit mark, forever being lost in the maze of your mind, never to return! You have a gold battle spirit – this is your greatest capital. As for what degree you can shatter your soul to, all of that is up to you!”

When a martial artist attempted to cross the last three stages of Life Destruction, the destruction of the 'divine', their body, dantian, and soul would completely disintegrate. But, there would

be one thing that would not be destroyed; that was one's will!

The will was the most tenacious aspect of a martial artist. After a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse died, their body would fully decay after thousands of years. But, their will would pass through hundreds of thousands of years without scattering.

At the last three stages of Life Destruction, the soul would decompose but the will would not. When the soul shattered and swam through the endless void, the will was the lighthouse, the beacon that called to the soul. As long as one's will didn't disintegrate, the soul could be reformed.

Lin Ming focused his mind. With a humming sound, the gold battle spirit hiding in his shattered spiritual sea came flying out. The dark golden light illuminated the surrounding space in the Hells of Flame. The world of will projected into reality, covering Lin Ming's soul fragments.

In this space, Lin Ming shattered his soul again and again without reservation!

When Lin Ming was being enlightened on the forming of life within the chaos space, he came to understand that the soul and physical body were different. The mortal body was formed by yin and yang energies; it was a material existence composed of the tiniest yin and yang particles. But, the soul was a type of energy. It was a field of energy similar to a force field. When this force field was concentrated within a single area, that formed the soul.

And now, Lin Ming was using his will to lock in this field of energy, decomposing it into the most fundamental soul waves. Then, he tempered it with energy and Laws, completing his own seventh stage of Life Destruction!

Chapter 1022 – Sevenfall Phenomenon

As Lin Ming crossed Life Destruction, the entire process was shown in the fire spirit mirror above Totem Tower's square. It was only because of the world of will projection as well as the dazzling brilliance from the 10,000 Flames Burning Sun that the disciples weren't able to see what was happening within Lin Ming's body.

However, top masters like Blackwood, Monarch Sweetfox, and Duke Golden Sword were able to generally sense what was happening.

Within the world of will projection, with Lin Ming's gold battle spirit as the center, countless soul fragments continuously disintegrated. They turned from the size of an eggshell to the size of a grain of rice, once more arriving at the size of a dust particle before further reducing in size yet again...

Monarch Sweetfox sensed everything that was happening and sighed. "In terms of battle spirits, Lin Ming could be said to far surpass the geniuses of the Divine Realm. In this alone, he truly has a massive superiority. He opened the Gate of Opening and the way he is crossing the seventh stage of Life Destruction now is not what an ordinary genius can compare with..."

As a measurement, a battle spirit was an important indicator of a martial artist's talent. It naturally had a correspondingly great significance!

"I fear that Lin Ming is able to completely reduce his soul to the

small fragments possible. Him crossing Life Destruction once is the same as an ordinary genius crossing Life Destruction twice! Once he finishes his last three stages of Life Destruction, I wonder just what degree Lin Ming's soul force will reach?"

Soul force – it withstood all Laws and was also the basis of martial intents. It was the foundation for the control of true essence. If one's soul wasn't strong enough, then a martial artist's potential would die out. This was the reason why an Eightfall powerhouse found it extremely difficult to reach the Divine Lord realm.

Normally speaking, a martial artist's martial talent, perception, martial intents, soul force, willpower, and destiny were all considered a comprehensive manifestation of their talent. Within these categories, martial talent was in truth the least important. If one's martial talent was lacking, it could be made up for! There were all sorts of precious spirit pills and God Beast bloodlines that could make up for a deficiency in martial talent.

However, in the lower realms, these sorts of pills were extremely scarce and God Beast bloodlines had nearly vanished. In addition, when a martial artist first started cultivating, their martial talent would be the most obvious. This was why they placed such excessive emphasis on it.

But for the other aspects, each was incomparably difficult and they were extremely difficult to increase!

If one wanted to truly increase perception, only the Eight Inner Hidden Gates' Gate of Opening had such an effect. As for heavenly

materials that increased perception, they were simply treasures from legends.

If one wanted to increase willpower, they would have to use treasures like the Twinlife Thunder Crystal that had almost vanished from existence.

As for destiny, even a Divine Realm Holy Lord, World King, or those extreme supreme elders weren't able to clearly understand what it was. As for enhancing their destiny, that was simply a joke. In a sense, destiny was the key aspect of a martial artist's talent. Even a martial artist's origins could be considered a kind of destiny!

As Monarch Sweetfox and the others were talking, within the seventh level, Lin Ming had already reduced his soul fragments into particles 10,000 times smaller than a mote of dust. After the soul force completely lost its last confines, it began to spread out in the most fundamental soul waves.

The soul was a particle but also a wave. As for what the origin of a soul was, Lin Ming hadn't yet figured that out. Even so, this didn't prevent him from completely shattering his soul and tempering it!

Countless soul waves reverberated within the world of will projection. As they struck the barrier of the projection, they naturally reflected back inwards and underwent a baptism of Laws!

“This boy, he actually managed to reach such a degree!” Duke Golden Sword exclaimed as he saw this, amazed.

Monarch Sweetfox sincerely praised Lin Ming from the depths of her heart. “Not only does Lin Ming have a gold battle spirit, but his battle spirit also isn’t normal; it has a special type of attribute to it. If he couldn’t reach this step then there probably aren’t many others who would be able to succeed. His talent really arouses envy in all who see him. Every step Lin Ming takes reaches perfection. If this continues, I can’t imagine just what boundary he will reach in the future!”

Time slowly passed. When a martial artist crossed Life Destruction, they would usually need several days of time. Even if Lin Ming had the help of the Ruby Sovereign, who was pouring the accumulated energy of the 18 Hells of Flame into him, this still wasn’t a process that could be finished in one or two days. But since Monarch Sweetfox and Duke Golden Sword hadn’t indicated that they would leave, none of the disciples from the three branch palaces were able to leave either. Even so, no one wanted to leave to begin with. To witness such a glorious event was itself an extremely rare experience. There were even those that were able to obtain insight from Lin Ming’s process of crossing the seventh stage of Life Destruction.

20 hours passed. The Ruby Sovereign closed his eyes, continuously standing guard beside Lin Ming. As for Lin Ming’s soul, it had finally completely disintegrated. The last soul fragment had turned into soul waves.

At this moment, the Ruby Sovereign’s eyes shot up. It was time

to fuse the power of the phoenix bloodline!

As Lin Ming was crossing the seventh stage of Life Destruction, he had 1200 drops of ordinary Ancient Phoenix blood, 600 drops of phoenix plume blood, 16 drops of phoenix heart blood, three drops of phoenix marrow blood, and one drop of phoenix coronet blood as support!

In addition, with the Ruby Sovereign personally assisting, the artifact spirit had pulled out the power of 9999 different Flame Essences and 36 Fire Elementals. The Ruby Sovereign even added in a tiny amount of his source strength. This was the equivalent of using 10,036 different variations of flames to decompose Lin Ming's mortal body and temper his soul!

This was a treatment that not even the extreme talents of the three great family clans would have!

These were resources won by talent and by strength! Although the Ancient Phoenix Clan had numerous factions that struggled against each other, they still wouldn't bury their geniuses. Especially a super genius like Lin Ming who had the potential to become the Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch in the future!

If such a genius were to be buried, then the Ancient Phoenix Clan would have long begun their descent into decline and destruction!

“Power of bloodline... fuse!”

The Ruby Sovereign waved his hand and all the phoenix blood passed through and was heated by 10,036 different flames. All of the impurities were scorched away as the phoenix blood turned into a fog that fused into Lin Ming's body, becoming one with his bloodline.

Bang bang bang!

Origin energy surged. Even the 18 Hells of Flame seemed to faintly tremble. Faintly, within Lin Ming's will world projection, a golden phoenix could be seen bathing in flames, undergoing rebirth through nirvana!

But, this phoenix was not the usual golden red phoenix or the brilliant gold phoenix, but a rare dark and burnished gold.

This was a dark gold phoenix!

This was because Lin Ming's bloodline strength already had the elementary form of grandmist energy fused into it. Although the light was blinding, everyone who watched the fire spirit mirror was able to clearly see this dark gold phoenix.

As the young disciples felt the formidable aura coming from the phoenix's figure, they all had a feeling of awe and reverence emerge from the depths of their souls, making them want to bow down in worship. This was the same awe that ancient primitive tribal humans felt towards their divine tribal totems.

“This bloodline power is... incredible!” The present martial artists were unsure of what was happening. Lin Ming’s current bloodline strength already surpassed that of many of those present. But, it was still countless miles away from being able to compare with Yan Littlemoon’s perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Even so, they had no idea why, but in front of the power of this bloodline, all of them felt a pressure, a pressure that originated from the same bloodline!

In the direction of Charming Phoenix Palace, Yan Littlemoon’s vision was blurry as she looked at the dark gold phoenix reflected in the fire spirit mirror. Her eyes stung and her hands were cold.

Laws and bloodline strength were originally Lin Ming’s weak points. But now, they were no longer his weaknesses!

Yan Littlemoon took a deep shuddering breath, her eyelashes trembling. She bitterly sighed with hardship in her heart.

“In just a single year, what he meditated on was the chaos stones and yet his comprehension of Laws has already surpassed mine. As for bloodline strength, while he currently cannot compare with me, perhaps several days from now he might obtain the drop of phoenix blood essence. After fusing with that, he still won’t have a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, but the power of his bloodline will carry with it a faint aura of a true God Beast. Even I won’t have such an aura. The only way I would is if I too could obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence.”

“At that time... who could still stop Lin Ming? The advantages he has, I might not have. But the advantages I have, he does not lack

any of them...”

Yan Littlemoon looked at the dark gold phoenix fluttering its wings in the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, and myriad emotions swelled up in her heart. Everything that happened on this day seemed like a fantastical illusion. Today, she had suffered a tremendous setback, but at the same time she had also learned an important lesson.

Unconsciously, another 20 hours passed.

Fire Spirit Star’s sun fell and rose again. As for Lin Ming, his breakthrough into the seventh stage of Life Destruction was drawing to an end. His particles of flesh and blood had been heated and burned by the power of 10,036 different kinds of flames, and had already completely fused with the Ancient Phoenix bloodline!

The soul waves that bounced within the world of will projection also completed their final round of tempering. As everyone thought that Lin Ming was about to reform his body, in the skies above, there was suddenly a bass rumbling sound.

“Mm? What is that?”

Everyone looked up at the skies and discovered something amazing. The heaven and earth origin energy above Fire Spirit Star was suddenly stirred up, becoming restless as if there was some heavenly treasure being born!

Hu – !

Hu – !

The heaven and earth origin energy formed a massive vortex, all of it surging around and curling up together. And, the center of that vortex was the 18 Hells of Flame!

“What is this!?” The young disciples all widened their eyes in shock.

Even Duke Golden Sword, Monarch Sweetfox, and the normally emotionless and deadpan Blackwood were stricken! What occurred now was even more startling than Lin Ming breaking through to the seventh level of the Hells of Flame!

“This... could it be...”

“Impossible!”

Duke Golden Sword, Monarch Sweetfox, and Blackwood simultaneously became aware of a possibility, but none of them dared to believe their own thoughts. This disbelief continued until the heaven and earth origin energy above the 18 Hells of Flame formed a vortex with a layer of clouds above it. The center of this cloud layer slowly fell down like a giant funnel, linking directly to the center of the 18 Hells of Flame’s entrance!

As this happened, all of them realized that their previous

thoughts were correct. Even so, with the truth placed right in front of them, they still found it hard to believe!

“Origin energy cloud! It’s an origin energy cloud condensed from the Laws of the world!” Monarch Sweetfox cried out with a hoarse voice.

“How could this be possible!? Lin Ming is only at the seventh stage of Life Destruction and yet he managed to form an origin energy cloud? This is simply... I can’t even... this is unimaginable!”

Origin energy clouds were a phenomenon that would appear only when a martial artist was crossing the ninth stage of Life Destruction. When a martial artist broke through the Ninefall boundary, their essence, energy, and divine would reach perfection, and this event would cause heaven and earth origin energy to gather and condense, forming origin energy clouds. These origin energy clouds were filled with countless fragments of the world’s Laws, all of them containing endless mysteries!

Origin energy clouds were also divided into ranks. The lowest rank was a three mile wide origin energy cloud; this was called a Single Layered Heavens Ninefall. When Huo Yanguang crossed Ninefall, he had done so with a Four Layered Heavens, 12 mile wide origin energy cloud. This was already enough to alarm and impress the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace. But now, none of them could ever imagine that when Lin Ming crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction, there would actually be origin energy clouds gathering in the skies!

Chapter 1023 – Perfect Sevenfall

Within the long history of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there had indeed been geniuses that were able to form an origin energy cloud before they reached Ninefall. But, that only happened at Eightfall. For someone to condense an origin energy cloud at Sevenfall, that was almost impossible to imagine!

After Monarch Sweetfox and Duke Golden Sword realized what happened, the other young disciples all began to catch on. It had to be known that most of the disciples present hadn't been able to achieve the ninth stage of Life Destruction. They had only reached the eighth stage of Life Destruction before stepping into the Divine Sea realm.

To reach Ninefall and form the lowest level of origin energy clouds was a dream that many of these disciples wished for, much less forming an origin energy cloud at Sevenfall.

This meant that in the future when Lin Ming stepped into the eighth and ninth stages of Life Destruction, the origin energy clouds he formed would be far greater, and the baptism of Laws he would bathe in would be that much more intense!

To an ordinary disciple, being able to undertake a baptism of Laws was an unbelievable luxury, much less being able to do so three times. That was a feat that others simply couldn't compete with.

As the surging origin energy clouds reflected in Yan Littlemoon's

bright pupils, she sighed again and again. She had a faint premonition in her heart that Lin Ming was destined to shine in radiant glory within the Ancient Phoenix Clan. He would take that as his foundation, and move towards the greater stage of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds...

.....

The turbulent origin energy cloud in the sky continued for a quarter hour. It finally gathered in a radius of three miles; this was also called a Single Layered Heavens.

The origin energy cloud of a Single Layered Heavens wasn't considered much at all. However, Lin Ming was only at the seventh stage of Life Destruction. This three mile radius origin energy cloud actually represented the beginning of everything.

As they said, the Dao gave birth to one, one gave birth to two, two gave birth to three, and three gave birth to all of creation!

Three was the beginning of all things and also the foundation of the world. This numeral in itself contained the great truths of the universe.

"A three mile origin energy cloud..." Monarch Sweetfox gulped. As she looked up at the skies, she was actually glad that Lin Ming hadn't been able to reach four or five Layered Heavens in a single go, otherwise she really wouldn't know what expression to make.

However, she soon discovered that the origin energy cloud Lin Ming formed was not ordinary at all. Rather, a thin layer of fog fluttered around the origin energy cloud. This fog seemed common and ordinary, but it actually gave off a boundless and ancient feeling. Just by looking at it, one could feel the breath of the Great Dao blowing down at them.

“What is that?”

Monarch Sweetfox was startled. Even with her understandings of the Laws, she still found it difficult to see through that thin layer of fog. As she continued gazing at it, she found that the breath of the Great Dao Laws had simply vanished, as if it had never been there to begin with.

This fog was the elementary form of grandmist energy. When Lin Ming had perceived the chaos stones, he had incorporated the Grandmist Laws within him. Thus, the origin energy cloud he formed naturally carried with it the aura of the Grandmist Laws.

The Grandmist Laws were derived from the changes that happened when the universe first formed. Because that time was too far away, grandmist energy had all but disappeared from the world. It could only be found in some black holes as well as some extremely mystical stars. Even if one found grandmist energy, that grandmist energy would have already lost its vibrancy, and thus it would have also lost the aura of its Laws.

Lin Ming’s flesh and blood particles, the fragments of his soul, all of it shot upwards through the massive energy funnel and into the origin energy cloud.

Here, the heaven and earth origin energy had already condensed into countless postcelestial dao diagrams. These postcelestial dao diagrams were incomparably mysterious and exquisite. They condensed, shattered, reformed, and then cracked apart once again in a never ending cycle. Lin Ming's flesh and blood particles wrapped around these postcelestial dao diagrams. His entire body was subtly sifted through by the Laws; the advantages he obtained from this were immeasurable.

When a martial artist crossed Life Destruction and had to withstand a baptism of Laws from within the origin energy cloud, that was the same as directly thrusting the Heavenly Dao into their body. One was a memory of the brain, and the other was having the Heavenly Dao plunge into the body. The differences between these two methods could be imagined!

This baptism continued for two hours. Lin Ming's physical body finally began to slowly reform. First was the black hole revolving core. Then, with the revolving core as the foundation, countless particles gathered, forming the skeleton, organs, bones, and finally the muscles and skin...

The spiritual sea also began to slowly condense. Those soul waves that were reverberating within the origin energy cloud began to gather within Lin Ming's mortal body, forming a complete soul.

As Lin Ming's body formed, many of the postcelestial dao diagrams formed by the Laws buried themselves into Lin Ming's body, becoming a part of him.

If someone were to cut apart Lin Ming's body now, they would be able to find fragments of Laws and postcelestial dao diagrams formed from Laws within him. Not just that, but there were also the Law runes that had deeply engraved themselves into the very marrow of his bones.

This was also a manifestation of the postcelestial Great Dao.

The process of his body reforming continued for several hours. Because a massive amount of the phoenix bloodline had been integrated into him, Lin Ming's physical body had become far more tenacious and clear like crystal, like the purest jade that contained not a single impurity. His compatibility with the Fire Laws had also been raised to a nearly unimaginable degree.

His hair was tinged with red. Every single strand of hair was like a thread of silk, glossy and lustrous, yet incomparably tough. Even a saber wouldn't be able to cut a strand of hair apart.

If someone was able to obtain a single strand of Lin Ming's hair, they could absolutely refine it into a top quality rope-class treasure. If this treasure were placed in the world of mortals, it would cause even Divine Sea powerhouses to struggle for it.

Lin Ming slowly opened his eyes. A brief brilliant flame flashed in his clear pupils. With a thought, the fire origin energy around him transformed into a red silk robe that wrapped round his body. In the next moment, the entire three mile origin energy cloud also completely gathered towards the center and submerged into Lin Ming's body.

Lin Ming had used around two whole days to complete this seventh stage of Life Destruction!

As the red-robed Lin Ming slowly fell down from the sky, the incomparably wild and violent fiery astral winds that blew towards him suddenly became inexplicably quiet and gentle around him, as if Lin Ming had become their master.

Dressed in red, his clothes floating in the wind and his long hair wildly waving around, Lin Ming's two pupils shined like twin moons in the night sky. As he stepped onto the wind, every step he took formed a blue lotus of heaven and earth origin energy underneath his feet. These blue lotuses blazed like flames, lingering for a long period of time, clearly far more wondrous and profound than the blue lotuses Yan Littlemoon had formed. As he walked onto these blossoming flowers, it was like he was stepping on the road to heaven.

In this moment, Lin Ming seemed as if he had come from the heavens, an immortal ruler descended to the world!

As the martial artists present saw Lin Ming, all of them were shocked from the depths of their hearts. It was as if Lin Ming himself was a condensation of the Heavenly Dao. Every step he took brought with it the aura of the Laws!

With a single order, with the slightest movement, the Laws moved at his command!

“Perfect seventh stage Life Destruction...” Monarch Sweetfox gazed at Lin Ming with some envy in her eyes. “Because of his gold battle spirit, he was able to break down his soul into the tiniest soul waves, thoroughly tempering himself. In addition to that, he was also baptized by the Laws of the world. If he rushes into the 18 Hells of Flame again, he might not be able to make it to the eighth level, but he can at least approach the seventh level 5000 mile distance!”

The 18 Hells of Flame mainly tested a martial artist’s understandings of the Laws; cultivation had a much smaller influence. In truth, regardless of whether Lin Ming was at the sixth or seventh stage of Life Destruction when he entered the Hells of Flame, the difference wouldn’t be much. The reason was that at this depth, the fiery astral winds were too violent and dangerous. Even a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse would find it difficult to withstand it if they didn’t use the power of Laws. Compared to a Divine Transformation powerhouse, the difference between the sixth and seventh stage of Life Destruction was just too minor.

But when Lin Ming had crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction, he had withstood a baptism of the world’s Laws. His understanding of the Laws was already destined to become far more profound, and the distance he could reach would also be much deeper!

Duke Golden Sword’s voice was thick with feeling as he said, “When Lin Ming crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction, the impact this will have on his results in the 18 Hells of Flame won’t be that great. But, the influence it will have in the Illusionary God Combat Array will be remarkable. The Illusionary God Combat

Array only tests one's talent in true combat ability. Whether the enemies are weak or strong, that will depend on Lin Ming's age. When Lin Ming crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction his age didn't change, thus his enemies' strength will not have increased. But, Lin Ming's strength actually rose by a large margin! I fear even the set standard of the Thousand Slaughter cannot hold him back!"

Duke Golden Sword originally held a great appreciation towards Lin Ming. But now, his appreciation seemed far too insufficient. Lin Ming's talent was over a 100 times what he had dared to imagine!

He feared that within a thousand years, rather than him appreciating Lin Ming, he would be hoping that Lin Ming appreciated him instead.

"In any case, Lin Ming's Fire Spirit Star smelting trial will shock the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan. All of the great noble families will extend an olive branch to him. Lin Ming will step to the height of his fame, wielding great power. At that time, which family Lin Ming chooses to side with will become a vital matter that the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan will be focusing on!"

"That's right. Another tumultuous storm will come to the Ancient Phoenix Clan. The Xiao Family has Xiao Chuji and the Huang Family has Huang Yuefeng. Only the Huo Family's current generation is a bit weak. I think that the Huo Family will do everything in their power, no matter how unsavory, in order to win over Lin Ming. They may even think of raising Lin Ming to be their next candidate for the throne of the Patriarch, so that they

can compete with the Huang Family and Xiao Family!”

In order to raise a Divine Realm Holy Lord level extreme talent, a tremendous amount of resources was necessary. There were even many resources that there was only a single portion of. If someone used it, no one else would be able to. Thus, even in the three great noble families that had such a deep background, they could only focus their strength and raise one genius at a time.

The Xiao Family and Huang Family already possessed an extreme genius in their ranks, so it was impossible for them to do everything in their power to raise Lin Ming. Moreover, even if they decided to raise Lin Ming, they still wouldn't push him into struggling for the position of Patriarch. First they would place the greatest consideration on their own direct descendent disciples. This meant that the Huo Family would have an even greater superiority in winning over Lin Ming!

Monarch Sweetfox said, “I fear that the Huo Family will have to hemorrhage a great deal of wealth this time. Lin Ming's existence is too important to them. In order to win over Lin Ming, they will put forth endless benefits! Even if they will bear a great deal of resistance in pushing Lin Ming to become the next Patriarch, and even if they fail in the end, if they managed to gain a Vice Patriarch with the strength of a Holy Lord level master, that will also be greatly significant to the Huo Family!”

Although the Ancient Phoenix Clan only had a single Patriarch at any given time, there were actually multiple Holy Lord level powerhouses. For instance, the Highest Elders that had withdrawn from their position of Patriarch or Vice Patriarch. There were even

some divinely gifted extreme geniuses that had become Vice Patriarchs after failing for some reason in their struggle for the throne of the Patriarch. Even so, their combat strength wasn't necessarily any worse than the current Patriarch's.

“Send this news out. I think that the Huo Family needs it the most. I believe that before the Fire Spirit Star smelting trial ends, they will already have sent out a messenger to contact Lin Ming. Golden Sword, aren't you also someone of the Huo Family? Your father-in-law should be very happy to hear this news.”

Monarch Sweetfox teased as she suddenly remembered something.

Duke Golden Sword glared back at Monarch Sweetfox. He grouchily said, “I am of the Golden Family. I only married a daughter of the Huo Family. Only someone like you would use such a matter to pick on me.”

Although Golden Sword seemed angry, he actually didn't mind that much. He understood how important it was to seek the shelter of a distinguished family. If he hadn't married a talented young woman of the Huo Clan, he would never have managed to reach this step.

Chapter 1024 – Sacred Flame Testament

News of Lin Ming rushing into the seventh level of the Hells of Flame and simultaneously forming an origin energy cloud at the seventh stage of Life Destruction spread out like a surging tide over the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan.

Without a doubt, this was the grandest event in the Ancient Phoenix Clan for the last tens of thousands of years!

In Phoenix Cry Palace, when Fairy Feng obtained this news she was pleasantly surprised. Although she had held high faith in Lin Ming, she never imagined that he would bring her such great and wondrous surprises.

However, those that had the greatest reaction to Lin Ming were the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters as well as the great families.

At this time, at the Divine Realm's Crimson Light World, within a sealed space, there was a large planet that had been shifted into it by some great supernatural power.

This was the home base of the Huo Family, one of the three great distinguished families of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. The Huo Family, a single family by itself, was able to occupy the entire planet. When all the direct descendants of the Huo Family as well as the branch descendants were added together, they were no fewer in number than the entire population of Phoenix Cry Palace! It was a figure that used a million as the base unit!

With so many people, not every junior of the three great families had a rich bloodline. Only the true top genius disciples among them would be allowed to remain at the family headquarters and be given focus in training. Most other juniors were sent to other faction palaces as their own personal smelting trial. They would stand with the juniors of the ordinary families and all of them would begin at the same starting line. They would rise based on their own talent. Perhaps they would be able to wield great power and become a pivotal figure at their branch palace, adding influence to the family. Or perhaps they would vanish in the sands of time, slowly forgotten by their family.

At this time, within the central core palace of the Huo Family, over a dozen Elders were sitting around a circular table. A flame-colored jade slip was mounted at the center of the round table. This was the message sent by Duke Golden Sword. In this jade slip, there were also some sealed images of Lin Ming's crossing of the seventh stage of Life Destruction. The phenomenon of the origin energy cloud left everyone flustered.

And circling around this jade slip, the Elders present had divided into two camps, fiercely arguing with each other. The key question was just what they were quarreling about.

They were arguing over whether or not they should take in Lin Ming as the top core disciple of their Huo Family, and perhaps even faithfully push him into the position to be the next Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan to compete with the Huang Family and the Xiao Family.

On one side was the conservative faction of the Huo Family. They advocated for purity of bloodline, and believed that no matter what, Lin Ming was still an outsider that wasn't worth the focused training of the Huo Family. They believed they should focus all resources on the juniors of the Huo Family.

And on the other side was everyone that was laughing at the Huo Family's conservative faction. They believed that after spending 10,000 years diligently training the so-called 'genius' disciples, all of them had turned out to be useless idiots that couldn't stand up to anyone. They had wasted so many resources and yet no one they produced had even come close to comparing with Huang Yuefeng or Xiao Chuji.

This sort of dispute had frequently repeated itself for the last several hundreds of years. But this time the argument was particularly nasty.

But no matter how desperately any side argued, the final judgement lay in the hands of the Huo Family's Patriarch.

“Patriarch, in these past years, although our Huo Family has been called part of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's three great families along with the Xiao Family and the Huang Family, the truth is that our family is slowly diminishing. In fact, we have already been long cast away by the other two. In the 72 branch palaces, most of the vital positions have been wrested away by the other two families. And as for the future position of the Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch, it seems likely that Huang Yuefeng or Xiao Chuji will take the throne. Regardless of which one of them takes the position of Patriarch, the other will still be the top Vice Patriarch!

This is a major attack on our family! We must raise a talented disciple at all costs to compete with those two!”

“If they do not come from our family then the wishes and desires of their heart will be different. Can you guarantee that this Lin Ming isn’t some greedy and treacherous wolf? If we spend so much strength training him and yet he doesn’t help our Huo Family, then wouldn’t we just lose everything?”

“That’s still better than sitting here and waiting to rot away! Looking at the greater picture, even if Lin Ming isn’t a junior of our Huo Family, I am still willing to train him to become the next Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. That result is still far better than to have the position fall into the hands of the other two!”

The Elders of both sides became increasingly intense in their arguing. The meeting continued for several hours. But at this moment, the Patriarch of the Huo Family, a red-robed old man sitting in the seat of honor, suddenly spoke up.

“Enough! No more arguing. Inform Highdragon. Have him bring along a drop of phoenix blood essence and follow me. I shall personally go to Atlas World’s Fire Spirit Star. And you too Whitejade, you’re coming along. Bring with you the Sacred Flame Testament. I want to see with my own eyes just what sort of heroic young elite this Lin Ming is!”

“...What?”

As the Elders heard the red-robed old man speak, all of them

were stunned. The Huo Family Patriarch actually planned on going to Atlas World's Fire Spirit Star to personally observe this Lin Ming? Moreover, he also wanted to take with him a drop of phoenix blood essence and the Sacred Flame Testament!

The Highdragon that the red-robed old man spoke of was Huo Highdragon, the Internal Affairs Envoy of the Ancient Phoenix Clan and also Monarch Sweetfox's immediate boss. He was part of the Huo Family, and regardless of strength or status, he far surpassed any ordinary Palace Master of the 72 palaces!

However, even Huo Highdragon couldn't take a drop of phoenix blood essence whenever he wanted. Because this involved so many interests and oppositions, he had to go through and obtain the approval of the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters as well as the three great families in order to do so.

However, because the standard that headquarters had set down seemed on the verge of being met, it was well within reason for Huo Highdragon to bring with him a drop of phoenix blood essence.

As for the Sacred Flame Testament, that was a set a totem stones. Moreover, it was the most precious set of totem stones in the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan. If someone called these totem stones number two, no one would dare to classify anything else as number one!

There was a total of nine carvings in this set of totem stones. However, these totem stones did not originate from the clansmen of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Rather, they had been found by the

first Patriarch of the Huo Family. That Patriarch had been exploring a mystic realm when he accidentally stumbled upon this set of totem stones. And, this Patriarch was also one of the most mythical characters of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. He had a great number of lucky chances in his life and nearly became a World King. This set of totem stones was one of his lucky chances.

This set of totem stones altogether was named the Sacred Flame Testament. As for who had carved them, no one knew anything except that it was absolutely some ancient supreme elder. It was even possible that they were left behind by an Empyrean level character!

The Sacred Flame Testament was the most precious treasure of the Huo Family, and also the foundation of the Huo Family's glory and strength.

For all these tens of thousands of years, the Huo Family had relied on the Sacred Flame Testament and the blessings of the First Patriarch to slowly develop, eventually becoming one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's three great families.

“Patriarch wishes to bring the Sacred Flame Testament to Atlas World's Fire Spirit Star?” Several Elders of the conservative faction gulped in unison. The Huo Family Patriarch also had another position at the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters. That was... Highest Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

The Patriarchs of the three great families were all Highest Elders of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Their status was not what a normal Palace Master could ever hope to compare with. And now he

wanted to go and personally observe a Life Destruction realm junior disciple as he underwent the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial.

Moreover, if the Sacred Flame Testament was brought to Fire Spirit Star then it was certainly so that Lin Ming could meditate on it. The Sacred Flame Testament was the same as other totem stones. There were Law fragments that slowly accumulated inside, and once they were perceived, these Law fragments would be drained out. Not even the Elders of the Huo Clan had many chances to perceive them, and yet Lin Ming was going to be given a chance to do so. Without a doubt, the Patriarch had already decided that he would win over Lin Ming.

.....

Two days later, Atlas World, Fire Spirit Star –

In these two days, Lin Ming had been in seclusion as he slowly combed over the Laws within his body. He had just broken through to the seventh stage of Life Destruction and had also withstood the baptism of the Laws within the origin energy cloud. He had accumulated a great deal of insights in the meantime and had to take this prime time to enlighten himself on the Laws. Closing up and meditating at this moment was the best method for Lin Ming to increase his strength.

During these last two days, Lin Ming felt as if his spirit was freely roaming through the highest heavens. His strength as well as his comprehension of Laws greatly increased every day.

On the third day, Lin Ming suddenly opened his eyes. In that moment, all of the light around him vanished. And within his body, the runes on his bones began to light up one at a time, blooming with a luminous light.

It was time for him to take the phoenix blood essence!

Lin Ming thought to himself. On this day, he had accumulated enough energy. His body was overflowing with strength. What he wished for was a happy and wild battle!

“Lin Ming left seclusion!”

Some disciples immediately cried out. In these two days, the many disciples of Fire Spirit Star didn't train at all; at most they would rush through the 18 Hells of Flame. But none of them entered Totem Tower. They were waiting for the grand occasion that was coming. They all wanted to see Lin Ming complete the Thousand Slaughter of the Illusionary God Combat Array and finally obtain the drop of phoenix blood essence.

“It's about to begin...”

Yan Littlemoon stepped out from a floating cave abode. She looked at Lin Ming floating in the sky, a complex emotion coloring her face. She didn't want to see Lin Ming shine in brilliance yet again, but with her complex mood and her strange thoughts, she silently flew over to the Illusionary God Combat Array.

And behind Yan Littlemoon, the female disciples of Charming Phoenix Palace all flew out one by one. Today was destined to be carved in the history of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. With so much hope and expectation, they definitely wouldn't miss such a scene.

“Lin Ming... truly miraculous...” On Phoenix Cry Palace's side, White Daohong floated high in the sky. Behind him were the other Divine Transformation realm disciples of Phoenix Hall, the Divine Sea realm disciples, and then the rookie disciples.

Zhou Fei, the rookie disciple that had taken the number one spot in the qualification tournament, was naturally also in this group. After he witnessed Lin Ming break into the seventh level of the Hells of Flame and then summon a three mile origin energy cloud as he crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction, he had already long discarded any thoughts of competing with Lin Ming. As he thought back to how he planned on surpassing Lin Ming, Zhou Fei only felt his cheeks blush red. Luckily, he hadn't been audacious enough to say that to Lin Ming's face, otherwise he truly would become the laughing stock of all.

The disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace, Charming Phoenix Palace, and Praying Phoenix Palace all left their respective spirit boats, cave dwellings, residences, or even returned from the 18 Hells of Flame if they were training there. They all returned to watch Lin Ming begin his final impact on the last standard for obtaining the drop of phoenix blood essence.

And in front of Totem Tower's square, Blackwood, Duke Golden Sword, and Monarch Sweetfox were all flying in the air. They saw Lin Ming approach, bursting with energy and potential. Monarch

Sweetyfox lovably smiled and said, “Lin Ming, you seem as if you are prepared?”

“Yes!”

“Mm... good! Then I will first tell you something. To complete the Thousand Slaughter in the Illusionary God Combat Array is much more difficult than reaching the seventh level of the 18 Hells of Flame. The last person to complete the Thousand Slaughter did so 40,000 years ago. According to the standards set by headquarters, all you need to do is complete the Thousand Slaughter before the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ends. Are you sure that you wish to attempt this now?”

“Yes, Lady Envoy.”

“Good. Blackwood, activate the array.” Monarch Sweetyfox said.

Beside her, Blackwood swept out his hand and a rumbling sound echoed through Totem Tower’s square. The great portal gate of the Illusionary God Combat Array emerged once again.

Chapter 1025 – Rushing the Illusionary God Combat Array

Fire Spirit Star's Illusionary God Combat Array already had a history of a million years. After the supreme elder of the past laid down this array formation, it had recorded the countless heroic young elites that had passed through it. Then, a simulacrum of these heroic young elites was reproduced through the array formation and energy, forming a killing array. When a trial challenger rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array they would have to face the onslaught of these numerous geniuses.

Lin Ming silently extracted the Phoenix Blood Spear and slowly flew into the Illusionary God Combat Array. It had already been over a full year since he had last had a hearty and fulfilling battle. Now, his body was bursting with energy, impatient to erupt!

“I wonder how many people Lin Ming can slay. What happens if he surpasses the Thousand Slaughter?” Several young girls from Charming Phoenix Palace whispered to themselves, lost in a daze as they stared at Lin Ming's fading back, dreaming of him.

In fact, Lin Ming was indeed a peerless young heroic elite. Not to mention the great marvels that occurred when he crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction or his handsome appearance and ethereal temperament, but just based on his talent, future, and also the possibility that he would be able to absorb a drop of phoenix blood essence and obtain the characteristics of a God Beast's blood essence in his veins, that alone was enough for countless young beauties to wish that they could marry him.

After having reached this step, it was normal for young girls to be captivated by him.

“Who knows? No one has managed to complete the Thousand Slaughter in 40,000 years. To complete the Illusionary God Combat Array’s Thousand Slaughter is more difficult than reaching the seventh level of the Hells of Flame. Lin Ming is powerful, but wanting to accomplish this feat won’t be easy. Just a few days ago he had barely managed to reach the seventh level of the Hells of Flame too.”

At this point not many people doubted that Lin Ming would be able to obtain the drop of phoenix blood essence. They were only guessing on how far Lin Ming could go in his first attempt within the Illusionary God Combat Array.

Hu –

Lin Ming suddenly shot forwards. His body turned into a ray of light that directly broke into the Illusionary God Combat Array.

When Lin Ming arrived within the Illusionary God Combat Array, he discovered that he had entered a very broad expanse of space.

Lin Ming was in a land of fire. Beating flames surrounded him on all sides, dancing in groups around him. Besides that, there was nothing here but a vast, dark and deathly silent plain, incomparably quiet.

Several hundred feet in front of Lin Ming, a dark gray-clothed person slowly surfaced from the ground. This person was eight feet tall and his features were fierce and demonic. He held a great curved knife in his hand.

“Mm? This isn’t a human?”

Lin Ming looked at this gray-clothed man. He had a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation, two stages lower than Lin Ming himself. This was equal to the most ordinary standard for being a genius in the Divine Realm.

According to age, as a 29 year old seventh stage Life Destruction martial artist, Lin Ming was considered a standard top talent of one of the 72 branch palaces. But, when placed within the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, this wasn’t too amazing at all. For instance, Yan Littlemoon had a seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation and was two years younger than he was.

In other words, once Lin Ming had slain around 500 or 600 people, he would begin to face groups of top seventh and eighth stage Life Destruction masters. When he neared a thousand people, he might even face large squads of ninth stage Life Destruction elites.

Moreover, these people would not be normal ninth stage Life Destruction masters. That would be the true start of the battle!

Sii – !

The gray-clothed man raised his curved knife and rushed forwards. This curved knife was a high-grade saint artifact. As the gray-clothed man slashed it down, a knife light shot out like a 10,000 foot bolt of white lightning, splitting apart the atmosphere.

Lin Ming turned his hand. His body turned into a haze of blue smoke as the Phoenix Blood Spear shot forth like a laser beam!

Kacha!

The 10,000 foot knife light was torn apart by the Phoenix Blood Spear's spear light. The spear light continued forth unabated, piercing through that gray-clothed man's protective true essence and stabbing through his heart.

Blood splashed all around! The gray-clothed man flew backwards. He smashed into the ground, and then his body began to slowly fade away.

Lin Ming effortlessly killed his first opponent. This was also a matter of course. Up to this point, Lin Ming had never yet met a genius at his level whose combat strength had surpassed his own. Moreover, this gray-clothed man had only been at the fifth stage of Life Destruction: he was two stages of Life Destruction lower. Killing him was as easy as turning his hand.

At this time, outside the Illusionary God Combat Array, a star lit up on the arch of the gate. This star represented Lin Ming having slain the first opponent.

Only two breaths of time had passed for Lin Ming to complete the first kill. No one was surprised by this. They waited for the other stars to start shining, especially the ninth star; that represented completion of the Thousand Slaughter.

At this time, Monarch Sweetfox's thoughts moved. She looked up at the sky and mumbled to herself. "Mm? Some people have arrived. This aura is... high-grade spirit artifact?"

Just as her voice fell, a rumbling sound filled the sky like endless thunderclaps. The skies above Fire Spirit Star were torn asunder, and a massive scroll flew out from that shattered space. It slowly unfurled in the skies, forming countless beautiful and exquisite images. These scenes were clearly part of the scroll, and yet when they were projected into the skies of Fire Spirit Star they seemed completely lifelike. They formed a separate domain of space in the skies.

"That is the Sacred Flame Samsara Scroll! It is someone from the Huo Family, and someone extremely important at that!"

Monarch Sweetfox was surprised. The Sacred Flame Samsara Scroll was one of the Huo Family's high-grade spirit artifact magic treasures. Not just that, but it was an outstanding existence amongst all high-grade spirit artifacts. To be able to activate the Sacred Flame Samsara Scroll and drive it through the void, only a high level figure of the Huo Family would be able to do that. "The news of this was just passed out and yet the Huo Family personally sent someone to Fire Spirit Star in order to win over Lin Ming? That's a bit too much isn't it? I wonder who came this time?"

Monarch Sweetfox glanced over at Duke Golden Sword. Duke Golden Sword shrugged. He had only sent the news, he didn't know who had come from the Huo Family.

The disciples of the three branch palaces as well as their leading Elders all stopped talking about Lin Ming attempting the Illusionary God Combat Array and looked up at the Sacred Flame Samsara Scroll in the sky.

“That is actually a... high-grade spirit artifact?” Sun Cyprestar said, startled. There was an enormous difference in value between every small grade of spirit artifacts. His Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron was in truth only a top low-grade spirit artifact, and yet that was enough to cause Chu Redcloud plot to make a bet with him. As for the Samsara Scroll floating in the sky, that was something that his Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron could not hope to compare with.

Without a doubt, whoever had come was a great figure from either headquarters or the three great families.

As the Sacred Flame Samsara Scroll unfurled, three red-robed Elders slowly floated down, flanked by a pair of golden-armored warriors.

As Monarch Sweetfox, Blackwood, and Duke Golden Sword saw these three Elders, especially the one in front, all of their eyes widened to the point of nearly falling out. Their hearts nearly stopped beating in their chests.

As for Sun Cyprestar and Chu Redcloud, both of them had a

perplexed expression as they didn't know who had arrived. But, this confusion only lasted for a brief moment before they were frightened out of their wits.

This was because Monarch Sweetfox, Blackwood, and Duke Golden Sword all deeply bowed to the red-robed Elder at the front.

“Disciple Sweetfox respectfully welcomes the Highest Elder!”

“Disciple Blackwood respectfully welcomes the Highest Elder!”

“Disciple Golden Sword respectfully welcomes the Highest Elder!”

Highest Elder!?!?

This red-robed old man was actually a Highest Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, someone whose status could compare with the Patriarch's!? That was simply a god-like figure! Just what would he have come to Fire Spirit Star for?

Chapter 1026 – Kill Them All

As Monarch Sweetfox and the others called out the title of the Highest Elder, Chu Redcloud, Sun Cyprestar, and the many disciples of the three branch palaces were all left dumbfounded. They didn't think that this red-robed old man was actually the Highest Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

The Highest Elders were titanic figures. Whether it was strength or status, they were equal with the Patriarch. There were even some Highest Elders that had been the Patriarch in the past, but then had abdicated the throne in order to go into seclusion and cultivate. Their strength was even higher than the current Patriarch's.

These characters were lofty and existed above others. Normally they would never come into contact with low level disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, nor would they visit the 72 branch palaces. If a Palace Master of one of the 72 branch palaces went to the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters to request an audience with the Highest Elder, they would also have to respectfully bow.

As for low level palace Elders like Chu Redcloud and Sun Cyprestar, they would simply never see any of the Highest Elders in their lifetimes. At most they would see someone at a lower level like the Internal Affairs Envoy or the Merit Elder. And in their opinion, these types of people were already extraordinary figures. Meeting them was similar to a countryside magistrate seeing an imperial emissary. As for the Highest Elder, that was the emperor.

Now the Highest Elder had come to Fire Spirit Star. There could

only be one explanation for it, and that was that he had come here to observe Lin Ming's trial!

As Chu Redcloud and Sun Cyprestar thought of this, both of them gulped. Lin Ming had even managed to arouse the interest of such a grand character!

“Lin Ming is inside?”

The red-robed old man indifferently asked Duke Golden Sword as he floated high in the sky.

“Yes.” Duke Golden Sword swallowed a mouthful of saliva. This old man speaking to him was named Huo Violentstone and was also his father-in-law's grandfather. In the face of a Highest Elder whose status was so great it could frighten others to death, even the normally impertinent Duke Golden Sword felt an immense pressure.

Huo Violentstone looked over to the single star shining on the arch of the Illusionary God Combat Array. Of the nine stars, only one had lit up. This signified that Lin Ming had slain his first opponent.

“He just entered?”

“Yes, it's only been a dozen or so breaths of time.”

“Mm.” Huo Violentstone nodded. Normally the Illusionary God

Combat Array trial took an extremely long period of time to complete. In a battle between two geniuses where their strength wasn't too far apart, a battle could last several quarter hours or even several hours, not to mention the time it would take to complete the Thousand Slaughter. Even though the beginning would be a bit faster, the further one progressed, the longer each battle would take.

Normally, it would take around a few hours to slay 600 to 700 people. But to kill 800 people, that would take most of the day. As for 900 people, that might take a full day.

40,000 years ago, when someone completed the Thousand Slaughter, that had lasted for two days and two nights!

The last section of the battles was particularly difficult. Withstanding such an endeavor was far easier said than done! A martial artist that completed the Thousand Slaughter would have to have terrifying endurance, and a recovery ability that would allow them to continue through a near-endless revolving war. They also had to possess strong nerves and a powerful will. Otherwise, in a high intensity battle where one's mind was stressed from maintaining total concentration, even if one's body and true essence could withstand it, their mind might not. In a battle between masters, a single distraction could prove to be fatal!

Huo Violentstone thought for a moment and then fell onto the ground in front of Totem Tower. As for everyone else, they retreated in unison, giving ground to Huo Violentstone. In front of a Highest Elder, all of these people were vigilant and also cautious in their discussion.

At this time, the second star lit up; this star symbolized that 10 people had been slain.

Currently, Lin Ming had only been in there for 20 breaths of time. The first 10 people within the Illusionary God Combat Array came out one at a time. After killing one, it would take one or two breaths of time for the next opponent to appear. For Lin Ming to slaughter 10 opponents within 20 breaths of time, that proved that he had instantly killed his opponents as they showed up.

This was also natural. The opponents at the beginning wouldn't surpass the sixth stage of Life Destruction. With Lin Ming's killing strength, it was no different from cutting vegetables.

Then, the third star also lit up. Lin Ming had slain 50 opponents within the Illusionary God Combat Array.

Starting at the 51st opponent, Lin Ming would have to face three at a time.

In this battle, three opponents would appear. Moreover, two of these three would have a seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation, the same as Lin Ming.

These three people appeared and then joined forces to rush at Lin Ming. Each one was fully focused on attacking without giving a single thought to defense. Their moves were all designed for them to perish together with Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's expression was calm. He waved the Phoenix Blood Spear and endless spear lights covered his body. With a 'peng peng peng' sound, the combined attack of the three was blocked by Lin Ming.

Then, Lin Ming swept his spear out. A beautiful spear light drew a brilliant arc, a simple move capable of sweeping through an army. The spearpoint slashed the throats of the three opponents, instantly beheading all of them. They collapsed and vanished in a bloody light!

Lin Ming's moves were extremely simple, but they could be described with a single word – fast, so fast that they reached the extremes of velocity. With such a high speed, the might that such a simple move could display was unimaginable.

After slaying these three people, more and more opponents emerged. However, none of them were Lin Ming's match.

100 slaughtered!

200 slaughtered!

300 slaughtered!

400 slaughtered!

After killing 400 people, the geniuses Lin Ming faced were all at the seventh stage of Life Destruction and above, with many at the eighth stage of Life Destruction.

Lin Ming discovered that the number of opponents he had to face at the same time increased by three for every 100 people he killed. For instance, he faced 12 enemies simultaneously after killing 400 people, and now he faced 15 enemies simultaneously after killing 500 people!

The cultivation of these opponents didn't sound too high. In the past, let alone Life Destruction powerhouses, Lin Ming had even slain numerous Divine Sea powerhouses. But, those Divine Sea powerhouses he had killed couldn't compare with these people in front of him.

If any one of these opponents were chosen, they would be equal to a 29 year old Huo Yanguang or Zhou Fei. In the future they would become characters that crossed the ninth stage of Life Destruction.

Moreover, these people all attacked as if they didn't care for their lives. Their coordination was impeccable and their various attack moves sealed away all avenues of retreat!

However, in the face of absolute strength, all of that was useless!

Spear light swept out and blood splashed out. The Phoenix Blood Spear was like a red dragon diving through a sea of blood. Wherever it visited, flesh and blood would rain down!

Outside of the Illusionary God Combat Array, another star lit up.

Before, because fewer enemies had appeared, Lin Ming's kill count had increased slowly. But now that over 10 opponents appeared each time, the number of them he slaughtered rapidly grew!

An hour later, Lin Ming had already slaughtered 600 people within the Illusionary God Combat Array. This was the same distance that Yan Littlemoon had reached.

Once he passed the checkpoint of slaying 600 enemies, 18 of them appeared at a time!

Moreover, these 18 people all had eighth stage Life Destruction cultivations, a single stage higher than Lin Ming. This meant that if they were real people, their cultivation speed would surpass Lin Ming's, reaching the same level as White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun!

Correspondingly, their combat strength wasn't very different from a 29 year old White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun. Now, Lin Ming had to face 18 of these enemies at a time!

"Trial challenger, for you to rush this far, you have done well. But, this is where your journey ends. Starting from slaughtering 600 opponents, the difficulty will soar to another level. Us 18 people will send you on your way out of here!" The leader of the 18 people suddenly said out loud.

“Mm?” Lin Ming was slightly surprised. He didn’t think that these people would actually speak out like real living persons. It was clear that these 18 people were different from his previous opponents, and this difference was that they all had spiritual wisdom. They weren’t too different from true living opponents. They weren’t like the previous opponents, without the slightest bit of will, risking everything to bring down Lin Ming.

“Then bring it on!” Lin Ming faintly began to stir with excitement. His opponents so far hadn’t been able to place the least bit of pressure on him. But now, he felt a tiny bit of threat from these 18 enemies. He could finally be a bit serious about this, even if it was only a little bit.

“Kill!”

The black-clothed man in the lead roared out and then all 18 of them attacked together as if they were a single person. They moved in in sync, launching a barrage of attacks at Lin Ming.

And, the weapons they used to attack were all top grade saint artifacts!

These weren’t weapons formed from energy, but true top grade saint artifacts!

Within the Illusionary God Combat Array, there were many top grade saint artifacts stored. Their purpose was to stabilize the eye of the array formation. Now, these weapons were used by these

virtual energy simulacrums to attack.

The previous opponents Lin Ming faced had only used high-grade saint artifacts, and the majority of them were formed by energy so their strength was limited. But now, all the weapons used were top grade saint artifact. The might of a top grade saint artifact was far from what a high-grade saint artifact could ever hope to compare with!

18 top grade saint artifacts!

Although there was still a great disparity between these top grade saint artifacts and the Phoenix Blood Spear that neared being a transcendent saint artifact, when these 18 weapons were combined together, their power absolutely surpassed the Phoenix Blood Spear's!

In the moment when the 18 enemies attacked, Lin Ming felt a great pressure fall over him. This was the might and glory of a top grade saint artifact, as well as the influence of a domain!

18 layers of domains!

Each of these enemies Lin Ming currently faced actually possessed a domain!

The grade of these domains was no worse than the Blue Lotus Domain. If any of these people were placed in the 72 branch palaces, they would be splendid and famous characters. 99% of the

disciples that attended the Fire Spirit Star smelting trial this round would be unable to be a match for any of them!

18 different domains superimposed on each other! And then, the pressure of 18 top grade saint artifacts was added on top of that!

Because these different domains could directly multiply each other's strength due to the competing influences, this was still not a pressure that the average person could withstand. If one's combat strength wasn't high enough, they wouldn't even be able to move their true essence in this combined domain field. In other words, if any of the other trial challengers from the three branch palaces were to be in his shoes, they would find it difficult to even stand, so how could they begin to fight back?

“Great!”

Lin Ming's eyes brightened. After killing 600 people and reaching this point, he finally felt pressure! Only such a vigorous battle could stir his excitement and rouse his heart. He simply hadn't been able to display his strength before this. Since breaking through to the seventh stage of Life Destruction, this would be his first chance to verify the insights he comprehended from within the 18 Hells of Flame!

Bang!

With an explosive sound, Lin Ming's figure instantly disappeared, avoiding the combined strike of the 18 people. And this strike ruptured the earth, able to cause mountains to collapse.

Endless amounts of crushed stone flew into the air.

Lin Ming raised the Phoenix Blood Spear as he floated in the air. He didn't have a serious expression on at all. Instead, he grinned with fervor. "You're not bad, but you're still far short of being able to defeat me."

"Haha! Don't worry, the fun part is still coming. Combined martial skills, kill!"

The black-clothed man in the lead gave a loud shout. The 18 people combined forces to attack. The entire sky was filled with the light of top grade saint artifacts!

Chapter 1027 – How Hard Could This Be?

Outside of the Illusionary God Combat Array, all of the disciples present had their gazes turned to the stars above the arch of the portal. As they saw the stars light up with astounding speed, all of them were thrilled.

“This speed! It’s so fast!”

Lin Ming hadn’t even been inside for an hour before so many stars had lit up. With such unstoppable momentum, how was this slaughtering geniuses? It was more like cutting down scattered soldiers!

“It really is fast. It’s much faster than Yan Littlemoon’s performance. It shouldn’t be difficult for Lin Ming to complete the Thousand Slaughter!”

“A bit more than three quarters of an hour has passed. In less than an hour, Lin Ming has slaughtered 500 opponents! Now, I fear that in another quarter hour he will finish killing 600 enemies. If that continues, then he should reach 800 enemies or even 900 enemies slain in four to six hours! Within eight hours the Thousand Slaughter might even be in sight!”

“It shouldn’t be a problem for Lin Ming to obtain the phoenix blood essence anymore! With such irresistible momentum, he might kill 1100 enemies or even 1200 enemies!”

“No kidding, just look at how fast Lin Ming is going. Even I want

to give it a try!”

“Yeah, for this last year we’ve either been meditating over the Concepts or been roasted in the Hells of Flame. I’m so bored that even my hair has grown long. I really want to go into the Illusionary God Combat Array and have a grand battle. Although I might not be able to complete the Thousand Slaughter, it shouldn’t be a problem to kill several hundred opponents. You know, thinking about it, I also excel in combat. Although I’m not some sort of master when it comes to perceiving the Laws, my true combat skills are definitely worth some merit!”

“Haha, me too! My head hurts when I have to perceive all this nonsense about Laws. Combat is my true strong suit. Ahh, my hands are really itching for some action!”

On Praying Phoenix Palace’s side, several genius disciples were whipped up. As they saw Lin Ming kill in such a hot-blooded manner, they were also stirred up into a frenzy. Their voices became increasingly loud as they impatiently wished to test out their own strength.

Young disciples, especially those geniuses, always held a proud and arrogant mindset. When they met a challenge that the public regarded as impossible, they would invariably want to attempt it. There would always be a voice in their mind asking them, if they were so strong in this area, just how poor could their performance be?

Of course, they also knew the limits of their own ability. Completing the Thousand Slaughter was impossible, but maybe

slaughtering 600 or so opponents was a possibility.

They had never rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array before, so they simply didn't understand just how difficult it was. They had only seen Yan Littlemoon attempt it once, and Yan Littlemoon was also a genius who excelled in the aspect of Laws. For most of her life, she had been closed up in cultivation. She hadn't gone out adventuring many times and hadn't been tempered through trials of actual combat. Moreover, to these geniuses, Yan Littlemoon was also a woman. There were many young disciples present that were renowned for their combat abilities. They had journeyed into mystic realms before and killed hundreds and thousands of opponents, undergoing countless life or death tribulations. None of them believed they were weaker than Yan Littlemoon when it came to combat. At least, they weren't too far off.

But what they didn't know was that the difficulty of the Illusionary God Combat Array's Thousand Slaughter had far surpassed their wildest imaginations.

The echoes of these discussions naturally fell into the ears of the Highest Elder Huo Violentstone.

“To take four to six hours to kill 800 people, or 900 people?

“To near the Thousand Slaughter in eight hours?

“They all want to go into the Illusionary God Combat Array to fight, and even though completing the Thousand Slaughter is

impossible, killing several hundred opponents isn't a problem?

“Lin Ming has unstoppable momentum? He can slaughter 1100, or even 1200 opponents?”

As Huo Violentstone heard these disciples talking, he sneered. This bunch of stupid pigs, they knew nothing!!!

They only knew that the Thousand Slaughter was difficult, but as to how difficult it really was, they had no idea. They knew that it wouldn't be easy for Lin Ming to complete the Thousand Slaughter, but as to how not easy it really was, they also had no idea!

This was similar to a mentally handicapped retard not knowing how difficult a high imperial examination was. They didn't know just how hard it was for others to score perfectly, because they didn't even know that one plus one equaled two!

As a Highest Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Huo Violentstone had also rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array in the past, and had managed to kill 700 enemies as his limit. Afterwards, he stumbled upon a massive fortuitous encounter in the Divine Transformation realm. He returned to the Illusionary God Combat Array after that and killed a total of 882 opponents.

Although Huo Violentstone was only 18 away from reaching 900 enemies slain, those enemies that appeared after 900 people had already appeared, and he was able to personally witness just how terrifying they actually were!

If any single one of those geniuses were picked out then they could be a 100 year ranked talent of the 72 branch palaces. If 27 of them joined forces, their combat strength was impossible to estimate.

When Huo Violentstone encountered those enemies, he felt as if an insurmountable mountain had appeared in front of him. Not just that, but if he managed to kill them, there would still be increasingly powerful opponents that appeared, all the way until the mythical Thousand Slaughter!

That was already an existence that Huo Violentstone found hard to imagine. He really couldn't imagine how the man known as the Battle King from 40,000 years ago had managed to break through the Thousand Slaughter! That was simply a feat found in legends!

Huo Violentstone highly suspected that once one approached the Thousand Slaughter, any one of those 27 people that would appear had the ability to sweep away all of the so-called 'geniuses' present.

As Huo Violentstone heard the excited discussions of the disciples behind him grow ever louder, with many of them saying that they would participate in the Illusionary God Combat Array tomorrow, his frown became increasingly deep.

And beside Huo Violentstone, Duke Golden Sword, who was on full alert, also felt like he where standing on pins and needles. These geniuses were simply unaware of how difficult it was. In truth, they didn't even possess the qualifications to attempt the

Illusionary God Combat Array.

Duke Golden Sword gulped. He stumbled through an explanation, “Highest Elder, please forgive these juniors your anger. These branch palace disciples have never attempted the Illusionary God Combat Array and they have never experienced just how wide the word is. Before this, Yan Littlemoon had gone through once, and although she is outstanding in comprehension of Laws, her true combat ability can’t be considered to be at the peak. Even then, Yan Littlemoon still managed to kill almost 600 opponents. They have no idea just how difficult it becomes after that.”

Huo Violentstone didn’t bother with Duke Golden Sword. Instead, he turned to the two middle-aged men behind him and said, “Highdragon, Whitejade, bring out a projection of the battlefield so that this crowd of small minded idiots can broaden their horizons, lest they think themselves infallible! Moreover, I also want to see just what sort of scene appears after 900 people, and what strength it will take to overcome that pass!”

“Yes, Patriarch.”

Huo Highdragon and Huo Whitejade nodded. Then, they joined together and released thousands of array symbols that flew into the Illusionary God Combat Array. As two individuals skilled in ancient arrays, they were able to project the situation that was happening within the Illusionary God Combat Array.

Soon after, a screen of light appeared above the Illusionary God Combat Array, as if phantom images were condensing. Duke

Golden Sword's eyes widened as he saw this and he locked onto the shining light screen above him. In the past, he had stopped short of killing 700 opponents. As for what the scene would be like after that, he wasn't sure. He wished to experience it with his own eyes.

“Whoa, look at that light screen!” Behind Huo Violentstone, the disciples of the three branch palaces were shocked as they saw a screen of light appear above the Illusionary God Combat Array. Then, their surprise turned to excitement.

“That is a projection of the Illusionary God Combat Array that was formed by the supernatural powers of the honored lords present? Amazing! We can see Lin Ming's killing fight within the Illusionary God Combat Array now!”

“Haha, this is awesome! We don't have to stare at those stars anymore, that simply isn't any fun at all. You just can't see anything from them and you have to rely on your imagination.”

“The scene of battle within the Illusionary God Combat Array must be very intense and very exciting!”

As the disciples present spoke, they all turned their eyes to the screen of light above them. The images that appeared were dim at the start, as if it were a reflection in the water. Slowly, it became completely clear. They were even able to sense the fluctuations of energy coming from each person. It was no different from standing on the sidelines of the fight and seeing it in person.

Following that, the disciples all watched with open mouths.

One of the disciples that had been loudly wondering out how awesome the fight was within the Illusionary God Combat Array immediately shut up without a single word to say. His eyes were so wide it seemed they would nearly fall out from their sockets.

He was able to see a black-clothed man that was clearly an opponent. In his mind, this opponent should have been the same as random cannon fodder that would be swept away by Lin Ming. But, they saw that this black-clothed man wielded a massive great sword, and with every slash of his sword, roaring flames would blaze into the heavens. And all around this black-clothed man for a radius of ten miles, the entire land was actually covered with life of all sorts. Insects, fish, birds, beasts, plants, all types of lifeforms were forming, and blue lotuses were constantly in bloom.

“That... that... that is the Blue Lotus Domain? That person’s cultivation is at the eighth stage of Life Destruction?” The disciple stared with wide eyes. He could sense that that person’s aura and energy fluctuations were extremely deep. His foundation was solid and his strength was terrifying!

And, the Blue Lotus Domain was something that this disciple hadn’t yet managed to comprehend. Although he had confidence in his combat prowess, he couldn’t summon the least bit of courage to face this single black-clothed man!

And beside this disciple, another disciple was so shocked his voice trembled. “It isn’t just the Blue Lotus Domain, everyone else also has a domain! That is the Purple Light Electric Field of the Thunder Laws! It is a domain on the same level as the Blue Lotus

Domain! Mm!?!? This... that is... look at their weapons!!”

As this disciple cried out in alarm, all of the other disciples turned to the weapons that the energy body opponents held.

“Heavens! They are actually top grade saint artifacts! 18 top grade saint artifacts! Top grade saint artifacts already have a tremendous strength by themselves. They are terrifying even without a martial artist needed to actively use them! And with 18 top grade saint artifacts combined together, this is... this is just...”

Although many top grade saint artifacts had appeared around Lin Ming, that was because at Lin Ming’s level, many people he came into contact with were peak talents that were able to obtain top grade saint artifacts of their own. But, a common disciple often didn’t even have a high-grade saint artifact!

For instance, even Ninefall geniuses that came from distinguished families like Huang Yuegong and Huo Yanguang also only used high-grade saint artifacts!

Besides Lin Ming, only other monstrous geniuses like White Daohong, Lu Xiaoyun, and Yan Littlemoon were able to possess top grade saint artifacts in the Life Destruction realm.

The Ancient Phoenix smelting trial rewarded top grade saint artifacts, but one needed to reach the fourth level 5000 mile distance. Out of all the other disciples present, besides Xiao Whitesnow, just who was able to accomplish such a feat?

Thus, to the many young disciples, a top grade saint artifact was a treasure they could only yearn for in their dreams. To them, the existence of a top grade saint artifact had already left an indelible and great impression in their hearts. A single top grade saint artifact was worth at least 20 times the total wealth of one of these young disciples; they could forget about ever obtaining one until they reached the Divine Transformation realm.

But now, by himself, Lin Ming had to face the siege of 18 top grade saint artifacts together!

Chapter 1028 – Source of Phoenix Blood

18 figures, underneath the support of their domains, simultaneously displayed the power of their top grade saint artifacts!

Woosh woosh woosh!

The sound of splitting air filled the skies. The multiple domains superimposed on each other and countless wonderful phenomena appeared. The fiery ground underneath Lin Ming's feet ruptured from the oppression of energy and main domains together. The earth shattered, becoming powdered stone. The magma that was flowing underneath shot up to the heavens!

18 different attacks combined together and came falling down like a great net!

In that moment, Lin Ming suddenly condensed his aura. He opened the Gate of Wonder and revolved the Mystic Lightning Shade, his speed instantly reaching the limit!

On the screen of light, one could also see blurry after shadows.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Three true essence attacks fell onto nothing!

With an incredible angle, Lin Ming passed through space like a nimble little fish, searching for a breakthrough in this net of attacks!

He thrust the Phoenix Blood Spear forwards!

Ca!

In that instant, a straight beam of blood red light shot into the heavens, condensing into an explosion of energy that dyed the entire world sanguine.

A resonant phoenix cry echoed outwards as an endless blood light surged out from the Phoenix Blood Spear, forming a crimson storm. This storm tore apart all of the overlapping domains around Lin Ming; even the space around him trembled!

This was the power of the Phoenix Blood Spear. As a divine weapon that neared a transcendent saint artifact, its strength was originally that of a top master. When combined with Lin Ming's strength, it was able to instantly detonate with an incomparable might that flooded the world!

Chi!

Two shadow figures were swallowed up by the crimson storm and torn into pieces of flesh, instantly killed.

However, Lin Ming didn't relax. Just as he killed those two, a

saber light seemed to cut through space and appear in front of him. It carried with it a large success bronze battle spirit, overwhelming all!

A bronze battle spirit wasn't much at all, but these attacks originated from a top grade saint artifact; they were no laughing matter! Even someone like Lin Ming would be severely wounded and vomit blood if he were to be simultaneously struck by these attacks.

Without looking, Lin Ming instantly turned into blue smoke. This straight and seemingly unavoidable saber light fell onto nothing. In that moment, Lin Ming's shadow seemed to be like a stream of water without figure or substance, dizzying to the eyes.

The Phoenix Blood Spear's spear light swept out once again. The keen blood light formed a straight line that shot outwards, sweeping through the skies!

Three figures were split in half by this spear light!

In that brief moment, Lin Ming had dodged the attacks coming from all sides and had also killed five opponents. In the blink of an eye, not only did Lin Ming avoid the combined attacks of 18 people, but he also tore through their combined domains!

From start to finish, Lin Ming had only used the strength of the Phoenix Blood Spear; he hadn't even poured much true essence into his weapon. The might of the Phoenix Blood Spear was already freakish enough!

“Two have died – no, five have died!”

In Totem Tower’s square, everyone watched as Lin Ming faced 18 powerful geniuses. Even so, with just the spear in his hand he had killed five people! The changing situation on the battlefield had surpassed everyone’s expectations!

These seemingly strong opponents had been cut down by Lin Ming like mere fodder. The process happened so fast that most of the disciples couldn’t even follow it!

As for the top grade saint artifacts, they might be powerful but they weren’t able to touch Lin Ming.

And, the numerous domain force fields superimposed on top of each other had been broken apart by Lin Ming using absolute strength!

Out of the 18 people, five had died. With their combined fighting technique broken through, everyone else lost their coordination and more gaps appeared in their defenses. As for the superimposed domains, they also lost a great deal of power.

“Damn, how could this be!”

The leader of the 18 martial artists was enraged. He never imagined that in just a single exchange of moves his entire party would be routed like this!

And at this time, Lin Ming shot forth once again!

Lin Ming was clear that rushing through the Illusionary God Combat Array would be an enormous challenge. He was only at 600 people slain and yet his opponents were already so formidable. If White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun were at his age, then it would be impossible for them to pass this step! Not just that, but there was still the 700 mark, 800 mark, all the way until the Thousand Slaughter. What sort of scene would that be?

Moreover, it couldn't be forgotten that he wouldn't have any rest time at all. As the fight continued, his true essence reserves would be rapidly depleted.

If this were so, Lin Ming naturally couldn't drag things on, nor could he underestimate his opponents. He had to utilize the smallest amount of energy possible to settle these battles as quickly as possible!

Kill!

Spear light surged forth and a bloody light rained down on the world. Above the Phoenix Blood Spear, 99 miniature blood spears condensed!

This was the special technique laid down by the ancient senior supreme elder that had forged the Phoenix Blood Spear. That senior supreme elder had fused 999 drops of phoenix blood into the Phoenix Blood Spear. Every drop of phoenix blood was capable of

transforming into a spear, finally forming a great array with the principles of nine through nine returning to one. This was also the Phoenix Blood Spear's greatest killing move. When Lin Ming had been at the fifth stage of Life Destruction, he had relied on this move to jump ranks and defeat the Four Layered Heavens Ninefall Huo Yanguang.

However, in order to save strength, Lin Ming had only used 99 of these blood spears. As these 99 small spears swirled together, they formed a crimson storm. Wherever this storm visited, a deluge of infernal energy would appear!

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Six black-clothed men were slaughtered by these blood spears. After the encirclement was torn apart, Lin Ming's killing speed rose to another level. He was able to kill a person in just three steps!

After the six black-clothed men died, their blood was drawn out by the 99 small spears. Their energy seemed to have been sucked away by the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Although they were all top grade saint artifacts, the might that Lin Ming's spear was able to display in his hands was countless times more formidable than what those 18 people were able to do.

In just several breaths of time, 11 out of the 18 people had been killed!

“You damned freak...” The black-clothed man in the lead was actually able to produce a trace of fear.

This caused Lin Ming to sigh at the reality that this Illusionary God Combat Array was able to reproduce. But, this was because this black-clothed man had once been a genius, a true powerhouse of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, and all of his information had been recorded in this killing array. The entirety of this simulacrum had come from a true living person.

“Go die!” The black-clothed man actually combusted his blood essence as he prepared to release his final attack.

However, Lin Ming was far faster. The Phoenix Blood Spear shot forwards and instantly pierced through the black-clothed man’s throat. With a sweep of spear light, the other six people were also killed!

All 18 people were cleanly slaughtered.

Lin Ming’s kill count had reached 616!

“They’re all dead... they were all killed...”

As the young disciples saw these 18 people die, some of them were stunned, unable to produce a response. They knew that it would be difficult for Lin Ming to rush through the Illusionary God Combat Array. They also knew that after killing 500 people, it would become more and more difficult. Still, this difficulty surpassed

even their wildest imaginations. 18 people combining attacks, each with their own domain and each with their own top grade saint artifact.

Even though it was already difficult to such a degree, Lin Ming had still killed them in a short period of time without the least bit of injury to himself!

“If it is already so difficult after killing 600 people, then what about slaughtering 700 or even 800? What about slaughtering 900 or even completing the Thousand Slaughter? Is there anyone that can actually overcome that hurdle?” The Illusionary God Combat Array increased to another difficulty level every 100 people. This was because within this hundred, it was only the individual strength of the enemies that increased. But with every 100 enemies killed, that also meant that not only would their strength increase, but three more opponents would appear, and their combined attacks would become even fiercer.

“I feel that any one of those 18 people that Lin Ming killed is likely to be stronger than me. I fear that if I tried this, I wouldn’t even be able to kill 300 opponents...”

“How could headquarters set such a bizarrely abnormal standard. This is the same as them not wanting to give the phoenix blood essence to anyone!”

In the view of the many disciples, if the Ancient Phoenix Clan set forth such a standard then that meant there would be a chance of completing it. But, the truth that they didn’t know was that the reason headquarters had put forth this impossible standard was

because they didn't wish to bestow upon anyone a drop of phoenix blood essence.

There wasn't anything that could be done about it – there was just too little phoenix blood essence. A God Beast was an existence situated between a World King and an Empyrean. As for the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, they were only a Holy Land level influence; it was impossible for them to raise a true phoenix. All of the phoenix blood essence they had was obtained in the past. Before they were able to obtain more phoenix blood essence, every drop used was a drop less.

As for how the Ancient Phoenix Clan gathered phoenix blood essence, that was the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters' greatest secret. This secret was sealed deep within headquarters in order to prevent it being lost to time. In addition, only the current Patriarch and the previous Patriarchs that had abdicated and become a Highest Elder knew of it. Although Huo Violentstone was a Highest Elder, he hadn't been Patriarch before so he didn't know this secret either.

Even so, Huo Violentstone was able to approximate enough information for a guess. The phoenix blood essence should come from the remnant body of a phoenix after it went through nirvana and was burnt down by the sacred flames. As for how the Ancient phoenix Clan determined when a phoenix nirvana happened and where the remnant body would be located, this was actually a mystery. This was the greatest capital that the Ancient Phoenix Clan had to survive, and also the reason they were able to multiply into a giant sect with 100 billion clansmen.

It was more accurate to say that the Ancient Phoenix Clan weren't true descendants of a phoenix, but rather a massive sect that originated from a small group of people that had obtained a tremendous secret.

However, a phoenix's nirvana occurred only every ten million or even tens of millions of years. As for blood essence, there would only be an extremely small amount within that remnant body. Just how much blood essence could possibly be extracted each time?

Even so, this blood essence had to be saved for 10 million years and carefully divided amongst the countless true geniuses that emerged during that time. To the Patriarch, the degree of nervousness they felt when choosing who to grant a drop of phoenix blood essence to could be imagined.

As Huo Violentstone watched the images in the sky, he was silent throughout. Up until now, Lin Ming still hadn't shown a performance that was awe worthy.

But as for Duke Golden Sword, he was actually bowled over by Lin Ming. When he had killed 600 people, every following battle afterwards had been extremely difficult. He had never fought as relaxedly as Lin Ming did.

After killing the 18 people at the start, there wasn't anything surprising that came after them. Although the opponents were a tad more powerful each time, it wasn't anything to Lin Ming. Lin Ming continued killing his way through them. Blood rained down and his kill count rapidly increased.

As for Lin Ming himself, he didn't use too much true essence. He only relied on the strength of the Phoenix Blood Spear and the small blood spears. He used 99 at the start, and then the number slowly increased to 360. At 360 small spears, the blood storm created by them was able to fill the skies, bringing with them enough power to tear apart the combined domains as well as kill off his opponents.

As long as Lin Ming was able to kill one person, killing every person behind them was much easier.

Chapter 1029 – World of Will Projection

650 people, 680 people, 700 people!

As the seventh star on the portal's arch lit up, this signified that Lin Ming had cut down 700 enemies. At the same time, the number of opponents he faced at once suddenly increased to 21 people.

With every 100 people slain, the difficulty of the Illusionary God Combat Array would sharply increase. Upon reaching 600, the difficulty wasn't too great. But from going to 600 to 700, the difficulty would double!

All 21 opponents that showed up were eighth stage Life Destruction powerhouses. In the future, they would be characters that would step into Ninefall. If the 21 of them combined their strengths, uniting their combat techniques together, the pressure they placed on Lin Ming would increase by another level!

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands, his nerves as sharp as steel wire. Up until now, he had been focusing on saving as much true essence and energy as possible. If he could use just one move to defeat his opponent then he wouldn't use a second. If he could depend on the Phoenix Blood Spear then he wouldn't need to use his own true essence.

Using various methods to reserve his strength also meant that he was limiting his combat prowess. This caused his battles to seem on the edge of danger.

And as Lin Ming was buried in this battle, he forced himself to his limit again and again. He lowered his strength and true essence usage to just the amount required, tempering his own fighting style.

After cutting down 700 enemies, every subsequent one had their own intelligence and mind, and their combat methods also came in an endlessly shifting variety. Lin Ming suspected that all of these people were once absolutely genius martial artists. When the supreme elder built the Illusionary God Combat Array, he had also used some special method to input all of these genius' information into the array formation, reproducing the glory of their past!

These energy bodies were all outstanding heroes of their own era. All of them excelled in combat, and all of them had rich experience in life or death trials. Although their cultivation was only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction, it still wasn't easy for Lin Ming to slay them in a situation where he was trying to conserve his true essence! In particular, when he went to kill someone, he would encounter the coordinated counterattack of the others; he had to be extremely careful in his movements.

But in such a brutal melee, Lin Ming also obtained enormous benefits. He was absorbing everything around him, experiencing for himself the countless fighting methods of past combat crazy geniuses.

730 people...

740 people...

750 people...

Although the opponents past 700 were more powerful than those that had come before, none of them were able to stop Lin Ming's footsteps. He killed his way through the crowd of opponents until he had finally cut down 800 in total!

At this time, from the point when Lin Ming had entered the Illusionary God Combat Array, nearly six hours had passed.

“800 Slaughter!”

As everyone outside looked at the light screen in the sky, all of them gulped. They had discovered that their thoughts of the Illusionary God Combat Array had been far too simple. Not to mention that Lin Ming was undergoing a frigid battle inside, even they who were watching from the outside felt their minds strained as they lay witness to this never ending battle.

“Mm? That person is... Ninefall cultivation!”

After killing 800 people, Lin Ming now faced 24 opponents at once. And among them was a single Ninefall powerhouse!

Lin Ming was currently 29 years old, so his opponent was naturally also 29 years old. What sort of concept was a 29 year old Ninefall martial artist? That was a cultivation speed almost the same as Yan Littlemoon's. Although Yan Littlemoon had the

appearance of a young girl, the truth was that she was 27 years old. She would soon step into Eightfall, and she would reach Ninefall when she was 28 or 29 years of age.

For such a monstrous genius with an amazingly high cultivation speed, even if their strength couldn't exceed Yan Littlemoon's because of the difference in their bloodlines, the difference was probably not too far off.

After cutting down 800 people, the crowd of enemies he faced now could be called truly terrifying!

As these 24 opponents appeared, they didn't immediately attack. Instead, they carefully observed Lin Ming. Their eyes didn't seem like those of an energy body that didn't possess life. Instead, a vibrant intelligence glimmered behind their pupils. They were looking for Lin Ming's weakness.

As one went further into the Illusionary God Combat Array, the opponents would become increasingly intelligent. At the very start, the energy forms that the Illusionary God Combat Array produced seemed no different from puppets that didn't have a mind of their own. Thus, they didn't understand anything that was happening. But now, nearing the end, these opponents all had varied mystical combat methods. Their attacks were cunning and filled with guile, and their defenses were tightly guarded. These were extremely difficult opponents!

"It looks like what I've heard before wasn't wrong. The Illusionary God Combat Array is a special memory-type array formation system. The world inside is a projection of a will world.

Every genius that enters is recorded by the array formation. Now, the opponents that Lin Ming has to face are all true geniuses that were recorded down inside the array formation's memory. If any one of these people were to be placed in the 72 branch palaces, they would be extremely outstanding characters, leaders of their own generation. If they went to somewhere like Saint Artifact Pavilion, they would even be able to take their own top grade saint artifact!"

The one who spoke was White Daohong. He had also rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array several times in the past. But, for him to have an achievement like killing 700 or even 600 people, that was simply impossible. He could only feel powerless and bitter in the face of such a hurdle. Thus, the opponents White Daohong faced inside were usually energy form puppets that the Illusionary God Combat Array produced, beings without a mind of their own. Their fighting techniques were rigid and they were easy to kill. There was no way to compare them with the opponents that Lin Ming was currently facing.

"800 Slaughter... this brat has finally reached this step. In the past when I was at the Divine Transformation realm, I was also stranded here. At the end, I managed to kill 882 people, but I never managed to break through 900 people. It looks like this brat Lin Ming is still holding himself back, so surpassing me shouldn't be a problem for him. However, after 900 people, that is when the true difficulty begins!"

Huo Violentstone thought out loud. And as he spoke, Lin Ming began fighting these 24 opponents.

Woosh –

As 24 people attacked him together, all of their attacks locked onto Lin Ming's vital points. At 600 people, Lin Ming was still able to rely on his extraordinary speed to dodge through the gaps produced by the difference in weapon speeds. But now, after slaying 800 opponents, all of these attacks were like bolts of lightning, far too difficult to avoid. He immediately fell into a siege on all sides.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. With a loud shout, the gold battle spirit in his spiritual sea howled out, forming a world of will projection around him.

A gold battle spirit's world of will was able to suppress the real world to an extent. When one's will was formidable enough, they could pour their will into anything within their world of will, making it indestructible and impenetrable.

For instance, the air and heaven and earth origin energy within the world of will projection.

If he fused his will with the air, he could make the air as hard as divine steel, crushing to death all enemies that stepped into his world of will.

If he poured his will into the heaven and earth origin energy, he could cause it to become as wild and fiery as a volcano, making it so that enemies couldn't use it.

Peng! Peng!

In front of Lin Ming, two sword lights were directly blown up by a single thought from him!

Although it seemed as if Lin Ming had only glanced at the two sword lights to destroy them, the truth was that in that brief flash, he had disturbed the composition of origin energy that served as the foundation for the sword lights, causing them to not be cohesive anymore and naturally disperse. Such a move wasn't light on Lin Ming's consumption of soul force.

Then, Lin Ming took advantage of this opportunity he created by ripping apart the two attacks, and flushed out.

Chasing Thunder!

Without using the energy attack of the Phoenix Blood Spear, Lin Ming directly used his true essence. Although Chasing Thunder couldn't compare with the might of the nine through nine rebirthed to one array formation in the Phoenix Blood Spear, in terms of speed it was far faster. At this moment, what Lin Ming needed the most was speed!

Ca!

There was a flash of purple light, a saber-using black-clothed man was directly stabbed through the stomach by Lin Ming. A flash of lightning swept over him, instantly crushing his dantian into pieces. The black-clothed man died where he stood.

After Lin Ming instantly killed one person, he took this chance to kill another. However, he was blocked by others and forced away by their attacks. But, the wave of electricity still surged over that second person, causing their entire body to be briefly paralyzed.

This brief moment was all Lin Ming needed.

Purple Lion Thunder Source!

Roar!

The Heretical God Sprout's second thunder leaf began to shine with a blazing light. With a loud lion's roar, a purple lion shot out like a bolt of lightning. With the support of the gold battle spirit, the purple lion's speed instantly reached an unbelievable degree, a velocity so fast that even the surrounding space twisted!

Puff!

The purple lion turned into a bolt of light that broke into the second black-clothed man's body, searing his organs and instantly killing him!

Although he had killed two people in the blink of an eye, Lin Ming's battle in this brief moment was not easy at all. If his response had been slightly slower or if his attacks didn't connect correctly, then the results would have been drastically different. After slaying 800 people, the enemies Lin Ming faced had slowly

begun to truly threaten him. He had no choice but to reveal more and more of his strength, consuming more energy in the process.

Lin Ming began to admire the Battle King that had completed the Thousand Slaughter 40,000 years ago. Completing the Illusionary God Combat Array's Thousand Slaughter was much more difficult than how Lin Ming imagined it would be. Although Lin Ming was still holding back, he expected that once he had slain 900 people and neared the Thousand Slaughter, the enemies he faced would be far more terrifying. In order to confront them he would have to fight with everything he had.

The Illusionary God Combat Array's Thousand Slaughter surpassed even the 18 Hells of Flame's seventh level in difficulty. There was a reason that only one person in the Ancient Phoenix Clan had managed to overcome this pass in over 40,000 years!

It had to be known that the Ancient Phoenix Clan had over 100 billion clansmen. In 40,000 years, over a trillion geniuses had probably emerged. And among these geniuses were countless ones that had come from great noble families, and also countless ones that had gone through epic adventures and encountered unbelievable lucky chances. But even then, in front of completing the Thousand Slaughter, all of these countless geniuses had been defeated!

After killing two people, Lin Ming immediately felt the pressure on him reduce by a great amount. He combined his attacks with the gold battle spirit and easily followed up by killing a third, fourth, and fifth person.

After killing the eighth person, a third of the 24 man formation had been killed off. The combined combat technique completely shattered! Following that was a scene of massacre. Lin Ming put forth all kinds of moves and killed one after another until all 24 had died!

From killing 800 to killing 900, there would only be four waves of enemies. Lin Ming had exterminated a wave and clearly had plenty of strength left over. No one suspected that he would have trouble slaying 900 enemies.

“I never thought that Junior-apprentice Brother Lin would have such achievements in the Concept of Thunder!”

“He has a dual-attribute physique. His compatibility with the Thunder Laws must be beyond our imaginations!”

Like this, Lin Ming slaughtered wave after wave, all the way until he cut down the 890th person. He easily surpassed Huo Violentstone’s past results.

At this time, the number of opponents he faced at once increased by three yet again, turning into 27!

27 was originally three sets of nine. This numeral in itself contained a truth of the world that was difficult to describe.

As long as he could pass through this checkpoint of 900 people, he would reach the Thousand Slaughter!

Chapter 1030 – The Power of Laws

After reaching the 900 Slaughter, 27 opponents appeared. And, among these opponents, a third of them were ninth stage Life Destruction masters. If they were placed within the 72 branch palaces, their talent would far surpass that of Lu Xiaoyun!

With their domains, top grade saint artifacts, and combat experience that lay at the pinnacle, when all of these conditions were added together, the difficulty of overcoming them could be imagined!

And after these 27 people appeared, light began to shimmer beneath their feet. This light formed a series of strange symbols that linked up into a pattern, like ripples across a lake surface.

Underneath the feet of these 27 people, there were actually three postcelestial dao diagrams that had formed!

These three dao diagrams were divided into three different parts. They were the pillars of a giant sphere that surrounded Lin Ming. Each dao diagram had a total of seven sections, and the shining runes that lay at these seven directions were red, yellow, orange, green, cerulean, blue, and purple. And, in the center was a white and black yin yang symbol, forming a complete eight trigrams design.

The 27 people were divided into three groups of nine and were surrounding Lin Ming.

Red, yellow, orange, green, cerulean, blue, and purple represented seven different types of origin energy: the elements of fire, earth, metal, wood, water, thunder, and wind.

Red was fire, yellow was earth, orange was metal, green was wood, cerulean was wind, blue was water, and purple was thunder!

In addition, with the black and white in the center, black represented yin and white represented yang!

Metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, thunder, yin, and yang were nine different energies. Nine symbolized the extreme of all numbers, and three diagrams represented the truth that three gave birth to all life, three was the beginning of all existence!

Lin Ming was instantly vigilant, his expression solemn. These people at 900 Slaughter were actually so powerful! All of them were geniuses with talent far beyond White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun, and they had also formed a great formation, multiplying their attack power!

And above Totem Tower's square, the disciples of the three branch palaces could see for themselves just how terrifying this sort of battle formation was.

Even though they didn't know how Lin Ming would manage to break through this giant battle formation, just thinking back to 40,000 years ago aroused a deep respect in their heart, respect towards the Battle King who had completed the Thousand Slaughter.

“This is simply a hurdle that no person can pass!”

“It is indeed too difficult. But, 40,000 years ago, wasn’t there a senior that managed to rush all the way through? I really have no idea just how he accomplished that!”

“I also thought that Lin Ming completing the Thousand Slaughter would be no different from playing a game, but now I know just how freakishly difficult the Thousand Slaughter actually is!”

As the disciples of the three branch palaces were talking, Lin Ming had already started fighting with the 27 enemies.

The 27 people each displayed their own cultivation method. Lin Ming then discovered that each person’s cultivation method matched with the rune element underneath their feet on the postcelestial dao diagrams. The one that trained in fire-attribute cultivation methods stood on the corresponding fire rune and the one that trained in thunder-attribute cultivation methods stood on the corresponding thunder rune!

“This is...”

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. As he saw these three postcelestial dao diagrams rush towards him, he poured his true essence into the Phoenix Blood Spear and thrust out!

A dark crimson blood stream emerged from the Phoenix Blood Spear. This crimson blood stream swirled up into a massive red storm formed of 999 small crimson spears. Each small spear contained near-infinite infernal energy and heavenly glory!

Bang!

The small blood spears gathered into a great surging torrent that smashed into the three postcelestial dao diagrams. Blood red light and infernal energy erupted, but the postcelestial dao diagrams didn't shake at all. The 27 people still shot towards Lin Ming!

“How fierce! They actually managed to block the attack of the Phoenix Blood Spear!”

“This is bad for Lin Ming. The Phoenix Blood Spear is a top grade saint artifact nearing a transcendent saint artifact! Its striking power is equivalent to an extreme master's, but now, the Phoenix Blood Spear is useless against the array formation created by these 27 people. In order to kill them he will need a far greater strength!”

“If even the Phoenix Blood Spear's nine through nine return to one array formation isn't enough, just what can Lin Ming still do?”

The disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace were worried for Lin Ming. A top grade saint artifact was enough for a martial artist to use until the late Divine Transformation realm; their strength was incomparable. When Lin Ming had defeated Huo Yanguang, he had relied on the power of the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. The Phoenix Blood Spear was indeed powerful, but even though he galvanized this weapon with all his strength, he still didn't manage to break through the three postcelestial dao diagrams. This wasn't because he lost in strength, but because he lost in Laws. These three postcelestial dao diagrams were simply far too exquisite. Metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, thunder, yin, yang, these nine different Concepts complemented and supported each other, their might multiplying!

And on Lin Ming's side, the Phoenix Blood Spear's nine through nine return to one array formation that formed the crimson storm actually required comprehension of the Concept of Blood to fully utilize it. However, Lin Ming's understanding towards the Concept of Blood was lacking, thus it was inevitable that he couldn't break through the postcelestial dao diagrams.

However, Lin Ming did not panic. He didn't decide to use the grandmist martial intent, but decided to use another method to deal with this challenge.

He drew backwards and gave a loud shout as he opened the Heretical God Force to the limit! In that moment, the ubiquitous fire origin energy of Fire Spirit Star was gathered up by Lin Ming, forming a massive funnel. The fire origin energy gathered together, causing a dazzling blue lotus to bloom into full glory in front of Lin Ming!

This was a move that Lin Ming had never used before, and also a killing move that he had created!

Lin Ming had studiously meditated in Totem Tower for an entire

year. Then, in the 18 Hells of Flame he had also mastered his insights. He had combined the first three levels of the Fire Concepts together and had deeply ingrained the Law runes and postcelestial dao diagrams into his very bones.

After that, when he crossed into the seventh stage of Life Destruction he had withstood the baptism of Laws from a three mile wide origin energy cloud. Then, he had meditated for two days afterwards, thoroughly digesting these Laws.

As he diligently perceived all of this, Lin Ming hadn't been playing around, but had instead perceived a killing move based on the Fire Laws!

Before Lin Ming had opened the Gate of Opening, he had already used the memories of the soul fragments he absorbed and combined his understandings from them to form his self-created style. And now, after opening the Gate of Opening, his perception had leapt into the top echelons of the Divine Realm, and it had become even easier to create his own techniques!

The attack styles he created certainly couldn't compare with those created by supreme elders, but they were absolutely more suited to himself. At this time, he slashed out with his spear and the earthshaking howl of a spear resounded through the world. A blinding, flaming beam of light shot up, lighting up the entire sky as if it were a pillar that supported the heavens. Then, this beam of light shot forth, piercing through the center of that vivid blue lotus.

After Lin Ming understood how matter had formed, he fully

grasped the essence of the first three Concepts of Fire. In terms of achievements in Laws, he was incomparable to how he was a year ago! Even Divine Transformation realm geniuses like White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun could not compare with Lin Ming when it came to comprehension of the first three levels of the Concept of Fire!

And comprehension of Laws was an extremely important standard in determining a martial artist's potential strength. Since Lin Ming had comprehended the Laws to such a degree, it certainly wasn't solely for bragging rights and to show off. Rather, he was able to clearly transform it into combat strength of his own.

At that time, it was like another sun had appeared within the Illusionary God Combat Array, lighting up the entire world with a lustrous glow. The spear light brought with it an unstoppable momentum. It tore through the wild earth, cutting a massive canyon into the ground. Countless stones shattered into powder, filling up the air!

This spear strike was the strongest attack that Lin Ming had displayed in his 14 years of cultivating martial arts!

Bang!

The spear light smashed into a postcelestial dao diagram. Although it had only struck a single postcelestial dao diagram, the impact was actually withstood by all three of them. In that moment, time itself came to a standstill. Between the heavens and earth, there was nothing but the endless sky above, the earth-rupturing spear light, and those three postcelestial dao diagrams.

The rapidly spinning postcelestial dao diagrams suddenly trembled and came to an immediate stop. As for the point that Lin Ming attacked, that was the center of the formation, representing yin and yang of the primal chaos. The two martial artists standing there suddenly spat out great mouthfuls of blood. The shining runes underneath their feet flickered, as if the entire formation was also a little bit off from collapsing altogether!

Lin Ming's eyes condensed. The gold battle spirit sleeping in his spiritual sea shot outwards.

“Break for me!”

A strong will burst out, pouring into the yin and yang lights at the center of the formation, destroying the power of Laws there!

With the blue lotus spear light attack, in addition to the will projection of his gold battle spirit, besides the grandmist space, Lin Ming had already displayed his greatest strengths!

And this strength had finally torn apart the postcelestial dao diagrams, exposing Lin Ming's opponents to his full attack power!

“Die!”

How could Lin Ming let this chance go? He instantly opened the Gate of Wonder and used Mystic Lightning Shade, increasing his speed to the limit.

The Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands thrust forth!

Penetrating Rainbow!

The power of fire formed from the fusion of three Concepts mixed together with the power of thunder. A furious and violent explosion broke out. The two martial artists that were already severely wounded by Lin Ming's last attack didn't have the ability to resist such an attack. They vomited one last mouthful of blood as their entire bodies were torn apart in the ensuing explosion, their bodies instantly disintegrating on the spot.

Of the 27 people, two of them had been killed by Lin Ming. The grand formation of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, thunder, and wind, was broken apart by Lin Ming!

"He broke through!"

"Too strong! Even the Phoenix Blood Spear's own nine through nine return to one great array formation wasn't able to do it! Lin Ming relied on just his own energy to break through! Now that two people have died, the array formation can no longer be maintained! Lin Ming has won!"

"What Lin Ming used was the Fire Laws, and that is likely a move he created himself! That's right, from the first moment Lin Ming entered the Illusionary God Combat Array, he hadn't used the power of his true Fire Laws!"

Chapter 1031 – The One Thousandth Person

No matter how powerful the opponents were that appeared after slaying 900 people, Lin Ming relied on his attainments in the Concept of Fire to tear that triple postcelestial dao diagram array formation apart!

This self-created martial skill was called the Blue Lotus Flame Dance. It was a killing move that combined the first three Concepts of the Fire Laws: the Concepts of Burning Heat, Annihilation, and Creation. It was also Lin Ming's current strongest attack.

Once the nine essence array formation was shattered, it was much easier for Lin Ming to kill the others. This array formation attack method was no longer a threat to Lin Ming, and Lin Ming using the Blue Lotus Flame Dance was enough to instantly kill the martial artists that appeared.

Peng!

Lin Ming fell from the sky, and a torrent of flames engulfed the enemy's sword light. A spear light thrust out like a viper and tore a blue-clothed martial artist's dantian to shreds, immediately killing him!

At the same time, the martial artists near the one that had died raised their weapons, ready to take advantage of this moment to attack. Unfortunately, now that the dao diagrams were broken, their attacks were no longer able to seal off all of his escape routes. Lin Ming used his extreme speed and cut through all the incoming

attacks like a bird through a storm of blades.

He flash stepped in front of a purple-robed martial artist, and before that purple-robed martial artist had time to respond, the Phoenix Blood Spear was already sweeping outwards. 999 small spears shot out, filling the purple-robed martial artist with holes!

Another two enemies had died!

The more opponents Lin Ming killed, the faster he was able to kill them and the easier it became. At the end, he casually slaughtered them. Finally, these 27 people had been completely cut down by Lin Ming!

Finished! Lin Ming let out a deep breath, and at this time, light shined in front of him, signaling the approach of new opponents.

This group was comprised of 27 people, and the postcelestial dao diagrams had been swapped for another version. Moreover, 12 of these people possessed a Ninefall cultivation!

Every new batch of enemies in the Illusionary God Combat Array would be stronger than the last!

The disciples outside sucked in a breath of cold air. This was simply too abnormal. There wasn't even time for Lin Ming to catch his breath!

“This is simply an unreasonable and impassable test. And if Lin

Ming is having so much trouble, how can the average person withstand it?”

“No joke. Is this really a trial meant for humans? I couldn’t even defeat one of them, much less when they form an array formation together!”

“It can only be said that there is always a higher heaven, a higher existence. 40,000 years ago, wasn’t there also a senior known as the Battle King who passed this trial?”

A Divine Transformation realm martial artist suddenly said. Not many people knew the real name of the Battle King. In fact, most disciples only knew that there was some top character that had managed to complete the Thousand Slaughter 40,000 years ago. But as for what that person’s name was, it was simply a mystery to most of them.

“So the senior was called Battle King? Where is he now? If he was so kick ass 40,000 years ago, then he must have been some extreme character, but the current Patriarch isn’t him, right? I have never heard the Patriarch being referred to as the Battle King before. If this Battle King was so awesome, how come he wasn’t able to become the Patriarch?”

A disciple suddenly asked. Indeed, this question also echoed in everyone’s heart. Why did the Battle King not become the Patriarch?

Moreover, over these last tens of thousands of years, no one had

heard of any other achievements of the Battle King, nor did they see any totem stones that he had left behind. Did this person perish somewhere? If such a stupendous genius were to have fallen, then that would truly be a pity.

As the three branch palaces' disciples discussed, Monarch Sweetfox and Duke Golden Sword were listening in with strange and uneasy complexions.

In truth, the Battle King was indeed rarely mentioned in the history of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, and this was because there had been a deliberate effort to dilute and erase his name.

The two envoys cautiously peeked over at Huo Violentstone. They feared that Huo Violentstone would be sullen at hearing discussion of the Battle King. This was because the Battle King had extremely poor relations with many high level figures of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, and this included even Huo Violentstone. This was also the reason that the two of them found it taboo to speak of the Battle King...

But, they didn't think that Huo Violentstone actually wouldn't avoid this matter. Instead, the Highest Elder coldly coughed and spoke with a caustic and derisive tone, "Crimson Strifecloud cannot be considered someone of our Ancient Phoenix Clan, so he certainly would not succeed the position of Patriarch. He is the 196th son of the Crimson Light World's current World King. That person has had an extremely high compatibility with the Fire Laws since the day he was born. 40,000 years ago, in order for our Ancient Phoenix Clan to curry favor with the Crimson Light World's World King, the Patriarch chose his most outstanding

daughter, a little princess with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, and married her off to Crimson Strifecloud. Afterwards, Crimson Strifecloud stayed in the Ancient Phoenix Clan for a period of time, and even participated in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial at headquarters. At that time, when Crimson Strifecloud rushed through the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, all other geniuses of my Ancient Phoenix Clan were completely swept away by him! No one was able to come close to comparing with him! It might as well have been described as a crane amongst chickens!

“Can you imagine that? In the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, out of 100 billion people, there was not a single genius that was able to stand tall and proud in front of Crimson Strifecloud, because they did not have the courage or qualifications to do so!”

As Huo Violentstone spoke to here, he seemed to reminisce about the past, a bit emotional. The Crimson Strifecloud he spoke of was the true name of the Battle King.

40,000 years ago, Huo Violentstone had also been one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s geniuses. But, to achieve the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array... such a feat left him feeling impotent and frustrated. He couldn’t imagine just how Crimson Strifecloud had managed to pass it!

He took a deep breath and humorlessly said, “And, the greatest mockery of all is that all the high level figures of the Ancient Phoenix Clan at that time actually constantly praised and kissed the ass of that Crimson Strifecloud as he went through the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. They personally delivered the primordial

yin and bloodline strength of our little princess to him, and then cheered as he stepped over all of the geniuses of our clan. Finally, they also gave him a massive amount of resources. So, tell me, isn't that just so cheap and pathetic?"

No one ever imagined that Huo Violentstone would suddenly say such words. The high level figures of 40,000 years ago had a background that could scare everyone else to death. Who would dare agree with Huo Violentstone's words?

"Hehe, it was truly pathetic. In fact, even they thought they were pathetic themselves. But, there was nothing that could be done. He was the son of the Crimson Light World's World King! The Crimson Light World's World King, do you know who that is? The Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters are based at the Crimson Light World. Since they are in the Crimson Light World, they naturally must lower their heads and bow before him; that is all normal! And now, there are many high level figures in the Ancient Phoenix Clan that were once the pursuers of the little princess. None of you can imagine just how beautiful and talented she was! Not even calling her a 10,000 year proud daughter of heaven would do her justice! But... all of her courters were only able to stare on helplessly as she was married to Crimson Strifecloud! And, in a bridal chamber that the Ancient Phoenix Clan specially prepared themselves, he obtained the little princess' primordial yin as well as the power of her bloodline, hehehahahaha!"

Although Huo Violentstone was laughing, his laughter was actually cold and maddening. The martial artists around him all shuddered in fear. All of them couldn't help but wonder, was Huo Violentstone also one of the little princess' pursuers? Of course, asking this was the same as asking to die.

Huo Violentstone was silent for a moment, then he said, “Crimson Strifecloud received all the wealth and resources he could hold, he received glory and honor, and then he proceeded to run away without wiping his ass. All of those people that had been trampled by Crimson Strifecloud slowly became the current high level figures of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Don’t you think that’s pathetic? Don’t you think that’s miserable? Don’t you think that’s unbelievable? How about it, do you feel the grand image you’ve built up of all those extreme top characters of the Ancient Phoenix Clan loudly toppling in front of you?”

Huo Violentstone spoke without reserve or care. Indeed, there was nothing he needed to worry about. With his rank, besides some Highest Elders that had once been the Patriarch, no one would dare to say or do anything to him.

However, the disciples of the three branch palaces were left dumbfounded by these words. They didn’t even notice that Lin Ming had started to fight the second wave of enemies in the Illusionary God Combat Array.

This period of unknown history that Huo Violentstone explained truly left these low level disciples shocked. In their minds, the top characters of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were supreme elders with the power to move seas and mountains. They never imagined that in their youth, there was also a time when they were as cowardly and shameful as turtles. And to them, the Ancient Phoenix Clan was vast and had an unfathomably deep foundation, able to pierce through the heavens themselves. But now, it seemed that in the face of a higher power, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had no choice but to grovel on their hands and knees.

“No wonder we haven’t heard much about this Battle King. It’s because the current high level figures of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were stepped over by this Battle King, and the little princess they fancied was also taken away by him. How could they not hate him? If it were me, I wouldn’t want this issue ever mentioned again either.”

“No kidding. Crimson Strifecloud must have taken away a considerable amount of resources from our Ancient Phoenix Clan, enough that it can make anyone’s eyes turn red with envy!”

Several disciples discussed in secret with true essence sound transmissions.

“I wonder, just where is this Crimson Strifecloud person now?”

Many disciples couldn’t help but wonder. And, Huo Violentstone seemed to see through their thoughts. He said, “Crimson Strifecloud is now the Crimson Dragon Envoy of the Crimson Light World. If he visited the Ancient Phoenix Clan now, even the Patriarch would have to personally welcome him. A Dragon Envoy can one day control a small world that belongs in the domain of the Crimson Light Great World. That is a truly extreme character!”

Crimson Dragon Envoy, Crimson Strifecloud, son of a World King, also known as the Battle King!

Moreover, he had once married the 10,000 year proud daughter of heaven of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

All of this information left the martial artists present sick with envy, especially that he had married the little princess. Not only did she have the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, but she was also beautiful. How could it not be a wonderful matter to take her primordial yin?

Unfortunately, everyone's destiny was different. Any envy they felt was useless.

At this time, Lin Ming had actually reached the last wave in the Illusionary God Combat Array. After killing them, Lin Ming would finally face the Thousand Slaughter!

“Shatter the formation!”

This wave had 18 ninth stage Life Destruction masters. However, after their nine essence array formation was broken by Lin Ming, Lin Ming took this chance while the formation was disrupted and killed two enemies with lightning speed. After those two died, the overall situation was already decided!

Lin Ming saved as much true essence as possible as he killed off the enemies in this wave one at a time.

“It's over!”

“Now it's time for the Thousand Slaughter. Will 30 opponents appear this time?”

Everyone's hearts were filled with anticipation. They wanted to see if Lin Ming could complete the Thousand Slaughter, and just how he would do so. But, what surprised them was that no enemies appeared. It seemed as if the Illusionary God Combat Array was giving Lin Ming a long period of time to rest, around a quarter hour.

Lin Ming hadn't used up too much energy to begin with, and he also had the Gate of Healing and Ancient Phoenix bloodline supporting him. In a quarter hour, he had more or less recovered most of his strength. And at this time, the space in front of Lin Ming twisted, and countless rays of light gathered together, forming into a man that was holding a great sword in one hand.

This man wore red armor with a purple cape fluttering behind him. He was tall and his shoulders were broad, his aura filled with energy!

“Mm? There's just one opponent?”

Lin Ming, along with everyone else watching, was stunned. They all thought that there would be 30 opponents; none of them expected that there would only be a single person!

And in front of the disciples of the three branch palaces, Huo Violentstone suddenly shook. His eyes widened and a sharp light filled with naked hostility flashed in his eyes!

“Crimson Strifecloud! That person is actually Crimson

Strifecloud!”

Lin Ming’s opponent was the Battle King of 40,000 years ago who had once completed the Thousand Slaughter!

Chapter 1032 – Old Sorrows, New Hate

“What!? Crimson Strifecloud!?”

“The Battle King! He is fighting the Battle King!?”

As Huo Violentstone spoke, the jaws of all the martial artists present dropped to the floor, greatly shocked.

“I never thought that Lin Ming’s opponent would actually be Crimson Strifecloud!” Huo Violentstone stared at the phantom figure of the Battle King reflected in the fire spirit mirror. His eyes shot open, and fire seemed to pour out from his heated gaze. He never thought that everything would line up in such a coincidental manner!

“Yes... in the past when Crimson Strifecloud rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array, he was also 29 years old. That is why he has appeared as Lin Ming’s opponent!”

A rookie disciple could attend their first Ancient Phoenix smelting trial anytime before they were 33 years of age. But, the most common age was between 28 and 31 years. This was because at that period of time, most martial artists were beginning to form their comprehension of the Fire Laws, and their cultivation would also be at the seventh, eighth, or ninth stage of Life Destruction. If they attended the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial in this period, it would have the best effects in enhancing their comprehensions of Laws.

If they came too early, their comprehensions would be lacking and the benefits they gained would be limited. However, if they came too late, their foundation would be far more settled and the benefits they gained would be far less.

Thus, Crimson Strifecloud and Lin Ming had both rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array at the same time. It could be called a coincidence, but also the truth.

And the Illusionary God Combat Array would record the information of every person that entered, and would then be able to produce a perfect energy form simulacrum of them. Lin Ming and Crimson Strifecloud were of the same age, so it was natural for them to encounter each other.

This was an unrivalled powerhouse of 40,000 years in the past, duking it out with the current top talent!

“Who is Crimson Strifecloud? He was the Battle King of 40,000 years ago, the son of a World King, the current Crimson Dragon Envoy of Crimson Light World! His status, his power, his influence, all of it surpasses the current Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan! When such a character was young, just how powerful would they have been?”

It had to be known that many of the current high level figures of the Ancient Phoenix Clan had once been rolled over by the Battle King. The disparity was far too obvious!

“Can Lin Ming win? His opponent is the Battle King!”

“I think it’s over. This Battle King is too kick ass, he is the son of a World King!”

“It really is hard to win, but that doesn’t mean there isn’t a chance. For better or worse, Lin Ming is still the best talent to appear in my Ancient Phoenix Clan for the last few tens of thousands of years!”

“How laughable. I once thought that Lin Ming would be able to smoothly complete the Thousand Slaughter, but now I can see just how abnormal the difficulty of it is. Moreover, Lin Ming’s Thousand Slaughter is far harder to complete than the Battle King’s Thousand Slaughter from 40,000 years ago!”

40,000 years ago, Crimson Strifecloud was someone who had defeated his opponents to achieve the Thousand Slaughter. But now, Lin Ming had to face Crimson Strifecloud himself; the difficulty was certainly higher!

“Looking at the results, this should be an equal battle between a dragon and a tiger! If Lin Ming can really win then he will be even more freaking amazing! Even if he can’t win, if he can fight with Crimson Strifecloud for several dozen rounds, that will still be enough to etch his eternal name down in the annals of history!”

As people were discussing, Lin Ming couldn’t hear them within the Illusionary God Combat Array. Instead, he was carefully observing his opponent.

“Eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation?”

Lin Ming was surprised. He thought that his opponent now would be a Ninefall master, or perhaps even a Divine Sea master. He didn't think that they would only be at the eighth stage of Life Destruction!

An eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation at 29 years of age wasn't considered too fast for an extreme cultivating talent.

But, Lin Ming didn't underestimate his opponent. Cultivation speed wasn't everything. In this world there were countless extreme geniuses that would intentionally suppress their cultivation at the eighth stage of Life Destruction, staying there for several years. This was in order to further increase their comprehension of Laws and consolidate their foundation, so that when they stepped into Ninefall, they would undergo a greater baptism of Laws. Then they would truly be a dragon that ascended to heaven!

Perhaps this man in front of him was such a person!

“Hahaha, I never imagined that after so many years someone would finally be able to reach this step! Ancient Phoenix Clan, you fellows aren't as shabby as I thought you were!”

Crimson Strifecloud looked at Lin Ming and guffawed. Lin Ming faintly frowned. This person's attitude was arrogant enough, and listening to his words, he wasn't from the Ancient Phoenix Clan either.

“Speak your name, peasant! When I completed the Illusionary God Combat Array’s Thousand Slaughter in the past, all of the so-called ‘geniuses’ that attempted the same smelting trial as me were simply nothing more than a pile of unsightly garbage, nothing but a crowd of trash! To think that they dared to call themselves the chosen prides of heavens, how ridiculous! I left behind a wisp of my divine sense to see just what genius of the Ancient Phoenix Clan would barely be able to reach here. But, I was left disappointed. For 40,000 years no one appeared, until you. You just manage to qualify for the likes of I to remember your name. Now, tell me your name!”

“Mm?” Lin Ming was surprised. From Crimson Strifecloud’s speech just now, Lin Ming was able to discern his identity. “You are the Battle King!”

“Correct! I am the Battle King, Crimson Strifecloud!” Crimson Strifecloud heartily laughed. His laughter was filled with a wild self-confidence and rampant arrogance. But, he indeed had the capital to act so recklessly!

At this time, outside of the Illusionary God Combat Array, Huo Violentstone’s hair nearly stood on end from anger! Even the air around him began to twist from a burning heat. This was the fire energy that he subconsciously released due to the extreme rage in his heart. This was a violent animosity worthy of his name!

How could he not be angry!? What Crimson Strifecloud just said was, ‘in the past, all of the so-called ‘geniuses’ that attempted the same smelting trial as me were simply nothing more than a pile of

unsightly garbage, nothing but a crowd of trash! To think that they dared to call themselves the chosen prides of heavens, how ridiculous!’

And this clearly included Huo Violentstone in the same group!

“Good! Good! Very good! In this old man’s life, this is the first time anyone has dared to call me trash! Very good! Crimson Strifecloud, you are a crazy bastard! I want to see just how kick ass you actually are! 40,000 years ago, you managed to trample all over our faces, but now I want to see if you still have this ability 40,000 years later!”

Huo Violentstone seemed like an erupting volcano. At this moment, anyone or anything that dared approach within three feet of Huo Violentstone would have been instantly burnt to ash!

It had to be known that the geniuses within the Illusionary God Combat Array were energy form simulacrums reproduced by the information recorded in the array formation. Even their intelligence was a copy. But, what Crimson Strifecloud had said was that he had left a wisp of his divine sense behind. In other words, the opponent Lin Ming faced was nearly the exact same as Crimson Strifecloud. And, the words he spoke also represented the true ideas of Crimson Strifecloud.

How could Huo Violentstone not be enraged? Crimson Strifecloud had swept away not just countless resources of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, but also their little princess. At that time, numerous heroic young elites wished to cut down Crimson Strifecloud’s glory in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. But, the

result was that they had been beaten up so badly that their mothers and fathers wouldn't have recognized them. And now, Crimson Strifecloud laughed in their faces and called them a crowd of trash.

This was the same as poking at their reverse scale, the source of all rage!

If this could be tolerated, what else could be tolerated!?

At this time, behind Huo Violentstone, Monarch Sweetfox and Duke Golden Sword were holding their breath as they teetered on edge, careful not to exacerbate the situation.

As for Huo Highdragon and Huo Whitejade, they ruefully smiled at each other. This High Ancestor of the Huo Family was indeed just like his name. His anger was not ordinary anger!

When he was angered, even the Elders of his own family would be publicly abused and scolded. He wouldn't even care about maintaining face in front of the juniors. Now, the Crimson Strifecloud in the Illusionary God Combat Array could be described as having opened the forbidden box of shame and humiliation. How could Huo Violentstone not turn mad with rage!?

Those near him could feel that Huo Violentstone was a volcano ready to erupt at any moment. If they approached him at this time it was possible they would really eat shit; they might even become the target of some collateral anger. However, none of them dared to draw back. They could only stand where they were in utter

silence.

“I pray to the heavens that Lin Ming can contend with him. At least, the manner in which he loses cannot be too ugly. He needs to last at least several dozen moves, and it would be best if he could wound Crimson Strifecloud...” Huo Highdragon gulped as he spoke to Huo Whitejade with a true essence sound transmission.

Huo Whitejade forced a smile, saying, “Yeah. Otherwise, once this old man turns angry, none of us will have a good time. Once he is angry, he doesn’t distinguish between right and wrong and vents his anger on anyone close to him. It is a 100% possibility that we will be the punching bags this time. Before, the two of us have already committed a number of mistakes and screwed up some matters. If the old man is happy then he won’t bother investigating these matters, but if he’s angry, then both of us are done for!”

“Aiyaya, we can only hope that Lin Ming can claw back some honor for us so that the High Ancestor can calm his anger a bit. If he can do this then I’ll gift him some resources from the Office of Internal Affairs in the future.” Huo Highdragon said. His position was that of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s Internal Affairs Envoy.

And at this time, within the Illusionary God Combat Array, just as Lin Ming was beginning to fight, an old voice abruptly sounded out from the skies.

“Lin Ming! This old man is the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s Highest Elder, Huo Violentstone! I am also the Patriarch of the Huo Family! You listen well to me. In the past, this little bastard stole our

resources and wrested away the little princess of our Ancient Phoenix Clan along with her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline! In this battle, you must do everything you can to win for me! Even if you have to risk your life, you have to win at all costs! Even if you must wrestle with Buddha for a single incense stick of time, that is what you must do! If you want to become an unrivalled genius, then you must sweep away all obstacles that block your path! You must kick that Crimson Strifecloud into the ground and beat him up so that his teeth scatter over the ground! I want you to slap him so hard that not even his parents will recognize him! If you can do this then I will immediately give you the phoenix blood essence! Not just that, but resources, phoenix blood, beautiful women with pure bloodlines, anything else you desire will be yours! I will even happily lend you the Sacred Flame Testament to perceive for an entire year! The Huo Family will support you with the entirety of our strength!”

This sudden voice left Lin Ming in a daze. Ancient Phoenix Clan Highest Elder? Huo Family Patriarch, Huo Violentstone?

How... how could such a top character suddenly appear in Fire Spirit Star, and also be observing his smelting trial? Moreover, his words just now had been extremely vulgar. Especially when he said he would gift ‘beautiful women with pure bloodlines’; Lin Ming didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry. In his impression, Highest Elders were noble and respected characters. They quietly sat atop their lofty thrones, looking down at others, so where would one appear that was so ribald. Did this Huo Violentstone have a deep-seated grudge with Crimson Strifecloud?

But soon after, the Crimson Strifecloud in front of Lin Ming responded. He loudly laughed and said, “The one who spoke,

aren't you someone from 40,000 years ago, someone referred to as the Fire Lion or something like that? I also have a tiny impression of you. I never imagined that with your strength you could actually manage to become a Highest Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. It seems that the Ancient Phoenix Clan is really in trouble. Ever since those extreme characters like Huo Burning Heaven and Xiao Daoji appeared, your Ancient Phoenix Clan has become worse with every generation."

As Crimson Strifecloud spoke, Huo Violentstone became even angrier. "Crimson Strifecloud, whether or not my Ancient Phoenix Clan is in trouble is not for the likes of you to say. Enough with the trash talk; fists speak the only truth. The opponent in front of you is my disciple. This father wants to see whether or not you will get beaten up so badly by my disciple today that not even your mother and father will recognize you!"

Crimson Strifecloud's current status neared that of a World King. Although Huo Violentstone was far inferior, his temper was hotter than flames, and he had a fearless disposition; he simply didn't fear offending Crimson Strifecloud. He didn't even ask for Lin Ming's opinion and directly became Lin Ming's cheap master.

Lin Ming didn't know whether to laugh or to cry.

Chapter 1033 – Intense

From Huo Violentstone and Crimson Strifecloud's dialog, Lin Ming could guess that there was some major dispute between the two as well as some of the details. Huo Violentstone was clearly far worse than Crimson Strifecloud, moreover, Crimson Strifecloud wasn't someone from the Ancient Phoenix Clan. This also made it so that Huo Violentstone sincerely hoped that a disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan could defeat Crimson Strifecloud.

If Lin Ming could win this battle, then the advantages he could obtain from Huo Violentstone wouldn't be minor.

Of course, because of Huo Violentstone and Crimson Strifecloud's conflict, wanting to win would be even more difficult. Lin Ming's opponent was not an energy puppet that lacked a consciousness, but an energy form with a spiritual consciousness of his own.

“Haha, that old fool Huo has blown up so much. Then, let me have a good look at just what qualifications you have. A seventh stage Life Destruction to fight my eighth stage Life Destruction, you've got guts! To think that I, Crimson Strifecloud, would ever have a day where someone would jump ranks to right me! Hahaha! How interesting! Let's see if you can block 10 of my swords first!”

As Crimson Strifecloud laughed, the aura of his body began to rapidly climb, and the heaven and earth origin energy around him began to hum.

Only he had jumped ranks to defeat others, since when had others jumped ranks to challenge him? That was simply a humiliation to his immense talent! In this battle, Crimson Strifecloud also had a great advantage. If he couldn't smoothly defeat Lin Ming then that would prove that his talent was inferior to Lin Ming's. Crimson Strifecloud certainly wouldn't believe this, he wanted to roll over Lin Ming right from the get go.

Crimson Strifecloud lifted the great sword in his hand. This was also a top quality saint artifact that approached a transcendent saint artifact. When a martial artist was at the Life Destruction and Divine Sea realms, they would at most use top grade saint artifacts. Even if they managed to obtain a transcendent saint artifact or spirit artifact, it would be extremely difficult to bring out its true potential and might. Thus, they wouldn't be able to use it to its full effect.

At this moment, Crimson Strifecloud seemed like an impassable mountain. He gave off a heavy feeling that made one wish to avert their eyes from him. Even when the disciples of the three branch palaces looked at him through the fire spirit mirror, all of them felt breathless, like some energy was pressing down on them.

“Take my sword, World Razing Edge!”

Crimson Strifecloud moved. He grasped his five foot long great sword with both hands and smashed down. The desolate earth underneath him cracked, sending out 'ka ka ka' sounds as fissures spread out from around him like a spider web. The cracks in the earth were 10 feet wide, deep enough that one couldn't see where they ended!

As this sword came slashing out, everyone who looked at the sword light felt as if the sword blade was pressing against their necks, sending them into cold sweats!

Lin Ming focused his thoughts. The Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands thrust outwards!

In that moment, the heaven and earth origin energy around Lin Ming erupted like a blazing volcano. It formed a heated storm around him, and in the center of this storm, a blue lotus began blooming in radiance.

This was Lin Ming's spear move created by fusing the first three levels of the Concept of Fire, the Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

Bang!

Crimson Strifecloud's sword smashed into the blooming blue lotus in front of the Phoenix Blood Spear. Energy erupted. The powerful impact formed heart-stopping shockwaves. In the violent collision of their attacks, the barren ground beneath them began to collapse!

In that moment, the disciples of the three branch palaces could see the Illusionary God Combat Array's portal trembling. The battle of the two within actually caused the array formation to tremble!

There was already such momentum in just the first exchange of moves. It was unbelievable that this was a battle between Life Destruction powerhouses.

“Mm? Concept fusion?”

Crimson Strifecloud’s face flashed with surprise. His original contempt and derision also lessened. He had great understandings of the Fire Laws as well as the guidance of his father. And yet, he could faintly feel that when he was at Lin Ming’s realm, his comprehension of Laws was actually inferior to his!

How could this be?

“To think you have such attainments and skill in the Laws; you truly have the qualifications for me to take you seriously. But, that is only to treat you seriously. When I fight with my complete strength, that will be your death knell!”

“Is that so? You haven’t given this your all, but neither have I. I still have moves to use, but it was only that using those techniques before would have rapidly exhausted my energy. I thought that I would have to continue on with a protracted battle in the Illusionary God Combat Array, thus I deliberately refrained from using those techniques. But now that I face you, an extreme character from 40,000 years ago, I naturally won’t hold back.”

Once Lin Ming opened the grandmist space, he would need a massive amount of true essence to support it. He would have to consume true essence at a ridiculous rate. Even with the Gate of

Healing helping him, he still wouldn't be able to maintain it for a long time. He had thought of slaying 1100 people or even 1200 people to see where his limits lay, but now it seemed as if the Illusionary God Combat Array ended after completing the Thousand Slaughter. If so, then he naturally didn't need to reserve any strength for later.

“What? From their words, that exchange of moves just now was only a casual probing strike?”

“Lin Ming has just used his triple Concept fusion attack, that should be his strongest strike. Was he still holding back even after all that?”

After hearing the exchange between the two in the fire spirit mirror, the heroic young elites outside felt powerless and frustrated.

They had all known that Lin Ming was strong, very strong, but as to what degree of strong he was, none of them had ever seen it with their own eyes. But now, as they saw him fight with the Battle King, they finally understood that he had surpassed the level of their understanding.

Hu – !

Crimson Strifecloud moved forwards. In the barren lands, his figure vanished, leaving nothing but a series of afterimages. Wherever he went, ripples of energy would appear in space. His speed rapidly reached the peak, causing the numerous disciples

looking in from the fire spirit mirror to be unable to lock onto his position.

Hu – hu – !

A strong wind was suddenly whipped up. Crimson Strifecloud's movements actually spun up several violent tornados that swept through the earth.

“Concept of Wind!”

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. Crimson Strifecloud was able to utilize the powers of more than one Law. Crimson Strifecloud's current speed was a result of the Concept of Wind. In terms of speed, the Concept of Wind and the Concept of Thunder were the fastest Concepts of the elements.

But, the Concept of Wind focused on flexibility and change, whereas the Concept of Thunder focused on absolute velocity; they were slightly different.

“The reason I was able to sweep away all geniuses of the Ancient Phoenix Clan 40,000 years ago was that every single one of my combat aspects was strong! If I selected any one of them, no one else was able to compare! Let me have a look at whether you can follow my steps. If you cannot, then just stand there and be pummeled by me!”

The speed of the Concept of Wind was renowned for its rapidly

change movements. If Lin Ming couldn't follow Crimson Strifecloud's movements then he wouldn't even be able to touch the hem of his robe. At that time, there was no point even thinking of fighting.

“You want to compare speed? In terms of speed, I also believe in myself.” Lin Ming's lips curved up in a charming smile. In terms of speed, he had never met his match amongst martial artists of his level.

The Gate of Wonder opened. Golden Roc Shattering the Void and Mystic Lighting Shade began revolving together. Suddenly, between the heavens and earth, Lin Ming's form disappeared. It was like he had dissolved into a puff of blue smoke; it was impossible to find his location.

This blue smoke joined together with Crimson Strifecloud's tornados.

“Concept of Thunder? Concept of Space? How interesting! You have indeed surprised me. Now meet my sword!” Crimson Strifecloud shouted out loud and slashed out with his sword.

Chi!

Crimson Strifecloud's heavy sword cut down on Lin Ming's neck. However, this sword continued all the way through without leaving a single mark; it had only been an afterimage.

At the same time, Lin Ming appeared behind Crimson Strifecloud. He thrust his spear straight into Crimson Strifecloud's back. However, Crimson Strifecloud seemed to have eyes on his back. His body shifted and immediately appeared hundreds of feet away.

The two great powerhouses were each confident in their speed. Both of them launched into a barrage of high-speed attacks!

“This speed... I can't see it clearly!”

“Not just being unable to see them clearly, I can't even make out their figures. All I see are colored blurs!”

Of the disciples from the three branch palaces, most of them were rookies. This was their first time here and their cultivations were only at the Life Destruction realm. With their talent, they were barely able to see the blurs of Lin Ming and Crimson Strifecloud. These blurry images linked up into an endless stretch of phantoms; it was impossible to distinguish which one was real and which ones were fake!

There were even some Divine Sea martial artists that had to completely focus their concentration to make out just where Lin Ming and Crimson Strifecloud's positions were. However, this was only seeing them. To follow their movements was simply impossible!

“So fast! If I were there then I wouldn't even be able to see anything, so how could I fight?” An Eightfall Divine Sea

powerhouse said, somewhat morosely. People like him were destined to become nothing but foils and spectators in this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. Moreover, this was their only chance to come here as rookies; it would be extremely difficult to return in the future.

“Slaughter God’s Disc!”

During the high speed battle, Crimson Strifecloud chopped out with his sword, using the inherent attack of the top grade saint artifact in his hands. The Slaughter God’s Disc was an array formation built within the great sword. Once it was activated, a blazing crimson red wheel flew out towards Lin Ming’s neck. Several dozens of Lin Ming’s afterimages were torn apart by this fiery wheel!

Lin Ming calmly twirled the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands. 999 small blood spears formed a raging storm of death that collided with the burning wheel!

Ka ka ka!

The small blood spears were like a hail of sabers that poured onto the blazing wheel, emitting thunderclaps upon every impact.

In just a fraction of an instant, most of the 999 small blood spears shattered, turning into an endless bloody fog. As for that Slaughter God’s Disc, it had been torn apart by Lin Ming’s attack. A massive crack appeared on the surface and its speed had greatly reduced.

Top grade saint artifact against top grade saint artifact, it had produced an unprecedented fierce collision!

“Break!”

Lin Ming smashed his spear against the Slaughter God’s Disc, pounding it into pieces. But in that moment, Crimson Strifecloud took advantage of the period when Lin Ming had used another attack on the Slaughter God’s Disc and flash stepped in front of him like ghosts and demons. Crimson Strifecloud waved the heavy sword in his hands, and following that, an astonishing scene occurred. The heavy sword in Crimson Strifecloud’s hands instantly divided into seven blades that attacked Lin Ming from all directions, sealing away all possible avenues of escape.

This great sword was actually formed from seven other swords!

“This weapon! It can actually be controlled by thoughts!?”

This thought cut through Lin Ming’s mind like a bolt of lightning. As he watched these seven flying swords shooting at him from all sides, about to pierce through his protective true essence, his thoughts suddenly focused together.

Gold battle spirit!

Woosh!

In that moment, the gold battle spirit slumbering within Lin

Ming's spiritual sea shot out from between his eyebrows. The world of will projected into reality. Within this space, everything came under the governance of Lin Ming's mind.

“Freeze!”

Lin Ming gave a loud shout and his gold battle spirit divided into seven and poured into the seven swords, forcing those rapidly shooting swords to abruptly freeze in midair!

“What? Projection of will? Gold battle spirit!?”

As Crimson Strifecloud saw the will world projection around Lin Ming that froze his swords, he was completely shocked.

This was actually a gold battle spirit!?

Chapter 1034 – Scorching Blood VS Phoenix Blood

The technique Crimson Strifecloud used just now was called the ruling spirit art. It was a type of martial skill that was trained with a battle spirit.

Battle spirits also had corresponding martial skills. The world of the Sky Spill Continent had its legacies and inheritances cut off 100,000 years ago. Because of that, there was an extremely small number of people that possessed a battle spirit. Thus, most people of the Sky Spill Continent only used their battle spirit as an auxiliary attack. This was because they didn't know of any special martial skills that corresponded to them.

But in the Divine Realm, there were inheritances that had been passed down for hundreds of millions or even billions of years. In terms of battle spirits, they also had developed martial skills that utilized them. The ruling spirit art was one of the broadest and most important types.

The so-called ruling spirit art was a technique that used a battle spirit to rule a weapon, controlling it and sending it to kill others. There were also different ranks and grades within the ruling spirit art. If one could cultivate it to small success, then they could use a mere thought to kill someone over a thousand miles away. If one cultivated this ability to the limit, they could even use a weapon to pierce through a planet and kill someone on the other side.

The ruling spirit that Crimson Strifecloud cultivated was of an extremely high rank and grade. His usual fighting method was to

use his extreme speed to confuse and mislead his opponent. Then, he would use the ruling spirit art and control the seven swords to kill his enemies. This attack was virtually impossible to predict or guard against. But now, Crimson Strifecloud's attack was directly stopped by Lin Ming's thoughts!

“Gold battle spirit, a seventh stage Life Destruction martial artist like you actually has a gold battle spirit?”

Crimson Strifecloud was inexplicably horrified. When he had rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array, his battle spirit had only been at the formative silver level. That had already been amazing enough. But now, his battle spirit was an entire large boundary lower than Lin Ming's!

Lin Ming didn't clearly didn't practice the ruling spirit art, but even so he was able to suppress Crimson Strifecloud. This was the disparity from the difference in their levels of battle spirits!

If Lin Ming one day practiced a type of high grade ruling spirit art, he could use his battle spirit to control weapons and kill others. Or, he could even fuse Concepts and Laws into his attacks before he did so. This would cause Lin Ming's combat strength to rise to yet another level!

“For someone to possess a gold battle spirit at the Life Destruction realm, that is indeed unbelievable. It seems that I really did underestimate you. Since that's the case, let me show you my true strength. As a mere mortal, you should be proud for having pushed me to this step!”

Crimson Strifecloud wildly laughed. However, this wild and crazy tone caused Lin Ming to frown. “You really are boastful. Just where does this confidence of yours come from? Do you think just because you come from a World King Family you are a cut above everyone else? Do you think just because of that you can display such a arrogant and cocky attitude?”

“Hahaha! Yes, what you said is correct! Indeed, my bloodline is truly a cut above all others. In other words, we are a Divine Blood Family! There are countless people within the Divine Realm and they are also divided into all sorts of classes! There are mortals, royals, divine beings, and even a God Clan! Although your Ancient Phoenix Clan is called the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the truth is that you are not genuine descendent of phoenixes. If there really were 100 billion true descendants of phoenixes, then how could that still be manageable! The entire Divine Realm would likely have been occupied by your Ancient Phoenix Clan! No, you are nothing but people with the phoenix bloodline transplanted into your body. In the end, you are nothing more than mortals!”

There were certainly differences between a true phoenix descendent and someone that had the phoenix bloodline transplanted into their bodies. Ignoring the density of bloodline, a true phoenix descendant’s flesh, skeleton, muscles, organs, blood, and even their hair and nails would also originate from a true God Beast. That would be a true Divine Body. If such people established a clan and multiplied, then their bloodline would never diminish. They would forever have bodies of a true God Beast.

But, having a transplanted bloodline was different. As those with transplanted bloodlines multiplied, the power of their bloodline

would also gradually dilute and weaken with time. When two people with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline married and produced children, those children might not have the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. As for their grandchildren, their bloodlines would be even lighter.

Thus, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had to constantly transplant Ancient Phoenix blood within the bodies of their clansmen in order to guarantee the density of their bloodline.

But Crimson Strifecloud was different. Their family was a Divine Blood Family. Although their bloodline couldn't compare with the bloodline of the Ancient Phoenix by far, his bloodline was inherently inherited through birth.

As Crimson Strifecloud spoke, all the bones throughout his body began to emit crackling noises. His body began to rise up, and all the solid muscles beneath his red armor tightened and bulged outwards as if he were about to explode out from his armor.

On his face, on his hands, everything was covered with red scales the color of blood. They shined with a cold light!

“My Crimson Light World's World King Family bloodline is called Scorching Blood, where our blood is like fire! After transforming our bodies, we can stimulate the bloodline of our family! Our combat strength can increase by multiple times! And as for you? Can you become a phoenix? Your Ancient Phoenix Clan has developed for all this time and yet you are still only a Holy Land level sect! A World King has never appeared within your clan, and they never will! Even extreme characters like Xiao Daoji or

Huo Burning Heaven are only nearing the realm of a World King. In the vast Divine Realm, they are simply nothing to speak of at all! But me, I come from a World King Family! Our family has existed for several hundreds of millions of years and we have produced three World Kings! Your bloodline is doomed to forever be inferior to mine!”

Crimson Strifecloud gave a loud shout and energy rapidly revolved through his entire body. He no longer relied on his speed and clever attacks. Now he would use his absolute strength, a strength that belonged to his bloodline!

Everyone outside was watching the scene reflected within the fire spirit.

Huo Violentstone’s face was calm like a placid lake. Behind him, Huo Highdragon, Duke Golden Sword, and Monarch Sweetfox were all suppressing a simmering rage in their hearts. As for the disciples of the three branch palaces, all of them were clenching their fists to the point of drawing blood.

No one wished to be despised and disparaged by others, especially when it involved the glory of their people!

However, if one wanted to counter these claims, they didn’t know how to do so. This was because their Ancient Phoenix Clan was indeed inferior to the Crimson Light World’s World King Family, and this had been the de facto situation for the last tens of thousands of years!

It was simply impossible to refute these claims!

They could only hope that Lin Ming could defeat Crimson Strifecloud and use absolute strength to shut him up!

Lin Ming took half a step backwards, firmly rooting himself in the ground. He seemed like an ancient tree, solid and unmoving. The nine foot nine inch Phoenix Blood Spear lay in his hands, with 999 small blood spears spinning around the barrel. His aura began to rise without end!

He faintly smiled and said, “Crimson Strifecloud, the history of my Ancient Phoenix Clan is indeed not wondrous or magnificent, but, that is not because the blood of the Ancient Phoenix isn’t strong, but because we do not have enough. Do you know how precious a single drop of phoenix blood essence is? Not even a Vice Patriarch can obtain a single drop. That is a luxury that only a Patriarch could possibly afford! If my Ancient Phoenix Clan’s clansmen were able to transplant 10 drops of phoenix blood essence each, just what degree would their bloodline reach? Do you think your so-called ‘Scorching Blood’ would be able to compare!?”

“And that is only ten drops. What if there was more? On the other hand, your bloodline has already reached the limits! You are already a descendent of the Scorching Blood bloodline family. Even if you transplanted 10,000 jins of this so-called ‘Scorching Blood’ blood essence into your body, it would all be wasted!

“If you really disdain the Ancient Phoenix bloodline, then why would you specifically run over to my Ancient Phoenix Clan and marry the little princess with her perfect Ancient Phoenix

bloodline!?

“My Ancient Phoenix Clan has received the blood of a God Beast, so how could your variation bloodlines possibly compare? If my bloodline is inferior to yours now, that is only because the density of my bloodline is inferior to yours. But in terms of quality, the Ancient Phoenix bloodline is a thousand times better than your Scorching Blood bloodline. Although my bloodline is faint, it contains infinite potential! In the future, I could possibly obtain dozens of even 100 drops of phoenix blood essence! And in a future beyond even that, I might even achieve a Phoenix Divine Body! And you? How could you ever compare!?”

Each one of Lin Ming’s words was filled with energy and daring. The more he spoke, the louder his voice became, especially at the end, his voice was simply like beating great drums, the roar of a dragon! His words flooded through the world, piercing through the skies!

These words entered the hearts of all the Ancient Phoenix Clan clansmen present, causing their blood to boil with fervor. Even Huo Violentstone was moved by Lin Ming’s words.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, well said!”

“Brilliant!”

The disciples of the three branch palaces couldn’t help but shout out their happiness! Indeed, if Crimson Strifecloud really despised the Ancient Phoenix bloodline so much, then why would he marry

the little princess of the Ancient Phoenix Clan?

This was clearly because his family's so-called 'Scorching Blood' bloodline was in truth inferior to the Ancient Phoenix bloodline. The only reason it seemed so fierce was because its density had long ago reached the limit. Thus, he needed the Ancient Phoenix bloodline to improve the quality of his own.

Of the three branch palaces' many disciples, their bloodlines were inferior to the Crimson Light World's World King Family bloodline. But, this wasn't because the Ancient Phoenix bloodline was of an inferior rank, but because their bloodline density was too low!

If they could be like Lin Ming and display a heaven-shocking talent and constantly strive for their own lucky chances, then their futures would be filled with infinite possibilities!

To a true martial artist, what they feared was not being weak in the present. Rather, what they feared was not being able to find a goal, and not being able to see what direction to go in. If they could see a bright future waiting for them ahead, they would courageously soldier onwards even if it meant untold misery and incomparable danger. They would continue with all their heart and soul, seeking out ever higher limits!

"Good! Very good!" As Crimson Strifecloud looked at Lin Ming, his eyes flashed with a sharp light. "I was mistaken. Not only do you have extraordinary talent, but you also have the heart of a true unrivalled powerhouse. It is probably because your heart of martial arts is so firm and steady that you were able to obtain a

gold battle spirit at the seventh stage of Life Destruction. Further words are useless. Let us fight and confirm the truth with our own bodies!”

As Crimson Strifecloud spoke, his aura suddenly converged. Then, as if a dam had been broken down, thick killing intent surged out into the world!

The suppressive atmosphere had transformed into a pure and rich killing intent.

At this time, the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan held their breaths as they watched the fire spirit screen, their hearts filled with anxiousness. Let alone these disciples, even Monarch Sweetfox, Duke Golden Sword, and the other high level figures were nervously sweating for Lin Ming.

Now that the battle had reached this step, it was no longer about Lin Ming completing the Thousand Slaughter. Rather, this battle concerned the glory of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

This even included Yan Littlemoon, who was conflicted about Lin Ming. As she looked at his figure in the fire spirit mirror, her eyes were wide and unblinking. Before this, she never had a good impression of Lin Ming. After all, ever since she was born, the greatest humiliation and defeat she suffered had been underneath Lin Ming’s hands. It was truly an experience etched forever into her bones.

But just now, the words Lin Ming spoke had roused a heroic

spirit in her heart that shot into the heavens. She could faintly feel that her heart had been inexplicably touched by something.

Now she also hoped that Lin Ming could win!

However, she was also deeply aware of just how terrifying Lin Ming's opponent was!

Bang!

Crimson Strifecloud's body blazed with burning flames. After displaying the Scorching Blood Battle Body, his striking power, physical strength, all of it had risen to a completely different degree. The rocks and dirt underneath his feet instantly evaporated, and even the space around him twisted about.

And around Crimson Strifecloud's side, fire origin energy formed countless spiritual forms. There were birds, beasts, insects, fish, flowers, grass, and even spirit trees...

This was the fourth level Concept of the Fire Laws – Manifestation!

To comprehend the Fire Concepts to such a degree, this was a feat that all the rookie disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan could never compete with!

Chapter 1035 – Concept of Manifestation

“That is the fourth level Concept of Fire!”

As the branch palace disciples saw fire dragons, fire snakes, fire cranes, fire golden birds, fire parasol trees, and all sorts of fire existences spin into life around Crimson Strifecloud, all of them sucked in a deep breath of cold air.

These things around Crimson Strifecloud that transformed from flames were not lifeless. Rather, they were spiritual beings with their own intelligence. They were life forms composed of living flames. In fact, these spiritual existences were not condensed by Crimson Strifecloud, but produced by fire origin energy that was controlled by the Laws.

The was the symbol of the fourth level Fire Concept – Manifestation!

Metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, thunder, these elemental Laws all had different types of Concepts for the first three levels. However, all of them shared the same fourth level Concept.

And that was... Manifestation.

After arriving at this step, energy would have life and intelligence of its own.

Fire origin energy could manifest as fiery vermillion birds or

fiery crows. Thunder origin energy could combine into a thunder kirin. Earth origin energy could develop into an earthen black turtle, or earthen snake. Wind origin energy could form gale birds, great rocs, and so on!

Without having comprehended the fourth level Concept, a martial artist's true essence and energy would only be lifeless. In order for martial artists to kill an enemy, they would have to control their true essence with every attack. Without a martial artist's thoughts controlling their own true essence, it would be nothing but a pile of scattered sand without any lethal killing force.

But for someone that had comprehended the Concept of Manifestation, that was different.

Their true essence would have life. Sometimes it would scatter, sometimes it would gather, it would have endless and infinite changes. A martial artist could use their true essence to kill an enemy without the need to control it!

This type of true essence was far easier to manipulate. With just a thought, hundreds and thousands of supernatural powers could be displayed; this was almost impossible to defend against!

When two martial artists used a similar amount of energy, the one that understood the Concept of Manifestation would be able to display a far greater power. This was because their energy contained a life of its own!

“The Concept of Manifestation, Crimson Strifecloud has actually managed to comprehend the Concept of Manifestation! How can Junior-apprentice Brother Lin still fight?”

“Their speed is similar and their true essence foundation is similar. But, Crimson Strifecloud’s cultivation is greater and his comprehension of the Laws is actually an entire boundary ahead. Moreover, he has the Scorching Blood Battle Body. In all other aspects Junior-apprentice Brother Lin doesn’t have any advantages. I’m afraid he will lose here.”

Although all the disciples present passionately wished for Lin Ming to win, they weren’t too confident about whether he could truly defeat Crimson Strifecloud. Just now, Lin Ming’s heroic words and daring spirit had set their blood boiling over with zeal, but in the end, Lin Ming was only speaking about how great his potential was. In terms of their current bloodline strength, he was still inferior to Crimson Strifecloud.

“Come out, Crimson Flame Dragon!”

Crimson Strifecloud gave a loud shout and all the fire existences that formed around him gathered together, forming a flaming red dragon. With a loud roar, this flaming red dragon rushed towards Lin Ming!

This flame dragon was itself a Fire Elemental!

To use a Fire Elemental as the foundation, and pouring in fire origin energy with the Concept of Manifestation, that made this

flame dragon nearly have a life of its own.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. The Phoenix Blood Spear shot out like a bolt of lightning. The 999 small blood spears around the spear shaft twisted into a scarlet storm that swept towards the Crimson Flame Dragon.

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

As Lin Ming used the source energy of the Phoenix Blood Spear, he also fused the power of Laws into it. On top of the Phoenix Blood Spear's point, a blue lotus of flame slowly appeared, blooming in brilliant glory.

The blue flame lotus was surrounded by 999 sword-like blood spears!

The two massive energies violently smashed into each other!

However, there was no chaotic explosion as expected. Instead, the Crimson Flame Dragon actually opened its great jaws. Its body suddenly expanded 10 times over and swallowed up Lin Ming along with the blue lotus!

The martial artists watching this battle at Totem Tower's square widened their eyes. Their hearts jumped into their throats.

"Hahaha! Useless! Although I am inferior to you in the first three level Concepts of the Fire Laws, my Concept of Fire is still an entire

boundary higher than your own. With the fourth level Concept of the Fire Laws, the Concept of Manifestation, combined together with the Crimson Flame Dragon Fire Elemental, that has created an energy form with a life of its own. Its might is beyond your imagination! Now, die for me!”

Crimson Strifecloud raised his hands, wanting to galvanize the energy within the Crimson Flame Dragon to grind Lin Ming to death. The stomach of the Crimson Flame Dragon was a separate space. As long as one entered within, the space would collapse and the violent power of fire would rush in. That incomparably terrifying destructive power was able to tear everything to bits and pieces!

But at this moment, a scene that left Crimson Strifecloud shocked occurred.

Suddenly, a boundless, ancient, and yet simple power erupted from within the belly of the Crimson Flame Dragon. It turned into a gray beam of light that shot out from within the flame dragon.

Lin Ming had poured the Heavenly Demon martial intent into his spear attack, hiding the blooming blood red lotus. With the grandmist space fused into his spear, he thrust out, a strike to annihilate all Laws!

Whether it was the first three level Concepts of the Fire Laws or the fourth level Concept, whether or not Crimson Strifecloud’s true essence had a spirituality of its own, in the face of the all-annihilating grandmist space, everything would come under tremendous suppression.

This move could not be fully used – after all, it was related to Empyrean Primordius. Although he had disguised it as a type of suppressive force field, if there really were a character that had managed to come into contact with Empyrean Primordius, there was a chance that they would recognize Lin Ming’s attack styles!

A martial intent type of skill could not be stolen away by others. But, Lin Ming might be forced into revealing the process of how he obtained this martial intent. If that happened, there would be endless trouble awaiting him.

Within the spear, the energy of the Heavenly Demon martial intent erupted outwards along with the dark gold battle spirit. The Crimson Flame Dragon howled miserably, then, it was suddenly sliced in half from the center!

“Mm!?” Crimson Strifecloud’s eyes shot open. “You tore apart my Crimson Flame Dragon? How can you possibly possess such great strength!?”

Through their battle so far, Crimson Strifecloud had gained an approximate understanding of Lin Ming’s strength. Blue Lotus Flame Dance was already Lin Ming’s strongest move. When it was fused with the Phoenix Blood Spear’s attack yet again, that had become Lin Ming’s greatest attack so far. But even such an attack would not be able to tear apart the Crimson Flame Dragon!

Yet now, the Crimson Flame Dragon had been torn asunder!

“What is going on!? Is that a force field!? Lin Ming’s strength was increased by such a force field and at the same time this force field suppressed my strength!? At just a seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation, Lin Ming was able to comprehend such an aberrant force field!?”

These thoughts instantly cut through Crimson Strifecloud’s Laws. A force field ability was rare. A Law type force field like the Blue Lotus Domain was a bit rarer, and a martial intent force field was even rarer than that. Normally, anyone that could comprehend just a single force field, or even multiple force fields, were extreme geniuses!

This force field that Lin Ming displayed seemed like a martial intent force field but it also seemed like a Law force field. Crimson Strifecloud was simply unable to see through it. This wasn’t strange. This was because while Law force fields were similar when a martial artist comprehended them, martial intent force fields were different. Martial intent force fields were developed based on a martial artist’s cultivation method, true essence, physical characteristics, and countless other constantly shifting variables. There was simply no single standard to identify them. A martial intent force field was similar to a martial artist’s thumbprint, or the unique composition of their very being; every one was different, thus it was normal to not recognize it!

A battle between masters was filled with changes. Before Crimson Strifecloud was able to understand exactly what happened, Lin Ming had already rushed in front of him!

“Phoenix bloodline, combust!”

In that moment, golden light burst out from the entirety of Lin Ming's body. Crimson Strifecloud's Scorching Blood bloodline could transform the body into a Scorching Blood Battle Body. Of course, the Ancient Phoenix bloodline also had a corresponding state of erupting energy. And that was to burn the blood of the Ancient Phoenix!

When Lin Ming crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction, he had used an immense amount of precious Ancient Phoenix blood. Now, this was his first time completely combusting his phoenix bloodline!

The stronger one's Ancient Phoenix bloodline was, the greater the burden combustion would place on the body. When a martial artist with a perfect Ancient Phoenix Bloodline combusted their blood, they would only do so with one ten thousandth of their bloodline. This already produced a titanic level of power. But now, Lin Ming had fully combusted all of the phoenix blood within him, without leaving the least bit behind!

After entering the Illusionary God Combat Array, Lin Ming had saved his strength and true essence. All of it was done so that he could completely erupt with his strength at the crucial moment!

By relying on the support of the Gate of Healing and also relying on his deep and solid foundation, Lin Ming forcefully withstood combusting the equivalent of 70 drops of phoenix heart blood. His strength suddenly multiplied to an extent even greater than Crimson Strifecloud's Scorching Blood Battle Body!

As the branch palace disciples saw Lin Ming's entire body burning in an inferno of flames, and a dark golden light radiating from all over him, all of them cried out in alarm and shock!

“Lin Ming has burnt all of the Ancient Phoenix blood within his body!”

“Heavens! He absorbed so much phoenix blood when he crossed Life Destruction, and yet he's ignited it all!”

“I thought that Junior-apprentice Brother Lin would be swallowed up and eaten by that Crimson Flame Dragon Fire Elemental fused with the Concept of Manifestation, but he actually managed to break through the prison of that Fire Elemental and rush out!”

All of the disciples present held their breath, watching with helpless eyes as Lin Ming shot forwards like a beam of light, hurtling towards Crimson Strifecloud like a falling meteor!

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

Lin Ming gave a loud shot and all of his true essence poured into the Phoenix Blood Spear. A blue lotus 10 times larger than the last shot out, and on top of this blue lotus was a dark gold phoenix phantom!

The dark gold phoenix within Lin Ming's body had fused together with the Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

“Explode!”

In that moment, time seemed to come to a standstill. The blue lotus exploded and an inexhaustible gold light flooded through the entire world of the Illusionary God Combat Array!

Facing such an attack, Crimson Strifecloud’s pupils shrank. He fiercely cut down with his sword!

Boom!

Crimson Strifecloud’s body shook and he was sent soaring backwards. As his body flew through the air, blood gushed out from the shattered scales on his chest, staining his body. Blood also leaked out from the corners of his lips.

As for Lin Ming, he wasn’t much better off!

Although he didn’t vomit blood, his face was still paper white. In that strike just now he had burnt all of his Ancient Phoenix blood so he was able to rush forth with unstoppable momentum and gain the advantage. But before then, Lin Ming had been swallowed up into the stomach of the Crimson Flame Dragon. And when Crimson Strifecloud had caused fire origin energy to explode within, this had injured Lin Ming, causing all the blood within his body to tumble around, and also forcing him to expend a massive amount of true essence.

This battle between two great masters was extremely intense!

“Crimson Strifecloud, son of a World King, the current Crimson Dragon Envoy, he... he was injured by Lin Ming!”

Several disciples cried out in shock. With Lin Ming’s seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation and his Concept of Fire that was an entire boundary lower, he had managed to injure the eighth stage Life Destruction Crimson Strifecloud. This achievement was enough to ring out for all of eternity!

“Lin Ming...” On Charming Phoenix Palace’s side, Yan Littlemoon’s two fists were clutched tightly together. Her lips slowly moved.

“Maybe... just maybe... Lin Ming can win!”

Chapter 1036 – To Complete the Thousand Slaughter

“I never imagined that not only did you have a gold battle spirit, but you even managed to comprehend such a bizarre and powerful martial intent force field, and you were actually able to jump ranks to wound me!”

Crimson Strifecloud rose up from the ruins of his landing. He wiped the leaking blood from his mouth. As he recalled that strange martial intent force field just now, even he couldn't believe it. Lin Ming had actually managed to comprehend such a mystical force field martial intent!

A martial intent was illusive and impossible to clarify. Every person that comprehended one did so differently, and whether or not they managed to comprehend one, this wasn't too related to their comprehension of Laws or their talent. There were some extreme geniuses that would never be able to comprehend their own martial intent.

It could even be said that martial intents were a kind of manifestation of a martial artist's destiny.

“Lin Ming, your cultivation is lower than mine by a single stage of Life Destruction and yet you have been able to force me to this step. I really must praise you. I admit that your talent is no longer beneath mine. This next move is my strongest ace. Even 40,000 years ago when I completed the Thousand Slaughter here, I did not use this move.

“Lin Ming, it is still not too late for you to admit defeat. Because once I use this move, even I am unable to control its strength. Even though we are in the Illusionary God Combat Array and you are nothing but an energy form, my attack will wound your divine soul. This is because this move is one that my father comprehended from a fragment of a transcendent divine might jade slip that he obtained in an ancient ruin. Although it is not a true transcendent divine might, it is actually quite close. And whilst I can only display the first attack of this ability, even so, the likes of you will not be able to resist it!”

“Transcendent divine might?”

As the martial artists present heard Crimson Strifecloud’s words, all of them were floored. A transcendent divine might was a peak top level ultimate ability of the Divine Realm! Only an extreme Empyrean level character, an existence that others called equivalent to a god, was able to create their own. Moreover, an Empyrean would only be able to create a single transcendent divine might, because a transcendent divine might was the complete accumulation of their entire life’s studies!

Thus, in the entire Divine Realm, a new transcendent divine might would only be born every million or even several million years. In addition, there were many transcendent divine mights that were lost in mystic realms, causing transcendent divine mights in the Divine Realm to be extremely scarce. Normally only an Empyrean or extraordinary World King would experience a lucky chance and obtain one. As for a Holy Lord, there was no point in mentioning them.

For instance, Crimson Strifecloud's father had obtained only a fragment of a transcendent divine might. The amount that could be learnt from it was limited.

Even so, that was still an amazing inheritance!

“A transcendent divine might jade slip fragment! By the heavens! Crimson Strifecloud actually had the chance to learn such an ability!”

“There's nothing that can be done about it. That's the background of a World King Family. The reason that Crimson Strifecloud's family is so glorious is not just because of their bloodline, but also because their inheritances are far superior. For instance, our Ancient Phoenix Clan would never have something so mythical like a fragment of a transcendent divine might.”

“I fear Junior-apprentice Brother Lin won't be able to stop him... what a pity, if only Crimson Strifecloud didn't have a transcendent divine might then Junior-apprentice Brother Lin might have won.”

“There isn't anything that can be done, this is the difference of background. There isn't any shame for Junior-apprentice Brother Lin to lose like this. This battle is destined to be recorded in the grand history of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!”

As the disciples of the three branch palaces were feeling sorrow for Lin Ming, at this time, Lin Ming was facing off against Crimson

Strifecloud, a dignified expression on his face. Even a transcendent divine might jade slip fragment couldn't be underestimated. It had to be known that his own Heavenly Demon martial intent was only a minor portion of the complete Primordius martial intent, and yet it held so much power already.

As for the Heretical God Force, that should be a complete transcendent divine might. But, the nature of this secret skill was focused on auxiliary cultivation, passive support, and helping to perceive the Laws; its striking power wasn't its greatest strength. As for Crimson Strifecloud, from the meaning behind his words, what his father obtained was a fragment of an offensive transcendent divine might!

A martial skill comprehended from a transcendent divine might jade slip fragment might not be a true transcendent divine might, but it was still recreated through the strength and understandings of a World King level powerhouse. Its might was absolutely powerful.

At this moment, Lin Ming no longer held anything back. This was likely Crimson Strifecloud's final attack. He needed to receive this attack, and his greatest dependence was the transcendent divine might level grandmist space. In other words, to release the grandmist space to the edge of its limits.

Before this, because of all sorts of worries, Lin Ming had suppressed the grandmist space to about three feet around his body, and he also hid the phenomena of the grandmist space. But if he were to continue with this charade then he would likely lose here.

“It looks you really want to fight to the death. Hehe, that is also what I expected. Otherwise, that wouldn’t be you, and I would lose interest in defeating you.” As Crimson Strifecloud saw Lin Ming’s aura rapidly rising, he wasn’t surprised at all. He lifted his sword with both hands and his own aura also ascended into the heavens, turning into a billowing blaze that shot into the sky, dyeing the entire sky blood red!

“Tyrant Ether Blood!”

Crimson Strifecloud suddenly chopped down with his sword. At this time, he was like the world itself, wielding control of heavenly retribution, and his sword was the judgement of the Heavenly Dao!

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. In that moment, he once again combusted all of his Ancient Phoenix blood. His soul force and willpower completely erupted! Behind Lin Ming, in the midst of a blazing golden light and a fiery phoenix dancing in the sky, a blood red lotus began to slowly bloom!

This was the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower. Only when this lotus flower bloomed would the grandmist martial intent reach the pinnacle of its strength!

However, Lin Ming didn’t dare to allow just the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower to bloom. Although Crimson Strifecloud or Huo Violentstone were both characters that were far from the level of an Empyrean, and it was also impossible for them to ever see someone like Empyrean Primordius, Lin Ming still didn’t look

down on their experience. As he released the blooming blood red Prime Emperor Lotus Flower, he used the Blue Lotus Flame Dance once again!

The first three Concepts of the Fire Laws condensed into a blue lotus and fused together with the Prime Emperor red lotus, causing a lotus flower to appear that was a strange blue-red!

But, Lin Ming wasn't done yet. He poured his grandmist battle spirit into this blue-red lotus flower. The gold battle spirit was capable of forming a world of will projection into reality. It changed the appearance of the Prime Emperor red lotus again, covering it with a dark gold!

Bang!

Ka ka ka!

Crimson Strifecloud's sword cut into the grandmist space. The deep red energy violently collided with the grandmist space. Then, the strands of elementary grandmist energy were forcefully sheared off by Crimson Strifecloud. At the same time, Crimson Strifecloud's Tyrant Ether Blood also weakened. A thick red energy washed out in all directions, dyeing the grandmist space crimson, as if the endless heavens were crying tears of blood!

"Just what kind of force field is this?! It's actually so powerful!" Crimson Strifecloud was stunned. He felt his own strength being rapidly sucked away. "Break for me!"

Crimson Strifecloud erupted with a bellowing roar. His body suddenly bulged out. The blood vessels underneath his skin all burst open, and blue veins stuck out from all over his body. He pushed the strength of his body to the limit and forcefully tore away the elementary grandmist energy in front that was hindering him!

However at the same time, most of the strength of his Tyrant Ether Blood had been used up!

“Heretical God Force, explode!”

Lin Ming’s thoughts reached towards the Heretical God Sprout. The Heretical God Sprout’s six leaves released a brilliance as bright as a noon sun. In that moment, behind Lin Ming, the blue-red lotus flower appeared once again, shooting straight forwards!

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

Bang!

In the violent collision, the Tyrant Ether Blood and the Blue Lotus Flame Dance smashed against each other. The blue-red lotus was ripped apart, but Crimson Strifecloud’s Tyrant Ether Blood was also mutilated until it exploded!

Wild shockwaves of energy swept outwards. Lin Ming’s protective true essence shattered and his meridians were torn apart by the energy. He vomited a great mouthful of blood.

As for Crimson Strifecloud, a third of the scales around his body had been torn off by Lin Ming's attack. His entire body was dyed with blood!

However, the two of them did not retreat. They both wanted to use this moment when their opponent was severely wounded and their attacks would be at their weakest to deliver a fatal blow!

Tyrant Ether Blood!

Crimson Strifecloud wanted to display the Tyrant Ether Blood once more. But with his current condition, he was barely able to use this move and the burden on his body was great. Also, even though he was barely able to use this move, the power would be incomparable to the last time.

But, just as Crimson Strifecloud was about to strike, he could hear a sound of rolling thunder roaring at him. From Lin Ming's body, a purple lion tore towards him!

“Purple Lion Thunder Source, explode!”

Lin Ming crazily shouted out. The Purple Lion Thunder Source dashed into the great currents of flame that still surged about. The power of thunder and fire wove together, creating a riotous explosion.

Bang!

The heavens and earth trembled. Explosive origin energy burst out in all directions. Crimson Strifecloud didn't have time to condense his sword energy before he was swept up by the frenzied thunderfire energy. His stance broke and he was sent flying backwards. All of his scales were ripped off, scattering across the world as his blood shot into the wind.

Lin Ming's final strike nearly took all of his energy. As he slaughtered his way to this step, every opponent he faced had been a genius of their own era. Moreover, he had faced groups of them that had joined together in formations. The consumption of his energy could be imagined.

Even if Lin Ming had the Gate of Healing supporting him, it was still difficult to make up for the stress of his mind in the mere quarter hour of time given to him before he fought Crimson Strifecloud.

Because he had erupted with too much strength in that last attack and he had also suffered a backlash from the explosive true essence, 30% of Lin Ming's meridians had been torn and he was in a critically injured stage. He didn't have much combat efficiency left. If Crimson Strifecloud still had strength remaining, then he could only admit defeat.

However, the truth was that Crimson Strifecloud was in an even worse state.

In Lin Ming's final strike, he had used the Purple Lion Thunder

source to detonate the remnants of the Blue Lotus Flame Dance. Crimson Strifecloud had withstood the greatest impact. If it weren't for his Scorching Blood Battle Body, the scales that covered him, as well as his amazing defensive power, then Lin Ming's strike would have torn Crimson Strifecloud to pieces!

“You...!” Crimson Strifecloud's voice was hoarse as he glared at Lin Ming. Every time he spoke a word, blood would gush out from his mouth. “Lin Ming, right? I'll remember you!”

Hu – !

As Crimson Strifecloud finished speaking, his body turned into beams of red light that faded away, soon completely vanishing altogether.

Lin Ming... had defeated Crimson Strifecloud!

This also meant that he had completed the final stage, the Thousand Slaughter!

“Lin Ming has defeated Crimson Strifecloud! Heavens!”

“Thousand Slaughter! The madman did it, he completed the Thousand Slaughter!”

As the disciples of the three branch palaces saw Lin Ming finally defeat Crimson Strifecloud, all of them were first struck dumb. They thought that Lin Ming originally had a ray of hope to achieve

victory, but after Crimson Strifecloud had pulled out that attack that was perceived from a transcendent divine might jade slip fragment, everyone had felt that final ray of hope disappear.

But, the true result had defied all of their expectations!

Chapter 1037 – Phoenix Blood Essence

“He won... he really won...” Monarch Sweetfox mumbled. Beside her, Duke Golden Sword and Huo Highdragon were stunned speechless.

“Good! Well fought!” Huo Violentstone raised his fists. This battle was too amazing! He had only been watching the fight and yet he was filled with a hearty feeling. This was what all battles should be like!

“This Lin Ming must have obtained some lucky chance somewhere. The might of those final abilities he used as well as that martial intent was simply incredible. It’s impossible that he created such moves on his own. He must have obtained the inheritance of a top extreme powerhouse.”

Huo Violentstone could see that Lin Ming’s last attack was not ordinary at all. It was normal for geniuses to obtain lucky chances, and Lin Ming’s lucky chance was far more terrifying than he had assumed. This wasn’t surprising. After all, Lin Ming was a martial artist from the lower realms. If he didn’t have some great lucky chance then it would have been impossible for him to reach this step.

“It looks like I underestimated Lin Ming. I originally thought he was a powerhouse who had the possibility and potential of becoming a character on the level of a Highest Elder in the future. But now, it seems that his achievements may continue past even those of a Holy Lord. Perhaps the Ancient Phoenix Clan will not be the final destination. He will leave the Ancient Phoenix Clan and

step onto a broader stage in the Divine Realm!”

Huo Violentstone took a deep breath. The 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm each took an incomparably broad mainland as their center; this was the so-called primary world. But, there were also countless celestial stars that existed outside of these primary worlds. Many of these celestial stars were even larger than the planet that the Sky Spill Continent was located on!

And on these celestial stars lived incalculable lives!

Of the 3000 great worlds, every great world had an unimaginable population base and every great world also had over a hundred Holy Land level influences.

And these were only the 3000 great worlds! Besides the 3000 great worlds there were also medium worlds and small worlds. Even these small worlds had top powerhouses!

In addition, a Divine Lord powerhouse was able to form a divine world within their bodies. This world could hold rivers, lakes, seas, deserts, grasslands, and all sorts of life could be raised within. Then, the master of this world could obtain strength from all the power of faith emanating from their inner world.

For instance, characters like Huo Highdragon and Monarch Sweetfox had divine inner worlds. If the population of this world was added together, that was also a huge number!

It was impossible to measure how vast the Divine Realm was. Even if a World King were to spend a million years wandering the cosmos, they would still find it difficult to explore even a ten thousandth of the Divine Realm.

“My Ancient Phoenix Clan has continued on in the Divine Realm for so many years and yet a World King has never appeared among our people. Even Xiao Daoji, Huo Burning Heaven, all of them were almost close to becoming a World King. With Lin Ming’s current achievements it is still far from him becoming a World King, but he has a faint hope in doing so.”

Huo Violentstone truly hoped that the Ancient Phoenix Clan would be able to raise a World King. But, training a World King was simply too difficult! There were only 3000 World Kings for the 3000 major worlds of the Divine Realm. These were accumulated over hundreds of thousands of years.

The truth was that one could step onto the stage of the Divine Realm after becoming a Holy Lord. If one could surpass a Holy Lord and become a World King, then one could become a leading actor on the Divine Realm’s stage.

.....

At this time, in the distant Crimson Light Word, in an endless space of fire, a tall and broad middle-aged man with long crimson hair was sitting down.

Then, he had a sudden feeling in his heart. He slowly opened his

eyes, “Mm? The wisp of divine sense I left in the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s Illusionary God Combat Array was broken?”

The red-haired middle-aged man was surprised. He stood up. This man was Crimson Strifecloud!

It had already been a matter of 40,000 years ago when he left behind a strand of his divine sense.

At that time, he had been filled with the fire of youth and also far too much arrogance. He had believed that all geniuses beneath the heavens were inferior to him. But now, he had become much more composed and levelheaded than before. His boundary was different and thus his horizons were different. As he grew older, he slowly became deeply aware of just how broad and vast the Divine Realm truly was.

If it were now, he wouldn’t leave behind a wisp of his divine sense to provoke a Holy Land, because there simply wasn’t any meaning in such an act.

A Holy Land also couldn’t be underestimated. Although it was true he had suppressed the Ancient Phoenix Clan 40,000 years ago, that was only a matter of 40,000 years ago. There was the glory of ten million years ago or even longer than that. During that long history, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had produced numerous talents that exceeded him in all aspects, not to mention existences like Xiao Daoji or Huo Burning Heaven, extreme characters that had been half-step World Kings. There were even some less famous past Patriarchs of the Ancient Phoenix Clan that were about the same as Crimson Strifecloud.

At his age, Crimson Strifecloud's chances of stepping into the World King realm were becoming more and more uncertain. He had more or less stopped at the peak of a Holy Lord. A peak Holy Lord was still a Holy Lord. Compared to a World King, there was simply an insurmountable chasm between them.

Crimson Strifecloud casually reached out his hands and tore apart space. From the endless space, he grasped a tiny red strand. This red strand slowly lingered in his palm; this was the wisp of divine sense he had left behind, but it had already been scattered by Lin Ming.

Crimson Strifecloud opened his mouth and absorbed this strand of divine sense into his body. The scene of battle within the Illusionary God Combat Array reappeared in his mind. However, because the strand of divine sense had been brutally ruined by Lin Ming, he could not recover the complete battle scene. The most he could do was recognize Lin Ming's appearance and his cultivation.

"In the past, I completed the Thousand Slaughter in the Illusionary God Combat Array when I was 29 years old. This youth should be the same age. The Illusionary God Combat Array should be able to perfectly reproduce my past understandings of the Concept and Laws, my skills and cultivation methods, my complete combat efficiency, and even the fiery hotheadedness of my youth. In order to create a legend that would never be broken, I also displayed the Tyrant Ether Blood in the Illusionary God Combat Array before I left. That strength was left behind along with my divine sense. I should have been reproduced in the exact same condition of my peak strength back then. And even then, I actually managed to lose. He is the same age as I was, and

moreover he is... mm? Seventh stage Life Destruction!”

Crimson Strifecloud’s eyes widened. This discovery was even more shocking!

In truth, for a genius of Crimson Strifecloud’s level, it was extremely easy for him to break through the earlier realms. If he wanted to he could have stepped into the Divine Sea at 26-27 years of age. But, there was no reason to do that. Only when he felt that his cultivation had become the greatest limiting factor of his comprehension of the Laws would he then break through to the next boundary. In his opinion, if a 29 year old could suppress their cultivation to the seventh stage of Life Destruction then their talent must truly be great! This youth must possess a talent that surpassed his own by a great margin.

“This Lin Ming fellow appeared in the Ancient Phoenix Clan. With such talent, it is possible that he will become a character like Xiao Daoji. In the future, our paths will surely intersect. I want to take a good look to see just what sort of monstrous little creature he is.”

Crimson Strifecloud muttered to himself. Then, he sat back down and continued to perceive the Laws. When he was 25,000 years old he had already reached the peak of the Holy Lord realm. Now, he either spent his time perceiving the Laws and Concepts, closed up in diligent cultivation, travelled for enjoyment, or sought lucky chances of his own in dangerous lands. Even so, he had still been stuck at this step for a full 15,000 years!

.....

At this time, at Fire Spirit Star, the last star lit up on the arch of the Illusionary God Combat Array. The ninth star symbolized the completion of the Thousand Slaughter!

The array formation portal violently trembled. Then, with a whistling sound, the portal disappeared and a pale-faced youth was kicked out. This youth was Lin Ming.

It was over!

Lin Ming took a deep breath. At this time his long hair was in chaos and exhaustion tinged his eyes.

It had only been Lin Ming's spiritual form that fought in the Illusionary God Combat. The spiritual form had been reproduced from his own body so that he wouldn't be directly harmed during the trial. Even so, in an endless revolving fight that continued for almost an entire day, it had been a tremendous test of Lin Ming's mind, will, and soul. His consumption had been immense!

Without a doubt, his Thousand Slaughter was far more difficult than what Crimson Strifecloud experienced 40,000 years ago!

Although he had been brimming with energy and vitality when he first rushed into the Illusionary God Combat Array, now that he exited, all he felt was exhaustion.

Even so, as his figure fell into the eyes of the other martial artists

present, there was nothing reflected in them but supreme power and influence, a grandeur that left their hearts racing.

Lin Ming had jumped levels to defeat Crimson Strifecloud. Such strength, such talent, it was all like an unreachable mountain peak. Just this point was enough to have the three branch palaces' disciples feel awe. But before, Lin Ming had also given a rousing verbal counter to Crimson Strifecloud's words. Those words had caused their blood to boil and for them to deeply worship and revere his daring bravado.

Lin Mind had defended the glory of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. He had defended the pride of everyone in the Ancient Phoenix Clan, so that they could hold their heads up high.

“Littlemoon, you cannot struggle with him.” Lu Xiaoyun couldn't help but say. Beside her, Yan Littlemoon was staring at Lin Ming in a daze, her lips gently moving as if she were speaking to herself. This blow to the heart of the arrogant Yan Littlemoon was not minor.

Yan Littlemoon's body shivered. Then, she averted her gaze. She bowed her head and said, “Senior-apprentice Sister Lu, I'm fine.”

Yan Littlemoon seemed to think of something. She looked up and clenched her fists.

“Regardless of whether or not I can struggle with him, I will still try to do so no matter what. As long as I can follow his footsteps, then even if I never surpass him, in the future, I too have hopes of

becoming a Holy Lord level character. But, if I were to be ashamed of my own weakness now and give up my hope, then there would be nothing left..." Yan Littlemoon said after a moment of thought.

As Lu Xiaoyun heard these words, she smiled in appreciation. "That's right. At any time, no matter how powerful our rivals and enemies are, we still cannot lose heart, we cannot abandon our will to never surrender... Littlemoon, your talent far surpasses my own. As long as you grasp the chances that appear to you in the future, you truly do have a chance of becoming a Holy Lord!"

"Mm!" Yan Littlemoon firmly nodded. There was no limit in this universe; there was always a higher mountain, a stronger person. Yan Littlemoon understood this. She knew that she was far from being able to compare with those truly monstrous geniuses out in the wide universe. But, there had never been a situation like today where she personally experienced this with her own eyes and heart. Now, she understood just how great the disparity was. Although this was a major blow to Yan Littlemoon, it was also an extremely important life lesson. It had broadened her horizons and cemented her goal, giving her the strength to press forwards.

"Apprentice Nephew Lin, congratulations. You have reached the seventh level of the Hells of Flame and have also completed the Illusionary God Combat Array's Thousand Slaughter. This is yours – you have earned it."

Huo Highdragon took out an ordinary-looking wooden box and handed it to Lin Ming.

This wooden box was extremely plain-looking; it was unknown

just what type of wood it was made from. As Lin Ming opened this box, he could see that there was a square crystal inside, translucent and utterly clear, shimmering with a faint light. And sealed in the center of this crystal was a single crimson drop of blood. This drop of blood seemed to have a spirit of its own. Just by looking at it, one could feel endless flames burning within, and within these flames was a phoenix bathing in the fires of nirvana.

This was... phoenix blood essence!

Chapter 1038 – Absorbing the Phoenix Blood Essence

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, congratulations!”

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, awesome fight!”

As Lin Ming obtained the phoenix blood essence, many disciples that knew Lin Ming came up to congratulate him, some of them with voices thick with envy.

This was Ancient Phoenix blood essence! Even someone like Crimson Strifecloud, who came from a World King family background, would crave and yearn for it.

In the Divine Realm, there were countless various bloodlines. In order to reach a higher realm of cultivation, besides perception, lucky chances, and destiny, one also need to have enough martial talent.

Of the several factors that formed a genius, martial talent was at the end. But, this didn't mean that it was unimportant. On the contrary, martial talent was actually indispensable. It was just that in the Divine Realm there were many different methods to increase one's martial talent, thus it wasn't considered too important.

Improving one's bloodline was often the main method to increase one's talent.

In this universe, the human bloodline wasn't much at all. Humans were small and weak animals. They were slow, their physical strength was lacking, and their bodies were frail. Although they were more formidable than ants, cats, dogs, and other such ordinary animals, they fell far short of being able to compare with fierce beasts like lions and tigers.

Compared to vicious beasts and saint beasts, they couldn't even hold a candle to them.

As for a God Beast, there was even less to speak of. A God Beast did not even need to train. As long as they grew up, they would have the strength of a peak World King powerhouse. As for a human, they would die in several dozen years if they didn't cultivate.

But after so many billions of years, humanity had actually taken rule over the entire Divine Realm. Besides humans' terrifying ability to multiply, the main reason they had been able to do this was based on their perception, creativity, and ability to learn!

Mankind had created a brilliant and magnificent martial arts civilization. There was no other race in this cosmos that was more suited to cultivating martial arts than humans. A weak little baby that cried just after being born, could 100,000 years later destroy a star with their own hands. This weak baby could become an Empyrean with the ability to create their own miracle. This could be said to be an unbelievable miracle!

As for saint beasts and God Beasts, their effects of cultivating were limited. Nearly all transcendent divine mights were created

by humanity. Although a God Beast was powerful, they could not compare with a human Emphyrean!

And while humans had an advantage in cultivation, their bloodline talent was actually poor. The children they gave birth to were frail and weak without even the strength to grab a chicken. Then, in the distant past, the ancient martial artists of the Divine Realm underwent a variety of experiments to transform their own bloodline.

With humanity's cultivation speed, if they also had a bloodline superiority then they would truly become the beloved of heaven!

And by this era, in the vast and boundless Divine Realm, the truly powerful families all had their own unique bloodline inheritances. All these various bloodlines had strange and wonderful powers, each with their own strengths and disadvantages, some better and some worse.

This included God Beast Families like the Ancient Phoenix Clan. For instance, the Ancient Dragon Clan, Kirin Clan, or Roc Clan.

These God Beast Families all had noble bloodlines. But, what a pity, they were never able to fuse the God Beast bloodline into their own genes. Thus, they could only rely on transplanting additional blood to maintain their bloodline.

Of these four great God Beast Families, only the Ancient Dragon Clan had several World Kings appear within their ranks. As for the other three noble families, the strongest powerhouses they had

were half-step World Kings.

As Lin Ming entered the Divine Realm, it became important for him to constantly enhance his own talent. This would save him a great deal of cultivation time in the future.

At this moment, a beautiful and alluring woman with 10,000 different flavors of sexuality arrived in front of Lin Ming. She gently smiled and said, “Apprentice Nephew Lin, I am the Vice Internal Affairs Envoy of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Monarch Sweetfox. This is the Internal Affairs Envoy, Huo Highdragon. This is the captain of the Disciplinary Enforcement Division, Golden Sword. And finally, as you should be well aware, this is the current Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s Huo Family, Highest Elder Huo Violentstone!”

Monarch Sweetfox slowly introduced everyone to Lin Ming.

Highest Elder Huo Violentstone...

Lin Ming sucked in a light breath. A Highest Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan – that was a Holy Lord level existence!

In the Divine Realm there was a colossal number of Holy Lands, and even more Holy Lord level characters. But, this didn’t mean that a Holy Lord wasn’t special. In fact, becoming a Holy Lord was unimaginably rare and difficult. Once one became a Holy Lord, they could rule their own section of the Divine Realm and become an overlord. Crimson Strifecloud was also a Holy Lord, and a peak Holy Lord at that.

But, there were far too many lives in the Divine Realm, even more than a trillion trillion lives. It was simply impossible to count. Thus, that was why there were so many Holy Lords!

For example, out of a population of a trillion martial artists, a single Divine Lord powerhouse would appear. But, only one out of every 10,000 Divine Lords would manage to become a Holy Lord level powerhouse. If one calculated this, then the chance that a martial artist would manage to become a Holy Lord powerhouse was one in 10,000 trillion!

Then, 10,000 Holy Lords would appear from a group of a hundred thousand trillion martial artists. And in a population of 10 billion trillion martial artists, there would be a million Holy Lords!

“This old man... is the strongest powerhouse I’ve seen to date...” Lin Ming deeply looked at Huo Violentstone. He simply couldn’t make out what cultivation or power of Laws this old man had. It was hard to imagine that this old man might even have the power to move a small planet.

“Brat, come with me!”

Huo Violentstone suddenly said. Then, as he spoke he waved his hand and casually tore apart space, forming a space vortex.

“Come on in!”

Huo Violentstone's voice was full of energy; it was impossible to refuse him.

Lin Ming nodded and stepped into this space vortex. In the next moment, he felt his own divine soul twist as if he had crossed through a million mile distance. He arrived in a great and broad world. This was not a minor dimension that an ordinary martial artist opened up with their true essence, but a truly great world that extended as far out as the eye could see. There was no limit or edge. As Lin Ming cast his divine sense out and investigated, this world seemed endless.

“This is... a mortal nation?”

Lin Ming was surprised. When he investigated with his senses he discovered that several hundred miles away there was a large number of mortals carrying out some sort of prayer and worship ceremony, as if they were praying for good crops and good weather. This sort of ceremony would only occur in the world of mortals. A martial artist believed in their own strength and ability to change the world as they saw fit. Thus, they naturally felt less awe towards certain beliefs, and they certainly wouldn't believe in some faint and illusory divine god.

And besides this ceremony, Lin Ming could also make out the noisy market streets, bustling cities, fertile fields of crops, and even battlefields where life and death slaughter was happening.

On this battlefield, the soldiers were basically all at the body transformation realm. The generals might be at the Houtian realm, and nearly none were at the Xiantian realm. This sort of

army strength was similar to the Sky Fortune Kingdom that Lin Ming grew up in.

“This place is...”

“This is my divine world, the world I formed when I stepped into the Divine Lord realm, a world evolved from the great dimension within my body.”

As an old voice sounded out, Huo Violentstone appeared beside Lin Ming. “The reason that a Divine Lord is called a Divine Lord is that they can open a true world within their body and become the divine existence of their own world, then being able to receive the power of faith from those that live within them. Well, enough of that. Lin Ming, the reason I brought you here is that I want to ask you several questions. But before that, I will help you absorb this drop of phoenix blood essence first. If you can maintain your current rate of achievements in the future, and perhaps rise even further, then the Ancient Phoenix Clan will do everything in their power to help train and raise you. There can be a second drop of phoenix blood essence, perhaps even a third, all the way until you become a half-step World King and achieve the same level of Xiao Daoji and Huo Burning Heaven of the past. You can even surpass them and struggle for glory for the Ancient Phoenix Clan!”

The Ancient Phoenix had remained silent for hundreds of thousands of years already. They urgently needed a top powerhouse to appear within their ranks in order to enhance the destiny of the entire clan!

Destiny was a concept that couldn't be explained clearly. An

ordinary shop would find a treasure for their store in order to stabilize their destiny and bring about more business and prosperity. Similarly, an ancient family needed a peerless powerhouse to present themselves in order to enhance their own destiny.

Often, after an unrivalled genius was successfully raised, other top geniuses would begin popping up like endless mushrooms one after another. This was not solely an issue of something so fickle like destiny, but because of the truth that the appearance of an unrivalled powerhouse would be accompanied with a great number of lucky chances.

As Huo Violentstone finished speaking, his mind moved and the thought of a battle spirit shot out and destroyed the crystal that sealed the drop of phoenix blood essence. As the crystal shattered, the drop of blood essence that contained the inherent life essence of a Phoenix God Beast slowly drifted downwards. This drop of phoenix blood essence emitted a powerful, vast, and fiery aura!

Lin Ming could even feel that this drop of phoenix blood essence contained fragments of the Great Dao Laws. These Laws were of course not perceived by the phoenix. Rather, when the phoenix was born it had already inherently comprehended these Laws!

When a God Beast like a phoenix was born, their body would naturally be inscribed with dao diagrams, and there would be Law runes deeply etched into their bones. These Laws were all completely natural; one could say they were closest to the Heavenly Dao!

Huo Violentstone used his thoughts to control this drop of blood essence and move it towards Lin Ming. Wherever this blood essence went, Lin Ming could see that the space around it twisted around. This was because of the highly compressed energy contained within the drop of blood essence. It was even able to twist the space within Huo Violentstone's divine world. This was a truly impressive condensed energy!

As soon as this drop of phoenix blood essence approached the point between Lin Ming's eyebrows, he could feel a sharp pain there as if a needle were stabbing into him, as well a pain that came from being burned by flames.

The Ancient Phoenix mark on Lin Ming's forehead naturally revealed itself. It released a dazzling golden light that shined along beautifully with the drop of phoenix blood essence. All of the power of blood within Lin Ming's body seemed to be summoned by some invisible force, swelling up towards the point between his eyebrows as if it were gathering into something.

"What an extraordinary strength, and what rich Source Laws..." Lin Ming exclaimed to himself. Then, that drop of phoenix blood essence finally fell onto the point between Lin Ming's eyebrows.

In that instant, Lin Ming was able to feel just how heavy this drop of blood essence was!

Ordinary Ancient Phoenix blood was around the same weight as human blood. But, this drop of phoenix blood essence was as dense as mountains and rivers, as heavy as the sea!

This was because this drop of blood essence was condensed from the life essence of a Phoenix God Beast. It was the most precious treasure of a phoenix!

Hiss...

A burning heat beyond compare spread outwards. The skin between Lin Ming's eyes was penetrated through by that drop of phoenix blood essence. Lin Ming felt his heart suddenly jump, as if his heart were having trouble processing the massive load coming from the drop of blood essence.

Hu – Hu –

Lin Ming wildly gasped for breath. Blue veins stuck out from his forehead and sweat streamed down his entire body.

In front of him, Huo Violentstone was completely focused. In a flash, his hands twisted together in a series of motions and 10,000 seal marks shot out, sinking into Lin Ming.

In order to transplant a bloodline, a secret technique was required. Let alone phoenix blood essence, even back at the Sky Spill Continent, disciples of Divine Phoenix Island also needed a special secret technique and inheritance to transplant the vermilion bird bloodline. It wasn't that anyone who wished to transplant the bloodline could do it.

As for transplanting phoenix blood essence, that was especially difficult and laborious. The more powerful the person assisting with the transplant, the better the effects would be.

Chapter 1039 – The Thoughts of God

As the blood essence thoroughly fused into Lin Ming, it turned into a million wisps of blood that entered all the blood vessels of his body. Lin Ming felt as if his entire body was burning.

In a trance, a strong and overwhelming feeling rushed through Lin Ming's spiritual sea, blotting out the world. This vast will was like the thoughts of heaven, unbearable and difficult to withstand.

“Is this the will left behind by the God Beast?”

Lin Ming shut his eyes. In his mind, the scene of a vast sea of flames appeared. This boundless sea of fire stretched for billions of miles. The billowing waves of heat were at an impossibly high temperature! Even when compared to the core of Fire Spirit Star, this sea of flames blazed dozens or even hundreds of times hotter!

“This is a star?”

Lin Ming was surprised and then extremely shocked. This was not just a star, but a super large star. It was a titan that towered above all blazing stars in the universe!

Within such a fiery star, the inherent energy it contained was incomparably terrifying. If the Sky Spill Continent were tossed inside, the entire continent would be instantly sublimated!

Faintly, Lin Ming was able to see that in the center of this

massive star, there was a giant golden-red bird. This bird had a body that was nearly 10,000 miles long and its entire body was covered with smoldering flames, as if it had become one with the star itself.

As the bird cried out, its clarion cry could be heard clearly across the entire star. It was like bass drums that quaked through the marrow, shaking one's divine soul!

And the aura it exuded was vast and endless, like the infinite universe itself. In front of such a grand being, it was nearly impossible to withstand such a tremendous pressure.

This was... a phoenix?

This was the scene of a phoenix undergoing nirvana!

And it actually underwent nirvana in the center of such a great star!

Lin Ming gasped, finally understanding. After absorbing the drop of phoenix blood essence, he had also absorbed the phoenix's life essence. Through this, he had become aware of the phoenix's will as well as a small portion of its memories.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan had obtained its Ancient Phoenix blood from the remnants left behind after a phoenix underwent nirvana, and phoenix blood essence was the same. Thus, this drop of phoenix blood essence contained the residual thoughts of the

phoenix as it underwent nirvana.

It was just that Lin Ming never imagined that this phoenix would actually choose the center of a several billion mile wide star to undergo nirvana in.

Bang!

The phoenix's entire body erupted with a golden red light. Terrifying flames soared to the heavens, reaching billions of miles high! These flames penetrated through the entire star, shooting out into the endless space!

When the phoenix was truly undergoing nirvana, the entire star began to shake. Endless flames spewed outwards, forming hundreds of thousands of solar prominences, each great enough to wrap around an entire planet!

As Lin Ming watched the phoenix undergo nirvana with its body bathed in flames, he felt as if he himself had become the incarnation of the phoenix, able to pull in energy from the entire star. His vision increased yet again. Not just broadening, but ascending to another level altogether.

Lin Ming felt as if he had become the master of all between the heavens and earth, a true divine god!

From his vantage point as a divine god, he overlooked all the common people of the world, he overlooked the Laws of the

universe, he overlooked the creation of all matter!

This sort of viewpoint was indifferent, ruthless, and yet noble at the same time. This was what scholars meant when they said the world was unbiased and equitable, taking all of existence as nothing more than grass and dogs. In the eyes of a true divine god of the heavens, humans were no different from ants, vast seas were no different from a drop of water, and stars were no different from motes of dust. In the eyes of a divine god, everything was equal without any difference. There was no way to describe such a feeling!

In the scene that played before Lin Ming's eyes, in that moment, all of it changed!

He could see with his own the finest details of matter, a composition of yin and yang energies.

In the blink of an eye, he could also see the grandest macrocosmic scale of the universe. He saw countless galaxies flow about like vast rivers of liquid mercury. He could see the birth of stars within these galaxies. He could see their growth and also their destruction. He saw the changes of the primary worlds and their evolution over time!

Then, he also saw the power of Laws. He could make out all the changes that happened in the fire within the star, and he could also make out the endless dao diagrams on the phoenix's bones that came in countless variations. Slowly, ever so slowly, traces of insights began to blossom in Lin Ming's heart.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt a great many things appear in his mind, as if he had obtained the most precious memories of the universe. But when he wanted to remember them, they fell through his grasp like sand through a net. This feeling was extremely puzzling and mysterious.

“This comprehension of Laws...”

Lin Ming opened his eyes and countless images reappeared in his pupils. It was like galaxies were reflected in his eyes, slowly spinning around.

He knew that this was a memory of the phoenix. It was a memory of when it underwent nirvana as well as some of its understandings towards the Laws. How a phoenix understood the Laws was different from how humanity comprehended Laws from the Heavenly Dao. A phoenix was born with a deep comprehension of Laws. These comprehensions were a memory carved into their very bones!

The Laws inscribed into the marrow of a God Beast originated from the truths of the Heavenly Dao. These truths were not tainted by the world, nor had they ever been processed through anything; they were truths that were closest to the Source Laws of the universe.

“So from phoenix blood essence, the most precious factor is not that it can transform my bloodline and martial talent, but that the phoenix blood essence itself contains the source memories and

Laws of the phoenix. I saw the entire universe from the viewpoint of a God Beast, and I used the mind of a human to understand it. This is truly a great lucky chance! No wonder the Ancient Phoenix Clan values the phoenix blood essence so much; it is truly marvelous. The Ancient Phoenix Clan likely doesn't have much phoenix blood essence left. Perhaps a dozen drops or maybe even two dozen drops."

After realizing all of this, Lin Ming was suddenly enlightened. To look over the source of Laws and composition of matter from the perspective of a divine god would be a tremendous advantage to his future comprehension of the Laws.

A God Beast was an existence that approached a true divine god. They possessed the so-called 'eyes of heaven', something that humans did not have. They were beings of a higher realm. However, their comprehension and creativity were lacking. Their great strength originated from the innate gifts they were birthed with as well as their bloodline and genes.

As for a human's perception and creativity, that was limited by their physical restriction. If they wanted to perceive the Laws of the universe they would encounter great barriers blocking their way.

If Lin Ming was able to integrate both together, his benefits would be enormous!

"This sort of lucky chance is really too rare. I feel as if I've already touched the fourth level Concept of the Fire Laws. As long as I have some more time to close up, I should be able to

comprehend it! Unfortunately, the time I saw from the perspective of a divine god was too short. If I were able to stay in that state for longer, my comprehensions would be much greater. In the future, if I can obtain a second or even third drop of phoenix blood essence then I will have another such chance. I have to take the greatest advantage from it that I can.”

As Lin Ming thought this, he also wondered if there was a possibility he would be able to receive the blood essence of other God Beasts or ‘divine gods’ in the future. For instance, a God Beast of the dragon race, or a God Beast like a Golden-winged Roc or Electric Violet Kirin.

If he could do so then his understandings would be even deeper and more comprehensive. After all, the phoenix only focused on the Fire Laws.

Hu – !

Lin Ming suddenly awoke from the state of sudden enlightenment he entered after absorbing the phoenix blood essence. His eyes shot open and he saw that he was in Huo Violentstone’s divine world.

Huo Violentstone was sitting cross-legged a hundred feet away from Lin Ming. As he sensed Lin Ming open his eyes, he also opened his own.

“Lin Ming, you’ve awoken!”

“Thank you Highest Elder!” Lin Ming bowed. The reason he was able to smoothly absorb the drop of phoenix blood essence was entirely Huo Violentstone’s help.

“Hehe, raising the geniuses of my clan is my duty. I also hope that you can one day create a miracle in the future and surpass Xiao Daoji or Huo Burning Heaven. I hope that you can become an extreme Holy Lord, and there may even be a slim chance that you will become a World King! However, to do so is far too difficult, far too difficult!”

Huo Violentstone sighed. The birth of a World King level powerhouse was often the cumulative progress of 100 million years. For instance, it was already considered excellent if a World King Family was able to produce a World King every 100 million years! Compared to this, Lin Ming’s reputation as the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s greatest talent for the last several tens of thousands of years wasn’t anything at all.

Huo Violentstone said, “Lin Ming, when I helped transplant the phoenix blood essence into your body, I discovered that you have some ancient Azure Dragon bloodline within you; is that correct?”

“Yes.” Lin Ming nodded. “It is reverse scale blood. When this disciple was in the lower realms world I accidentally stumbled upon an ancient relic left behind by a supreme elder, obtaining this drop of reverse scale blood. It was all because of this drop of reverse scale blood that I was able to increase my martial talent. Otherwise, I would never have had my current achievements.”

In the past, Lin Ming had entered the Sorcerer Pagoda in the

Southern Wilderness and obtained the drop of reverse scale blood left behind by the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness. The drop of reverse scale blood had nearly been absorbed by the Magic Cube before he managed to fuse together with it. The greatest benefit from this was his improved martial talent. Lin Ming's martial talent was originally not that great. Without the drop of reverse scale blood, then even with the ethereal martial intent supporting him, he would never have stepped into Life Destruction in his twenties.

“Mm... what a pity. This reverse scale blood is of an extremely high quality; it is no inferior to phoenix marrow or phoenix coronet blood. However, you didn't have any special bloodline inheritance or technique so you were forced to crudely absorb it. That was truly a waste of heaven's gifts.”

Huo Violentstone shook his head. Reverse scale blood, dragon marrow blood, dragon horn blood – all of them were extremely high quality types of dragon blood. Every drop was incomparably precious.

The best method would have been for Lin Ming to first absorb a thousand drops of ordinary dragon blood to create a bloodline foundation for him. Then, the reverse scale blood would have been absorbed using a special technique of the Ancient Dragon Clan to improve the overall quality of the dragon bloodline. This would have had the effect of adding the last finishing touch. Unfortunately, Lin Ming didn't have such conditions. He had crudely absorbed the drop of reverse scale blood and also diluted it with his own bloodline. The effect was reduced to the equivalent of absorbing some ordinary dragon blood.

“Lin Ming, out of the Divine Realm God Beast Families, the Ancient Dragon Clan is the most formidable one. This is because there are many different types of Dragon God Beasts. There is an Azure Dragon, Blood Dragon, Thunder Dragon, Fire Dragon, Black Dragon, Five-clawed Gold Dragon, and Cerulean Dragon. There are even those lesser dragons with fainter bloodlines, such as hornless dragons, winged rain dragons, and others. Even the suanni and chimera can be considered part of the dragon race. They are different from my Ancient Phoenix Clan that only has the Fire Phoenix and Ice Phoenix. The Ancient Dragon Clan have extremely rich bloodline resources. There have been a few World Kings born into their clan. A World King can control a great world of their own, thus their resources are naturally much richer.

“As for my Ancient Phoenix Clan, the Kirin Clan, and the Roc Clan, we are all a great deal worse. The Ancient Dragon Clan is the leader of the four God Beast Families. On the outside, our four God Beast Families are all cooperative and mixed up together. Added up, we comprise a World King level influence. You will inevitably become an important figure in my Ancient Phoenix Clan, thus you will one day have to deal with the Ancient Dragon Clan. You must be more attentive to such matters.”

The Ancient Phoenix Clan was inferior to the Ancient Dragon Clan. However, this was not because a phoenix was weaker than a dragon, but because dragons were highly sexual creatures by nature. Their bloodlines multiplied at a far higher rate than a phoenix's did. If a dragon had nine children, their dragon bloodline would multiply by 10 times. Moreover, there were far more types of dragons to begin with.

Chapter 1040 – End of the Smelting Trial

Lin Ming nodded at Huo Violentstone's counseling.

“Alright. Lin Ming, you should have already guessed the reason why I came to Fire Spirit Star. I'm not going to play word games with you. I will ask you directly, I have decided to take you in as my disciple. What do you think?

“I've already heard that Yan Fengxian has taken you in as her secret disciple, but you do not need to worry about this. Martial artists of the Divine Realm all have different masters at different boundaries; it wouldn't be strange for someone to have 10 masters. The reason I want to take you in as my disciple is to cement your status. With this status, you will be someone of my Huo Family. My Huo Family will pour forth our strength to raise you. Of course, in the future you must also support my Huo Family. I will not limit your freedom, nor will I limit your growth. In the future when your wings have spread, you may leave the Ancient Phoenix Clan and wander as you wish, adventuring and exploring to your heart's desire. Would you be interested in such a proposal?”

Lin Ming wasn't surprised at Huo Violentstone's words. The more extraordinary talent he revealed, the more attention he was bound to obtain from high level forces of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Numerous influences would desire to win him over. There was no advantage to remaining neutral. Instead, he would be suspected or even excluded by the major powers. Having the backing of a great tree to cover him was the most sensible and wise decision.

“You do not need to immediately answer. After all, this isn’t a minor matter. I am willing to give you time to consider this. But, I will also tell you something. Of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s three great families, my Huo Family will put forth the greatest effort to train you, far more than what the Xiao and Huang Families are willing to do! This is because those two families already have core figures that they are raising.

“When you entered the Illusionary God Combat Array, you should have understood just what family Crimson Strifecloud came from. Perhaps you even think that the Ancient Phoenix Clan is extremely miserable and pathetic to be suppressed by the Crimson Family. But, there is no choice but to admit that this is the truth, this is reality!”

“But that doesn’t mean that our Ancient Phoenix Clan’s legacy is incomparably far from the Crimson Family’s. Rather, it is because the Crimson Family has produced a World King and now they are enjoying their greatest period of glory. As for my Ancient Phoenix Clan, we are actually stuck in a rut. The blood pond reserves at headquarters are running low, and this has caused no amazing character to appear for the last 100,000 years. In order to measure a family, one must consider their history through a period of millions or even tens of millions of years. My Ancient Phoenix Clan may only be a Holy Land level influence, but it is actually a peak Holy Land level influence. The Kirin Clan and Roc Clan are also the same.”

“This disciple understands.” Lin Ming nodded. A World King Family would not enjoy glory for perpetuity. After a World King died, it would take tens of millions or even hundreds of millions of years in order to raise a second World King.

“Lin Ming, for these next few months you will meditate on the Laws in my divine world. I will change the flow of time so that it is reduced by 20 times. You can meditate on the Laws here before returning to participate in the end of Fire Spirit Star’s smelting trial.

As Huo Violentstone spoke, he waved his hand. Nine totem stones appeared before him.

These nine totem stones flowed seamlessly together. Thick and twisted traces appeared on them. These traces had no method to them; some were deep and some were shallow. It was somewhat similar to the chaos stones.

At the center of each of the nine totem stones, there was a pattern that converged into a single eye. These eyes were very abstract, but also seemed as if they were alive. As these nine totem stones appeared, the nine eyes also looked at Lin Ming. In that moment, Lin Ming had a feeling like his entire being had been seen through.

These nine totem stones were undoubtedly far superior to the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. In terms of profound exquisiteness, they approached the chaos stones.

It had to be known that even though the chaos stones were close to the Source Laws, they were still only a general outline of the universe. If Lin Ming wanted an even more comprehensive understanding of the Laws, he would have to perceive the sole

elements of the Laws.

“This is the most precious treasure of my Huo Family, the Sacred Flame Testament. An ancestor of my Huo Family obtained this in an ancient ruin. It does not come from the hands of any previous Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. In fact, no one really knows just what boundary the senior who left behind the Sacred Flame Testament was at. You may meditate on these. 200 days from now, I will come back and look for you.”

As a result of the change in the flow of time, 200 days in the divine world was only 10 days outside.

After Huo Violentstone left, Lin Ming sat down in the center of the Sacred Flame Testament. He began to perceive the Laws contained within them.

Dao patterns constantly appeared in Lin Ming’s pupils, slowly verifying the truths that Lin Ming had obtained from the chaos stones.

If the chaos stones that Lin Ming meditated on before could be said to be the skeleton of Laws, then the current Sacred Flame Testament was the flesh and blood that filled the skeleton. The skeleton was the foundation, but having flesh and blood was also essential.

“This Sacred Flame Testament is really mystical. Not only is there a massive amount of Law fragments in them, but these nine eyes also contain the will of the senior who left behind the Sacred

Flame Testament. If I can withstand the baptism of this will, the advantages will be tremendous...”

Lin Ming thought. He quickly entered the ethereal state and found himself swimming in a sea of Laws, constantly absorbing the Law fragments within the Sacred Flame Testament.

After a totem stone was carved and completed, it could independently absorb Laws from the vast space of the universe and condense them into Law fragments. These Law fragments could then be comprehended through meditation and absorbed.

These Law fragments were extremely precious. Once they were absorbed it would take a great deal of time to reform them. Thus, just allowing Lin Ming to meditate on the Sacred Flame Testament was a great hemorrhaging cost to the Huo Family. Lin Ming wasn't an ungrateful person that had no virtues. Since the Huo Family showed him sufficient sincerity and since there also wasn't any harm in joining them, he might as well push the boat along and take Huo Violentstone as his master.

During these 200 days of meditation, Lin Ming's enlightenment of the Sacred Flame Testament's Fire Laws became increasingly profound. On the 180th day, Lin Ming suddenly opened up his eyes from meditation. In that moment, the fire origin energy around him stirred up. Underneath his watchful gaze, a wisp of fire origin energy slowly condensed into the shape of a crane. The fire crane landed on his shoulder and crooned.

Lin Ming's eyes moved. The fire crane turned into a fire snake that winded down and around Lin Ming's arm.

Then, in front of Lin Ming, fire origin energy constantly condensed into various shapes. There were fire birds, golden crows, flaming parasol trees, and so forth!

This was the fourth level Concept of the Fire Laws – Manifestation!

In that moment, Lin Ming had finally touched upon the threshold of the fourth level Concept of Fire and just barely crossed into it. All that was left was to comprehend the fourth level Concept to large success. He would understand its essence and fuse it with the first three level Concepts into one.

After comprehending the fourth level Concept of Fire, condensed origin energy would have a spirituality and life of its own; it wouldn't just be a shape on the surface. In the future, when Lin Ming was manipulating origin energy, it would also be far more powerful.

The same Concept also appeared within the Thunder Concepts. With the Fire Laws' Concept of Manifestation to serve as a guide and signal, it would be much easier to comprehend the Thunder Laws' Concept of Manifestation in the future.

After several more days of meditation, Lin Ming's comprehension of the fourth level Concept became even more profound. Then, after Huo Violentstone contacted him, he left the divine world and flew straight towards the 18 Hells of Flame.

The Laws comprehended from the totem stones needed to be tempered and verified in the Hells of Flame. Lin Ming once again broke through into the seventh level 5000 mile zone.

At this depth, the power of fire that swirled about was just perfect for him. He rapidly consumed his energy here. Yet, it wasn't at an unbearable point, nor was it at a point where there wasn't enough pressure.

Lin Ming began a long period of training at the seventh level 5000 mile distance of the Hells of Flame. When he consumed nearly all of his true essence he would return to the second and third level to rest and restore his strength before returning to the seventh level yet again.

Besides training in the Hells of Flame, Lin Ming also entered Totem Tower. He took the time to meditate on the chaos stones again to verify the truths from the Sacred Flame Testament. His understandings of the chaos stones also deepened.

Like this, time slowly passed. Soon, a year had gone by.

The end of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial soon approached.

And today began the final round of the smelting trial. All of the Ancient Phoenix Clan disciples needed to undergo a final examination. All rookie disciples that could enter the third level of the Hells of Flame would obtain a high-grade saint artifact as well as a drop of phoenix plume blood.

In addition, those who passed the Hells of Flame's third level obtained the qualifications to attempt the Illusionary God Combat Array smelting trial. Those that managed to slaughter 300 enemies within would also receive rewards.

At killing 400 and 500 enemies, the rewards would increase. Every 100 enemies cut down resulted in a greater reward.

“Mm? Yan Littlemoon has slain 650 people in the Illusionary God Combat Array?”

Praying Phoenix Palace's top rookie disciple Xiao Whitesnow was shocked as he heard this news. He had only managed to slaughter 500 enemies and yet Yan Littlemoon had reached 650!

Before this, Yan Littlemoon had only managed to kill 596 people. In the following year, not only did she not lose heart because of her frustrations towards Lin Ming, but her progress increased by a great deal instead!

Although Lin Ming was the unparalleled shining star of this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, Yan Littlemoon also couldn't be ignored. Her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline brought her a great deal of attention from many distinguished families. There were countless handsome and charming heroic young elites that were attracted to an unmarried virgin with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin also came!”

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin has left seclusion!”

At this time, many people were gathered at Totem Tower’s square. As Lin Ming left seclusion, everyone’s eyes turned over to him. No one was concerned with Yan Littlemoon and Xiao Whitesnow’s achievements anymore. All attention was turned to Lin Ming.

Ever since Lin Ming completed the Illusionary God Combat Array’s Thousand Slaughter a year ago, he had spent nearly all his time in seclusion and training. This was his first time making a public appearance.

“I heard that Lin Ming had been training at the seventh level 5000-6000 mile distance. And that is only training – he hasn’t been trying to rush through! I heard he can stay for several days at a time!”

“Are you sure? Holy crap. Does Junior-apprentice Brother Lin have a chance of reaching the eighth level?”

“Of course I’m sure! Also, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin seems to have comprehended the Concept of Manifestation. This level of understanding towards the Laws is quickly catching up to Crimson Strifecloud!”

“Heavens. I have no idea just what step Lin Ming’s strength has arrived at.”

All the disciples looked at Lin Ming, discussing and praising him. Xiao Whitesnow ruefully smiled, darkly sighing in his heart. Lin Ming's speed of progress was just too fast. It was so fast that he couldn't even see his back.

At this point, Huo Violentstone, Monarch Sweetyfox, Duke Golden Sword, as well as two fresh new faces appeared in front of everyone. The two newcomers were a man and a woman. But, what was strange was that they were covered with purple scales and there was a pair of antlers on their heads. They didn't appear to be Ancient Phoenix Clan clansmen.

“Is that the... Ancient Dragon Clan? Kirin Clan?”

Chapter 1041 – God Beast Mystic Realm

“Senior Huo, is that Lin Ming?”

Of the two strangers from different clans, the woman turned to look over all the disciples before her eyes finally fell onto Lin Ming.

Just from looking at him, she couldn't see anything special about Lin Ming besides his solid foundation.

“He defeated Crimson Strifecloud of the same age?”

“Yes!” Huo Violentstone said in a satisfied voice as he stroked his beard.

“Mm...” The woman fell into thought, not saying anything. Since Huo Violentstone said so, then even if there was some exaggeration to his stories, they were mostly true. Even so, she found it hard to believe that this handsome young man before her was such an extraordinary chosen pride of heaven.

“There is Lin Ming as well as Yan Littlemoon with her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Senior's harvests during this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial aren't too bad!” The man from the two strangers politely said. His status was somewhat lower than Huo Violentstone's.

“This is the most glorious moment that my Ancient Phoenix Clan has experienced for the last several tens of thousands of years. Of

my Phoenix Clan's two great branches, the Ice Phoenix Patriarch has gone off to who knows where and returned to some strange polar land. As for my Fire Phoenix Clan, it is hard for us to handle everything alone. We're not like your Kirin Clan. You have several great branches supporting each other so it's much easier for you fellows to grow and develop."

The phoenix was one of the rarest God Beasts of the Divine Realm. As for the kirins and dragons, there were many more of them. The Ancient Phoenix Clan only had two branches: the Fire Phoenix Branch and the Ice Phoenix Branch. However, the Kirin Clan actually had four branches: the Electric Violet Kirin, Fire Kirin, Water Kirin, and Umbral Kirin Branches. They had over 200 billion clansmen among their ranks.

"Senior Huo is too humble. Just your Fire Phoenix Clan is grand enough to compare favorably with two or three branches of our Kirin Clan. It seems that Senior is planning to allow Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon to attend the journey into the God Beast Mystic Realm to explore and gain experience?"

"That's the plan!"

Huo Violentstone nodded. The reason that Monarch Sweetfox and Duke Golden Sword had come to Fire Spirit Star this time was to observe Yan Littlemoon as well as receive and bring her to the God Beast Mystic Realm to gain experience. They never imagined that they would find an even greater pleasant surprise in Lin Ming, to a degree that even Huo Violentstone was alerted.

The God Beast Mystic Realm was located in a separate world from

the Divine Realm.

The Divine Realm didn't have only 3000 great worlds. Rather, there were countless worlds that existed around these 3000 worlds, with numerous mystic realms and near-endless space.

The God Beast Mystic Realm was located in one of these chaotic mystic realms. Its position was one of the greatest secrets of the four God Beast Clans.

This was the hidden treasure of the four God Beast Clans.

The Kirin Clan woman looked at Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon. She nodded and said, "The four great clans can only allow an extremely limited number of people to enter the mystic realm each time. The Ancient Dragon Clan accounts for most of the quota. As for the remainder of the spots divided amongst the rest, each one is extremely valuable. They do have the qualifications, but..."

Of the four great God Beast Clans, the Ancient Dragon Clan was the most overbearing and arrogant. But, they indeed had the capital to be overbearing. They had the richest bloodline resources, and their strength was greater than the other three clans' combined together!

The strength of the four God Beast Clans added together could compare with a World King Family, and this was mainly because of the Ancient Dragon Clan.

And the reason that the four God Beast Clans could continue to obtain the God Beast bloodline and preserve the God Beast Mystic Realm was also mainly credited to the Ancient Dragon Clan. Otherwise, there might be some World King level influences that would move against the God Beast Clans and wrest away the God Beast Mystic Realm as well as the four God Beast Clans' bloodline strength. Although the God Beast bloodline was extremely thin, the quality was correspondingly extremely high. It was immensely beneficial to a powerhouse.

The Kirin Clan woman's words trailed off, but Huo Violentstone could clearly understand her meaning. She wanted to experience Yan Littlemoon's strength, and especially Lin Ming's strength. After all, one couldn't simply rely on rumors and hearsay; seeing was believing. When Huo Violentstone had described Lin Ming, it had all seemed too exaggerated. Even though the Kirin Clan woman knew that Huo Violentstone wasn't one to speak nonsense, she still couldn't believe his words.

Huo Violentstone stroked his beard and smiled, saying, "Lin Ming, Yan Littlemoon, the two of you go into the 18 Hells of Flame and rush as deep as you can."

Huo Violentstone had left the Sacred Flame Testament for Lin Ming to meditate on for 200 days. Then he left Fire Spirit Star. Afterwards, for Lin Ming's training, he didn't question him and an entire year had passed in the meantime. He didn't know just how Lin Ming's cultivation had gone and he also wanted to take a good look at how he was now. This could be considered the final test before the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ended.

“I wonder just how much this brat managed to perceive from the Sacred Flame Testament, and just how much he comprehended of the fourth level Concept of Fire.”

Huo Violentstone mumbled to himself. He had great expectations in his heart. The seventh level of the Hells of Flame was called the domain of god. As for the eighth level, that was simply unimaginable.

“Yes!”

Lin Ming nodded. Rushing through the Illusionary God Combat Array was troublesome but rushing through the 18 Hells of Flame was much faster. In the last four months, he had used the majority of his time to meditate on the Laws. The 18 Hells of Flame was a place where he could temper and verify the Laws he had learnt. Normally he couldn't go too deep into the Hells of Flame, otherwise his consumption of energy would be too great and he wouldn't be able to last too long; that wasn't too helpful for training. Thus, Lin Ming simply didn't know just what his limits were.

Now, he could finally test it out.

Without further ado, Lin Ming broke straight into the 18 Hells of Flame. He opened the Gate of Wonder and Mystic Lightning Shade, hurtling deep into the Hells of Flame at a breakneck pace.

A fire spirit mirror appeared in the sky above the square. The fire spirit mirror was thousands of feet long and Lin Ming was clearly

reflected in it; this was naturally the handiwork of the Ruby Sovereign.

As the disciples of the three branch palaces looked up at the vast fire spirit mirror in the sky, all of them were filled with rabid excitement. They also wanted to see just what progress Lin Ming had made in the last year. It had to be known that Lin Ming usually trained in the seventh level 5000 mile distance, so a thought would always pop up in these people's minds.

Just where was Lin Ming's limit?

"I wonder if Junior-apprentice Brother Lin can break through the limit of the eighth level..." White Daohong whispered.

Beside him, Lu Xiaoyun also watched the fire spirit mirror in the skies, her vision a bit blurry. "The eighth level. That is a legend among legends, a myth beyond reckoning. I simply cannot imagine it. When I attended the Ancient Phoenix smelting trail for a second time, even I wasn't able to step into the eighth level..."

The 18 levels of the Hells of Flame became much more difficult the further down they went, nearly growing at an exponential rate. The difficulty soared at the seventh level 5000 mile mark, but at the eighth level, the difficulty took a qualitative leap forwards. It had to be known that even characters like Lu Xiaoyun and White Daohong could only reach the eleventh level at the moment, and both of their cultivations were two large boundaries higher than Lin Ming's.

Lin Ming's speed was extremely high. Even at the third level he could maintain a velocity 30 times the speed of sound!

This time, he no longer needed to reduce his speed to temper his Laws. His only goal now was to plunge downward as far as he could and find out just where his limits lay!

Fourth level broken!

Fifth level broken!

Yan Littlemoon had rushed through the Hells of Flame with Lin Ming and was rapidly flung far behind, the distance growing larger and larger between them. Although Yan Littlemoon was a stunning character in her own right, the difference between her and Lin Ming was too great.

Before long, Lin Ming broke into the sixth level.

At this point his speed had already reduced by a great deal. The pressure of the sixth level was not minor. The reason that Lin Ming lowered his speed was not that he couldn't maintain it, but because the consumption of energy would have been too great. Since he was trying to break past all previous records, he had to save his true essence and physical strength.

Half an hour later, Lin Ming shot into the seventh level. Then, he reached 5000 miles deep into the seventh level.

This depth was the depth that Lin Ming usually trained at. When he trained here he could do so for several days at a time. Training for such a long time would exhaust nearly all of Lin Ming's energy. Each time he finished training here he would reach his limits, and his entire body would be burnt black and made into a miserable appearance.

Pushing oneself to the limit was the most crude and brutal, yet effective method to comprehend the Laws.

Seventh level 6000 miles, seventh level 7000 miles, seventh level 8000 miles...

Lin Ming's speed continued to decline. When he reached the seventh level 9000 mile distance, that was his first time reaching such a depth.

At this depth, Lin Ming simply felt as if he were in the midst of a sun. The flames here had long since turned into pure light. This was because the little particles had been heated up to such a mind-boggling degree that they began to release blazing light!

As this fiery light fell onto Lin Ming's body, it fused with the spiritual fire origin energy within him, transforming it. This was an expression of the Concept of Manifestation.

At this depth, Lin Ming felt a tremendous pressure on him. His protective true essence was compressed to within three inches of his body. Moreover, it began to emit crackling noises as if he couldn't withstand such a great pressure.

Lin Ming's thoughts focused and his mind touched upon the Heretical God Sprout.

Heretical God Force – open!

In that moment, the three flame leaves of the Heretical God Sprout began blooming with a brilliant radiance.

Lin Ming became a flaming meteor that plunged towards the eighth level!

With the sound of rolling thunder, the space barrier of the eighth level was shattered by Lin Ming.

At that time, he had truly entered into the eighth level of the Hells of Flame!

Chapter 1042 – Ancient Dragon Clan

The eighth level of the Hells of Flame. Even when placed within the entire history of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, that was nothing less than a miracle!

This depth could be called the birth of a new era!

“Great!”

Huo Violentstone couldn't help but uproariously laugh. He originally only wanted to see Lin Ming's practice; he didn't have any hopes that he would really be able to break into the eighth level.

“The two of you, how about it? Hahahahaha!” Huo Violentstone clapped his hands together. He had a straightforward and bold personality. Now that he was so elated, he couldn't conceal his satisfaction and pride, thus he laughed as he spoke to the two Kirin Clan envoys.

The Kirin Clan woman gulped. She opened her mouth as if she wanted to say something, but eventually no words came out.

Beside her, the man forcefully smiled and said with some stammered difficulty, “He's quite... good!”

The two envoys were well aware of what it meant for a seventh stage Life Destruction rookie disciple to break into the eighth level

of the Hells of Flame. Although their Kirin Clan was overflowing with geniuses, when these geniuses were compared to Lin Ming, they couldn't even stand up to half his height.

Rumors were heard, but seeing was believed. When they heard that Lin Ming had defeated Crimson Strifecloud, they always had a question in their hearts. But now that they saw Lin Ming's results with their own eyes, they were really left speechless.

But after that...

Lin Ming didn't stop after reaching the eighth level!

He released the Heretical God Force and continued to rush ahead. Then, he unexpectedly managed to reach the eighth level 1500 mile distance before arriving at his limit.

Lin Ming's final result was 1500 miles into the eighth level!

This was a terrifying depth. The disciples of the three branch palaces were numbed with shock. To them, the seventh level was already a concept that was difficult to understand, much less the eighth level!

Yan Littlemoon was also quite extraordinary; her final result was 5000 miles into the sixth level. If this result was announced in usual times it would have been enough to alarm the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters. But now, when compared to Lin Ming, this result seemed a bit dismal.

“I really must congratulate Senior Huo, you have truly accepted a wonderful disciple this time.”

“Hahahaha!” Huo Violentstone happily laughed. “This old man’s luck could be said to be finally changing for the better. What about it. Do Lin Ming and this Yan Littlemoon have the qualifications to enter the God Beast Mystic Realm?”

“Of course! However, there is some risk associated with entering the God Beast Mystic Realm. Senior Huo should form some contingency plans for emergencies.” The Kirin Clan woman said, switching the topic.

“Of course. Jade that isn’t cut and polished cannot be made into anything good. For a martial artist to grow, taking risks and suffering bitter dangers is normal. If there is no risk and a genius simply stays in the Ancient Phoenix Clan all year in seclusion, then they will never have any great achievements. A beast must return to the mountains in order to become the king of all beasts. If someone dies just because of a bit of risk then it can only be said that their destiny was lacking. If so, then death would be their inevitable fate to begin with!”

As for the risks involved in the mystic realm, Huo Violentstone was extremely confident in Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon. He firmly believed that characters like them wouldn’t die in some mystic realm.

“Mm. There are still some months before entering the mystic

realm so we have to return to the clan and prepare. And Senior Huo, you should be aware that the Ancient Dragon Clan also has several extreme talents amongst their younger generation. I fear that there will be a collision amongst everyone in this adventure. I wonder just how Apprentice Nephew Lin will fare in the chaos...”

“Hah, I also know of those little babies from the Ancient Dragon Clan. How could they possibly compare with this old man’s own disciple!” Huo Violentstone proudly said, taking a stance as if none of those Ancient Dragon Clan disciples could compete with Lin Ming.

But, those words of ‘how could they possibly compare with this old man’s own disciple’ really left the two Kirin Clan envoys staring back, amazed.

According to what they knew, it was only when Lin Ming defeated Crimson Strifecloud that Huo Violentstone had received him as a disciple. But listening to the meaning behind Huo Violentstone’s words, it was as if all of Lin Ming’s achievements were due to Huo Violentstone’s teachings.

Of course, they only thought this. Neither of them dared to voice their thoughts out loud.

“Lin Ming is truly fierce, but the Ancient Dragon Clan cannot be underestimated. This time, our Kirin Clan and the Roc Clan might have some difficulties...”

The reason that the Ancient Dragon Clan was so strong was not

just because of how widely spread their bloodline was, but also because they had over ten times the clansmen than the Ancient Phoenix Clan did.

The Ancient Dragon Clan was comprised of over a trillion individuals!

With such a massive base number of clansmen and such thick bloodlines, the Ancient Dragon Clan naturally had more heroic young elites appearing amongst their ranks. This was also the reason why the Ancient Dragon Clan was able to produce a World King. In normal years, even all the heroic young elites of the three other God Beast Clans combined couldn't compare with those from the Ancient Dragon Clan! Correspondingly, most of the benefits from the God Beast Mystic Realm were also taken up by the Ancient Dragon Clan.

And this time, with a monstrous freak like Lin Ming added into the mix, the Kirin Clan and Roc Clan would have a much smaller piece of cake to divide.

As the two Kirin Clan envoys thoughts of this, all they could do was force a bitter smile.

The final result of Lin Ming's Ancient Phoenix smelting trial in which he broke into the eighth level of the Hells of Flame soon spread to the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters.

.....

At this time, within a grand immortal palace of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there was a dimensional realm filled with elegant and beautiful scenery.

Here, there were stretches of celestial mountains, vast seas of clouds, glorious jade palaces, and lakeside pavilions scattered all over. Countless spirit birds soared through the sky. There were divine cranes holding wine, white monkeys presenting fruit – such imagery was truly too beautiful to behold!

And in the center of this paradise was a towering parasol tree. Hundreds and thousands of people could hold hands and they still wouldn't be able to wrap around the base of this parasol tree. And, underneath this giant parasol tree was a plain stone table. Sitting down at this stone table, a yellow-clothed old man and a middle-aged person with a long beard were playing chess. This old man was a Highest Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, and as for that middle-aged man with a long beard, he was the current Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Gale Violetsun!

“Mm? What is it?” The yellow-clothed old man looked up and asked. He noticed that Gale Violetsun hesitated for a moment just now.

“It's Lin Ming. He's finally finished his test. He managed to reach the eighth level of the Hells of Flame. Or, it is more accurate to say he reached a depth of 1500 miles into the eighth level!”

“Hoh!” The yellow-clothed old man put away the chess piece in his hand as a wonderful light bloomed in his eyes. “How incredible! Violetsun, didn't you participate in the Ancient Phoenix

smelting trial as a rookie disciple 50,000 years ago? If I remembered correctly, you reached a depth of 4000 miles into the seventh level! As for me, I participated 70,000 years ago and I was still worse than you by 1000 miles!”

“That’s right. The eighth level... I never imagined that was possible! If there is no accident then Lin Ming will become a figure on the level of Xiao Daoji or Huo Burning Heaven in the future. Not just that, but besides Lin Ming there is also Yan Littlemoon. Moreover, in the Central Palace there is also someone who managed to reach the sixth level. But speaking of it, it is really a failure. The Central Palace has the most resources and the best conditions, and yet the disciples who are raised there are inferior to those from Fire Spirit Star!”

“You can’t blame the Central Palace, their performance has been the same as usual. It’s just that the appearance of a monstrous once in 10 million year genius like Lin Ming is beyond anyone’s expectations. This time that old man Huo has really gained a great deal. But the Xiao Family and the Huang Family also had no way of competing with that old man Huo. It’s not like they could push aside all the geniuses of their own family in order to raise an outsider. Speaking of which, the God Beast Mystic Realm is about to open. Do you plan on sending Lin Ming there?” The yellow-clothed old man suddenly asked as he fiddled with the crystal chess piece in his hand.

“Of course! We have to spend a billion violet sun stones to open the mystic realm so we certainly can’t have Lin Ming miss out on such a lucky chance.”

“Heh, a billion violet sun stones eh?” The yellow-clothed old man laughed. “Whenever this time comes around, the Internal Affairs Envoy is in such a frazzled state that he looks like a frosted eggplant. It truly is expensive, but also worth the cost. Our Ancient Phoenix Clan should be able to strive for over 10 spots this time!”

“Mm, that’s about right. We should have 12 spots. The Kirin Clan and Roc Clan should each have 10. As for the Ancient Dragon Clan, they should have 36.”

“36!” The yellow-clothed old man frowned. “That’s more than all other three clans combined!”

The quota of people allowed into the God Beast Mystic Realm smelting trial was based on the quality of the geniuses in every young generation of the clans. The higher quality of geniuses that a clan had, the more spots they would be apportioned. Otherwise, they would receive fewer spots. These were the rules established by the Ancient Dragon Clan.

The Ancient Dragon Clan had an immense population as well as many resources. Thus, they overflowed with talent. Every time they would obtain the majority of the quota of spots.

Every single spot was extremely precious, because each time a person was sent through to the God Beast Mystic Realm, it required a massive amount of violet sun stones to be used up.

This was because there was some strange energy barrier separating the God Beast Mystic Realm and the Divine Realm. As

for what this barrier was or how it formed, no one knew. Perhaps it wasn't even created by human hands, but rather formed naturally from the Heavenly Dao.

A mortal could pass through this barrier, but for a martial artist to pass through they needed to consume a massive amount of energy. The higher their cultivation, the more energy was required!

If one wanted to have a Divine Lord powerhouse pass into the God Beast Mystic Realm, then the amount of violet sun stones necessary to do so would be an unimaginable number. Perhaps even dozens or hundreds of billions of violet sun stones wouldn't be enough!

As for a Holy Lord level character, just forget it!

There were countless treasures and lucky chances to be found in the God Beast Mystic Realm. Many of these lucky chances would even make Holy Lords and World Kings froth at the mouth. But unfortunately, these supreme elders actually weren't able to go exploring because the costs were just too great.

Every time the God Beast Clans sent people over, they could only send several dozen martial artists all at the Divine Sea realm or Life Destruction realm. The amount they could explore was highly limited.

Thus, even though the God Beast Mystic Realm had been in the hands of the four God Beast Clans for over a hundred million years

by now, to date, the treasures that the four God Beast Clans obtained from the God Beast Mystic Realm only amounted to less than a millionth of what was there!

Inside was a massive amount of mysterious and fantastic collections of all sorts. If the entirety of the treasures were excavated then the total value of the wealth simply couldn't be imagined.

It would be enough to cause a massive war to rage throughout the entire Divine Realm!

But, it was also this strange limiting rule of the God Beast Mystic Realm that allowed the four God Beast Clans to calmly and steadily secure the mystic realm for all this time. Otherwise, there might be some World King level influences that joined forces to struggle with the four God Beast Clans.

The feeling of seeing a mountain of treasures in front of them and still not being able to touch it wasn't much better. A mortal could consume a miniscule, nearly imperceptible amount of transmission energy to cross through, but mortals were just far too weak and fragile. They weren't even able to withstand the power of tearing space of the transmission array, and would be reduced to ashes before anything happened. As for a Xiantian realm or Revolving Core realm martial artist, although they could manage to be transmitted to the God Beast Mystic Realm, they weren't able to withstand the dangers there.

They could go, but they could never return.

It was because of all these various reasons that the best candidates to dispatch over were the most talented geniuses amongst the junior disciples.

These junior disciples' cultivations weren't too high so the energy required to send them wasn't too high. But, they were also individuals with extremely high combat strength. They could contend with Divine Sea martial artists at Life Destruction, or contend with Divine Transformation martial artists at the Divine Sea. Their ability to survive was high enough.

Moreover, entering the mystic realm was a great lucky chance to begin with. Sending a top genius disciple there was the best use of a spot.

“Humph, the Ancient Dragon Clan is too imperious. The number of disciples they send out is actually three times our own, and yet they only have to pay 1.5 billion violet sun stones; that isn't even much more than what we pay. Every time we have to freely subsidize their disciples with our violet sun stones!”

The yellow-clothed man said with angry indignation as he thought of this.

Gale Violetsun shook his head. This was just how things were. The Ancient Dragon Clan was the most powerful, thus they were able to protect the total resources of the four great God Beast Clans. They played the role of deterrent to all other influences that would dare move against them. In brief, these violet sun stones

were no different from a protection fee that the Ancient Dragon Clan received.

Chapter 1043 – 12 People

“The God Beast Mystic Realm has God Beasts buried within its lands? And it was also once an ancient battlefield? Many powerhouses died in that mystic realm before?” As Lin Ming heard Huo Violentstone’s description of the God Beast Mystic Realm, he echoed the words out of surprise. He didn’t think that such strange and fantastical lands existed in the Divine Realm.

“Didn’t Senior Huo say that those with higher cultivations have a harder time shifting through the space barrier? So how would there be so many powerhouses that died in the God Beast Mystic Realm?” Yan Littlemoon asked, puzzled.

“That war was something that occurred far too long ago. The history of the Divine Realm is endless; there are many matters where the truth can no longer be found. Perhaps in the past this God Beast Mystic Realm was part of the Divine Realm but was later cut off, forming the current realm. What I must tell you two is that there are countless treasures littered throughout the mystic realm. However, it is a pity that we cannot take them. There are many treasures that are even more precious than phoenix blood essence! Of course, it is also extremely difficult to obtain them! This is an enormous opportunity for you. This will be a test of not just your strength, but also your destiny. If your strength is lacking then there will be no returning alive for you. If your destiny is lacking then even if you return alive, you will come back empty-handed.”

Lin Ming nodded. This was indeed a great opportunity for him. If he was to depend on just the support of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s resources alone then it would be easy to become a Holy Lord level powerhouse, but ascending to a realm beyond that would be far

more difficult. For instance, absorbing one or two drops of phoenix blood essence was the limit of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. If he absorbed several dozen drops then all the reserves of the Ancient Phoenix Clan would be sucked dry by Lin Ming.

“I also have to warn you. After you enter the mystic realm, you must not only be cautious of the mystic realm’s dangers, but you also need to be wary of the others there. All methods of detection and surveillance will be cut off. There may be cases where people kill others to steal away their wealth. Although the four great God Beast Clans appear to be united on the outside, that is only a surface illusion. In the face of treasures, all else becomes for naught. There can be, and there will be people that will try and take advantage of you or murder you. You must not be soft-hearted. Make your kills clean, erase all evidence, and no one will be able to trace anything back to you.”

Huo Violentstone’s last words were spoken with a true essence sound transmission. Lin Ming wasn’t surprised at all. In his years when he wandered the world, he had experienced many frigid life or death battles, and he had also killed countless others. If someone tried to kill him, then he would retaliate without hesitation.

However, Yan Littlemoon was different. As she heard Huo Violentstone’s true essence message, she was startled and her complexion changed.

Most of her life had been spent diligently cultivating. Although she had also fought many times, most of that was dueling and comparing martial arts. She had yet to engage in a true life or

death slaughterfest. Although she was well aware that murder and robbery happened all the time in mystic realm adventures, she still felt her heart tighten as she heard Huo Violentstone directly advise them to cleanly kill off their enemies and erase the evidence.

Huo Violentstone had lived for tens of thousands of years. He only needed to look at Yan Littlemoon's reaction to see what the problem was.

This was the flaw of a flower that only grew in a greenhouse. In terms of the ability to survive in a mystic realm, even if she rode a horse she would never catch up to Lin Ming.

“Lin Ming, look after Yan Littlemoon and don't let anything too bad happen to her. Otherwise, it will truly be a great loss to my clan.” Huo Violentstone suddenly turned and grinned at Lin Ming. “Moreover, she still hasn't married yet and the bloodline strength in her body is very precious. Hehe, perhaps such a good thing might fall into your lap in the future, hahaha!”

“Uh...” Lin Ming never thought that Huo Violentstone would actually say such crude and vulgar words. He was left speechless for a long time.

.....

Several months quickly passed. In this time, Lin Ming closed up in cultivation. As for Yan Littlemoon, she journeyed off to a forest mystic realm in order to experience true combat and slaughter.

Finally, all the disciples that were to enter the God Beast Mystic Realm gathered at a special meeting place on a far off planet. There was a total of 12 people!

Of these 12 people, Lin Ming didn't recognize any of them besides Yan Littlemoon. These were geniuses of the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters, the three great families, as well as the 72 branch palaces.

As for Lu Xiaoyun and White Daohong, they did not have the qualifications to join. First, their talent was lacking. Second, and the most important reason, was that their cultivation was just too high. The energy required to push them through into the mystic realm was far too great.

When Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon arrived, everyone's eyes shifted to Lin Ming. Lin Ming didn't recognize them, but all of them knew of Lin Ming. Lin Ming was the first disciple in 40,000 years to complete the Thousand Slaughter of the Illusionary God Combat Array. He defeated Crimson Strifecloud of the same age and he had even entered the eighth level of the Hells of Flame as a rookie disciple.

No matter which one of these achievements was mentioned, any one of them was enough to shock and alarm the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I've heard so much of your great fame! And there is also Miss Littlemoon, I have also heard of your wonderful reputation. To see you two in the flesh today, I am truly honored!” As soon as Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon landed, a

young man approached them, holding a folding fan in his hands. This young man was extremely handsome and his build was athletic. He was around the same height as Lin Ming. He wore all white clothes, and he had an elegant and noble bearing as if he were untouched by the world.

“This senior-apprentice brother is...”

“Haha, my name is Xiao Ping. I am the son of the Xiao Family’s Xiao Chuji.” The man smiled as he spoke. His smile gave off a refreshing spring feel.

Xiao Chuji!

Lin Ming’s eyebrow arched up. 10,000 years ago, Xiao Chuji had attended his rookie disciple smelting trial and had reached the seventh level of the Hells of Flame. He was the Xiao Family’s most infamous figure at the moment, and also a powerful candidate to become the next Patriarch!

It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that within the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, besides the current Patriarch and the old monsters that were the Highest Elders, Xiao Chuji and Huang Yuefeng had the highest statuses!

“Xiao Ping... he’s actually at the middle Divine Sea realm. His cultivation is really high!”

Lin Ming glanced through the crowd. He discovered that Xiao

Ping had the highest cultivation of everyone present. Besides him, there were two early Divine Sea martial artists and the rest were all at Life Destruction.

The energy required to transmit a middle Divine Sea martial artist into the God Beast Mystic Realm was several times the amount it took to transfer a Life Destruction martial artist. If one didn't have an exorbitant background and also the secret support of their family, then it was impossible for a disciple to have such treatment!

“Middle Divine Sea cultivation. It's assured that he has reached Ninefall, but I have no idea how many Layered Heavens he managed to produce. I am not this man's match.”

Lin Ming secretly estimated in his mind. A martial artist could see if someone had reached Eightfall or Ninefall, but what they couldn't see was how many Layered Heavens they gathered during their Ninefall process. But thinking about it, if someone like White Daohong could produce a Seven Layered Heavens, then this Xiao Ping should have reached at least Nine Layered Heavens!

Nine Layered Heavens could be considered a qualitative leap! The baptism of Laws that Xiao Ping had to withstand was much greater and his cultivation was much higher than Lin Ming's to begin with. Lin Ming was truly not this Xiao Ping's opponent.

“So it is Senior Xiao Chuji's son, Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao. Your aura is indeed extraordinary!” Lin Ming complimented. Yan Littlemoon also curtsied.

Of the 12 people present, only three of them were women. Yan Littlemoon received the most attention of the women present. She was the only one of the three to have a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline and she was also a virgin.

In the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters and the three great families, there were also others with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. But, among the juniors that were under 33 years of age, there was only Yan Littlemoon!

After Xiao Ping, Lin Ming was introduced to the others. When meeting the others, Lin Ming discovered that only two of them came from the 72 branch palaces like him and Yan Littlemoon. The rest all originated from either the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters or the three great families!

For instance, there was a Highest Elder's great-great-grandson, a daughter of a Vice Patriarch, grandson of a Vice Patriarch, and so forth.

This caused Lin Ming to sigh. The Ancient Phoenix Clan was really a pyramid in which those at the top enjoyed the greatest amount of resources!

As for such wonderful opportunities like entering the God Beast Mystic Realm, they were also mostly given to these individuals. Their relations were solid, their backgrounds were deep, their bloodline was powerful, and their martial talents were extremely high. These were geniuses that had been meticulously raised since

birth. With such great talent, why wouldn't it be their turn to enter the God Beast Mystic Realm?

He and Yan Littlemoon also stood here, but that was because their talent was too outstanding and they had forcefully struggled for the spots.

“So he's the Lin Ming I've heard about. Brother Xiao, if he goes together with us into the mystic realm then I fear he will take away a good part of our benefits. Moreover, that fellow is also part of the Huo Family, so he is a natural enemy to your Xiao Family. If this boy manages to grow in the future then he will likely be able to threaten your father for the position of Patriarch! During this adventure in the God Beat Mystic Realm, of the Seven Riverflame Sons, only four of us have come. We will do everything we can to support Eldest Brother. Although this brat Lin Ming has amazing talent, his cultivation is just too low. Even I will be able to deal with him. And, there is also that little beauty Yan Littlemoon. She's quite the looker and she also has the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Perhaps we should...”

Behind Xiao Ping, a young man smirked as he spoke with a true essence sound transmission. His name was Huang Tidemark and he came from the Huang Family. He was known as the Little Tornado of the Riverflame Sons, and he was extremely infamous amongst the young masters for being a playboy. But this nickname not only included his talent, but also his dark and heinous reputation.

Xiao Ping frowned and grimly said, “Tidemark, what nonsense are you spouting this time! Although there are countless disputes

between our three great families, we must appear united on the outside. The Ancient Phoenix Clan is a unit where everyone's glory is connected. Harm to one family means harm to the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan. Destroying a genius that my clan has spent so many resources and time to train is a capital crime! If this sort of matter happens then sooner or later my Ancient Phoenix Clan will decline and finally perish. Moreover, before we enter the mystic realm we will also have a spell placed within our bodies. We must make an oath that we cannot kill each other!"

"Haha, I was just joking around, right? I'm not speaking of killing Lin Ming, but causing him to eat some losses isn't too bad. Or else I fear that most of our potential gains will be swallowed up by him." Huang Tidemark laughed as he saw Xiao Ping's stern and grim face, no longer bringing up the matter.

Lin Ming certainly didn't know what these young masters were speaking about with their true essence sound transmissions. But whether or not he knew didn't matter, because he wasn't someone to easily believe others to begin with.

At this time, he was calculating his own cards.

As he prepared to enter the God Beast Mystic Realm, Huo Violentstone had given him three god slaying beads as well as a single divine protective talisman. All of these were single use treasures that served as a contingency measure for emergencies.

As for the guardian jade slip that Fairy Feng had given him, he couldn't use that anymore. This was because that guardian jade slip contained Fairy Feng's incarnation that had been condensed

with several hundred years of her cultivation. Thus, it was also subject to the limitations of the space barrier. If he wanted to transmit this jade slip into the God Beast Mystic Realm then he would need to use up a massive amount of violet sun stones.

“Everyone has arrived. Fellow junior-apprentice brothers and sisters, it’s time to head off.”

Xiao Ping waved his hand and everyone flew onto a spirit ship. First, they had to fly to a planet that held a transmission array, and then they would have to pass through this hidden transmission array to the God Beast Mystic Realm.

The 12 heroic young elites boarded the spirit ship. The spirit ship ascended to the skies. After combusting a massive amount of violet sun stones, the ship broke through the void, moving towards the planet with the transmission array...

Chapter 1044 – Can I Go With You?

Celestial Dragon World was a small world that existed outside of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds. It was only one-fiftieth of the size of a great world, but its size was already more than amazing.

The ruler of Celestial Dragon World was the current Patriarch of the Ancient Dragon Clan. Celestial Dragon World had an extremely deep inheritance. Throughout the history of the Ancient Dragon Clan, there had even been a true Great World King that had appeared. And, even when the Ancient Dragon Clan was at their worst state they still had a half-step World King character within their ranks.

But, it needed to be said that although a Divine Realm World King was said to be a king of a world, it was actually impossible to rule an entire major world. No matter how large a World King Family was, they would occupy at most several hundred planets, or a billion mile area of a major world mainland. It was near impossible to occupy much more land.

And this area was nothing but a drop of water to a major world of the Divine Realm. In the other lands of a great world, there were countless sects and families, many of them Holy Lands.

These sects were at most on good terms with the World King Family. They wouldn't blindly obey the orders of the World King.

At this time, within a secret hidden space slit within Celestial

Dragon World. Within this space slit was an ordinary tiny planet. This planet had a diameter of only 2000 miles.

Besides the high level figures of the four God Beast Clans, no one knew that this minor planet was the location of the transmission array leading to the God Beast Mystic Realm.

“There is still four hours until the mystic realm opens. Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One, I heard that there was a genius disciple that appeared in the Ancient Phoenix Clan this year, and he managed to defeat Crimson Strifecloud of the same age and complete the Thousand Slaughter. At his rookie smelting trial he even broke through into the eighth level of the Hells of Flame. I wonder if these rumors are a bit exaggerated?”

On the minor planet, there were 30 some people standing loosely about. These people all had patterned blue clothing on, a similar design that showed they were from the same sect. The youth who spoke was tall and large, and his muscles were extremely compact. He had a pair of fierce tiger-like eyes and his aura was staggering.

Within the Ancient Dragon Clan there was a ranking list called the Divine Fate Decree. All young geniuses that were below 33 years of age and in the Divine Sea or Life Destruction realm had the possibility or ranking on the list. The standard ranking system for this list was to arrange those that slayed the highest numbers of opponents in the Illusionary God Combat Array in descending order. There were a total of 108 individuals on this ranking list.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan took the numeral nine and worshipped it as the most extreme number. But, the Ancient Dragon Clan

worshipped the number eight. The Ancient Dragon Clan Headquarters had eight Celestial Dragons that acted as the High Council of Elders for the Ancient Dragon Clan.

The top disciple of the Divine Fate Decree was given the title of Dragon One. The second was Dragon Two, the tenth was Dragon 10, and this continued all the way in a similar pattern to Dragon 108.

This sort of title was a symbol of glory. Disciples would refer to each other not by their names but by their titles. The large man who just spoke was ranked twelfth on the Divine Fate Decree so he was called Dragon 12. And, the one he spoke to was the top number one junior disciple of the Ancient Dragon Clan – Dragon One.

This person was the extreme talent of the Ancient Dragon Clan that the Kirin Clan envoys had spoken of.

“It should be true. This person will likely become a top class character like Xiao Daoji in the future. He won’t be much inferior to our Ancient Dragon Clan’s Patriarch.” A blue-clothed man with a medium build said. This young man looked to be around 27-28 years old, but he had an extremely mature and noble appearance, one that was filled with high dignity. This young man was Dragon One.

“Become a top class character like Xiao Daoji? Even a World King would have to pay attention to such a character! However, Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One, when you were still at your rookie smelting trial, you managed to kill 850 people in the Illusionary God Combat Array, and you also reached the seventh level of the

Dragon Labyrinth. Our Divine Dragon smelting trial is far more difficult and intense than the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One's results aren't that much worse!"

In the minds of the Ancient Dragon Clan's young disciples, Dragon One was an invincible existence with unstoppable prestige. As this man spoke, everyone looked up into the skies to see faint ripples appearing in space. A spirit ship broke through the barrier of space and appeared above the minor planet. In the next moment, several young men and women flew down from the ship. These were the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

"Ancient Phoenix Clan!" Dragon One looked up and locked his eyes onto a blue-clothed youth fluttering in the air. "With that cultivation, that person should be Lin Ming!"

.....

"Below us are the disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan's Dragon Soul Palace. The one with the unfathomably deep foundation is Dragon One. You all must be careful of him!"

Xiao Ping sent a true essence sound transmission to everyone as he flew down from the spirit ship and saw the disciples of Dragon Soul Palace.

"Dragon One?"

Lin Ming looked at the youth below him and was surprised to discover that he seemed like a placid lake. He was calm and without any ripples on the surface, but no matter how one tried it was impossible to see below the surface of that water. Lin Ming couldn't even make out his cultivation!

“I can't see his cultivation. Is this some arcane ability to conceal one's cultivation?”

Normally, heroic young elites underneath 33 years of age would be at most at the middle Divine Sea stage. There were even some extreme talents that deliberately suppressed their cultivation to the early Divine Sea realm. With Lin Ming's cultivation it was impossible that he couldn't see theirs.

“This person is a bit troublesome...” Lin Ming whispered. After having experienced the threat known as Yang Yun, Lin Ming always felt suspicious and guarded towards those people that hid their cultivation.

“Haha, Brother Dragon One, it's been a long time since we last saw each other. Your Ancient Dragon Clan is truly filled with talented individuals; you've even managed to send out such a mighty lineup. With Brother Dragon One to Dragon 36, all of you have come!”

After the Ancient Dragon Clan released the Divine Fate Decree, there was one great advantage. That was that all distributing of resources would be fair. No matter what resources were available, everything would be spread down beginning with Dragon One. If one wanted to obtain more resources then that would all depend

on their own ability.

For instance, in this God Beast Mystic Realm smelting trial, the first 36 ranked disciples of the Divine Fate Decree had been selected.

“Brother Xiao Ping is too hilarious. In our generation of junior disciples, your Ancient Phoenix Clan is the true winner. Not only does the Ancient Phoenix Clan have such a talented individual like you, but they even have Junior-apprentice Sister Yan Littlemoon with her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, and also Junior-apprentice Brother Lin Ming, who managed to defeat Senior Crimson Strifecloud at the same age...”

Dragon One smiled as he spoke. He glanced over at Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon, giving them a tiny nod.

Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon also nodded in return.

Then, at this moment, a ripple appeared in the skies once again. The Kirin Clan and Roc Clan’s disciples had arrived.

The Roc Clan had even fewer clansmen than the Ancient Phoenix Clan. They only had two branches: the Golden-winged Roc Branch and the Blue-winged Roc Branch. Their clan was the weakest among the four God Beast Clans.

Those two great clans only brought 10 disciples each, for a total of 20. In addition with the Ancient Dragon Clan and the Ancient

Phoenix Clan, the number of disciples entering the God Beast Mystic Realm this time was a total of 68.

These 68 disciples were all the elites of the elites. They were true chosen prides of heaven selected from a population of 1.5 trillion. Not a single one of these individuals could be underestimated!

Lin Ming secretly sized up the masters of the Roc Clan and Kirin Clan, recording their unique characteristics in his mind.

“Most of the disciples that are participating in the journey into this mystic realm are at the Life Destruction realm. There is only a small number of early Divine Sea martial artists, and the middle Divine Sea martial artists can be counted on one hand. I can defeat those at Life Destruction, but it’s difficult to say if I can defeat those at the early Divine Sea. As for going against the middle Divine Sea martial artists, I will only be able to preserve my own life. And as for that Dragon One, I don’t know if I would even be able to escape him...”

Lin Ming speculated. After all, these were all extreme characters of their generation. Even though Lin Ming’s combat strength was extremely abnormal, to cross a large boundary and four small boundaries to fight was still past his limits.

“Everyone is here; let’s go!”

Dragon One waved his hand and 1.5 billion violet sun stones flew out from his spatial ring, piling up into a massive crystal mountain! Surging origin energy rushed out like a broken dam,

causing everyone to feel a great impact.

And after Dragon One threw out the violet sun stones, Xiao Ping and the head disciples of the Roc Clan and Kirin Clan also threw in their violet sun stones. For a time, purple light broke through the heavens, shooting towards the stars!

At this time, with a great rumbling sound, an ancient stone platform rose from the ground. The four mountains of violet sun stones began burning at the same time!

The vast amount of energy was constantly absorbed by the stone platform, twisting the entire surrounding space.

“The transmission is about to begin. Everyone, focus and defend your mind. Because the distance is so great, the load on our soul force will not be minor.” Xiao Ping said with a true essence sound transmission. In the next moment a dizzying feeling came over Lin Ming. This feeling became increasingly intense, as if his spiritual sea would rupture at any moment!

Lin Ming twisted his eyebrows together. His mind touched upon the gold battle spirit in his spiritual sea. The spear-shaped battle spirit emitted a soft cry and then the dizzying feeling vanished.

Without knowing how much time had passed, Lin Ming suddenly felt his body shake. In the next instant he had arrived above a wild and desolate land.

This vast and boundless land was quiet and uninhabited. There weren't even plants. The sky was entirely covered with inky clouds. The clouds were very low, and arcs of lighting faintly glittered amidst the layers of clouds. As they flashed across the sky they looked like passing white dragons.

“This place is...”

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. He could taste the ancient and inexhaustible flavor that tinged the air. This was because this space had existed for far too long. It was at least several hundred million years, or even a billion years old!

This was the God Beast Mystic Realm. In ancient times, this land might have shined with a splendor and magnificence so great that no mortal could imagine it, with numerous powerful existences living here. But now, everything was gone.

Time was the most terrifying weapon of all. Even an Empyrean or God Beast was unable to withstand the baptism of infinite time!

At this time, all 68 transmitted people arrived together. Dragon One squatted down and sifted through some dirt. He picked up the dirt and placed it between his lips, tasting it. Then, he smiled and said, “We're in luck. This area hasn't been explored yet! This means more lucky chances for us, but it also means far greater unknown dangers. You all must be extra careful. You may all explore by yourself or you may even form groups. Now, let's go. We only have 96 hours until we are transmitted out of here!”

The domain of the God Beast Mystic Realm was broad and boundless. But, the ancient transmission array was actually very random in where it transmitted people. It was normal for groups to be transmitted to an area that had never been explored before.

“Junior-apprentice Sister Littlemoon, I am Huang Tidemark. I’m also known as the Riverflame Little Tornado. Exploring this sort of mystic realm is extremely dangerous. I have a great deal of experience. Perhaps Junior-apprentice Sister Littlemoon would like to join me? The benefits that we obtain can be divided equally.” Just as everyone was preparing to leave, a smiling youth suddenly spoke out from near Yan Littlemoon.

Yan Littlemoon froze. In truth, although she had been training and gaining as much experience as she could in true life or death battles, she was still inexperienced in adventuring through this type of mystic realm. She simply didn’t have any experience at all. She was a bit nervous and really did hope to join someone. But, she had never met Huang Tidemark before and all she knew about him were some unsavory rumors. If she randomly joined a stranger then the dangers could be imagined.

Out of the 11 other individuals from the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the only one she knew was Lin Ming.

Yan Littlemoon hesitated for a moment before sending Lin Ming a true essence sound transmission. “Um... Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, can I go with you?”

Chapter 1045 – Together

Lin Ming was just about to leave, when he was suddenly startled. He turned around to see Yan Littlemoon awkwardly looking at him. Out of everyone that had come here, Yan Littlemoon's talent particularly manifested itself in her comprehension of Laws and her training speed, but she didn't actually excel in combat or life and death battles. In addition, even her cultivation was somewhat lower. In terms of combat strength she was amongst the lowest. If she went by herself then she would indeed experience a great deal of danger.

Yan Littlemoon was well aware of her circumstances. Although the God Beast Mystic Realm smelting trial wasn't fatal, there would still always be people that died as they explored this land. Yan Littlemoon didn't want to become one of the corpses that nourished the land.

“Didn't Huang Tidemark invite you?” Lin Ming faintly frowned, responding to her with a true essence sound transmission.

Although he didn't particularly mind helping Yan Littlemoon, if he did this sort of thing it would attract the hatred and hostility of others onto of himself. This would be an action that was equal to slapping Huang Tidemark in the face. Although he didn't fear Huang Tidemark, he didn't want to stir up trouble where there wasn't any to begin with.

“Yes... he did, but... I've heard that he has an extremely poor reputation...” Yan Littlemoon was truly embarrassed at this time. She had always been the little princess of Charming Phoenix

Palace, and if she left Charming Phoenix Palace and went to other palaces, countless men would wholeheartedly chase after her. With her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline in addition to her good looks, her number of suitors could be imagined!

Humans weren't born with arrogance and a natural air of superiority. Rather, it developed as they grew up. Since Yan Littlemoon was raised in such an environment, it was impossible that she couldn't be so proud. It was the first time in her life that she had to ignore all mortification and ask for help in such a manner from someone.

She had taken the initiative to ask to join a man, but instead he had questioned her back. She was afraid that Lin Ming would develop some sort of misunderstanding.

Lin Ming glanced over at Huang Tidemark without moving his eyes and he saw that Huang Tidemark was still smiling as he waited where he was.

Yan Littlemoon and Lin Ming had spoken to each other with a true essence sound transmission that only took a single breath of time, and they had also only glanced at each other for a brief moment, so Huang Tidemark simply didn't know what was happening. Huang Tidemark was stupidly waiting for Yan Littlemoon to respond to him. There were even a few people behind him that looked like his friends who were joking around and laughing, waiting to see Huang Tidemark successfully pursue the woman he chose.

If Lin Ming left with Yan Littlemoon then that would be the same

as kicking Huang Tidemark into the ground.

In addition, there was another problem. Lin Ming had originally come here to hunt for treasures. If he brought Yan Littlemoon along then there would be a problem in the distribution of treasure.

Yan Littlemoon saw Lin Ming hesitate, clearly not wanting to bring her along. She felt extremely depressed. Since when had she become such an unpopular outsider? Was she so deplorable that she affected his mood? This was the first time she had ever experienced such a matter.

Feeling anxious, Yan Littlemoon gritted her teeth and said, "Before I entered the God Beast Mystic Realm, Senior Huo Violentstone told me that if I had any problems I should come look for you. He told me that he already asked you to take care of me in private..."

Yan Littlemoon subconsciously gripped her fists as she spoke. It was truly damaging to her self-respect to speak out such words. She felt as if she had been greatly wronged.

"Uh..." Lin Ming fumbled out. He did indeed hear Huo Violentstone say such words, but since it had only been tacked onto the end of some other things, Lin Ming simply thought he was joking and didn't place it in his heart. But now, it seemed as if that old fellow had been serious.

"Well... fine then."

Lin Ming reluctantly agreed. In truth, he wasn't a cold and callous individual. Although he didn't consider himself friends with Yan Littlemoon, for better or worse they had still trained at the same Fire Spirit Star for two years. He couldn't watch helplessly as something happened to her. Whether she was by herself or with Huang Tidemark, it would be extremely easy for her to stumble into some fatal or disastrous danger. If that happened he wouldn't be able to explain things to Huo Violentstone.

But after thinking about it again, Lin Ming added an addendum. "You can go with me, but we're going to hash things out first. All treasures we find will depend on our own respective abilities first and foremost. What I find I will not share with you, and the things you obtain I will not want."

"...You!!" Yan Littlemoon's eyes widened. She huffed up, her body heaving with righteous indignation. As she saw how seriously Lin Ming had spoken with a deadpan expression, she wanted to punch him in the face.

He was too great of a bully!

Lin Ming's words clearly judged her as a burden, and also implied that she wouldn't be able to find anything of value at all. And, the most annoying thing was that he also meant to guard against her as if she were some sort of thief. Did he really think she was a shameless and good-for-nothing hanger-on?

Yan Littlemoon had always been a proud and haughty individual. She would never think of sharing in the treasures of others without putting in due effort on her own part!

“Who do you think I am! Do you really think I desire the things you find so much!? I never wanted them to begin with and yet you think so poorly of me! Also, you are the rudest person I’ve ever met in my entire life!”

“Uh...” Lin Ming traced his nose, a bit embarrassed. The words he said were indeed a bit too crass. But, it was best to put the ugly stuff in front first and settle these conditions before anything happened. If they really did stumble across some massive hidden treasure then Lin Ming actually wouldn’t mind dividing a part to Yan Littlemoon.

“My background cannot compare to that of a proud daughter of heaven like you who comes from such a magnificent family. I am of humble and common birth so I certainly need to value any resources I find.

“Then again, in this God Beast Mystic Realm, there are treasures that could even tempt the heart of a Holy Lord. It’s not as if I want to be greedy or something like that. Time is precious here so I wanted to hash these things out beforehand. Also, since you are going with me, I will tell you something before we head off. If we manage to encounter some danger that I cannot deal with then there might be the chance that I abandon you to yourself. If that really happens then I wish you nothing but the best of luck to survive.”

As Lin Ming finished speaking, he turned around and flew in the direction where the least people were.

“Ahh! What a hateful scumbag!”

As Yan Littlemoon heard Lin Ming’s last words she stomped her feet in anger. But, in the end she still had to follow Lin Ming. Although Lin Ming was a hateful little bastard, she could still trust him.

Just as Yan Littlemoon was about to leave, the continually waiting Huang Tidemark was left flummoxed. “Yan Littlemoon, what is the meaning of this. I was speaking to you, didn’t you hear me!?”

Huang Tidemark didn’t know that Yan Littlemoon was speaking to Lin Ming just now. All he saw was her randomly stomping her feet in a fit of rage as if she had gone psychotic. Then, she began to fly away without a single word. He was immediately enraged. Even his good friends were watching on, and yet Yan Littlemoon treated him as nothing but empty air. How could he hold his head up high after this? He had always managed to successfully capture women in his hands, and this was also one of his greatest talents he was proud of. And yet, today he had been given the cold shoulder by a little girl.

Yan Littlemoon was in the air when she heard Huang Tidemark’s words, words that caused her to turn even angrier. If it weren’t for this sexual deviant approaching her and making her feel even more in danger, then she wouldn’t have had to desperately ask Lin Ming for help, causing her to suffer such humiliation and be so miffed

about matters.

“What if I heard you and what if I didn’t hear you? Why do I have to reply to the likes of you? Do you really think you are so awesome or something? You are just a creepy pig out chasing after skirts everywhere, but does your wife know of this?”

After Yan Littlemoon spat out these words she impatiently flew into the sky, eager to get as far away as she could from someone like Huang Tidemark. The direction she flew in was the same direction Lin Ming had gone, leaving a completely dumbfounded Huang Tidemark behind. After being cursed by Yan Littlemoon directly to his face, he didn’t know how to react. He didn’t know what he had done to provoke her so much for her to act so crazy all of a sudden.

“You...”

Huang Tidemark wanted to say something else, but Yan Littlemoon had already soared into the skies, immediately vanishing from sight, leaving him unable to finish his words.

“Brother Tidemark, the direction that Junior-apprentice Sister Yan chose is... probably the same as Junior-apprentice Brother Lin!” A red-clothed man smiled from behind Huang Tidemark. He was a descendant of the Huo Family, Huo Clearheart.

At this time, such sarcastic remarks were clearly meant to ridicule Huang Tidemark. Huang Tidemark was originally angry, and such words were the same as salt being pushed into his

wounds.

“Huo Clearheart, were you kicked in the head by an ass? Do you really think that Lin Ming is part of your Huo Family? Do you really think that his gains are also your gains? Don’t be stupid. If he didn’t divide the resources that were rightfully yours, you might have become the number one disciple of your Huo Family!” Huang Tidemark said, trying to sow discord.

Huo Clearheart chuckled, saying, “Even if Lin Ming weren’t here it still wouldn’t be my turn to be the number one disciple. The Huo Family has produced many geniuses these past thousands of years, so why would it be my turn? I’m also aware of my own abilities. On the other hand, if the Huo Family can become stronger because of someone like him, then that means my family will have even more resources to share, and the benefits I gain will be correspondingly greater. During this God Beast Mystic Realm smelting trial, the High Ancestor has also specifically ordered me to help Junior-apprentice Brother Lin as much as I can. I’m not like Brother Huang here. Do you really think that just because you call yourself Riverflame Little Tornado or some crap like that, you are so attractive to everyone you meet? Do you think those girls you’ve caught before are the same as Yan Littlemoon? She has the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline! In my Ancient Phoenix Clan, she is the only junior disciple under 33 years of age that has the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline! Even Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao Ping doesn’t! And you think she would follow you for some reason? Based on what? Your bloodline density? Hahaha, stop cracking me up here! Hahahaha!”

As Huo Clearheart guffawed, he chose a direction near Lin Ming’s and flew away.

After Huo Clearheart left, Huang Tidemark's expression became all the more ugly. The relations between the various factions of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were complex to begin with. Since everyone was struggling with each other, it was natural for others to taunt someone given the opportunity.

Huo Clearheart simply didn't care about offending Huang Tidemark. He was someone that had inherited Huo Violentstone's wild temperament, and in terms of background, strength, and talent, he wasn't inferior to Huang Tidemark in any way.

"Lin Ming, Huo Clearheart, just you wait!" Huang Tidemark grit his teeth. He turned and shouted to the two Huang Family disciples behind him. "We're leaving!"

They chose a direction and flew away. This direction was also close to Lin Ming's.

And at this time, Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon had already flown over a dozen miles out. In this unknown area of the mystic realm, they had to always remain vigilant and no one dared to fly too fast. Otherwise, if they flew into a space crack at 10 times the speed of sound, that really would be a death of injustice.

Along the way, Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon didn't speak a single word to each other. Lin Ming was spreading his senses in all directions, combing through every inch of land. As for Yan Littlemoon, she was still fuming with anger so she didn't bother trying to speak to Lin Ming.

Before entering the God Beast Mystic Realm, Lin Ming had read up on all the available materials about this land. One of the texts he read was the 'God Beast Mystic Realm Compendium'. This compendium was the total gathered information and materials left behind by the all the past seniors of the four God Beast Families who had explored the God Beast Mystic Realm in the last 100 million years.

The God Beast Mystic Realm was a separate space and time; it was a completely different space and time from the 3000 worlds of the Divine Realm. The rules of the world were also different here.

The life that lived here followed another set of rules. They had ghostly and secret movements, and were all cruel and bloodthirsty killers. Although the God Beast Mystic Realm looked dead and abandoned, the truth was that countless dangers lay in ambush here.

Chapter 1046 – Black Coral

After Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon had flown for a while, Lin Ming suddenly felt a stirring feeling in his mind. He looked down to see that the solid land beneath them had disappeared, turning into a vast and endless black swamp. The jet black mud roiled with giant bubbles. Each time a bubble exploded it would release a dark gray fog.

“The scene on the ground has changed.”

Lin Ming had read through the entire God Beast Mystic Realm Compendium, so he knew that the surroundings in the God Beast Mystic Realm could rapidly and unexpectedly shift at any given moment. After these changes, any sort of previous safety could become extreme danger. The Laws here were truly unpredictable.

This sort of change occurred not just beneath Lin Ming, but also beneath the other disciples of the four God Beast Clans.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One, the terrain has changed. This is the swamp terrain with a third grade hazard level. When the land changes into a black swamp, a massive amount of poison swamp gas will swell out. This poison gas is what many lifeforms in this realm like to suck up. We might encounter a massive number of demons here.”

In the God Beast Mystic Realm, the Laws of the world were different. The life here lived by sucking up the energy of the world. They were entities that existed as forms of energy with no physical

body. These strange creatures were collectively referred to as mystic realm demons.

These demons were like a stream of air. They were fast, cunning, and loved to devour any form of energy. To a mystic realm demon, martial artists were the best source of energy. If they discovered a martial artist, they would swarm them and suck up all of their body's energy and life essence.

However, while a mystic realm demon posed a danger to a martial artist, they could also be considered a great wealth. A mystic realm demon swallowed up a massive amount of energy, purifying this energy to form their body. If one could catch these demons and toss them into a pill furnace, they could turn these demons into the purest form of heaven and earth origin energy and absorb it to cultivate.

This heaven and earth origin energy was greatly different from the heaven and earth origin energy in the Divine Realm!

The heaven and earth origin energy within the God Beast Mystic Realm leaned towards the Laws present at the forming of the universe. This type of heaven and earth origin energy even had some similarities to grandmist energy. If one could absorb this heaven and earth origin energy, it was possible to be enlightened on extremely strange and exotic Laws, allowing a martial artist's comprehension of the Laws to take a step further.

“I hope that we can come across some mystic realm demons. If we can encounter some 10,000 year mystic realm demons, then using them will have an even better effect on cultivating our

martial arts.”

Dragon One smirked. “Remember, do not try to come into conflict with the disciples of the three other God Beast Clans if you can. That will violate the taboo. And if we stumble into some extraordinarily rare treasure that will tempt even a Holy Lord, it will be fine as long as they don’t try to snatch it from us. However, if they don’t know what’s good for them and try to divide our soup, then we shall be ruthless and retaliate. Moreover, once we kill them we must do so cleanly and erase all evidence, leaving behind no witnesses!

“Also, there is that Lin Ming! Everyone must avoid provoking him if at all possible. For a person to reach this step, the destiny gathered upon their body is terrifying. If anyone provokes him they might find themselves suffering disaster instead! However, that is only under normal circumstances. In a crucial moment, kill him without hesitation. We too have the life of an Emperor! If we struggle with him, we won’t necessarily be much worse off. The brat hasn’t grown up yet. With his seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation, he is still comprehensively weaker than us.”

“Yes, Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One!”

All of the other disciples nodded, following Dragon One’s lead.

“Let’s go!”

Dragon One’s form flashed and he vanished, leading several other Ancient Dragon Clan disciples with him.

.....

“Mm? What is that?”

Lin Ming’s vision narrowed. He discovered that there was a withered old tree planted in the black swamp. This tree’s trunk was macabre and eerily shaped. And there was also some black thing located in the mud beneath the tree. It looked like a plant and a stone at the same time.

“Black coral! And such a large piece!”

Yan Littlemoon cried out in alarm after being silent for all this time. The black coral that grew in the swamp was condensed from the purest energy of the God Beast Mystic Realm. The energy it contained was much more refined than the energy of the Divine Realm! It was a surpassingly wonderful material to refine pills with!

One small piece of black coral was not inferior in value to a drop of phoenix plume blood!

And to the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix branch palaces, a drop of phoenix plume blood was highly precious. Although someone like Yan Littlemoon, with such high talent, might not care too much about giving away several drops of phoenix blood, having to give out over a hundred drops of phoenix plume blood would cause her to suffer. Moreover, if this giant black coral was completely exchanged for phoenix plume blood, it might be worth

several hundred drops!

Yan Littlemoon really wanted to go and pick up the black coral. But, although she lacked experience in exploring mystic realms, she wasn't an idiot who would be blinded by treasures. She knew that around treasures, there was likely to be hidden dangers, and even some cunning beings skulking. These sorts of tricky creatures especially liked to defend the area around heavenly materials and use them as bait in order to slaughter humans or other creatures that came to pick them.

Yan Littlemoon immediately released her senses, investigating everything around her. She didn't find anything out of the ordinary.

“It seems like... there's no ambush?”

She asked Lin Ming with a bit of hesitation. The God Beast Mystic Realm was extremely bizarre. Yan Littlemoon was fully aware of her own lack of experience.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. He whispered. “There is no ambush... but...”

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light. “But, that black coral itself is a problem. It has already developed a spirituality of its own. When we try to pick it, it will also try to absorb us as nutrients!”

As Lin Ming spoke to here, he traced the Extreme Violet Ring. With a humming cry, the Phoenix Blood Spear leapt to his hand!

Around the Phoenix Blood Spear, 999 small blood spears shot out. They surged up and down, rolling up into a storm of sharp blades that cut apart all.

At this time, underneath Yan Littlemoon's surprised gaze, she saw that the old tree that the black coral was attached to suddenly twisted up. Its trunk and branches turned into black ropes that grasped towards them!

“Those are... black coral roots? No... those are tentacles!”

Yan Littlemoon sucked in a breath of cold air. A living existence like a black coral had no roots to begin with. Rather, the black coral had countless tentacles. It used these tentacles to prey on other creatures.

And, this black coral had exposed its tentacles to the outside, transforming their appearance into that of a withered old tree. If a martial artist approached to pick up the black coral, they would immediately be entangled within these tentacles. All of the martial artist's energy and vitality would be sucked out and absorbed.

As Yan Littlemoon thought of this, her palms became wet with sweat as a deep fear swelled up in her heart. If she had rashly gone down to pick up that black coral then she would have already been tied down by that black coral's tentacles!

Although Yan Littlemoon also had methods and the confidence to free herself, she would inevitably have to pay a great price to do so. And, in this God Beast Mystic Realm, there were countless dangers lurking around every corner. What if she managed to free herself from those tentacles and then stumbled into some other danger? For instance, a swarm of mystic realm demons?

The consequences could be imagined!

And this was just the beginning. There was bound to be more dangers the longer she was here! She wouldn't be this lucky every time.

As Yan Littlemoon thought of this, her face turned red with shame. If it weren't for Lin Ming, she really might perish here.

As Yan Littlemoon was caught in her thoughts, Lin Ming was already engaging those tentacles in a fierce and violent battle!

Ka ka ka!

The small blood spears crashed into the tentacles, creating crazy explosions. Lin Ming displayed his movement technique and poured all of his energy into the Phoenix Blood Spear. The spear-shaped battle spirit also howled forth, combining with the Phoenix Blood Spear. In that moment, the Phoenix Blood Spear in Lin Ming's hands turned a dark gold!

Ca!

With a piercing, ear-scratching scream, three tentacles were directly sliced apart by Lin Ming! Blood rained down!

The Phoenix Blood Spear was originally a top grade saint artifact. With a gold battle spirit supporting it, the degree of its sharpness could be imagined!

At the moment Lin Ming cut off the three tentacles, he stashed them into the Extreme Violent Ring. And at this time, the exposed black coral realized its situation was bad and began to submerge into the black mud, wishing to escape!

The black coral was originally a life form that lived in the swamp mud. Once it entered into the mud it would be the same as a fish in the sea or a bird in the sky. No matter how fast one was, it would be impossible to catch it.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, it’s running away!”

Yan Littlemoon watched this occur but was helpless to do anything. After all, the main body of the black coral was buried in the mud so it was able to run away whenever it wished to and there was no method she had to catch it. Also, she was afraid that thrusting herself into the situation would cause more chaos and confusion on Lin Ming’s part.

Although three tentacles had been cut off, the main body still escaped! That was truly a pity!

But as Yan Littlemoon lost hope, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a sudden frosty light. The gold battle spirit immersed in his spiritual sea shot out once more. Lin Ming's thoughts spread out, forming a world of will projection!

In that instant, the space for a mile around Lin Ming was completely covered in his world of will and was also restrained by the Laws of his will!

Ka ka ka!

Lin Ming's thoughts poured into the black swamp, suddenly turning the sludgy mud into a substance as hard as divine iron!

In just the blink of an eye, the swamp for a mile around Lin Ming had been locked down by his thoughts. As for that black coral, it was unable to drill any further so there naturally wasn't any way it could escape anymore.

The black coral was wild with panic. It emitted a series of whistling cries and then its body broke through the hard swamp mud and even jumped up from the ground!

As Yan Littlemoon saw a massive black object that looked like a gnarly old tree suddenly jump up from the ground, she was startled. The main body of the black coral was actually so big!

The black coral knew that it could no longer escape through the

ground, thus it thought of breaking through Lin Ming's world of will projection blockade. However, how could Lin Ming allow it to do as it wished? His mind touched upon the Heretical God Sprout and a column of fire shot out from his hands, turning into a chain that wrapped around the black coral's main body and sealed away its tentacles.

“Seal!”

Lin Ming linked his hands together, and in just a split second formed over a thousand seal runes. These seal runes fell onto the black coral's main body, imprisoning it under layers upon layers of seals!

“Uwohh!”

The black coral screamed out. However, as it was continuously covered with hundreds upon hundreds of seal runes, its struggles began to die down. Finally, it was completely captured by Lin Ming!

Yan Littlemoon watched the entire process of Lin Ming capturing the black coral from the side, completely stunned. She couldn't even react properly!

In truth, the black coral didn't have much combat strength. But, it had a cunning and sly nature, and it was also very good at camouflaging itself and even better at escaping underground. If someone wanted to catch it? That would truly be hard!

And if it were someone that wasn't experienced enough like Yan Littlemoon, then she might even be tricked in return.

But with the situation in Lin Ming's hand, he only took several breaths of time to capture the black coral. This was the difference in ability. It wasn't just the gap in their combat efficiency, but also their experience and ability to react! If it were Yan Littlemoon in Lin Ming's place, then even if she had a gold battle spirit she still wouldn't have been able to make a split second judgement to instantly lock down the swamp mud with a world of will projection.

Chapter 1047 – Bizarre Enemy

Really too fierce...

Yan Littlemoon sighed inwardly. The flame chains that Lin Ming had used at the end to lock up the black coral were based on the fourth level Concept of the Fire Laws – the Concept of Manifestation.

Although Yan Littlemoon had also touched upon the threshold of the fourth Fire Concept, she was still far from being able to apply it in actual combat like Lin Ming.

Yan Littlemoon thought of the difference between her and Lin Ming. Their difference in comprehension of Laws was the smallest, and the difference of their ability in combat was much greater. And, the so-called ‘combat’ was when two opponents were evenly and equally facing each other on an arena stage.

In the complex real world with its countless variable conditions and the changing environment, where attacks and counterattacks occurred in desperate succession, she was flung impossibly far from Lin Ming.

One only had to see how Lin Ming hunted the black coral to understand this.

As Yan Littlemoon realized this, she gently sighed. This difference in combat experience could not be made up for in a day or two.

When Lin Ming had implied she was a burden, he had been right all along.

And just when she was a bit depressed and frustrated, she suddenly heard Lin Ming make a small alerting sound. She raised her head to see that in the distance, there was a figure stumbling towards them.

This person had disheveled hair and their entire body was covered with blood. One could make out her once beautiful appearance, but unfortunately, this woman had three gruesome wounds on her body as if some vicious creature has clawed at her face and neck. These three grisly wounds completely destroyed the woman's beauty.

“Heavens! That is the senior-apprentice sister from Phoenix Feather Palace!”

Yan Littlemoon jumped in shock. She recognized this woman. This woman was the same as her and Lin Ming: she came from one of the 72 branch palaces. She was a senior-apprentice sister that originated from Phoenix Feather Palace.

This senior-apprentice sister's background was that of a small distinguished family. It was not easy for her to struggle for a spot and arrive at this step. Moreover, she was also a woman, and only three of the twelve people that entered the God Beast Mystic Realm from the Ancient Phoenix Clan were women. Because of this, Yan Littlemoon subconsciously felt a bit of sisterly closeness towards

this senior-apprentice sister. Now that she saw this senior-apprentice sister in such a dire state, she couldn't help but empathize with her a bit.

“Senior-apprentice Sister, what injured you?!” Yan Littlemoon hurriedly asked.

The senior-apprentice sister's eyes were originally glazed over, but as she heard Yan Littlemoon's shout, she looked up to see her and Lin Ming. Her eyes heated up as if she were about to cry at any moment. “Junior-apprentice Sister Yan, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, it's you two, I'm so glad...”

“Senior-apprentice Sister, what happened to you...”

“I met some strange plant. I thought it was a spirit herb, but after I approached it, it turned into a massive claw that wanted to catch me. I paid a great cost to escape its grasp and I nearly died!” As the woman saw Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon, she seemed to lose all her strength and nearly fell down where she stood. Yan Littlemoon quickly took out a recovery pill from her spatial ring and was about to go and feed it to this senior-apprentice sister. But at this moment, she felt Lin Ming's hand grasp her arm like an iron pincer, to the point that it even caused her some pain.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, what are you...”

Yan Littlemoon felt a bit cold as she was grasped by Lin Ming's hand. A strange taste filled her mouth.

Yan Littlemoon certainly wouldn't care if Lin Ming did something rude like grab her at this moment. She was originally highly tense in this mystic realm and was suspicious of everything. And now that Lin Ming grasped her arm to stop her, she immediately raised her guard.

Could it be...

Just as this idea flashed through Yan Littlemoon's eyes, in a split second, the senior-apprentice sister in front of Yan Littlemoon craftily smiled. The senior-apprentice sister's body turned into a black shadow that rushed towards her like an evil spirit, stretching out a pair of sharp claws that wanted to grasp Yan Littlemoon's neck!

"It's a mystic realm demon!"

Yan Littlemoon was horrified. But for good or bad she was still a top genius of Charming Phoenix Palace. She instantly overcame her panic and pulled out a thin red sword from her spatial ring, chopping it downwards.

This was a top-grade saint artifact. With the sound of a sharp sword energy splitting apart the air, an arc of light cut through the phantom figure, directly dividing it half!

But, this mystic realm demon didn't die. It was originally an energy form like a stream of air, without a physical body. Now that it was sliced it half, it still hurtled its pieces towards Yan Littlemoon!

These two streams of energy each turned into a fierce and hideous face lined with sharp fangs that bit towards Yan Littlemoon's pale snow-white neck. Although Yan Littlemoon hadn't been attacked, she could still feel a chilling killing intent reach her. All of the blood in her body was stirred up by this thick killing intent.

She knew that because a mystic realm demon's body was invisible and intangible, it excelled at mental attacks and soul attacks. If a martial artist with a weak will was possessed by a mystic realm demon, their spiritual sea would be shattered by the energy form. Then, the mystic realm demon would slowly suck up the martial artist's life force until they were nothing more than a withered corpse!

“Che!”

Lin Ming frowned. At this time he finally acted.

He didn't move, but a dark gold spear-shaped battle spirit howled out from between his eyebrows, turning into a blazing beam of light. In that moment, Lin Ming's willpower was like the divine sword of a war god, glorious and righteous. This divine light tore through the two sections of the mystic realm demon, ripping it to countless pieces!

A mystic realm demon had an intangible body and it excelled in soul and will. But, Lin Ming's grandmist battle spirit had already reached the gold level; he was the ultimate nemesis of a mystic

realm demon!

“Ahhhhhh!”

The mystic realm demon miserably wailed before exploding into a gray fog. Lin Ming thrust out his hand and grasped the gray fog, condensing it into a ball.

Then, Lin Ming took out the Sun Melting Furnace to refine it. This Sun Melting Furnace was a high-grade saint artifact that he won in the gambling fight with Huo Yanguang. It had replaced the Cosmic Melting Furnace and had become his new pill furnace.

A mystic realm demon was a body of pure energy to begin with. Lin Ming only needed to use the pill furnace to burn out some of the impurities. This was a relatively easy procedure that he could do by himself with ease.

After Lin Ming eliminated the mystic realm demon, Yan Littlemoon stiffly stood on the side, embarrassed. She felt a bit helpless about this situation.

And she certainly had a reason to be embarrassed. In just a couple dozen breaths of time, she had already needed to rely on Lin Ming to save her twice. Although she wouldn't have died if he didn't help, she would still be distressed and possibly even injured. If she were injured in the God Beast Mystic Realm at such an early time, that would really put her in danger.

Yan Littlemoon originally knew that because of her low cultivation, her combat strength lay at the bottom of the 12 disciples from the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Even so, she never thought her combat strength would be so garbage. It truly left her ashamed of herself.

At the start she had thought that Lin Ming looked down on her and thus she became angry at him, not speaking to him as they flew. But now that she thought back to this, she really wanted to smash her head into a wall and end her life. When had someone as proud as her lost so much face?

As she saw that Lin Ming was about to refine the mystic realm demon, she finally opened her mouth and stammered out, “That is... how... how about you use my Fire Pattern Furnace?”

“Oh?”

Lin Ming glanced over at the Fire Pattern Furnace in Yan Littlemoon’s hand. This small and exquisite furnace was patterned with images of flowers and birds, and it was entirely crafted with fire spirit jade. It was very polished and refined.

“Top grade saint artifact furnace? And it’s a top grade saint artifact that is infinitely close to becoming a transcendent saint artifact!”

Lin Ming secretly estimated that the quality of this furnace was no worse than that of the Phoenix Blood Spear.

It had to be known that after Lin Ming obtained the Phoenix Blood Spear at Saint Artifact Pavilion, it had a part of the old Palace Master's source strength poured into it. It had an extremely high value!

And, this Fire Pattern Furnace was the same!

This was also normal. Yan Littlemoon was a top extreme talent of Charming Phoenix Palace. If Lin Ming could have the source strength of the old Palace Master injected into his treasure, so could she.

In order to make it easier for Lin Ming to use the Fire Pattern Furnace, she temporarily sealed up her own spirit mark before handing it to him.

“What a wonderful furnace! It also has the source strength of an old Palace Master poured into it. Its value must be several hundred times that of my Sun Melting Furnace! Thank you very much.”

Lin Ming's words of thanks actually left Yan Littlemoon feeling pained and bitter in her heart. She secretly thought to herself, “This is about the most I can do...”

“Once I leave this God Beast Mystic Realm, I must go out and adventure on my own. It is as they say; a flower born in a greenhouse cannot withstand the wind and rain. Although I already knew this, I never realized it in such a profound manner as I have today. When I compared with this fellow, it's no different from a little baby being compared to a grown man! Whether it was

the black coral or the mystic realm demon, neither of them were supposed to be my match. But they can use all sorts of strange and peculiar methods to make me eat a loss. I could suffer a loss once or twice, but if I continued at such a rate then I would surely perish here!”

Yan Littlemoon clenched her fists with determination. She made an oath in her heart that she would undergo a massive amount of actual combat in the future to increase and temper her own fighting experience. As for breaking through boundaries, she simply wasn't worried. When Crimson Strifecloud was 29 years old he only had an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation, so there was no need for her to be in any sort of hurry.

As Yan Littlemoon was thinking this, Lin Ming had placed his hands on the Fire Pattern Furnace and was heating it up with real fire!

The mystic realm demon screamed as it was scorched within the Fire Pattern Furnace. It continued to emit rending cries until its consciousness was completely burnt away within the furnace. All that was left behind was its pure energy that condensed into a rainbow-colored stream.

In half an incense stick of time, this stream of energy flew out. Lin Ming cut this energy in half, swallowing up one wisp himself and injecting the other into Yan Littlemoon's body.

“Mm?” Yan Littlemoon flushed red and silently absorbed this wisp of energy. She knew that this was the compensation for letting Lin Ming use her furnace. “This fellow is really detestable.

Is it really necessary to divide everything so clearly?”

The energy within the mystic realm demons contained Laws of a different world. These things were extremely difficult to perceive in the Divine Realm universe.

After Yan Littlemoon swallowed up the wisp of energy, she felt as if a hot breeze blew across her body. Her entire body began to heat up.

Energy flowed throughout her body, making her body lighten as if she were floating above the clouds.

And at the same time, within her mind her comprehension of Laws also deepened just a little bit. To a genius disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the energy that a mystic realm demon provided wasn't too important. It was the Laws contained within them that were the true great harvest!

When a martial artist perceived the Laws, perceiving the Laws to a profound degree was one aspect. But, another aspect was to understand a comprehensive portion of Laws!

One had to comprehend many different Laws of all types. Only by summing up all the Laws together could one approach the truth of the universe's origin!

After a bit of time, Yan Littlemoon absorbed half of the Laws contained in the mystic realm demon's energy. She felt that her

comprehension of the Fire Laws' fourth level Concept deepened further, nearly equal to 10 days of meditating herself. If she could obtain more mystic realm demon Law energy, she would be able to comprehend the Fire Laws even further!

Chapter 1048 – Asura King

Lin Ming continued forwards with Yan Littlemoon. Every 10 miles or so they advanced, they would encounter several mystic realm demons. Lin Ming effortlessly slaughtered these mystic realm demons. And as for Yan Littlemoon, after she overcame her initial shock and panic, she also began to show her own formidable strength.

Yan Littlemoon was still a genius disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan after all. Although she was far from being able to compare with Lin Ming in the aspect of battle spirits, she still stood out amongst disciples of the same age. She used her own thoughts to staunchly defend against the will attacks of the mystic realm demons and simultaneously used her true fire abilities to melt away her enemies. As this sort of fighting continued, her actions became increasingly smooth.

This sort of fight was a common event for someone like Lin Ming. But to Yan Littlemoon, it was actually a rare opportunity to temper herself. Yan Littlemoon was an extremely talented character. As long as she had the time and space to grow, she would undoubtedly become a Holy Lord level character in the future.

More and more mystic realm demons were refined into streams of energy. But, the more mystic realm demons they killed, the less useful these energy streams became in enhancing their comprehension of Laws. This was because many of the Laws within the mystic realm demons' bodies were repeated and redundant, thus new insights became much less effective.

“These ordinary mystic realm demons are becoming less and less useful. If we can find and slay some 1000 year mystic realm demons or even some 10,000 year mystic realm demons then they’ll have Law energy that is far more valuable.”

As Lin Ming spoke, his eyes suddenly narrowed. He looked off somewhere into the distance.

“Mm? What is it?”

As Yan Littlemoon saw Lin Ming suddenly act strangely, she put up her guard. Soon, she discovered a vast aura surging out from the distance, ebbing and flowing, like a great drumming beat was causing the distant heaven and earth origin energy to tumble over.

“What is that?”

Yan Littlemoon was shocked. Such a powerful yet unknown existence could be a great lucky chance, but it could also be a life-threatening disaster.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then said, “Stick close to me and stay near the ground. Restrain your aura as much as possible; we’re going forward at high speed!”

As Lin Ming spoke, his entire body sank down to the ground, drawing close to the swamp. He flushed forwards like a fish in a downwards stream.

His speed was extremely fast. But from just a bit farther, it was nearly impossible to detect the movements he created in the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy.

Yan Littlemoon also quickly restrained her aura and followed behind Lin Ming.

After flying for just a short period of time, they were able to make out a towering mountain peak in the far off distance.

In the muddy swamp, there was actually a pitch black mountain rising into the heavens!

What was that?

Lin Ming's eyes turned steely. He quickly reduced his speed.

It was mystic realm demons; a massive number of mystic realm demons! As Lin Ming swept out with his divine sense, he discovered there were tens of thousands or even a hundred thousand mystic realm demons scattered around this mountain!

Although Lin Ming had a grandmist battle spirit, a perfect weapon to kill these mystic realm demons, he still felt his scalp tingle as he imagined facing off against so many. If he were to rush into these mystic realm demons and be surrounded by them, there wouldn't even be ashes left of his body.

Moreover, Lin Ming discovered that some of these mystic realm demons were slightly blue in color. Only mystic realm demons that were thousands of years old and were nearing 10,000 years of age would have such a special characteristic.

These types of older mystic realm demons had strength 10 times or even tens of times greater than an ordinary mystic realm demon.

But, the Laws inherent within their bodies were also far from what a common mystic realm demon could compare with.

“Mm? What is that?”

From within that throng of 100,000 mystic realm demons, there was suddenly an eruption of energy that pierced through the skies, directly shooting into the horizon. Even the dark clouds high above were washed away by this energy.

This type of energy was definitely not something that could be emitted by 100,000 mystic realm demons gathered together. The energy that 100,000 mystic realm demons could emit when gathered was only huge and great – it wouldn’t be pure to such a level.

In other words, the energy that Lin Ming felt in front of him was not only massive, but the quality of pureness had also reached an incredible degree.

Lin Ming's thoughts raced. He began to whisper, "Is this... a 100,000 year mystic realm demon? It's a 100,000 year mystic realm demon evolving into an Asura King!"

A mystic realm demon was a life form of energy. They naturally evolved from the energy of the world, and also relied on that same energy for sustenance. If energy was lacking, then they would even devour each other.

Normally, a mystic realm demon would grow to a certain stage and then a new mystic realm demon would develop from their body and split out. Afterwards, the old mystic realm demon would slowly wither away until death. It was already excellent for a mystic real demon to live to a thousand years, and those that lived to several thousand years were even fewer. As for those 10,000 year mystic realm demons, they were nearly extinct!

However, mystic realm demons were similar to human martial artists in that there were also those geniuses amongst them with a massive destiny upon their bodies.

There were some mystic realm demons that were born with Law energy far more exquisite and profound than others. Then, because they encountered great lucky chances, they were able to swallow up spirit medicines, spirit pills, or other heavenly materials. They were able to gather a massive amount of energy within their bodies, changing the Laws within them and making a breakthrough that extended their lifespan.

The longer a mystic realm demon lived and the more energy they devoured, the stronger they would be.

Only by being strong would they be able to obtain even greater treasures. For instance, that black coral that Lin Ming had gathered. If an ordinary mystic realm demon tried to gather that black coral, it would only end up as food for the black coral instead. But for a 100,000 year mystic realm demon, this was actually easy.

According to the God Beast Mystic Realm Compendium, the records showed that when a mystic realm demon reached 100,000 years of age, they would be able to undergo demonic tribulation and be reborn into the incarnation of an Asura King. An Asura King was equal to a human late Divine Transformation powerhouse. And, because a mystic realm demon was formed from energy to begin with, the energy within their bodies would be 10 times greater than that of a human! In terms of just energy alone, they could even compare with an early Divine Lord realm powerhouse.

With Lin Ming's strength, he simply wouldn't have the ability to resist in the face of such an existence. This sort of mystic realm demon was beyond rare. In the long history of the four God Beast Clans, such a dreadful existence had only been encountered a few times. And every time this occurred, there would be a massive loss of genius disciples. At those times, the gains in this mystic realm smelting trial were definitely not equal to the losses.

However, that was only a mature Asura King. This Asura King in front of them hadn't yet crossed its great tribulation.

And, most importantly, an Asura King would be in its weakest

state after crossing its demonic tribulation, without much strength to protect itself.

This time was actually the golden time to defeat it. Otherwise, if the Asura King were allowed to recover its strength, then even a top level character like White Daohong would find it difficult to kill such a creature. And, with White Daohong's cultivation it was impossible for him to enter the God Beast Mystic realm. At that time, such an Asura King would become a dire calamity to the four God Beast Clans. In the future, if there was ever a wave of disciples that had the bad luck to be transmitted near such a being, their fates could be imagined.

“To think that we would encounter a mystic realm demon that has manifested into an Asura King. This is far too strange. If we can kill it and use its inherent Law energy to baptize our spirit bodies then that will not be much different from crossing Ninefall. And these types of Laws simply cannot be found in the Divine Realm! Moreover, the powerful energy will also enter our bodies and greatly strengthen our cultivation. Although that effect isn't as great, it will still save us a great deal of cultivation time.”

Yan Littlemoon muttered. As she looked at the Asura King, she was extremely tempted. But she also knew that wanting to kill such a creature and obtain its source energy was as difficult as ascending to the heavens.

And even not considering the Asura King, there was still the 100,000 mystic realm demons surrounding it.

At this time, Lin Ming whispered in a low voice, “There are some

experts that have arrived nearby. It seems like they are... Ancient Dragon Clan disciples.”

As the Asura King was undergoing its demonic tribulation, it released a mammoth momentum. The strange fluctuations in the world’s energy could be felt from thousands of miles away. What would be truly strange was if there were no experts that were drawn in.

“Ancient Dragon Clan...” Yan Littlemoon’s complexion changed. The Ancient Dragon Clan had always been overbearing and insolent in their actions. Moreover, the comprehensive combat strength of their disciples far surpassed that of the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Even someone as arrogant as Huo Violentstone had to be reticent in his dealings with the Ancient Dragon Clan, otherwise it would be easy for him to suffer a loss.

“From the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples that came, Dragon One, Dragon Six, Dragon Eight, Dragon 12, and Dragon 13 are all Divine Sea powerhouses and top combat masters. We are not their match. Especially that Dragon One. His cultivation is unknown but I can tell he is an unfathomable character! With them here, our chances of obtaining the Asura King’s source energy has dropped to zero.”

The Divine Fate Decree only ranked disciples in order of their talent, not their combat strength. A lower ranking disciple might not have a lower cultivation, and a higher ranking disciple might not have greater combat strength.

Lin Ming pondered the situation, not speaking. He was well aware that wanting to seize the treasure in such a situation was

beyond difficult!

Lin Ming couldn't even feel Dragon One's aura. Since those from the Ancient Dragon Clan had come, that should mean that Dragon One had to be here. This person must have been hiding somewhere and had likely already discovered his presence.

Lin Ming's guess was indeed correct. At this time, Dragon One had already discovered Lin Ming. Of course, this was because Lin Ming hadn't been hiding himself to the greatest degree he could. Otherwise, if he completely shielded himself in grandmist space and hid in the swamp then it would be near-impossible for these people to discover him.

“Two little fish have mixed their way into here. It's the two little baby chicks from the Ancient Phoenix Clan.”

Dragon 12 vigorously said. He was tall and had a robust and well-built body. At 35 years of age, he was the oldest of the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples that had come. Although he was no longer considered to be in the ranks of the junior disciples, the limits set on those that entered the God Beast Mystic Realm were based on cultivation and not age. Thus, Dragon 12 was still able to come.

“Heh, those are just two little seventh stage Life Destruction babies. Elder Brother, should I go and play with them a bit? They should suffer some losses lest they try something later and add themselves to the chaos.” Dragon Eight eagerly said from beside Dragon 12.

Dragon One briefly frowned. Then, he whispered, “Don’t stir up any trouble. If there isn’t a top treasure to come into conflict over then don’t cause a ruckus on your own. The two of them shouldn’t pose a threat to us. Still, we must give them a warning. If we finally come close to hunting down that Asura King as it crosses demonic tribulation after so much trouble, and then those two join in at a critical moment to muddy the waters, causing us to finally fail at the end, then we will kill them 10,000 times over!”

“18, go and give them a warning. Have them leave this area immediately.”

Dragon One said. But at this time, from the distance, a loud roar rang out. This roar lingered through the world, resounding between the heavens and earth!

As Dragon One heard this sound, his complexion immediately changed.

This... this sound... could it be... a dragon’s roar!?

This sort of roar contained a boundless and ancient touch to it, as well as a great majesty that looked down at the world with contempt. This was not a sound that a normal creature could form. As this roar echoed out, Dragon One could clearly feel his bloodline surge within him, resonating with that sound!

Chapter 1049 – Supreme Dragon Bone

Was there a Divine Dragon here?

That was impossible!

Dragon One's eyes widened. The majesty and absolute dignity contained in this echoing roar could not be wrong! As this sound fell into his ears, it even caused a faint trace of awe and reverence to appear in his heart. These were the most ancient memories of his bloodline resonating with this roar.

Although Dragon One had the perfect dragon race bloodline, this bloodline had been transplanted into his body after birth. And, the so-called 'perfect dragon race bloodline' only meant that half of his blood was dragon blood. Even then, the quality was actually relatively low.

In front of a true Divine Dragon, the blood within his body would give birth to fear and awe, as if his entire being were worshipping the ancestral gods.

“That is a dragon's cry, there can be no mistake! How could this be!? Although the God Beast Mystic Realm is said to have once had God Beasts, that is a matter from countless hundreds of millions of years ago. The Laws of this universe have already collapsed, turning this place into a completely different space, and with the new Laws that followed after, it became impossible for any God Beast to be born in these lands ever again.”

“It shouldn’t be a God Beast, but...”

Just as Dragon One was alarmed, he suddenly saw a blue beam of light shoot up into the sky. The dragon’s roar became even more clarion!

At this time, a massive phantom appeared in the sky, tens of thousands of feet long. The incomparably pure energy of the mystic realm constantly transformed, gathering together! As it gathered, countless bolts of thunder formed in the sky, chopping straight down!

This was thunder tribulation. When a mystic realm demon was evolving into an Asura King, it needed to cross thunder tribulation!

Dragon One looked up. That massive phantom in the air had been manifested by the Asura King. And, what left Dragon One incomparably shocked was that this great phantom had clearly evolved into a dragon-like shape!

There was a dragon head, dragon horn, even a dragon body!

This mystic realm demon was actually manifesting into a dragon in the skies!?!?

Of course, it was not a True Dragon, but there was clearly the aura of a dragon coming from its body. That dragon roar was clearly emitted by this creature!

“How can this be?”

It wasn't just Dragon One, but everyone from the Ancient Dragon Clan was stricken! They completely did not understand what was happening!

At this time, within the countless arcs of lightning in the far off distant sky, there was a group of shadows that were speaking to each other in some strange language. And, in the center of these shadows was someone that looked like a naked man with long hair hanging to his knees.

This man's face constantly changed. Sometimes he was handsome and heroic, sometimes he was grim and fierce, sometimes he was ordinary and common, and sometimes he was ugly and grotesque. There were even times when he appeared to be like a beautiful woman or a wild beast.

This was the Asura King that was undergoing demonic tribulation. It already had an essential difference from ordinary mystic realm demons. It had condensed a body of flesh and blood, and this body seemed no different from that of a human. In fact, its stature and form were even more perfect and handsome. However, its arms and ankles were actually covered with blue scales. They seemed like... dragon scales!

A mystic realm demon was a life form of energy, a being with no physical body. However, if it had the chance to swallow up a massive amount of life force and blood energy then it could condense its own mortal body.

“Great King, those lowly and pathetic beings have already come. They are spying on you!” A vague and blurry voice sounded out from beside the man, in words that martial artists of the Divine Realm would not be able to understand.

“Of course I know, hehe... these beings from the outside world wish to take advantage of my weakest point as I undergo tribulation and kill me! But, what they don't know is that I have already long discovered them and am still crossing tribulation to draw them near!

“These beings actually think as if they are the infallible masters of this mystic realm. Every period of time they will send people here to plunder our wealth and hunt down my Hallowed Demon race! In their eyes, we are nothing but prey! How ridiculous! But what they do not know is that my Hallowed Demon race is under the care and holy protection of the Heavenly Demon God! After constantly developing for hundreds of millions of years, our wisdom and strength have already improved beyond their reckoning. We are no longer unconsciously wandering around like before! Since they think of us as prey, we also treat them as tasty food. During my tribulation I just happen to lack some flesh and life force. I will make them come to me and help me complete my final step!

“Send out the orders. Hold the troops, do not have them move! They will take advantage of the last moment of my tribulation to begin their attack against me. Stay at the periphery and when that happens, block off the entire surrounding area of a hundred miles and completely kill all of them! All of them shall become my nutrition!”

As the Asura King spoke, it emitted a dreadful demonic energy that blotted out the heavens. And not only that, but there was even the aura of a dragon emitting from him!

“Yes, Great King.”

The several shadows respectfully said. They held incomparable admiration towards the Asura King, as if it were no different from their one and only god.

The Asura King’s aura became increasingly intense. Endless bolts of thunder fell down, setting the swamp underneath the Asura King into a blazing fire. Mud evaporated, burnt, and then even heated up into molten magma before evaporating once again!

This process happened extremely fast. In just the blink of an eye, a massive stretch of the black swamp had disappeared!

And in the distance, Dragon One, who had been lying unmoving, actually frowned. He felt signs that there was something wrong about this!

Before he came to the God Beast Mystic Realm he had only completely familiarized himself with the ‘God Beast Mystic Realm Compendium’. And, the Ancient Dragon Clan’s version of the ‘God Beast Mystic Realm Compendium’ was far more comprehensive than the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s. According to the records left behind, an Asura King of the mystic realm demons shouldn’t be so powerful.

This sort of thunder tribulation was too terrifying. And within this tribulation the Asura King was adamantly withstanding it, without seeming as if it were having any troubles.

Dragon One had a very bad feeling!

Although Dragon One knew that there was a massive lucky chance placed in front of him, he was still an extremely cautious person. For his talent and cultivation to reach such a degree, he understood his own destiny to an extent and was able to sense when impending catastrophes were around the corner.

He had an extremely tough life. Normally when he was exploring a mystic realm and he was close to death's door at every moment, he would still be able to emerge alive, and moreover he would even be able to obtain great benefits.

And now, as Dragon One saw that the situation in front of him surpassed his every expectation, he had the idea of wholeheartedly retreating. To an extreme talent, if a lucky chance was placed in front of them, they had to go all out to obtain it even if the chances of survival were slimmer than a hair.

But, sometimes, just sometimes, in a situation where one couldn't grasp the circumstances and variables involved, one would need to give up. And giving up also took enormous determination.

But just as Dragon One was thinking about whether to retreat, he

saw another scene in front of him, one that caused his body to tremble and his eyes to shrink to dots before bursting out with a blinding light!

As the black swamp was evaporated by the bolts of thunder, a massive pit appeared in the ground. And, Dragon One also saw something that wasn't visible before.

In this pit, there was actually a massive bone that was a thousand feet long. This bone was whiter than jade, and the top was narrow and seamless like a divine sword, piercing through the endless heavens!

This bone looked like a fragment of an unimaginably massive skeleton. Perhaps it was part of a rib, or perhaps it was part of a femur. But no matter what it was, this bone had an unbelievable number of complex runes scattered all over it. There were large runes like buckets and small runes like grains of rice. They were endless!

Every rune contained the Laws of this world!

From this fragment of bone, an indescribably great pressure surged outwards. This pressure was unfathomably profound and also mixed together with an overwhelmingly pure yang energy. Even though he was hundreds of miles away, he could still feel the incomparably pure baptism of energy and even feel the power of the boundless vibrant ancient Laws!

“This... this is...” Dragon One's voice quivered. Although he had

never seen one before, he knew that he wasn't wrong. This fragment of bone in front of him was...

“A supreme dragon bone!”

Buried beneath the black swamp of the God Beast Mystic Realm there was actually a piece of dragon bone! A 1000 foot long dragon bone!

What sort of concept was a 1000 foot long dragon bone?

One just needed to think of the value of dragon marrow blood to understand this. Dragon blood and phoenix blood were of similar degrees of preciousness. Ordinary dragon blood was naturally the least valuable. Above that was dragon heart blood, dragon horn blood, dragon marrow blood, reverse scale blood, and so forth.

Dragon marrow blood was similar to phoenix marrow blood in terms of value. When Lin Ming had broken through to the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, besides the phoenix blood essence which he hadn't yet managed to reach the full standards for, he only managed to obtain three drops of phoenix marrow blood. A single drop of phoenix marrow blood was enough to cause a Divine Lord powerhouse to struggle for it. As for 10 drops of phoenix marrow blood, that was enough for a Divine Lord powerhouse to go all out.

And this 1000 foot dragon bone was still complete, so there must be a massive amount of marrow inside. Just how much dragon marrow blood must there be within it?

And that was only the dragon marrow blood. The value of the dragon bone itself wasn't even mentioned.

In fact, the dragon bone was even more valuable than the dragon marrow blood within it!

This was because no matter which one of the four God Beast Clans it was, the clansmen only transplanted the bloodline of the God Beasts. This method would only transform their bloodline. As for their skin, flesh, bones, and tendons, those actually couldn't be transformed.

This was because they didn't have the materials to do so!

If Dragon One could obtain this piece of dragon bone and fuse it into his body, the advantages couldn't even be calculated!

Not only would the strength of his bloodline rise, but all of his bones would become near-indestructible because they would have fused together with the dragon bone. His physical strength and defensive ability would rise to a whole new level.

At this moment, Dragon One turned into a zealot. Desire flashed in his eyes, an intensity of emotion he had never felt in his life before!

If it was said that he had high hopes of becoming a Holy Lord in the future, then after obtaining this dragon bone he would be

foreordained to reach the late Holy Lord realm or even the peak Holy Lord realm. Perhaps if he stumbled into more lucky chances in the future, he might even have a chance of becoming a World King!

At that time he would become another World King of the Ancient Dragon Clan. He would be one of the top three existences to ever appear in the last 100 million history of the Ancient Dragon Clan!

With such an impossibly great lucky chance in front of him, if he didn't chase after it with everything he had just because of some worries, then he wouldn't be Dragon One.

It wasn't just Dragon One, but the other Ancient Dragon Clan disciples also felt their blood boiling over with longing. Dragon One would assuredly obtain most of the benefits, but they too could share in some of the soup. After all, this dragon bone was 1000 feet long. It was natural that some part of it would be divided to them. This was a heavenly treasure that even a World King powerhouse would go crazy over. Even if they were given a tiny imperceptible amount, it would be more than enough for them to soar in the future.

“Junior-apprentice brothers and sisters, form the formation, we're going in together!”

Dragon One shook with excitement, but his eyes were still terrifying calm. This was the most important moment of his life!

In the skies, the phantom formed by the Asura King had reached

100,000 feet long. A terrifying aura showered down, enveloping the entire world. Without a doubt, this piece of dragon bone had been obtained by this Asura King that was currently crossing its demonic tribulation. It must have swallowed up the blood energy and pure yang energy of the dragon bone, thus developing some dragon-like characteristics.

Because of this Asura King, the dragon bone must have lost a great deal of its energy essence. However, this didn't matter. If they could slay this Asura King and refine it, they could equally make up for the losses.

Chapter 1050 – You Two, Fuck Off!

In the blink of an eye, the several disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan spread out. Their locations complemented each other; they had formed a battle formation.

There were many Ancient Dragon Clan disciples and their average strength was also high, much higher than that of the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

The 12 disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were the greatest elites chosen from 100 billion clansmen. But, the 36 disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan were actually chosen from a trillion clansmen. Although they had three times the disciples chosen, the base number was 10 times that of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

It was no wonder they were strong!

And with such a group of disciples, especially with such an unfathomably deep character like Dragon One, the power of their great battle array formation could be imagined!

Perhaps even an ordinary Divine Transformation realm powerhouse would be immediately killed by their explosive power!

“Not enough! These people are not enough! Send out the Iron Dragon Command and have all disciples hurry up and join us. All 36 of us, it cannot be any less! This will be the greatest lucky chance that the 36 of us will ever encounter in our lives! As long as we can obtain this dragon bone, we will be able to soar into

greatness! All other harvests are nothing at all. Even if headquarters gives us Divine Dragon blood essence, that still cannot compare with the supreme dragon bone in any way whatsoever!”

Divine Dragon blood essence was certainly valuable, but there was just too little of it. How could a single drop of Divine Dragon blood essence compare with a 1000 foot long dragon bone? Moreover, what was most important was that all four God Beast Clans, including even the Ancient Dragon Clan, only had methods to obtain the God Beast bloodlines to improve the strength of their clansmen’s bloodlines. It was impossible for them to obtain something like a dragon bone. If they could obtain such a dragon bone and then obtain Divine Dragon blood essence after that, the advantages would be beyond imagination!

“This time our enemy is powerful, powerful beyond reckoning! This Asura King has absorbed the power of the supreme dragon bone, and it is no longer an ordinary Asura King. I fear that it has already discovered us, and even then it dares to cross tribulation in our sight without any attempt to hide. It simply doesn’t fear us at all. It likely even wants us to come over and to swallow us up whole!”

For Dragon One to arrive at this step and become the top disciple of the Ancient Dragon Clan, besides his own talent and destiny, he was also an extremely intelligent and cunning individual. Although the dragon bone was enough to drive him mad with want, he still wasn’t blinded without reason. In just a moment he had more or less correctly guessed the approximate situation.

“Yes, Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One!”

Dragon 12 waved his hand and a black light shot out, penetrating through the void like an arrow. This was a secret sound transmission technique of the Ancient Dragon Clan. Every Iron Dragon Command was an extremely precious treasure. One could cross the void to send messages and normal mystic realm array formations could not stop it. If a disciple was sealed into an unknown space, others could determine their position using this Iron Dragon Command.

As Yan Littlemoon saw Dragon 12 sending out that light, she nervously said, “That is the Iron Dragon Command. Lin Ming, I fear the Ancient Dragon Clan is calling all of their other disciples to come here. They will form a great battle formation to struggle with the Asura King. We are simply not their match! Let alone us, even if all other disciples of the other three clans joined forces, we would still be inferior!”

The Ancient Dragon Clan’s disciples had the highest average strength of the four God Beast Clans. Moreover, the other three God Beast clans only had a total of 32 disciples in this mystic realm, four less than the Ancient Dragon Clan. It was impossible to handle them in a frontal confrontation, and even less so now that the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples were forming a great battle array! That would multiply their combat strength!

Lin Ming certainly knew this. He didn’t fear Life Destruction martial artists, and he could still contend with early Divine Sea martial artists. But, he had to admit that he was far inferior to this Dragon One, especially since he was supported by a battle array

formation!

But he wasn't willing to give up like this. Yan Littlemoon probably didn't know what sort of divine bone that was. She likely thought it was some extraordinary treasure, but as to exactly what it was, she was clueless.

However, Lin Ming was different. He had a drop of reverse scale blood within him!

Even though he didn't have the secret technique of the Ancient Dragon Clan to absorb the drop of reverse scale blood, nor did he have a foundation of ordinary dragon blood, causing him to waste 99% of the blood's essence, reverse scale blood was still reverse scale blood. It was one of the most precious types of blood in a Divine Dragon's body and had also inherited the aura of a Divine Dragon. How could Lin Ming not know that the aura of the reverse scale blood was the same as that of the divine bone?

Boundless, potent, vast, ruling over the world, overwhelming the heavens!

This was a supreme dragon bone!

If he could fuse this bone into his body, he could improve his own bones, causing his entire skeleton to take on the characteristics of a Divine Dragon's bones. His bones would become as hard as divine iron, and his striking power and defensive ability would both take a qualitative leap forwards!

Moreover, Lin Ming trained in the Divine Realm's body transformation technique. He knew that the further one went in body transformation, the harder it would become. Just the Eight Inner Hidden Gates would cost so many resources that it would cause unimaginably wealthy martial artists to shrink back in fear. And, there was still the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, something that was infinitely more difficult!

After being in the Divine Realm for such a long time, besides himself, he had never met a martial artist who dual cultivated in body and energy. Even extreme top characters like Xiao Daoji, Huo Burning Heaven, and Crimson Strifecloud, all of them walked the sole path of the essence gathering system!

Any one of those geniuses was extremely proud and confident in themselves. And they had the right to be arrogant, because their talent allowed them to be so. But, they still didn't cultivate in dual body and energy, because they knew just how difficult that road was to walk! If one couldn't open the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, then all previous efforts would slowly become meaningless and they would have wasted all of their time in vain.

Although Lin Ming had experienced numerous lucky chances, he still didn't think he would be able to smoothly break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. According to Fairy Feng, the reason it was near-impossible to step into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was that the rules of the world had changed in ancient times. Now, wanting to step into that boundary was the same as defying the Heavenly Dao itself. The difficulty of attempting to do so could be imagined!

But now that Lin Ming had already put forth the effort, he didn't want to waste it. He had to constantly search for ways to improve his own physical body. Absorbing this dragon bone would transform his entire skeleton. It would provide unreal advantages to his body transformation technique in the future.

The temptation was too great. The value of this dragon bone could not be compared to a single drop of phoenix blood essence!

Moreover, a single drop of phoenix blood essence had already caused so much pain to the Ancient Phoenix Clan, much less this dragon bone! Thus, even if Lin Ming knew the difficulty of obtaining this dragon bone was beyond his imagination, he still wasn't willing to give up and leave like this.

However, at this time, a thick killing intent shrouded down on them along with a chilling voice.

“Fuck off! You two, fuck off! Otherwise I will have you both die here without a grave!”

This overbearing tone didn't hide its thick killing intent, completely tearing apart all previous gentlemanly appearances. This was because Dragon One knew that being honorable or kind at this moment had lost all meaning. It was impossible for others to give up on such a lucky chance after a few polite words. Only absolute strength and the threat of certain death was enough to scare off people and make them vanish for good.

Lin Ming frowned; this killing intent was clear and true. He

didn't doubt for a moment that Dragon One would slaughter them if they didn't leave. And, he would do so without mercy. Even if this matter were found out, he still wouldn't care about the disputes that the Ancient Phoenix Clan would raise with the Ancient Dragon Clan!

Compared to the value of the dragon bone, what would the Ancient Dragon Clan care about such minor matters? The Ancient Phoenix Clan would absolutely not wage war for just for Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon!

“Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, we...” As Yan Littlemoon heard Dragon One's naked threat, she shook her fists, incensed. But, there was nothing she could do. In this world, strength was the only eternal truth. If one lacked strength then they could only allow themselves to be oppressed. Now with such a massive lucky chance placed in front of them, and with Dragon One holding the overwhelming advantage, everything he did was perfectly justified. No one would wish to be bothered by others at the final critical moment before they obtained the dragon bone. After all, the opponent they faced was simply far too formidable. It was possible that both sides would be grievously injured. At that time, any accident from some unknown variable could cause them to fail at the last moment.

Lin Ming grimaced. He didn't immediately leave.

“It looks like you won't cry until you see your own coffin! Do you really think I won't dare to kill you? You two are indeed amazingly talented, but what a pity, your cultivation is too low!”

Dragon One sneered. He had full confidence in himself. With 10 people on his side and also with them forming an array formation, the bombardment of attacks would rip Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon to shreds.

“You really have no sense of death or danger. Let’s go, we’re killing those two first! I will take on all responsibility for this! I can guarantee that the clan will protect us at all costs, the Ancient Phoenix Clan can only swallow down their objections, and it isn’t even necessarily true that they will find any evidence! Oh yes, that’s right, leave that Yan Littlemoon alive. We can’t waste the virgin bloodline in her body. Since we’re going to do this, we’re going all in. We will take Yan Littlemoon’s primordial yin first before slaughtering her. Since ancient times, dragons and phoenixes have always complemented each other. The Ancient Phoenix bloodline will have great benefits to us.”

As Dragon One spoke, he even talked of taking Yan Littlemoon’s primordial yin without any emotion. In the face of a beauty like Yan Littlemoon, he was actually able to speak in such a cold and indifferent manner, taking her primordial yin with no obscene desire or meaning behind it. All he had was ice cold killing intent!

In his eyes, Yan Littlemoon’s only value was her virginity and bloodline strength. As for her beauty, that was meaningless to him. For Dragon One to remain calm in such a situation, that was truly terrifying!

As Yan Littlemoon heard Dragon One’s words, even though she was usually arrogant, she still paled. Lin Ming was also startled.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Lin!” Yan Littlemoon cried out in alarm. This was a true life or death moment!

Lin Ming took a step back and the Phoenix Blood Spear jumped into his hands. His eyes shined with a cold light. “Don’t worry too much yet. There are 100,000 mystic realm demons here and they are still dozens of miles away from us, with a massive number of mystic realm demons between us. Once they start their great battle array they will definitely injure some mystic realm demons. At that time, a complete war will break out. And beyond that, others have also arrived!

Although Dragon One really intended to kill them, Lin Ming wasn’t afraid. In this situation, if they disregarded any price to kill them then it would be possible. But, would Dragon One dare to kill everyone else here?

As Lin Ming spoke, three red lights flew in from the horizon. They were disciples of the Ancient Kirin Clan, from the Fire Kirin Branch!

As Dragon One saw this, his complexion became much more grim. The momentum produced by the Asura King crossing his demonic tribulation was far too great. If this continued then more and more people would show up.

The more people showed up, the more complex the situation would become!

“Damn it all!”

“What do we do, Senior-apprentice Dragon One? Should we kill them all off?”

As the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples saw the three Kirin Clan disciples, they also felt that things had become more difficult. Killing Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon and offending the Ancient Phoenix Clan was something they could still live with, but if they slaughtered everyone that arrived then they really would arouse the anger of all. If they really managed to offend all three other God Beast Clans then even the Ancient Dragon Clan wouldn't be able to bear the pressure.

Unless...

They killed off every single person!

Chapter 1051 – The Great War Begins

Dragon One sucked in a deep breath, a cold light shining in his eyes. He knew that if he tried to keep this a secret and kill them all, even he couldn't manage that! Moreover, if they fought then they would inevitably be weakened in the aftermath, adding even more variables to the situation!

At this moment, two more beams of blue light caught up. They were disciples from the Roc Clan, the Blue-winged Roc Branch. They were favored children of the Wind Laws and excelled at speed. Dealing with their high speed movements was extremely difficult.

“What is that?”

“I have no idea! It should be some kind of extreme saint beast, or possibly even a God Beast bone!”

The Blue-winged Roc disciple as well as the Fire Kirin disciples could all feel the terrifying aura emanating from the God Beast bone. Such a great lucky chance left them all frothing with excitement.

“Mm? Those are the Ancient Dragon Clan's people! Dragon One, Dragon Six, Dragon Eight, Dragon 12... so many of them!” As the Blue-winged Roc disciple saw so many Ancient Dragon Clan disciples here, his heart immediately sank.

“Shit! We were too late! The Dragon Clan people definitely won't

let off such a fat piece of meat. Moreover, there are still 100,000 mystic realm demons here that are extremely difficult to deal with. Wanting to obtain that divine bone will be far too difficult.”

“Summon all our other clansmen here, we’re going to join forces!”

None of the heroic young elites present were idiots that couldn’t tell just what the current situation was like, thus they made the most sensible judgement. Only by gathering all of their scattered clansmen and uniting together could they have a chance of obtaining this divine bone. Trying to take possession of it alone was far too unrealistic.

“You lot, I want all of you to fuck off!”

Dragon One’s entire body surged with crushing killing intent. With him as the center, the great array formation formed by several powerhouses of the Ancient Dragon Clan was indeed extraordinary. The thick killing intent condensed into reality, giving off bottomless pressure.

But, the geniuses of the other clans were heroic elites chosen from a hundred billion people. There was not a single one of them that was weak. Facing Dragon One’s pressure, their complexions changed for the slightest moment before they immediately recovered.

“How amusing! Your Ancient Dragon Clan has been far too cocky! For world treasures like this, they belong to whoever can

take them. Just when was it that the likes of you could monopolize them yourself!”

A Kirin Clan martial artist said with a severe light, his entire posture vigilant. He was a peak early Divine Sea martial artist, just a step away from the middle Divine Sea realm. His strength was amazing.

And as he spoke, with two whistling sounds, two sound transmission talismans flew out.

Summon all reinforcements!

They were extremely far from Dragon One and sending a sound transmission talisman only took a brief moment. How could anyone possibly stop it?

Moreover, Dragon One also knew that it wouldn't matter if he tried to stop him. This was because it would take the Asura King a long period of time to cross its demonic tribulation. Even if there wasn't a sound transmission, with such a massive scene occurring around them, the powerhouses of the other clans were bound to catch up sooner or later.

This lake was bound to become more and more muddied!

“Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One, what should we do!?”

Dragon 12 nervously asked. If the disciples from all three other

God Beast Clans arrived here, their Ancient Dragon Clan would absolutely become the target. This was because they were the most powerful. As long as the other three clans weren't idiots, they would join forces to deal with them.

“We might as well start now and take advantage of the time before they join together. If you see one kill one, if you see two kill two!”

Dragon Six harshly said. As the genius disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan grew up, all of them were subject to extremely intense competition that could even be called brutal and tragic. Each one was more ruthless than the last! This Dragon Six actually wanted to kill everyone present!

Dragon One's face darkened until it resembled the nine nether abyss. A cold light blazed from his eyes, but he actually maintained total silence as countless plans and machinations flashed through his mind.

Everyone was scattered and they were also very far away. They were able to run away at any moment. Wanting to kill them was easier said than done. If he needed to kill them then he had to make sure no survivors were left behind. Otherwise, if the survivors managed to grab their treasures in the ensuing chaos later, they would really be fools.

As time passed, more and more people arrived!

It wasn't just people from the Ancient Dragon Clan that caught

up, but also disciples of the other three clans.

Although there were countless dangers in the God Beast Mystic Realm, the geniuses of the four clans were nearly unscathed. One reason was that they were all geniuses that excelled in combat to begin with, and the destiny gathered upon their bodies was also great, so ordinary dangers weren't likely to harm them much. Another reason was that even if there was someone who was inexperienced and tender like Yan Littlemoon with insufficient cultivation, they could still seek out the shelter of an older powerhouse, thus preventing any troubles from rising.

Soon, over 60 people had gathered up. Nearly every genius that had entered the God Beast Mystic Realm had arrived!

On one side was the Ancient Dragon Clan with Dragon One leading them, and on the other side were the disciples of the three other clans.

The two sides stood in sharp opposition!

At this time, everyone knew that having sole control of the supreme dragon bone was impossible. Let alone a single person taking it, but even a single clan taking the entire thing was impossible. Even if the most powerful Ancient Dragon Clan wanted to eat up all the treasures, they would bite off more than they could chew.

“Haha! Brother Dragon One, how about our four clans join forces to obtain the dragon bone before we decided further about how to

split the benefits?”

Xiao Ping laughed out. He had already heard from the Kirin Clan and Roc Clan about how Dragon One had acted against them before the other disciples arrived. Even so, he still happily laughed and chatted with Dragon One as if nothing had happened.

“Yes, let’s join forces. At that time your Ancient Dragon Clan can have a bit more of the benefits!” Near Xiao Ping, the Kirin Clan’s Eldest Disciple Jiang Bai echoed in joyous agreement.

“Join forces? Have a bit more of the benefits? Hahahaha!” Dragon One suddenly raucously laughed, raving like madman.

Jiang Bai wrinkled his eyebrows. “What are you laughing about? Is this situation funny to you?”

Dragon One’s smile disappeared and he icily said, “What pleasant words. Even if all you scattered garbage come here, what combat strength do you have? The 36 of us can join together to form the Astral Heaven Formation and will inevitably become the main target of the Asura King and its minions. Meanwhile, the lot of you will randomly wander at the sides until both of us are wounded and then you’ll swoop in and snatch away the victory! Dream on! You want to fight together? Alright! We might as well start now!”

Dragon One’s face flashed with a ferocious light. He swiped his spatial ring and in the next moment a massive arc of blue sword light cut through the skies, directly impacting towards the distant mountain peak with 100,000 mystic realm demons around it!

“What are you trying to do!?!?” Jiang Bai’s eyes widened in utter shock!

Before his voice fell, there was an explosive ringing sound as the sword light smashed into a group of mystic realm demons. In that moment, over 20 mystic realm demons were ruthlessly torn apart by that sword energy, bursting into smoke!

All of the mystic realm demons swiveled towards the disciples of the four clans. Their strange red eyes formed by energy began to fill with a violent rage!

All of the disciples from the four clans suddenly felt a creepy feeling washing them. Originally they were all standing on the periphery. Since their strength far surpassed that of an ordinary mystic realm demon, all they needed to do was use some special barrier concealment methods to deceive the sense of the mystic realm demons. But now, Dragon One’s attack had exposed their position.

“Shit!”

Jiang Bai was infuriated. He had originally been prepared to wait for the final moment when the Asura King was undergoing its demonic tribulation, and then by gathering the strength of everyone present and focusing it together, they would launch a long-range attack through a combining array formation and heavily wound the Asura King. They might have even managed to kill the Asura King. Then, those 100,000 mystic realm demons

would become like headless flies. If everyone then rushed over with on overwhelming momentum, they could cause all the mystic realm demons to scatter in panic.

But, he didn't imagine that Dragon One would directly launch a solo attack on the 100,000 mystic realm demons. They originally had the perfect advantage, but now this attack exposed their position. If they were forced to engage in a massive melee with an army of 100,000 mystic realm demons, the disciples would suffer serious losses!

That was 100,000 mystic realm demons! And they were only a group of 60 some disciples!

Dragon One was filled with bloodthirst. From the start he had never thought of sharing anything with the other clans. His only desire was to swallow up half of that supreme dragon bone by himself! Only then would he have a faint chance of attacking the World King boundary!

“You want to join forces? Fine! Then I'll draw those 100,000 mystic realm demons and we'll engage in a true, tragic, slaughterfest! I want to see just where you'll hide! You pack of blithering retards, did you really think that the Asura King hasn't discovered us from the start? It has already absorbed the strength of the supreme dragon bone and is no longer an ordinary Asura King! It is a spider that set out web, waiting for you small flies to gather in before catching you all! Hehehahaha! Since you've come here, then you might as well make use of your life and blood and pave the way for me!”

Dragon One crazily laughed. His laughter echoed between the heavens and earth. As the number one master of all the geniuses present, Dragon One's sense and judgement were far above everyone else's! Moreover, as a member of the Ancient Dragon Clan, he was clearest about just what the supreme dragon bone was. He was able to vaguely estimate just how powerful the Asura King had become after absorbing the supreme dragon bone!

Now was not the time to decide how the four clans would divide the supreme dragon bone. Rather, it was the time to decide whether they would become the hunters of the supreme dragon bone, or become the prey that was hunted instead!

The 100,000 mystic realm demons surged forth like a black tide. 200,000 eyes radiated with a blood red light, their killing intent soaring to the heavens!

“Hehe, have they all arrived? Over 60 talents from the outside; their flesh and blood should be enough for nourishing me a bit. That little kid from the Dragon Clan isn't too bad, he knows just what I was planning. He dared to provoke such an attack so he should have a bit of ability. But even so... all of them will die the same!”

At this time, the Asura King was still undergoing tribulation. Its face was that of a handsome man, and its lips were curved up in a cunning smile. But as it spoke his last word, its face suddenly shifted into that of a brutal demon. Killing intent gushed out from its entire body. “Encircle them, kill them all! Leave their energy essence for me to swallow up!”

.....

“You are deranged! You are out of your mind!” As the disciples of the four clans saw the waves of mystic realm demons hurtle towards them, all of them felt a cold chill run up their backs. If they fought in this war, they would suffer absolutely tremendous losses.

“Hahahaha! Fight! Fight and die! The more of you that die, the less people there will be to compete with me for the dragon bone!” Dragon One flourished a top grade saint artifact sword. He seethed with a fevered frenzy!

At this time, although he looked as if he had gone mad, the truth was that his innermost thoughts were as calm and cold as a lake of ice! At the moment he had decided to compete for the dragon bone, he knew that this sort of cataclysmic war would occur. And, the disciples of the other three clans were the best sacrificial lambs!

Yan Littlemoon blanched as she saw the waves of mystic realm demons rush towards her like a massive tsunami. She was well aware that once she was embroiled in this sort of chaotic melee, the first one to die would be an inexperienced rookie like herself!

As for counting on Lin Ming to protect her, that was just a joke. It wasn't like she was his woman or something, so why would he feel the duty or obligation to do so?

For a time, a trace of despair and fear flashed through Yan Littlemoon's heart. In the face of impending death, who could still

be calm?

But at this moment, an incomparably tranquil and familiar voice sounded out in her ears.

“Enter my ring.”

“Mm?” Yan Littlemoon paused. She felt a soft strength cover her and she subconsciously didn’t resist. In the next moment she had entered into an unknown space.

This was actually a beautiful valley with mountains and rivers around her, resembling a summer paradise.

At the moment the war was about to break out, Lin Ming placed Yan Littlemoon into his Extreme Violet Ring. This was one of Jiang Ziji’s relics he obtained from the Temple of Marvels. The inside contained a separate space that could hold rivers, valleys, mountains, and even a medicine garden. Naturally, it could also hold a living person.

Chapter 1052 – Grandmist Battle Armor

Yan Littlemoon looked at the scenery around her in a shocked daze. Right in front of her was a lush and vibrant medicine garden, completely filled with spirit herbs that were 100,000 years old and above. It was a verdant land, colored with spring. And behind this medicine garden, there was a palace. As she saw this, she immediately knew where she was. She was in Lin Ming's spatial ring, in a minor dimension formed within.

“That fellow... he rescued me...”

As she looked at this quiet and peaceful scenery, Yan Littlemoon felt all sorts of strange and complex emotions fill her heart.

She never thought that in the final moment, Lin Ming would receive her into his Extreme Violet Ring. As long as Lin Ming didn't die and the ring didn't break, she would be safe and well.

And in terms of Lin Ming's combat effectiveness, Yan Littlemoon didn't know why, but she felt an inexplicable blind belief in him. Even though she knew that it was impossible for him to resist 100,000 mystic realm demons, she still thought that he could escape, even if he couldn't obtain the dragon bone.

.....

And at this moment, outside of the Extreme Violet Ring, a life and death slaughterfest had been engaged between the disciples of the four God Beast Clans and the mystic realm demons!

This was 100,000 mystic realm demons against 60 some genius clan disciples!

“Dragon One, that fucking psycho! Everyone, get in formation!”

Jiang Bai breathlessly said as six other disciples gathered by his side and began to form an array formation. As for the other three disciples, they didn't join in because they didn't have the ability to!

Not all disciples of the four God Beast Clans could form array formations with each other. For instance, in the Ancient Phoenix Clan there were many genius disciples spread out in the 72 branch palaces, so it was simply unrealistic for them to train in array formations. After all, doing so was impractical, especially since they didn't gather together often. Even when they explored this mystic realm they were often dispersed all over. This current group war was an entirely unexpected event.

Such a result also led to not every disciple from the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Roc Clan, or Kirin Clan being able to gather into array formations. In the Ancient Phoenix Clan, only several disciples that had been together at headquarters were able to do so and compete with the Ancient Dragon Clan's 36 Astral Heaven Formation!

“Everyone, gather by me, we're forming the 100 Bird Burning Sun Formation!” Xiao Ping shouted out. This was an array formation that the several disciples from headquarters had practiced together before.

“If we form the array... then what will those branch palace disciples like Lin Ming do?” A disciple subconsciously asked.

“What a bunch of nonsense. At this time what else can we do, just let them run about as they will!” Huang Tidemark sneered. But, this argument was also understandable. In such a crisis, who could still worry and look after others?

As Huang Tidemark imagined Lin Ming being swallowed up by countless demons until there was nothing left of him, he felt pleased with himself. That brat had taken Yan Littlemoon away from him in front of everyone and caused him to lose face.

“Not even having a corpse left is the most miserable way to die. But what a pity about that Yan Littlemoon girl; I still haven’t managed to taste her yet. Her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline is truly wasted!”

But then, when Huang Tidemark glanced at Lin Ming through the chaos, he actually saw that Yan Littlemoon, who had been standing beside him, had suddenly disappeared.

“Mm? A spatial ring with its own minor dimension? Humph, that’s still useless. You will die no matter what!”

Against a great army of 100,000 mystic realm demons, even they weren’t sure they could survive after having formed their great array formation, much less Lin Ming, who was all alone.

Bang!

With a terrifying series of ringing explosive sounds, the swarm of 100,000 mystic realm demons formed a giant current that smashed down against the disciples like a heavy armored fist. But, the genius disciples of the four great clans were like a sharp blade, colliding with the mystic realm demons together. For a time, wild and turbulent energy recklessly shot out!

And above the disciples of the four great clans, a giant blue wheel shot up into the skies. On top of this spinning wheel there were 36 runes, each of them sparkling with a bright light!

36 disciples each stood above their own rune. The runes combined together, causing a resonant dragon's cry to soar into the skies! The phantom of an Azure Dragon floated above the blue spinning wheel, its claws slashing outwards!

“All fellow apprentices! Burn your blood essence together to form a Celestial Dragon Rune and inscribe it onto the 36 Astral Heaven Formation! We will increase the might of our formation to the limit! This is the greatest lucky chance that we will ever have in our entire lives! No one must think they will get lucky, we must all go all-out for this!”

Dragon One bellowed. He was the first to burn his Dragon Clan blood essence!

Burning Dragon Clan blood essence was different from burning

Ancient Phoenix blood essence. This was because a Phoenix God Beast could bathe in the fires of nirvana and be reborn. No matter how much blood essence it burnt, it still wouldn't diminish by a single drop. But as for the Dragon Clan's blood essence, that was simply not like the Ancient Phoenix Clan's at all. Every drop of blood essence they burnt was another drop gone!

At this time, Dragon One had really gone all out!

Bang!

With a loud shout from Dragon One, 36 divine pillars of light beamed forth from the bodies of the 36 disciples; each of them had burnt their life's blood essence!

These pillars of light came in a rainbow of scintillating colors. There was azure, gold, blood red... each color represented each disciple's bloodline relationship with the different Divine Dragons!

The entire sky was lit up with multicolored halos!

And in the center of the array formation's 36 runes, each rune rose up as if they had come to life. Each rune turned into a little dragon that soared into the winds, flying about like living beings.

“Oh, Ancient Dragon God, with our blood essence as the sacrifice, we summon your glorious strength. We beg you, grant us loyal subjects your unsurpassed supernatural divine might!”

Dragon One's face was filled with a pious reverence, as if he were carrying out some sacrosanct ceremony.

Wu— wu—

The spinning wheel beneath his feet had already become a kaleidoscope of colors. As it quickly revolved, the spinning wheel even cut through the air, releasing a harsh grating sound as if countless ghosts were crying in the sky. Even the surrounding space began to tremble!

Such a sound was fused with the aura of a Divine Dragon as well as the energy of 36 powerhouses from the Ancient Dragon Clan. Wherever these sonic waves struck, numerous mystic realm demons exploded into smoke!

These mystic realm demons were intangible and invisible bodies of energy to begin with. To strike them with these sound waves filled with energy, the lethality was truly great!

Not just that, but as the rainbow wheel spun around, it was also able to absorb the mystic realm demons that had exploded into energy. A massive amount of mystic realm energy curled up into the spinning wheel, nourishing and strengthening its body, making it shine with an even brighter divine light!

“What!?!? What kind of array formation is that! The array formation formed by the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples can actually absorb mystic realm demons to strengthen itself and increase its killing strength!”

“If it’s like this then they have no need to bear 100,000 mystic realm demons. This is because they can use the strength of the mystic realm demons themselves to slaughter even more of them! No wonder Dragon One was so crazy! He truly has the ability to stir up the 100,000 mystic realm demons and kill the Asura King as it’s undergoing its final demonic tribulation!”

“This is bad! If this continues then we will be stranded in this sea of mystic realm demons! And the disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan will directly push their way into the center. At that time, if they manage to obtain the dragon bone and walk away while we are stuck here, then we might exhaust ourselves and perish!”

Jiang Bai instantly realized this and he fumed with anger. He felt as if he had been tricked by Dragon One. Not only had he turned into bait that had to share the pressure, and not only would he not obtain any benefits, but he might even have to compensate with his life!

However, it was simply impossible for him to compete for the dragon bone right now, especially within the swarm of mystic realm demons. Trying to advance just 100 meters within all these mystic realm demons was extremely difficult.

“What do we do? Do we break out or rush in with the Dragon Clan disciples?”

Everyone was caught in a dilemma. They had confidence they could break out of this encirclement. Even if they took some

damage, they would still be able to survive with 70% of the disciples intact.

But, that was the same as giving up on the supreme dragon bone.

If they rushed forwards then there was a chance they could obtain the supreme dragon bone. However, the losses would truly be great. There was a chance that even with so many losses, they still wouldn't achieve anything!

And at this time, Lin Ming was also swallowed up by the swarms of mystic realm demons!

He hadn't formed an array formation. The advantage of this was that he was the most inconspicuous and this also made him the smallest target with the least amount of mystic realm demons rushing at him.

“Grandmist battle spirit!”

As he saw seven or eight mystic realm demons hurtle towards him, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred and the dark gold grandmist battle spirit directly shot forth from his spiritual sea. In a split second, those seven or eight mystic realm demons were all crushed to death and turned into pure mystic realm energy. Lin Ming waved his hand and received the energy into the Fire Pattern Furnace left behind by Yan Littlemoon.

Although Lin Ming's total combat strength wasn't the highest

amongst the 60 some disciples, he actually had the easiest time killing groups of mystic realm demons. This was because with just a sweep of his battle spirit, all ordinary mystic realm demons in front of him would perish. This saved both energy and time.

However, this wasn't enough. Lin Ming was aware that if he approached the Asura King, he would suffer greater resistance. As he went closer to the Asura King, not only would there be more mystic realm demons, but they would also be stronger. There were mystic realm demons that had lived for thousands or even ten thousand years!

“Heavenly Demon force field, open!”

The Prime Emperor red lotus began to slowly bloom behind Lin Ming! In the chaos of the battlefield, no one had time to notice this. And as the Prime Emperor red lotus bloomed, the composition of space around Lin Ming began to change, turning into grandmist space!

Grandmist space symbolized the power of the most source Laws present at the forming of the universe. Even though the rules of the God Beast Mystic Realm world were different and had even caused the genius disciples of the four God Beast Clans to be slightly hindered as they tried to use the power of Laws, this still wasn't able to affect the grandmist space at all.

This was because the God Beast Mystic Realm was still a place that had evolved due to some unknown rules, countless hundreds of millions of years after the forming of the universe. Thus, it was unable to contend with the most original and source Chaos Laws.

As soon as the grandmist space appeared, Lin Ming's aura suddenly changed! He compressed the grandmist space to within 30 feet of himself. Any mystic realm demons that intruded upon this grandmist space immediately issued a terrifying scream as their bodies melted away!

Grandmist space annihilated all Laws. These bodies of energy were unable to withstand the decomposing power of the grandmist space!

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred and the grandmist battle spirit shot out. A world of will projection overlapped with the grandmist space, turning the entire grandmist space golden!

The grandmist space continued to compress and condense until it was finally only three feet away from Lin Ming. This nearly created a grandmist battle armor around Lin Ming, and the power of this grandmist battle armor to decompose the power of Laws had reached a terrifying degree. Any mystic realm demon that even slightly bumped into it would immediately explode before being twisted into the grandmist space and forming the elementary form of grandmist energy.

With the Ancient Dragon Clan's 36 Astral Heaven Formation as well as the other disciples of the three clans gathered into their own formations, Lin Ming was the smallest target. At any given time there were only two dozen or so mystic realm demons rushing towards him. And as these mystic realm demons touched his grandmist battle armor, they were immediately killed. None of them were able to stop Lin Ming's high-speed advance forward!

Chapter 1053 – Sneaky

Rumble rumble rumble!

With Dragon One in the lead, the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples rushed over in a blazing surge of light. Every breath of time, a dozen mystic realm demons would be torn to nothing by their rainbow-colored corona!

Of course, such a savage killing method required the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples to expend a great deal of their source strength as the foundation. These disciples had all burnt a portion of their life's blood essence!

Moreover, the closer they got to the Asura King, the greater the pressure they felt!

They had already reached a distance where there were mystic realm demons that had lived for thousands or even for 10,000 years. The mystic realm demons violently impacted against the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples!

And, as the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples were braving their way towards the Asura King, the other clans' disciples were all taking different actions.

The three great clans each had their own small core group. The Ancient Phoenix Clan took Xiao Ping as the head, the Kirin Clan took Jiang Bai as the head, and the Roc Clan took their own eldest disciple, Argent Gale, as their head. With these three acting as the

center, and with the God Beast Clan disciples that were familiar with ancient array formations supporting them, they also rushed over towards the Asura King, wanting to claim their own portion of the plunder!

With such a massive lucky chance splayed out in front of them, no one was willing to give up just yet.

However, their speed was far slower than the Ancient Dragon Clan's. As they fell into the swarm of mystic realm demons, every step forwards they took was done with extreme difficulty.

As for the other edge disciples that didn't understand or know how to coordinate battle array formations, they began to escape!

They were weak, alone, and besieged on all sides by this demonic army. If they were fully sucked into this army of 100,000 mystic realm demons, then that meant certain death! Even if they somehow managed to approach the Asura King, they still knew that it was impossible for them to obtain the supreme dragon bone. Although they loathed abandoning such a tremendous lucky chance, they were also well aware that blindly rushing towards the supreme dragon bone in such conditions would only mean their death.

Thus, their only choice was to escape. But even if they wanted to escape, there were nine chances of death and only one chance to make it out alive!

“Ahh!”

With a miserable cry, a Kirin Clan disciple's spiritual sea was drilled into by a mystic realm demon!

Mystic realm demons excelled in will attacks. Once they invaded a martial artist's spiritual sea, they would desperately attempt to swallow up that martial artist's will. In normal times, with this Kirin Clan disciple's willpower, he would certainly be able to engage in an epic struggle and finally extinguish this mystic realm demon that had penetrated into his body.

But, within this swarming army of 100,000 mystic realm demons, how would the other mystic realm demons possibly give this Kirin Clan disciple a chance to kill their comrade?

Dozens of mystic realm demons plunged forwards!

In just the blink of an eye, two dozen mystic realm demons broke into that Kirin Clan disciple's body like wolves to the slaughter.

“Ahhhhh!”

The Kirin Clan disciple issued heart-rending screams. His face violently twisted, with pain, despair, and madness flashing across his features. Blood flowed out of his eyes and his body suddenly swelled up. Then, with a loud explosion, his body burst apart into a fog of blood with bits of bone and flesh spraying out into the world. These leftover pieces of flesh were quickly eaten clean by the countless mystic realm demons. Finally, all that was left of that Kirin Clan disciple was a bit of unnoticeable residue...

This was the first genius disciple who had been killed by the mystic realm demons. As the other disciples that were running away saw this person's death, all of them felt sadness and also fear. Such a horrifying way of dying caused their scalps to tingle with creepiness. Which one of them wasn't a talented genius of their sect? In the future they were bound to rise into glory, so who would want to die here?

“Let's run away together!”

“We have to fight!”

“Join together and let's break our way out of here!”

The survivors began to gather together. However, in just several breaths of time, two more disciples were possessed by mystic realm demons. Their bodies exploded into a fog of blood!

The flesh and blood essence of geniuses was originally a greatly nourishing substance to mystic realm demons. And now that they were stimulated by all the blood essence, the mystic realm demons became even more rapid as they crazily charged forwards!

The pressure on the disciples that were escaping suddenly rose to another level!

And at this time, Xiao Ping, Jiang Bai, and Argent Gale weren't much better off!

Each of them only had six or seven disciples in their group forming an array formation, so just how powerful could it be? And, with so few people, these array formations weren't even complete. The further they rushed in, the greater the pressure was!

However, they had already made it halfway in. Even if they decided to turn around now, they would also have to bitterly struggle on their way out! But above all, they were not willing to do so!

In order to not be surrounded on all sides, the three groups finally joined together. However, as they joined together, their presence became an even larger target, attracting far more mystic realm demons!

This caused their speed to drop considerably. Every step they took was made through brutal and savage carnage!

Of the four clans' disciples, only the Ancient Dragon Clan had a momentum like a surging beam of light. The 36 of them attracted nearly half of the mystic realm demons!

Underneath the control of the Asura King, countless mystic realm demons ignored their lives and rushed at them. There were even 10,000 year mystic realm demons that transformed into all sorts of vicious beast phantoms in the air, hurtling towards them; this was similar to martial skills and Law attacks!

Mystic realm demons had developed for several hundred million

years already, slowly fumbling their way forwards. They now had their own rudimentary martial arts civilization. Although they couldn't compare with humanity's splendid and majestic martial arts history, they were themselves pure forms of energy. Once they displayed their own abilities that were similar to martial skills, their strength doubled!

“How amusing. That one called Dragon One is truly not some common nobody. He clearly knows that I intend to lure them in and hunt them and yet he still rushes my way. He truly has the capital to do so!”

The Asura King was still crossing its tribulation. At this time, the teasing expression on its face slowly fell and it began to become more serious. This was because it was able to feel a faint power that could threaten it from the combined formation of the Ancient Dragon Clan's 36 disciples. Especially since this was the moment it was crossing tribulation. For an Asura King, the weakest point of their entire life was during this process.

“Slaughter them all!”

A cold light flashed in the Asura King's eyes with a thick killing intent accompanying it. The mystic realm demons in the sky began to rush towards the rainbow halo of the Ancient Dragon Clan without a care for their lives!

From the distance, there were even more and more mystic realm demons that were catching up. This was because this Asura King was the ruler of all mystic realm demons in a million mile radius!

During this ensuing chaos, no one noticed an ordinary-looking stream of light that was shuttling through the battle.

This stream of light was Lin Ming.

Grandmist space was an extremely good method to hide his own aura. With the grandmist space covering his body, all of his presence was broken down by the grandmist space without the least bit leaking out.

In addition, the two forces of the disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan and the disciples of the other three clans were just too eye-catching. They shot out countless beams of wild energy, causing heaven and earth origin energy to tumble and surge. Thus, in this merciless melee, Lin Ming wasn't noticeable at all.

And then, Lin Ming simply sank into the swamp ground!

With the grandmist battle armor protecting him, it was extremely easy for Lin Ming to drill into the swamp ground. The swamp was composed of the elements of earth and water. However, no matter what material it was, anything that entered into the annihilating grandmist space would be decomposed into elementary grandmist energy and completely destroyed. Even though the Laws of the God Beast Mystic Realm were slightly different, they still couldn't escape such a fate.

Thus, Lin Ming could drill into the swamp like a hot knife through butter. But, for the other disciples of the four God Beast

Clans, digging their way in was far more difficult!

The Ancient Phoenix Clan disciples would have to summon fire true essence to melt the ground into magma before drilling their way through. As for the other three clans, they would have to blow up the ground with their own strength, which was an even greater waste of energy. This was because none of them understood the Earth Laws. The Ancient Dragon Clan had no Earth Dragon in their history, the Kirin Clan had no Earth Kirin, and the Roc Clan definitely had no Earth Roc.

On the ground, wind-attribute and thunder-attribute martial artists could display a mind-boggling speed. But below the ground, they simply didn't have any advantages at all. Not only would they have to slowly move forwards, but they would also consume true essence at a tremendous speed. If they battled underground, they would truly be heading towards death. Every move they used would cost several times the amount of true essence.

Even for Lin Ming, passing through the ground would cause his true essence consumption to rapidly increase. But, this was also the best method of concealing himself. With the grandmist battle armor to shield his own aura and then drill downwards, Lin Ming was able to hide his presence to the extreme.

There were also mystic realm demons underneath the swamp. Because mystic realm demons had no physical body to begin with, it was definitely easy for them to pass underground. However, under the commands of the Asura King, nearly all of the mystic realm demons had gone to attack the Ancient Dragon Clan and the allied group of the other three clans. There was now an extremely

scarce number of mystic realm demons underground. Lin Ming occasionally bumped into a straggler, but once they touched his grandmist battle armor, they still evaporated into smoke!

Although these mystic realm demons were controlled by the Asura King, they only followed its orders through its voice and the transmission of will waves – their senses weren't directly connected. When these mystic realm demons underground were instantly destroyed by Lin Ming, they didn't even have a chance to send the Asura King a single thought.

Like this, Lin Ming quietly made his way over to the supreme dragon bone's position. And in the skies, the Ancient Dragon Clan's 36 disciples finally killed their way to the front of the Asura King!

The 36 Astral Heaven Formation, fused with a Celestial Dragon Rune that was formed by burning one's blood essence as the price, now faced off against the Asura King, a being whose cultivation reached 100,000 years and who had also absorbed a massive amount of dragon bone essence!

“Hahaha! Well done! Wonderfully so! For you all to arrive at this step, I have really looked down on your outsiders. I thought that you were only easily obtainable food to me, but now it seems that there is finally some meaning. You have aroused my interest enough for me to personally take action!” As the Asura King spoke in the common language of the Divine Realm, its voice was sharp and grating. It wasn't strange that it knew the common language of humans. This was because after a mystic realm demon swallowed up a person's spiritual sea, they would also be able to

absorb a part of their memories. This Asura King had lived for 100,000 years. In the past, it had swallowed up a number of disciples from the four God Beast Clans and had inherited their memories. This included their martial skills and cultivation methods. However, it didn't practice these cultivation methods because human cultivation methods simply weren't suitable for a mystic realm demon.

“Demon One! Demon Two! Demon Three! Go help my children kill the other group. I will personally deal with these Dragon Clan babies!”

“Yes, my King!”

From behind the Asura King, three mystic realm demons with cultivations surpassing 30,000 years rushed towards Xiao Ping, Jiang Bai, Argent Gale, and the other disciples of the three clans.

These three demons had already begun to take human form. Their bodies shined with a brilliant blue light. It was obvious that the energy within them had condensed to a ridiculous degree.

Each of them was a powerful and terrifying opponent!

And now, they all rushed towards the allied group of the three clans that was already having difficulty surviving. Without a doubt, these three demons would cause tremendous damage to the disciples of the three clans. It was possible that they would even be directly routed and destroyed!

Chapter 1054 – To Play Both Sides

“Attack together! This is the most important battle we will ever experience in our lives! We can only win, we cannot be defeated here!” Dragon One bellowed, his blood boiling over. Behind him, the 35 other Dragon Clan disciples were the same. They would either emerge victorious from this ashen land or perish within the encirclement of 100,000 mystic realm demons. No matter what they did, there was no escape path left for them!

At this time, the Asura King also attacked. Its entire body was twined with countless arcs of tribulation thunder, but it was still able to lift its hands to attack. One could see from this alone just how terrifying it was!

Roar!

A resounding dragon cry filled the skies. An Azure Dragon rushed out from the body of the Asura King. This was a phantom formed from the dragon bone essence that the Asura King had absorbed.

“You all take me and my supreme dragon bone as your rightful treasures, but I also take all of your blood vitality and Dragon Clan bloodline as my food! Although your bloodline density isn’t too high, it will still be enough to allow me to completely form my flesh and blood body! I have swallowed countless martial artists and obtained an incalculable number of cultivation methods from their memories. All I need is a human body to finally cultivate these abilities! When that happens, I will enter into the greater world of the Divine Realm! I will become a World King, an Empyrean, living carefree through the universe, hahahaha!”

“World King? Empyrean? Your pompous words are far too shameless!” Dragon One roared, his entire body emitting explosive crackling sounds. His eyes began to turn amber brown and his pupils widened to cover the sclera. They became deeper, more profound, as if they were tunnels connecting to the endless deep space. At the same time, dragon scales covered Dragon One. And with him in the lead, the other 35 Dragon Clan disciples behind him began to go all out. All of them burnt 10% of their life’s blood essence!

At this point, they had burnt 20% of their blood essence. If they burnt all of their blood essence, the fires of their lives would immediately extinguish. As for burning 20% of their blood essence, although they wouldn’t die, this would still greatly reduce their lifespan. This would have tremendous effects on all their future accomplishments. It could already be said that the Ancient Dragon Clan’s 36 disciples had cut off all their roads of retreat. At this point it was fight until they won, or fight until they died!

When driven by such great benefits, everyone had gone mad!

Bang!

The spinning blue wheel smashed against the Azure Dragon phantom formed by the Asura King. Both phenomena exploded, and a violent surge of energy flooded outwards, turning hundreds of nearby mystic realm demons into smoke!

The Asura King’s body shook and its blood tumbled. It nearly

vomited blood. In that strike just now, it had been injured!

“Damn!” The Asura King frowned, wiping blood from the corners of its lips. While it was crossing tribulation, it had expended over 80% of his energy to resist the demonic tribulation. And in this situation, the 36 disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan had formed a great array formation to contend with it; the pressure of this could be imagined.

“I’ve really underestimated this bunch of outside mousies. Although these mousies are small and weak, when dozens of them join together they can actually threaten me! Humanity’s array formations and cultivation methods are truly bizarre. But, this is my stage, this is my home. Since you lot dare to fight me here, all of you are doomed to perish!”

The Asura King gave a loud shout and a massive vortex swirled around it. Heaven and earth origin energy spun around it and the numerous mystic realm demons nearby were twisted up into this vortex, turning into pure energy that was devoured by the Asura King!

The Asura King’s body emitted explosive crackling sounds. Its entire form began to grow. Its muscles bulged, becoming harder and tougher. Its appearance also became increasingly gruesome. The Asura King was actually able to absorb the power of ordinary mystic realm demons.

This battle was destined to become increasingly intense and frantic until it turned into a crazy melee. Whether it was the Asura King or the 36 disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan, all of them

were desperately attacking, paying any cost to kill their enemies. It was do or die!

And at the same time, the disciples of the other three clans fell into a rancorous battle.

Demon One, Demon Two, and Demon Three were all mystic realm demons with a 30,000 year cultivation. Each of them was cruel and vicious. Their cultivation certainly couldn't compare to the Asura King's, and they definitely hadn't absorbed the strength of the supreme dragon bone. However, they were all in their peak conditions. They weren't undergoing demonic tribulation like the Asura King.

This let them fight without any scruples!

And because of the Asura King's mind control, only one thought percolated within them. That was... to kill all enemies!

Kill all enemies no matter the price!

The three clans didn't have many disciples to begin with, and their array formations weren't complete. Underneath the assault of the massive number of mystic realm demons, they were constantly dancing on the verge of the abyss. And now, facing the additional pressure of these three demons, they finally began to crumble!

At this time, let alone continuing forwards to the center region

where the Asura King was, even saving their own lives was a problem.

“Ah!”

With a miserable cry, a Kirin Clan disciple had his arm bitten off by Demon Two. In the next moment, seven or eight mystic realm demons dove into his body, completely dismantling him!

Peng!

A bloody fog burst into the air like beautiful fireworks. But, as this image fell into the other disciples' eyes, all of them felt their hands and feet turn cold, as if they had fallen into the nine nether abyss.

After such a long and frigid period of combat, the first person of the three clans' core disciples had finally died!

It had to be known that these disciples were forming array formations. Once the first one died, the power of the array formation would greatly reduce. That meant that the second person would die much faster. The more people died, the weaker their combat strength would be!

Thus, the death of that person meant that the three great clans were now in a precarious situation!

“What do we do!?” Jiang Bai urgently said. He was normally

confident in his own strength. In normal dangerous circumstances, he could still calmly analyze the situation. But now, in such imminent danger, even he began to panic! He had thought that the Asura King would be in an extremely weak state as it crossed its demonic tribulation and that obtaining that supreme dragon bone would be easy. The only problem there should have been was how to deal with the Ancient Dragon Clan.

But now, Jiang Bai finally realized that everything he thought was wrong! He had made a grave mistake! Even though the Ancient Dragon Clan's 36 disciples had burnt their blood essence, they still hadn't been able to defeat the Asura King.

And, there were far more than 100,000 mystic realm demons in this area! As they killed their way through, their group and even the Ancient Dragon Clan were able to kill a hundred mystic realm demons with every breath of time. Up until now, they had been engaged in fierce combat for half an hour. They should have killed 60,000-70,000 of the mystic realm demons, but looking around, the amount of them hadn't diminished at all. That meant that there was a massive number of mystic realm demons continuously arriving!

“Do we retreat? Do we continue forwards?” Jiang Bai asked Xiao Ping. In truth, he had already given birth to the idea of escaping in his heart.

But Xiao Ping was also having difficulty making a decision in this situation. It had to be known that whatever decision he made would involve the lives of all the disciples near him.

If they chose to continue, even taking a single step forwards would be difficult. Also, their chances of obtaining the dragon bone weren't too great. Their only hope was if the Ancient Dragon Clan finished the battle as soon as possible.

But, retreating was also extremely difficult. They were besieged on all sides and there were also the three 30,000 year old mystic realm demons attacking them. Wasn't wanting to withdraw easier said than done?

Without a doubt, this was the greatest danger of their lives! This was a true life or death trial!

“Ahh!”

A miserable cry sounded out. A second disciple had died!

The one who died this time was a disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Huang Tidemark had been standing by the dead disciple and had watched helplessly as the disciple's entire body blew up before being cleanly eaten away by the mystic realm demons. Seeing this, his face paled until it was paper white!

Only when truly facing death would one understand how terrifying death was. There were indeed people in this world that did not fear death, but most of those people had lived hard and rough lives. If they died then they died. None of them were like him, someone that was destined to reach the late Divine Lord realm and have 100,000 years of life to freely live as he pleased. There were countless beautiful women and pleasures waiting for

him to enjoy, so how could Huang Tidemark be willing to die here?

“Big Brother Xiao, let’s retreat! Forget that dragon bone!” Huang Tidemark said, his voice shaking.

Xiao Ping was grim and silent. He deeply looked over at Jiang Bai and Argent Gale and could see from their faces that they already wished to retreat. But, if they drew back now, that would truly be losing one’s wife and soldier to the enemy. Not only would they not obtain any benefits, but they had lost so many disciples. This would prove just how incompetent the one in command had been.

But there was nothing else that could be done. In the history of the four God Beast Clans, there had only been a few other times when the disciples had encountered an Asura King in the God Beast Mystic Realm. And every time, there had been grievous losses!

“All disciples heed my order. Combust part of your blood essence; we’re killing our way out of here!” Jiang Bai, Xiao Ping, and Argent Gale simultaneously issued this order.

To them, combusting their blood essence to escape was the smartest choice.

In the skies, a fierce battle raged on in full swing. Every breath of time there would be dozens or hundreds of mystic realm demons that died. But, in the surrounding hundreds of thousands of miles, there were constantly mystic realm demons that were catching up from distant lands. As long as the Asura King didn’t die, everyone here would eventually be killed!

Of course, none of this was related to Lin Ming. He had already quietly arrived below the dragon bone!

The supreme dragon bone was a thousand feet high. It stabbed into the swamp like a divine sword. However, the majority of its mass was submerged into the black mud – this was also where Lin Ming was!

Lin Ming didn't believe he could quietly steal the supreme dragon bone and also quietly sneak away.

The reason he was able to make it here without anyone noticing him was that he had the grandmist space concealing his aura. In addition, he moved in the ground underneath the swamp. In the chaotic battle happening up above, no one was able to detect Lin Ming's existence beneath them.

But, the supreme dragon bone was different. If such a large dragon bone suddenly vanished, everyone would notice. The Ancient Dragon Clan disciples and the Asura King weren't idiots after all.

At that time, in a situation where someone like Lin Ming snuck in and benefited as both parties battled, they would definitely be enraged and then he would become their main focus.

Lin Ming didn't think that with his current strength he could defend against the attacks of any party. There was no need to mention the Asura King. Just the array formation that the Dragon

Clan's 36 disciples had formed was abnormally terrifying. Moreover, they had even burned their blood essence.

Lin Ming's low cultivation had always been a weakness of his that he couldn't ignore.

Then... what to do?

Thousands of potential scenarios flashed through Lin Ming's mind. The most ideal result would be the Asura King and the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples fighting each other to the bitter end until both sides were heavily wounded. The Asura King would die and the Ancient Dragon Clan would only have a few dying disciples left over. As for the other three clans, they were surrounded by the 100,000 mystic realm demons.

Then, at that time, Lin Ming would have the confidence to take the supreme dragon bone and immediately escape. With the grandmist battle armor, Lin Ming simply didn't fear any mystic realm demons. Once he barreled into them, all of them would be reduced to smoke.

However, this was only an ideal situation. Once the balance of the battle shifted and one side was able to obtain complete victory, Lin Ming would no longer be able to implement his plan to steal the dragon bone. The winning side might even discover him hiding in the swamp and turn to kill him.

Chapter 1055 – Opportunity

In the sky, the longer the fight continued, the more vicious it became. At this time, it could only be described as absolutely frigid.

Whether it was the mystic realm demons or the disciples of the four God Beast Clans, all of them were betting their lives and desperately fighting!

Dragon One's face was pale. As for the other Dragon Clan disciples, all of them had consumed a massive amount of energy. If this battle ended, even if they lived, if they didn't obtain the supreme dragon bone then they would only live for another 10,000-20,000 years.

To a genius, this was undoubtedly fatal.

Thus, they had to win!

Bang!

Another crazy collision occurred. A dozen Ancient Dragon Clan disciples felt their bodies shake and a sweet coppery taste touch the back of their throats. They immediately vomited a mouthful of blood! And, the only seventh stage Life Destruction disciple paled, his lips shivering. He had finally reached his limits.

The Ancient Dragon Clan's disciples were mostly at the eighth or

ninth stage of Life Destruction; the seventh stage disciple was the lowest amongst them. This disciple also didn't have heaven-defying talent like Lin Ming, thus his combat strength was limited. Within such a crazy battle, he found it extremely difficult to continue.

Let alone him, even Dragon One felt the blood tumbling within his body. Blue veins stuck out on his forehead – he too was nearing his limit. Out of everyone present, he had the highest talent and the highest cultivation. He was also the strongest one here; he could instantly slaughter any of the seventh or eighth stage Life Destruction geniuses present.

But because he was strong, the burden he had to bear was far greater. He was the eye of the 36 Astral Heaven Formation, and a quarter to a third of the array formation was shouldered by him alone!

However, at this time, the Asura King wasn't much better off.

The demonic tribulation continued to fall down without end. If the Asura King hadn't absorbed the supreme dragon bone's essence energy and blood vitality, it would have died long ago.

“Damnit! This bunch of mousies has completely angered me!”

The Asura King's entire right arm was wet with blood. After swallowing up a massive amount of human martial artists' flesh and blood, and also the dragon marrow within the supreme dragon bone, the Asura King had already formed a physical body. It had

organs, meridians, and even acupoints. If it was wounded then it would also bleed.

“Demon One, return to me and help me kill off these Dragon Clan disciples! Demon Two, Demon Three, burn away your cultivation and slaughter everyone else as soon as possible!”

As the Asura King saw that the other three clans had the idea of retreating but were struggling to do so, it issued this order.

Now, the greatest threat to it was the Ancient Dragon Clan’s disciples.

Woosh!

Demon One turned into a shadow that flew back towards the Asura King’s side. As for the other two demons, the blue light within them suddenly blazed out; they were clearly about to go all out.

Underneath the mind control of the Asura King, they obeyed his orders to the letter.

.....

At this time, underneath the supreme dragon bone, Lin Ming was completely buried in the black mud of the swamp. He steadily observed the brutal battle happening in the skies!

Because he was afraid that he would be found, he didn't dare to reveal his sense. He only rose up high enough to expose his eyes, hidden beneath a cluster of dead mushrooms. His field of vision was limited and what he made out was also very vague. But, he could tell from the surges of origin energy how the power of space nearby trembled, and how the mystic realm demons constantly exploded into bursts of energy flows, and that the battle was reaching a calamitous state.

At this time, there was nothing he could do.

He thought of using an illusory magic array to recreate the image of the supreme dragon bone and then steal it away. But, this sort of array was difficult to lay down in such a situation and also easy to see through. Moreover, the Asura King had likely left behind a wisp of its sense on the supreme dragon bone. As long as the Asura King didn't die, then let alone taking it away, the Asura King would likely know if Lin Ming even touched it!

Lin Ming could only wait for the best opportunity to arrive.

This was also a great test of Lin Ming's mentality. He was in an extremely dangerous situation at the moment. As soon as he was discovered, the only thing waiting for him was death.

Like this, time slowly passed!

Lin Ming's palms became wet with sweat. This sweat couldn't even drip down before it was instantly decomposed by the power

of the grandmist space, turning into an imperceptibly faint wisp that gathered into the elementary form of grandmist energy.

Lin Ming's nerves were as taut as steel wire. Although he hadn't done anything, this was still no easier than a life or death battle!

The only thing he could feel fortunate about was that there were no mystic realm demons around the supreme dragon bone. This allowed Lin Ming to concentrate his entire mind, waiting for that split second when he could grasp the opportunity.

“Ah!”

On the side of the three great clans, two Ancient Phoenix Clan disciples, because of Demon Two and Demon Three's all-out attack, finally weren't able to persist any longer. They emitted pitiful cries and exploded into fogs of blood that were then cleanly eaten up by the massive number of mystic realm demons. These mystic realm demons were like starving wolves. Wherever they went, nothing was left remaining.

As these disciples died, a massive gap appeared in the Ancient Phoenix Clan's array formation. Before this, Xiao Ping was able to rely on his extraordinary strength to continue on, but he too had reached his limit now. He could no longer continue shouldering the array formation; three mystic realm demons rushed in from the array formation's gap.

And their goal was the closest disciple, Huang Tidemark! Now, in the Ancient Phoenix Clan's 100 Bird Burning Sun Formation, there

were only five people left living. And the one with the weakest cultivation amongst them was Huang Tidemark! And now, he had become the main target of the mystic realm demons. These three mystic realm demons that charged towards him each had a cultivation above 8000 years!

“No!”

Huang Tidemark cried out in panic, his face as pale as paper. A cold fear shot up his back and into the heavens. Now that he truly faced death, a deep fear and despair appeared in the deepest depths of his soul. He didn't want to die. He didn't want to die!

“Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao, save me!”

Huang Tidemark miserably cried out. But, Xiao Ping seemed as if he didn't hear Huang Tidemark's cries. Xiao Ping's eyes quickly glanced over at Huang Tidemark and instantly judged his situation. Three mystic realm demons, each with an 8000 year cultivation, were attacking him from a pincer angle; as Xiao Ping saw these, he immediately judged Huang Tidemark to death!

If Xiao Ping was in his top state then he could easily block the three mystic realm demons and save Huang Tidemark. But now, he had nearly spent all of his strength and he was resisting the attacks of a dozen mystic realm demons around him. At this time, he could barely manage himself, so how could he possibly help others?

“When Huang Tidemark blows up, I will use that opportunity to escape!”

Xiao Ping callously thought. Not only was he not planning on saving Huang Tidemark, but he was instead planning to take advantage of the moment when Huang Tidemark blew up and attracted a massive amount of mystic realm demons to escape. After all, once Huang Tidemark died, their Ancient Phoenix Clan would only have four people to form an array formation. With just four people, how could an array formation even be formed?

All that mattered was escape!

This was what the heart of man was like. Xiao Ping was the leader of the Ancient Phoenix Clan group that had come here and was also given the task of protecting the other disciples. He would easily help a fellow disciple out when it didn't harm his own interests, but when something concerned his own life, he gave priority to himself first and foremost. All others could be sacrificed for his survival.

“No! No! No! Senior apprentice-Brother Xiao...!”

At this time, over 10 mystic realm demons dove into Huang Tidemark. His organs, his spiritual sea, all of it was filled with mystic realm demons!

His marrow was eaten, his organs were chewed up, his blood was swallowed, and even his spiritual sea was about to tear apart. This agonizing pain came from all directions, causing his face to twist. His cries became unbearably shrill.

He thrust out a hand towards Xiao Ping's direction, his eyes full of hatred, as if he wanted to drag Xiao Ping into hell with him.

Why won't you save me?

Huang Tidemark wanted to shout out. But, he could no longer voice words.

Peng!

Underneath the callous and indifferent vision of Xiao Ping, both of Huang Tidemark's eyeballs bulged out from his head before bursting open! Blood gushed out of his head. His chest and stomach completely blew up with flesh and blood flying in all directions! Then, his last thoughts were of countless mystic realm demons feeding on him before his consciousness faded away...

And in the moment when Huang Tidemark died, when a massive number of mystic realm demons were attracted over to that direction, Xiao Ping launched his movement technique without any words and raced away!

He no longer cared about managing the group. The group's combat strength had already become extremely feeble. Now, he could only count on his own strength and the little bit of combat efficiency he had left. Everyone else would simply be a burden on him.

The group had lost all use to him. Instead, the situation would

cause far more mystic realm demons to attack them. In this case, Xiao Ping decided to run away by himself. As for the ones left behind, they could stay there and hold down the mystic realm demons for him.

“Xiao Ping!”

“Senior-apprentice Brother, you!!”

As the other Ancient Phoenix Clan disciples saw Xiao Ping run away by himself, they were all stunned for a moment before immediately frothing with resentment and despair. Without Xiao Ping here, it would be nearly impossible for them to resist this onslaught!

“Run! We all have to run away!”

Without their main pillar of support, the other disciples all panicked and began to disperse to escape. But, scattering also meant dying faster.

“Jejejeje! You will all die!” Demon Two screeched out in a coarse voice, also speaking in an extremely crude version of the Divine Realm language. Demon Two began to turn even crazier as it rushed over to the remaining disciples...

.....

“51... 50... 49...”

With his body buried in the swamp mud, Lin Ming began to silently count the dwindling number of disciples.

Of the disciples of the three clans that didn't come from their respective headquarters, Lin Ming hadn't noticed if they had died or successfully ran away. But, of the remaining disciples that could form array formations, only 49 were left over. Of these 49, the Ancient Dragon Clan occupied 36 of these spots. In other words, the other three clans only had 13 disciples left. Each clan now had less than five people on average!

And of these remaining people, many of them were probably on the brink of disaster. Chances were that at least half of them would die here. The savageness of this fight could be imagined!

“Really, birds die for food and men die for wealth. These people all had bright futures ahead of them. Although it was impossible for most of them to think of reaching the Holy Lord realm, they could still reach the Divine Lord realm and have 100,000 years of life. But now, they have nothing left, not even their bodies.”

Lin Ming sighed. He knew that this present situation occurred because the four God Beast Clans had underestimated the strength of the Asura King. After all, the only information recorded in the ‘God Beast Mystic Realm Compendium’ was that the Asura King would be at its weakest state after crossing tribulation, and thus one could kill it then. And, in the history of the God Beast Clans, there had indeed been disciples that had killed Asura Kings, much less that there was also the added temptation of the supreme dragon bone now.

But, this Asura King was not an ordinary Asura King. It was no different from a spider that had cast out a web, waiting for prey to wander into their own doom.

And then, because of everyone that had arrived and the dispute over the division of the supreme dragon bone, Dragon One had suddenly launched an attack, involving everyone in a massive life or death battle. This was why so many casualties had appeared.

As these thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind, in the sky, some of the Celestial Dragon Runes beneath the feet of the Dragon Clan's 36 disciples suddenly disintegrated. The entire array wheel started to collapse!

As the entire array wheel ruptured, a total of 10 disciples vomited a mouthful of blood, their bodies flying away!

“Mm?” Lin Ming's eyes brightened. The Ancient Dragon Clan's array formation had finally been broken!

Chapter 1056 – Dragon Bone In Hand

Although the disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan were formidable, their cultivations were too uneven. The highest among them were at the middle Divine Sea realm and the lowest among them were at the seventh stage Life Destruction realm.

The difference between a seventh or eighth stage Life Destruction martial artist and Dragon One was an entire large boundary and several small boundaries. This gap in strength was simply too great, and also meant that there were several weak points in the 36 Astral Heaven Formation. And, after having undergone multiple collisions, the formation finally began to collapse, starting from these weak points!

As for those seventh and eighth stage Life Destruction disciples, they had consumed nearly all of their true essence and had also lost consciousness. If they fell into the army of 100,000 mystic realm demons in such a situation, their fate could be imagined.

“This is bad!”

Dragon Eight and Dragon 12 watched as those 10 individuals with a less than ninth stage Life Destruction cultivation suffered grievous damage and they began to feel anxious in their hearts. A cold chill swept across their back. Once the array formation shattered, all that awaited them was death.

In this life or death situation, Dragon One’s eyes flashed with a cold and inhuman light. He reached out with a hand and a blue

beam of light shot out, wrapping around those 10 half-dead disciples before they could fly out beyond the range of the array formation. Then, he made a grasp at the void with his hand, and a massive vague dragon claw appeared, smashing down onto those 10 disciples.

“Dragon One – you!!”

Several Ancient Dragon Clan disciples cried out. However, it was too late. With a light popping sound, those low level disciples were all crushed into flesh and blood. Their blood essence was absorbed into the rune beneath Dragon One’s feet, causing it to become far more vibrant and vivid than before!

“This is our final strike! Get in formation!”

Dragon One’s voice was ice cold and without emotion. As his voice fell onto the ears of the other disciples, all of them were startled. It was like the Dragon One in front of them was no longer the senior-apprentice brother they were familiar with, but a cruel demon!

Those 10 disciples had completely exhausted their strength and had lost consciousness; the only fate they had left here was to die. No one else had any remaining strength to save them either. Even so, no one imagined they would end up in such a miserable state. This was because those 10 disciples had also fought by their side and helped struggle for the dragon bone.

In this sort of situation, Dragon One was still able to be so cold

blooded and kill them in a single strike, extracting all of their blood essence to power up the final strike with the 36 Astral Heaven Formation.

Although this was an ugly and unsightly decision, it was the correct one. Otherwise, those 10 disciples' blood essence might have been absorbed by the Asura King, making their survival even less likely. Even so, Dragon One could only be called merciless. He had personally killed fellow disciples of his own clan without hesitation, in a way that caused others to feel fear. He was truly an unscrupulous character who would resort to any diabolical act to advance in the future. If he survived this, it was likely he would become a demon lord of his era!

“What are the bunch of you doing? Do you also want to die here!?” Dragon One said in a freezing tone. The other disciples finally reacted. They quickly borrowed the power of those 10 dead disciples' burning blood essence to reform the 36 Astral Heaven Formation.

Each one of them had already burnt 20% of their blood essence for this battle. This would cause them to lose tens of thousands of years of life once they stepped into the Divine Lord realm. It might even impact what final boundary they managed to reach. They could not waste such a sacrifice.

As for the notoriety coming from killing those of his own clan, all of that was done by Dragon One; it had nothing to do with them.

Hummm —

The seven-colored spinning wheel began to revolve once again. An immense aura surged out in all directions. Halos of light filled the air as a divine radiance blazed into the heavens.

“This brat is ruthless enough!” In front of Dragon One, the Asura King’s body was shaking as if all sorts of changes were occurring to it at the same time. Indeed, it had planned to absorb the blood essence of those 10 low level disciples, but Dragon One had been quicker on the draw. Before those 10 disciples managed to leave the protection of the array formation, their bodies were smashed apart and all of their blood essence was sucked out and supplied to the array formation.

Those 10 disciples had only burnt 20% of their blood essence to begin with. Now, the remaining 80% and the rest of their flesh and blood essence all turned into energy and completely fused into the array formation!

Because of this, the originally collapsing 36 Astral Heaven Formation reformed and solidified itself. And, the remaining Celestial Dragon runes became even brighter, their strength increasing by several times!

As the Asura King saw this, a trace of fear flashed across its features. It understood that this was the final strike of the remaining Ancient Dragon Clan disciples. If it resisted it, then it would win. If it failed, then it would perish in smoke and dust.

But the Asura King had also consumed a great deal of strength. As

it felt the energy within that spinning wheel of light, it found himself lacking confidence.

“Hehehe, if you can sacrifice those from your clan, why can I not sacrifice my own subjects?”

The Asura King wildly howled. The defenseless Demon One beside it was grasped by the Asura King.

“My King...!”

Demon One’s phantasmal face flashed with panic. It had a cultivation of 30,000 years and had already obtained spiritual wisdom of its own.

It wanted to resist, but a thought shot out from between the Asura King’s eyebrows immediately disintegrated its mutinous sense of resistance. In the next moment, Demon One’s entire body exploded, turning into wisps of pure energy that were absorbed by the Asura King!

In that moment, the Asura king was like a great ancient beast that had awoken from a deep slumber, able to devour all and destroy all!

The two sides actually sacrificed their own people in order to launch their final killing strike!

In the skies, a crazy and violent energy gathered into a cloud of

blood. This feeling was as if the sky itself was being torn apart, and the heavens were bleeding.

“Go die!”

Dragon One was the first to attack! A billowing sound wave like endless rolling thunderclaps shook the sky, blasting apart the cloud of blood and continuing to surge outwards in all directions. The swamp underneath was also smashed by a tremendous force, as if the armored fist of a great divine god had punched down into the black swamp ground, creating a giant pit 100,000 feet deep and causing dark mud to soar into the sky! In that moment, countless millions of pounds of swamp water were cleanly evaporated and the black mud was scorched to nothing.

Lin Ming had been hidden in the swamp this entire time. Now, his eyes suddenly shone with a brilliant light; this was it!

Taking advantage of the moment of the explosion, and taking cover underneath the raging waves of energy, Lin Ming used the grandmist battle armor to protect himself and sent out his energy. His energy swept outwards around the supreme dragon bone and received it into his Extreme Violet Ring!

For a time, Lin Ming was also impacted by the shock wave attack!

This was the attack made by the Ancient Dragon Clan's 36 Astral Heaven Formation as well as being powered by the complete burnt blood essence of 10 of their disciples. The might behind it could be imagined. Even the aftermath shock waves alone were enough to

instantly kill an ordinary Ninefall genius.

However, Lin Ming had the grandmist battle armor protecting him. It was able to decompose the power of all Laws. As the waves of energy madly crashed into the grandmist space, they were directly decomposed. Instead, the great destructive impact gave Lin Ming immense momentum, directly pushing his body far, far away!

“Heavens help me!”

All of Lin Ming’s blood tumbled in his body and sweet blood swelled up to the back of his throat. He had suffered a minor wound from this. But, there was no time to care about any of this. All he cared about was the final result happening in the skies. After he snatched the supreme dragon bone, he fled away from the explosive shock waves at full speed!

The direction he chose to escape in was not through the skies, but through the ground!

Lin Ming was aware that once a mystic realm demon transformed into an Asura King, they would form a flesh and blood body. They wouldn’t be incorporeal like those ordinary mystic realm demons and thus able to easily dive into the black swamp. If the Asura King wanted to do that, its only choice would be to abandon its body that had taken countless years of painstaking effort to form. However, that was also impossible, because if it did so then he would fail his demonic tribulation.

Thus, fleeing underground was absolutely the best choice.

As for the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Lin Ming could only wish them the best of luck in escaping. At this time, he could barely even fend for himself.

When Lin Ming was at Thundercrash Mountain and the Demon God Imperial Palace, he had competed with others for a massive lucky chance, dancing on the edge of life and death to do so. But, he had never directly confronted those powerful individuals that were far stronger than him. Instead, he had relied on planning and timing. It had never been like today when he directly seized the food from the tiger's mouth.

If he managed to escape then his harvests would be infinite. Otherwise, he would die!

The only pity about this was that half of the dragon marrow in the supreme dragon bone had been sucked out by the Asura King. If it wasn't for this, Lin Ming's harvests would be even greater.

However, people shouldn't be too greedy in how they lived. Lin Ming was already content with what he had. As for the half of the dragon marrow in the Asura King's body, he would leave that to Dragon One and the rest of them.

Well, that was all based on the premise that they could live through this.

Bang bang bang!

At the exact same time that Lin Ming stole away the supreme dragon bone, the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples had frenziedly collided with the Asura King. This was the best timing for Lin Ming!

Countless mystic realm demons were turned to smoke in the violent shock waves. A wave of black swamp mud rose up a thousand feet high. It surged forwards like a deadly tsunami. The wind changed all around, the heavens and earth lost their color!

Then, another 10 Ancient Dragon Clan disciples spat out a great mouthful of blood and flew backwards. They were likely doomed. At this point, the Ancient Dragon Clan only had 16 disciples left.

This battle was truly tragic! It had to be known that everyone that died here today was not some random dog or cat. They were the most outstanding geniuses of the four great God Beast Clans. Just raising a single one of them cost a titanic amount of resources!

“Mm? What!?”

In that violent flow of energy, although the Asura King had been seriously wounded and its entire body was soaked in blood, it could still feel the instant when the wisp of divine sense he left on the supreme dragon bone was destroyed!

The Asura King was shocked beyond belief!

It had only swallowed less than half of the essence energy within the supreme dragon bone. There was still 60% of the marrow essence energy remaining. And as for the dragon bone itself, that was truly a priceless treasure!

The Asura King had originally wanted to use the flesh and blood of the four God Beast Clans' disciples to perfect his body. After all, it was impossible to form a body with just bone alone. He would only be able to condense a skeleton. Only after forming a complete flesh and blood body would all his dreams be possible.

But now, the dragon bone had been stolen away!

“Who dared to steal my dragon bone!?!? I will kill you!! Ahhhhhh!”

The Asura King could not believe that in such a great battle, with 100,000 mystic realm demons surrounding the area, there was still someone that could steal away the dragon bone. This person must have been hiding near the dragon bone, waiting for the moment when the battle reached its most intense state, and then stole it away when no one was able to notice it!

Such planning left the Asura King incensed. It had lived for 100,000 years but now it had been made a fool!

“You won’t get away!”

Although this was the last moment in the life or death battle, the Asura King's reaction speed was too fast. It had already caught the direction Lin Ming had escaped in! At this time, the Asura King no longer bothered with his battle against Dragon One and instead directly chased after Lin Ming!

Meanwhile, within Lin Ming's Extreme Violet Ring, Yan Littlemoon had been sitting down, staring at the medicine garden in front of her in a daze. Then, a blue light shined from the sky. A massive bone dropped down from the clouds and stabbed into the ground!

“This... this is...”

Yan Littlemoon's eyes widened like a pair of full moons!

Chapter 1057 – Crazy Dragon One

After Yan Littlemoon was received into Lin Ming's Extreme Violet Ring, it felt as if every moment inside was as long as an eternity. This was because in the sealed space of the Extreme Violet Ring, she had no idea what was happening outside. All she knew was that in the moment when she was sucked into the Extreme Violet Ring, there had been 100,000 mystic realm demons surging towards her!

She could imagine just how intense and tragic such a battle would be!

Yan Littlemoon was well aware of her own abilities. If she was exposed to such a gruesome battlefield, there was only a single fate that awaited her.

That was to be eaten up without a skeleton, without even the slightest pieces left for a burial. And in that key moment, she had been taken in by Lin Ming and placed into his Extreme Violet Ring. But, this also meant that Lin Ming would have to shoulder the entire following battle himself!

Yan Littlemoon knew that Lin Ming was far stronger than she was, to a ridiculous degree. But in such a brutal battle, she didn't have full confidence that Lin Ming would be able to safely escape.

All she could do was wait as time slowly passed in the minor dimension. Soon, an hour passed and there still wasn't any news from outside of the Extreme Violet Ring. Yan Littlemoon began to

feel a bit anxious.

She was afraid that Lin Ming would be severely wounded or even die in the chaos. She was afraid that at any moment, the Extreme Violet Ring would be destroyed and then countless mystic realm demons would rush in!

Although the scenery within the Extreme Violet Ring was beautiful to behold, Yan Littlemoon still felt like she was on pins and needles the entire time. There was nothing she could do now. It was also impossible for her to leave. Otherwise, she might add to the chaos if Lin Ming was in some critical moment.

She had been hoping that Lin Ming would quickly arrive, but she never expected that after some time, when there was finally a tiny spatial fluctuation above her, what appeared was not Lin Ming but rather a divine bone!

This 1000 foot divine bone was like a faintly blue tinted holy sword. It stood straight and tall within the Extreme Violet Ring, emitting an incomparably vast pressure.

There were countless complex and mystical runes on top of the dragon bone, each one symbolizing the Heavenly Dao itself. Every rune was 10 times more profound than the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal in Totem Tower, or even 100 times more profound! It was even no worse than the Huo Family's ultimate treasure, the Sacred Flame Testament!

But, there were nine blocks of the Sacred Flame Testament and

each one wasn't too big. It was impossible to compare that to the 1000 foot dragon bone in front of her!

“Lin Ming, he... he...” Yan Littlemoon gulped over and over again. Her watery eyes filled with a fantastical light as if she couldn't believe her own sense.

She certainly recognized this divine bone. It was the Asura King's treasure and also what it relied on to evolve into an Asura King. It was the object that the Ancient Dragon Clan's 36 disciples and the numerous disciples of the other three clans had fought for with their lives on the line.

But now, it was actually obtained by Lin Ming?

Moreover...

It was his alone!

How was this possible!? Just how had he obtained the dragon bone!?

Did he wrest it away by force?

No matter how talented Lin Ming was, he was still limited by his cultivation. With his seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation, he didn't even have the ability to escape in front of someone like Dragon One. Moreover, there was also Jiang Bai, Argent Gale, and many other disciples that were able to gather into array formations

together. So how could this have been possible!?

Was it with strategy?

No matter how smart Lin Ming was, the others weren't idiots. On the other hand, all those chosen prides of heaven were cruel and ruthless individuals of their generation. Their mentality and calculations were all extremely cutthroat and broad. As for the Asura King, that was a monster that had lived for 100,000 years. This should have been impossible!

All sorts of thoughts flashed through Yan Littlemoon's mind, but she still couldn't figure out anything. She thought that it would have already been good if Lin Ming managed to escape with his life intact, but not only was he still alive, he had even managed to pick up the largest peach from the tree.

Yan Littlemoon fervently wished to know what was occurring outside. But, she also knew that even if Lin Ming had managed to obtain the dragon bone for now, there would still be a battle following this. If she rushed out randomly, she would only bring hurt to Lin Ming.

Yan Littlemoon bit her lips. She looked at the supreme dragon bone, unable to move.

She couldn't help but walk over and trace her fingers across the surface of the divine bone. The rough texture was filled with a boundless and vigorous aura, making her feel an awe from deep within her soul.

This was the bone of a God Beast, one of the most precious treasures of the world!

Yan Littlemoon certainly didn't dare to absorb the dragon bone. But, she also couldn't bear to stand around and do nothing. She sat down and began to meditate on the Law runes carved onto the dragon bone. Every tiny bit of strength she could gain meant her chances of living through this were that much higher.

As Yan Littlemoon was meditating on the Laws, Lin Ming was facing a major life or death crisis!

He discovered that he had underestimated the Asura King. Even after such a savage and violent battle, it still had strength remaining to chase after him!

“Shatter!”

The Asura King thrust out its palm and the ground beneath the swamp collapsed. The Asura King chased straight down!

And behind the Asura King were the 16 remaining disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan. In that savage battle just now, they had lost over half of their fellow disciples. Now, their strength was far from what it used to be.

At this time, Dragon One's eyes were blood red. He never imagined that in their frigid battle with the Asura King that shook

the heavens and earth, there would be someone sitting on the sidelines waiting to profit from their strife!

For this supreme dragon bone, he had burnt 20% of his blood essence and lost several tens of thousands of years of his life. He had consumed a massive amount of precious pills and now even had to bear the infamy of being a cruel demon that killed his own fellow clan disciples. Yet, all of his efforts had been made a gift to someone else!

How could he not loathe this!?

“Just who is it!? Who dared to plot against me!?” Dragon One was like a wild and injured animal. He knew that this mysterious person was not Xiao Ping, Jiang Bai, or Argent Gale!

For someone to quietly sneak in even through a swarm of 100,000 mystic realm demons, and also approach the supreme dragon bone and wait there for so much time, this person had to be a top master!

There was even a chance that this other party wasn't human. After all, this was the God Beast Mystic Realm. There could be some unknown existence that had been eyeing the Asura King's supreme dragon bone and had finally found their chance to take it.

One couldn't blame Dragon One for thinking this. Lin Ming had used the grandmist space to conceal his aura, and in addition to the chaotic battle, even if Dragon One's cultivation had been 10 times higher, he still wouldn't have noticed Lin Ming's aura. He wasn't

even able to ascertain if Lin Ming was human.

In addition, Dragon One didn't know that Lin Ming's combat strength was equal to that of a top extreme genius at the peak early Divine Sea realm. Moreover, in terms of lethality to the mystic realm demons, with his grandmist space and gold battle spirit combined together, Lin Ming surpassed even middle Divine Sea martial artists like Jiang Bai and Xiao Ping.

And, most importantly, he had used the grandmist space to conceal his aura as he moved underground. He hadn't been detected by any mystic realm demons, thus he hadn't encountered many of them at all.

In this situation where Dragon One had completely miscalculated Lin Ming's combat efficiency, even if his imagination was 10 times richer, he still wouldn't think that someone like Lin Ming would be able to snatch away the supreme dragon bone.

Now all he felt was a blazing fury in his heart, as well as the utter humiliation of being played for a fool!

No matter what, he still could not give up on this supreme dragon bone!

Although he knew the chances of defeating that unknown existence as well as the Asura King were incomparably slim, this was still a struggle between three parties after all. The situation was extremely complex and it was possible he could profit from the chaos. But, if he didn't chase after them then there really would be

no hope at all.

“There are 16 of us left, we can still form the 16 Celestial Dragon Formation. Although it is inferior to the 36 Astral Heaven Formation, we can still fight. Moreover, the disciples that have died were all at the ninth stage of Life Destruction and below. The greater portion of our fighting strength still remains. Swallow down your Nine Revolving Dragon Pills and let’s chase after them!”

Dragon One issued an order. But, among the 16 Dragon Clan disciples, there were many of them that had thoughts of retreating. They felt that Dragon One was a psychotic madman that had fallen over the edge.

After burning their blood essence, they weren’t even at 10-20% of their peak strength. They were in an extremely miserable state!

Even if they swallowed down the Nine Revolving Dragon Pills that were supposed to be left for saving their lives, they could only restore 40% of their combat strength or so. Moreover, they wouldn’t have enough time to absorb it and would waste most of the recovery efficacy.

But the key point of all this was even if they did all that, would they even still be able to obtain the supreme dragon bone?

With a captain like Dragon One, who was able to resort to any method to compete for the dragon bone, nobody felt safe. It had to be known that Dragon One had burnt all the blood essence of 10

disciples that were about to die, and he had done so without the least bit of hesitation.

What if they were the next ones to die?

A martial artist had to pursue lucky chances, even risking their life to do so. But, after weighing the pros and cons, and knowing that their chances of survival were slim and their chances of obtaining the dragon bone were even worse, it was understandable if they decided to give up.

As long as there was life there was hope. They would be able to struggle for more lucky chances in the future...

As long as they were alive.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One, I won’t go!”

“I won’t go either...”

Several Divine Sea martial artists declared, not fearing Dragon One. As for those ninth stage Life Destruction martial artists, although they feared Dragon One, their eyes were dodgy and evasive, obviously not intending to follow him.

“Mm!? You!!”

Dragon One’s eyes turned cold. At this time, he knew that his

prestige had completely collapsed and these disciples that usually feared him and followed his orders had formed a united front against him. Like this, it was impossible for him to command these disciples around any longer. And most importantly, he no longer had time to establish his strength again.

“Fine! Then don’t regret your choices!”

Dragon One waved his hand and picked up the corpses of the dead Ancient Dragon Clan disciples. Then, he swallowed two Nine Revolving Dragon Pills and flew straight down into the black swamp! At this point he could no longer afford to waste time, otherwise he would lose track of the Asura King and that unknown existence!

As the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples saw Dragon One receive the corpses of their fellow comrades, all of them had extremely ugly expressions. Even so, none of them said anything.

It was clear that Dragon One took their corpses to make use of their blood essence. After burning their blood essence he would launch his attack. This method would make it so that those dead disciples wouldn’t even have skeletons left over. This was truly a tragic and wretched way to die!

In front of the temptation of such great benefits, Dragon One had completely exposed his cruel and ferocious nature.

Although all of them were disgusted, none of them could stop him. They could only allow Dragon One to do as he wished.

The truth was that Dragon One's sole strength was definitely not enough. It was impossible for him to compete with the Asura King, whose strength compared favorably to a Divine Transformation martial artist.

But, he also had to take into account what that unknown existence might do. Dragon One could hide on the sidelines and launch an attack at a critical moment, finally obtaining everything for himself.

This couldn't be called anything but a crazy plan, and the chances of success were also low. But in Dragon One's opinion, if this unknown existence could do it, then why couldn't he?

He was truly unwilling to give up on this lucky chance. If he could succeed all by himself and take sole possession of the dragon bone, then he truly would have a chance of stepping onto the path of a World King in the future!

Woosh!

Dragon One's body sank into the swamp. He restrained his aura and dove down. But, he only understood the Water Laws and not the Earth Laws, thus drilling down was extremely difficult. Luckily, the Asura King had led the way and blown up the swamp ground ahead of him. Like this, it was still possible for Dragon One to catch up to those people ahead of him.

Chapter 1058 – The Strong Asura King

After Dragon One and the Asura King left, the rush of mystic realm demons slowed down. Without the Asura King directing them, these mystic realm demons no longer attacked without regard for their lives. Although they desired flesh and blood, they also cared for their lives. Although the disciples of the four clans were exhausted and nearly depleted of energy, each of them would still be able to easily drag down a few hundred mystic realm demons with them. And, those Divine Sea realm powerhouses were even more fierce. If they burnt some blood essence, they could kill several hundred if not a thousand mystic realm demons each.

After a massive number of mystic realm demons were killed, some of them gave birth to the idea of retreating before they unconsciously wandered away. Although the mystic realm demons still sieged the disciples of the four clans, the pressure on them was reduced by a great deal.

At this time, the disciples of the four clans took this chance to escape. As for chasing after Lin Ming, that was simply a joke. Not everyone was as crazy as Dragon One.

“To think someone profited from our efforts. How laughable, even though we suffered so many casualties, we still became a joke!”

“There’s nothing we can do. This unknown existence is too good at hiding and their speed is extremely fast. Also, they can escape through the ground. If they can do that then this being must be

some top master!”

In the end, the reason Lin Ming was able to profit from the chaos was the concealing effect of the grandmist space. Otherwise, if Lin Ming really decided to hurl himself into 100,000 mystic realm demon, the energy powering the grandmist space would slowly exhaust itself. Moreover, among those 100,000 mystic realm demons there were still 30,000 year old demons like Demon One and Demon Two. Each of those fellows was equal to someone like Xiao Ping.

“It’s over. Don’t think about it anymore. The greater a lucky chance, the greater the dangers that follow it. The dragon bone is not something that we can obtain. If we remain stubborn then we’ll simply lose our lives in vain. We might as well take inventory of our casualties and reorganize. We need to make use of the time we have left and look for some more harvests...”

An Ancient Phoenix Clan disciple quietly said. But, as soon as he mentioned counting the casualties, the mood suddenly became heavy. Of the eight core disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there were only four left. As for those branch palace disciples that had been abandoned, they were likely to have suffered an unfortunate fate. In other words, the Ancient Phoenix Clan could already consider themselves lucky if they had five people remaining.

As for the other three clans, they didn’t have many people left over either. There had been 68 disciples that entered the God Beast Mystic Realm smelting trial, but now only 30 some were left alive. Most of them had died!

“I’m finished... I’m so finished... I fear that Yan Littlemoon and Lin Ming have already died...”

Huo Clearheart absentmindedly said as if he had lost his soul. The battle had been too intense. He was barely able to defend himself, much less find the strength to save Lin Ming. And as he thought about it, Lin Ming only had a seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation. In such a brutal melee, his chances of surviving approached zero...

.....

At this time, deep within the swamp, Lin Ming was directly impacting downwards. He had already penetrated a thousand feet underground, but he could actually feel a powerful divine sense shroud over his body. The thick killing intent was like a beam of light shining down on his back!

The Asura King was hot in pursuit!

“This damned Asura King is really troublesome!”

Lin Ming frowned. He discovered that he had underestimated the Asura King. The Asura King was likely equal to an outstanding Divine Transformation martial artist. After swallowing up the essence energy of the supreme dragon bone, it was likely able to compare with a top class character like White Daohong. Even though it was at its weakest state because it had just crossed demonic tribulation and had also been injured in the massive array

formed by the disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan, its strength was still not at a level that Lin Ming could contend with.

In the final analysis, Lin Ming's cultivation was simply too low. He had been able to rely on the grandmist space to profit from the chaos, but now that he was exposed to the Asura King's senses, the weakness that was his low cultivation had also been exposed.

2000 feet, 3000 feet... all the way to 10,000 feet!

Lin Ming had now penetrated 10,000 feet deep into the ground. At this time, he suddenly felt the resistance multiply. The pressure at such a depth was already immense, but now the soft swamp mud had finally come to an end.

The black swamp had gathered here for countless hundreds of millions of years, enough that the swamp was 10,000 deep. But past this, because of the tremendous pressure, the swamp was actually compressed to an extremely hard degree that was not softer than rock.

“This is bad!”

Lin Ming furrowed his eyebrows. He opened the Heretical God Force and used its strength to crazily stimulate the grandmist space to an even greater degree. The hard black earth constantly dissolved ahead of him even as it accumulated behind him. Although grandmist space was said to annihilate all Laws, one had to have enough true essence to support it.

Lin Ming's cultivation was only at the seventh stage of Life Destruction. As he drilled his way through this hard rock-like soil, his speed fell even further!

“He's nearing me more and more!”

Lin Ming could feel that thick killing intent slowly closing in!

This was underground. By relying on the grandmist space, Lin Ming had a massive superiority in terms of Laws. Even so, his speed was inferior to the Asura King's.

If this was on the surface, there was even less to say. Even if Lin Ming opened the Gate of Wonder, and also had Golden Roc Shattering the Void and Mystic Lightning Shade supporting him, he still wouldn't be able to escape if he had wings.

The difference in strength was just too great!

“You damned little beast, you won't escape from me!” A snarled voice sounded out from behind Lin Ming. It was the Asura King. As the Asura King's entire body was bathed in blood, it seemed like a monstrous ghost that crawled up from the pits of hell.

These wounds were created by Dragon One and the other disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan. With such heavy wounds, the Asura King had consumed 90% of its true essence and now its strength was only several percent of its peak state. Even so, it was this fierce. If it weren't so unwilling to discard its physical body

that it had painstakingly developed over tens of thousands of years then it would have been able to instantly catch up to Lin Ming. The main body of a mystic realm demon was a stream of energy, so physical matter like the earth simply wasn't able to stop them.

“Energy Cage, circle and kill him!”

The Asura King bellowed out. It thrust his palms forwards and dozens of black energy streams plunged towards Lin Ming like snakes. The Asura King wasn't willing to abandon its physical body, but that didn't mean he couldn't release energy attacks.

As Lin Ming saw these energy streams about to surround him and pen him in, he was alarmed!

In that life or death moment, Lin Ming's eyes were as cool and calm as a glacier. He extracted the Phoenix Blood Spear from the Extreme Violet Ring and thrust it outwards. 999 small blood spears swept up into a storm around the spear edge. The black earth in front of Lin Ming was instantly torn apart. At the same time, the phoenix mark between his eyebrows began to dazzle with a brilliant light like a sun! A dark gold phoenix rushed out from Lin Ming's body and a maddening power of fire swirled about, crashing into the black earth and melting it into magma.

Whoosh!

Lin Ming broke through this magma and avoided being caught by that dangerous black energy.

Bang!

A violent explosion sounded out from behind Lin Ming. But as for Lin Ming himself, he bolted forwards, unstoppable!

“Mm!? Fire Laws!”

Behind Lin Ming, the Asura King's eyes turned cold. Although it was chasing Lin Ming from behind, it wasn't able to tell if Lin Ming was a human or something else because of the dark grandmist armor that concealed him. But now that Lin Ming used the Fire Laws to break his way forwards, it was easier to tell that he was a human.

Of the four God Beast Clans, the only ones that excelled in the Fire Laws were the Fire Kirin Branch of the Kirin Clan, the Fire Dragon Branch of the Ancient Dragon Clan, and the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Although the gold phoenix was covered up by the swamp mud, the Asura King was still able to vaguely feel the aura of a God Beast. After all, it had absorbed part of the dragon bone, and this aura had a similar feel to it.

“A disciple of the four God Beast Clans! So it's those damned mousies again!!”

The Asura King was infuriated. It was much stronger than an ordinary Asura King, and thus it believed in its own strength and viewed the disciples of the four God Beast Clans as prey it could pinch to death at any moment. It had formed a net in order to attract all of them and use their flesh and blood to complete its

perfect physical body. But, it never imagined that the Ancient Dragon Clan would be so powerful. They were even able to frontally engage it in a brutal conflict. And, Xiao Ping, Jiang Bai, and Argent Gale weren't weaklings either. Even under the attack of mystic realm demons with tens of thousands of years of cultivation, they were still able to escape. And then after that, this mouse in front of him had actually taken advantage of the time when it was distracted and stole away his dragon bone. This left the Asura King fuming with rage.

“You better not let me catch you, because if I do I will have you die in the most agonizing way possible! I will suck out your flesh and blood, lock your soul into my stomach and have you suffer there for a thousand years!”

The Asura King madly raved. It constantly thrust out black streams of energy to grasp at Lin Ming, but time after time Lin Ming was able to use his true essence to shatter the earth in front of him with the dual Fire Laws and Grandmist Laws. But, drilling down in such a method was extremely taxing on Lin Ming's energy.

“Damn!”

Lin Ming deeply frowned. He originally had a plan. That was for the Asura King to not be able to persist anymore with its injuries, and then it would discard his physical body to continue the chase. Then, if the Asura King tried to penetrate into his spiritual sea, this might possibly cause a counterattack from the Magic Cube. But now it looked like the Asura King simply wouldn't need to abandon its physical form. Lin Ming felt as if he would be the first

one to give out.

Within Lin Ming's body, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix burned and the Heretical God Sprout whistled. The energy within his body was being rapidly depleted. After penetrating past 10,000 feet, every couple hundred feet after that was no different from a furious battle.

And now Lin Ming was only trying to attempt a war of attrition. If he could persist then there would be a turning point! He didn't believe that there was an endless amount of energy within the Asura King.

30,000 feet...

50,000 feet...

70,000 feet...

200,000 feet...

300,000 feet!

300,000 feet was only a few hundred miles deep underground. In ordinary conditions, Lin Ming would only need a few breaths of time to fly such a distance. But, he had to use a quarter hour to reach this far down. Moreover, he had consumed 60-70% of the energy in his body. Even with the Gate of Healing, he still couldn't continue like this!

Lin Ming's forehead and palms were wet with sweat. All the blood in his body was tumbling and he was panting like a dog!

And behind him, the Asura King was still hot in pursuit!

Lin Ming discovered that the temperature had gradually increased the entire time. Then, with a loud banging noise, Lin Ming broke through a sheet of hard rock and a billowing wave of wild heat rushed towards him.

This was underground magma!

“Magma!”

Lin Ming's eyes brightened. If he entered the magma then he would have a much greater superiority with his Fire Laws!

However, just as this idea popped into Lin Ming's mind, he heard a loud explosion right above him. The rock shattered apart and a man covered in blood rushed at him. His eyes were blood red, his hair was ruined, and the killing intent around him had condensed into essence. He was no different from a demon of the abyss.

Lin Ming's mind chilled. He turned to throw himself into the magma, but the Asura King also grasped down with his fierce claws.

Chapter 1059 – Change In the Dragon Bone

“Die for me!”

The Asura King shouted out, its voice thick with ice. As its claw grasped downwards, Lin Ming could feel the heaven and earth origin energy around him flee, and even the power of space seemed to freeze. There was nowhere for him to hide.

“How can it still be so strong!?”

Lin Ming grit his teeth. By relying on the Gate of Healing to support himself as well the grandmist battle armor that wrapped around his entire body, he had dove 300,000 feet underground, consuming 70% of his true essence to do so. But, before this, the Asura King had experienced its demonic tribulation and it had even engaged in a brutal battle with the Ancient Dragon Clan, receiving multiple wounds in the process. Even so, as the Asura King chased him all the way down here, not only had its speed not diminished, but its moves were still so powerful. It was like it had an immortal body!

Such formidable endurance and tolerance for pain was inconceivable!

Bang!

The claw reached down for Lin Ming, surging with killing intent and demonic flames. This was a strike from the Asura King. Even though the Asura King was in an extremely poor state, this attack

was absolutely still equal to a strike from a normal Divine Transformation realm martial artist.

And, martial artists that could reach Divine Transformation were at Eightfall or above, the same level as someone like Yang Yun. In other words, Lin Ming was facing the all-out strike of a Divine Transformation realm Yang Yun!

In this moment of life or death, Lin Ming didn't dare to hold anything back. He burnt the Ancient Phoenix blood essence in his body. This was not the ordinary Ancient Phoenix blood, but that single drop of Ancient Phoenix blood essence!

Ancient Phoenix blood essence inherently contained the incomparably formidable essence of a God Beast. Moreover, as phoenix blood, it wouldn't reduce no matter how much he burned it.

In that moment, Lin Ming could feel his body surge with energy. Blue lotuses began to blossom beneath his feet as a countless amount of fire origin gathered by his side, condensing into flowers and birds, insects and beasts. This was impressively an understanding of Laws nearing small success of the fourth level Concept – Manifestation.

When Lin Ming was at the Revolving Core realm, he had been able to manipulate flames into all sorts of shapes. For instance, chains, clothing, and so forth. The items he formed from fire couldn't be distinguished from material objects in terms of appearance. But, that was not the Concept of Manifestation. That was only giving fire origin energy shape. But as for the Concept of

Manifestation, that was to give life to fire, to give it intelligence of its own. The power of a flame with spirituality of its own was 10 times stronger than a flame without.

To burn the drop of Ancient Phoenix blood essence to serve as the foundation for manifesting fire, just how powerful was that? Moreover, in that moment, Lin Ming also summoned the Purple Lion Thunder Source that was slumbering in the Heretical God Sprout.

The power of thunder and fire instantly twined together!

By burning the Ancient Phoenix blood essence and releasing the power of thunder, this was absolutely Lin Ming's strongest strike yet!

The power of thunderfire clashed together with the demonic claws released by the Asura King. For a time, it was like a giant underground volcano had erupted!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The earth shook and magma billowed upwards. The world around Lin Ming completely collapsed!

The pressure of the collapsing earth 300,000 feet underground was extremely terrifying; even the Asura King's expression discolored.

As for Lin Ming, who had released such an earth-shaking strike, he was caught in the explosive shock waves. He felt a sweet and coppery taste in the back of his throat as he spat out a mouthful of blood. At the same time, he plummeted straight down into the roiling magma!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Countless rocks weighing thousands and tens of thousands of jins fell into the great river of magma. As magma wildly surged all around, it was like the scene of the apocalypse!

But even so, the Asura King still kept its sense locked onto Lin Ming, chasing straight after him!

In that collision just now, the Asura King hadn't been injured. Instead, its origin energy began to slowly recover.

“Today, there is no path to heaven and no gate to hell! I wonder just who will save you now!!”

Bang!

The Asura King also broke into the sea of magma!

As Lin Ming and the Asura King rushed all the way down, Dragon One chasing after them was in a much more miserable state. He was stronger than Lin Ming, but that was only in his peak condition. Currently, he wasn't much different from Lin Ming.

And, the key problem was that he didn't understand the Earth Laws, nor did he have the grandmist martial intent to break through stone.

As the rocks collapsed below him, his body was squeezed by the pressure of the world 300,000 feet deep. He felt as if his entire body would be pinched into nothing! Luckily, as a disciple of the Ancient Dragon Clan, his body was extremely tough and formidable, thus he was able to withstand it. Unfortunately, the efficacy of the Nine Revolving Dragon Pill dissipated yet again because of this blow. Dragon One felt his old wounds reappearing and his true essence was in a tumultuous state. If he kept on chasing, then the chances of him catching up were extremely slim, much less for him to think about obtaining the supreme dragon bone.

Humiliation, unwillingness, endless hatred, all of this swelled up in Dragon One's heart!

He had burnt 20% of his blood essence, he had swallowed two Nine Revolving Dragon Pills, he had even personally killed many of his own junior-apprentice brothers, but in the end he wouldn't be able to obtain anything!

If he returned like this, not only would he be punished by the clan, he would also be ridiculed and criticized! There were those that were jealous of his status and hostile to him. They would not miss this chance to suppress him. It was likely that he would suffer a major penalty from the clan! After all, he was the one in charge of making decisions, leading to such heavy losses for the Ancient Dragon Clan.

If he had obtained the supreme dragon bone then none of that would have mattered. But if he couldn't then there would be countless people looking at him with spite that would all line up to savagely step on him!

He wanted to kill everyone. He wanted to tear apart the Asura King as well as that unknown existence that had stolen away the dragon bone. He wanted to pull out their souls and refine their marrow!

“Ahhhhhhhhhh!”

Dragon One roared out with unwilling rage, his entire body shaking with anger. “Supreme dragon bone! You are mine! I will obtain you! There is already no road left for me to retreat! I refuse to give up like this!”

.....

At this time, deep within the ocean of magma, the Asura King was still chasing right behind Lin Ming!

The energy contained within this mysterious planet was extremely astonishing. The temperature of this underground magma was no worse than Fire Spirit Star's 18 Hells of Flame. Moreover, the deeper he went, the higher the temperature and the greater the pressure!

Lin Ming had the advantage in such an environment. After all, he had already become used to the 18 Hells of Flame. It didn't require too much true essence to pass through the molten magma and he was also able to supplement himself with the fire origin energy!

On the other hand, the Asura King wasn't too well off. It had to use its own energy to separate the magma, otherwise its physical body wouldn't be able to withstand it.

Even so, the distance between Lin Ming and the Asura King continued to lessen!

The Asura King repeatedly attacked Lin Ming. But not only did its strength not decline, it actually gradually recovered.

Even its wounds were slowly regenerating!

“How is this possible!?”

Lin Ming cast his sense on the Asura King to investigate it and was shocked by what he saw. In this ongoing fierce battle, not only was its true essence slowly restoring, but its wounds were regenerating. Just what sort of abnormal restorative ability was this!? This was above even the Divine Transformation realm! No wonder this Asura King was able to cross demonic tribulation and also resist the all-out attack of the Ancient Dragon Clan's disciples at the same time, again and again!

“Mm? Ancient Dragon Clan... dragon race...”

Lin Ming was surprised and then he was hit with a sudden enlightenment.

Yes, that was right, dragons!

The Asura King had absorbed the supreme dragon bone!

Of the four different God Beast bloodlines, each had their own unique advantage. The Ancient Phoenix Clan bloodline allowed them to burn their phoenix blood without it reducing. As for the Ancient Dragon Clan bloodline, that advantage manifested in their powerful physical strength, amount of true essence, and restorative ability.

For instance, when Lin Ming had absorbed a drop of ancient Azure Dragon reverse scale blood, his true essence had obtained the attribute of endlessness. His true essence had become more resilient, endlessly growing, was able to reform after being scattered, and even recovered quickly!

And now, the Asura King chasing him also had all of these characteristics!

“So that’s what it is! The Asura King has absorbed the supreme dragon bone essence and now its body has obtained the attribute of endlessness! Thus, its blood vitality, recovery ability, and endurance have all reached freakish levels! For me to try to exhaust its true essence was simply a ridiculous dream! I don’t have the abnormal attack power of the Dragon Clan’s 36 disciples

and their giant array formation, and the Asura King has already completed its demonic tribulation. Not only will it no longer need to consume its strength, but it will instead grow stronger over time. As for me, I am continuously wasting my energy and my true essence is almost depleted! Even though this magma is my home ground, I will still lose in the end if this continues!”

Lin Ming finally realized what was happening. Although he was in the burning hot magma, a cold chill still soared up his back. He never thought that death would be so close. When he recklessly went to steal away that dragon bone, he had truly underestimated the Asura King’s strength! This was an Asura King that had lived for 100,000 years! This was an Asura King that dared to challenge the many geniuses of the four God Beast Clans even as it went through its own demonic tribulation, making it have to fight in its weakest state! So how could he not have strength to back all of his actions up?

Lin Ming felt his grasp on the Phoenix Blood Spear become wet with sweat. But what he didn’t know was that at this moment, in the Extreme Violet Ring, an unimaginable change was occurring...

Since the supreme dragon bone fell into the Extreme Violet Ring, less than half an hour had passed. Yan Littlemoon sat down cross-legged before the supreme dragon bone, meditating on the Law runes on its surface.

These runes were far too profound, but Yan Littlemoon’s perception was also extremely high. Unknowingly, Yan Littlemoon had fallen into a contemplative state. But then, as she was in a meditating condition, she was suddenly startled and woken up

from her ethereal state. To her astonishment, she saw that the 1000 foot dragon bone was trembling!

The trembling of the dragon bone had caused the space within the Extreme Violet Ring to oscillate!

The 1000 foot dragon bone was extremely dense. When it casually fell it had pierced 500-600 feet deep into the ground – this clearly proved just how sharp and heavy it was! If it weren't for the support of some minor array formations while it was in the black swamp, this supreme dragon bone would have sunk all the way to the bottom.

Every inch of dragon bone was heavier than a boulder. A 1000 foot dragon bone was as heavy as a mountain ridge. When such a dragon bone trembled, the vibration force could be imagined!

“What’s going on here?”

Yan Littlemoon was stunned. She was afraid that her meditating on the dragon bone had caused some strange mutation to occur within it. If she had somehow damaged it then that would truly be bad. Lin Ming had rescued her. If she had then ruined this dragon bone, there really wasn't any way she could explain it to him.

Just as she wasn't sure what action to take, a scene occurred that left her bewildered. The dragon bone was wrapped up by some unknown force and slowly dragged upwards!

The rough dragon bone surface slowly revealed itself from the ground, causing countless bits of stone and dirt to fall down. Finally, the 1000 foot dragon bone that was as heavy as a mountain ridge floated in the skies, emitting a faint humming sound.

“Could... could it be that this dragon bone has its own spiritual wisdom and has stored a wisp of the Divine Dragon’s soul, and is now awakening!?”

Yan Littlemoon paled. If it really were some Divine Dragon awakening, then everything would be thrown into chaos. Who knew if this Divine Dragon was an enemy or a friend?

And everyone, including Lin Ming, had been struggling for this dragon bone in order to obtain its strength. There was no way that any of them could have left a good impression on this Divine Dragon. If this Divine Dragon became angry, the consequences would be dire!

Chapter 1060 – White Light

As Yan Littlemoon was panicking, to her astonishment, she saw a pale gray light emerge out of nowhere and cover the entire dragon bone.

Underneath this unknown energy, the strength of the dragon bone was rapidly pulled out!

The strength of the dragon bone was being pulled out?

Yan Littlemoon's large eyes widened. Was this Lin Ming? No... if it were Lin Ming, then he would first enter the space within the ring before he absorbed the dragon bone. Moreover, absorbing the strength of the dragon bone was easier said than done. One would have to calm and still the mind to an extreme and adjust oneself to a peak condition before slowly absorbing the dragon bone's strength, lest the body be unable to shoulder it.

Perhaps... could it be that it wasn't the strength of the dragon bone that was being pulled out, but that the consciousness of the dragon spirit within the dragon bone had awoken, and was gathering the strength within the dragon bone to form its own body...?

Dragon spirit...

As Yan Littlemoon thought of this, her heart began to race.

“Do I need to warn Lin Ming of this? Does Lin Ming know?” Yan Littlemoon’s thoughts raced. She wanted to inform Lin Ming but she also feared that Lin Ming was in some dangerous fight at the moment.

According to any common sense, if Lin Ming was indeed safe then his first action should be to enter the Extreme Violet Ring and look over the treasures he obtained. This was how human nature was after all. A supreme dragon bone was a treasure that could cause a World King to go crazy with envy.

If Lin Ming didn’t come, that was proof that he was still in danger!

Just as Yan Littlemoon was lost in her thoughts, a deluge of illusory motes of white light gathered in front of her. These white lights faintly trembled, like ripples on a lake, as if they were changing somehow.

Yan Littlemoon couldn’t help but take several steps back. As she saw that white light constantly shifting, it gradually formed into a transcendently beautiful face. Blurry facial features revealed an indifferent and sublime inclination.

“A human shadow? This white light is a woman? Is this a so-called dragon spirit?”

A dragon spirit was the soul of a Divine Dragon. In truth, a dragon spirit didn’t have much combat strength. Whether it was a human or a God Beast, they both depended on their mortal body to

serve as the carrier of energy, and their soul was the ruler of this energy. Without the mortal body there was no energy. If only the soul existed then one's killing potential would be extremely limited. When Lin Ming was at the Sky Spill Continent, this was also the reason why Demonshine's combat strength was so utterly lacking.

As Yan Littlemoon remembered this, she finally calmed down. She gripped the top grade saint artifact sword in her hand, her mind completely focused and on guard. She was prepared to deal with an outbreak of battle at any given moment. She guessed that this woman's shadow in front of her was a wisp of a dragon spirit. When this being was still alive, she was likely at least a million times more powerful than her! But now she had died and all that was left was a tiny wisp of remnant soul; she wasn't necessarily her match.

As Yan Littlemoon was thinking, a sudden change occurred!

That shadow woman hurtled towards Yan Littlemoon with near-unimaginable speed!

"Mm!?" Yan Littlemoon's pupils instantly shrunk to pinpoints. Without thinking, the top grade saint artifact sword pierced out like a viper towards that shadow's head. However, in the split second before her sword was about to hit, she suddenly felt her entire body stiffen. A massive, undeniable strength pressed down on her body, leaving her unable to move!

"What is this? How could this be? Is this will? Battle spirit!?"

When one's will reached a high enough boundary, it could change the hardness of matter, speed, sharpness, and so forth. But, if one's willpower was used to affect a martial artist's body, it would be greatly weakened. Yet now, this wisp of remnant soul was actually relying on just a projection of her world of will into reality to completely lock down Yan Littlemoon's every motion. Just what sort of terrifying strength was this!?

Yan Littlemoon could no longer produce another thought. That wisp of remnant soul had directly broken into her spiritual sea and completely suppressed her divine soul! In that moment, Yan Littlemoon felt herself falling into a deep sleep, never to wake again!

Seize... seizing the body!?

As Yan Littlemoon realized this, she felt her entire being plummet into the nine nether abyss, filled with nothing but despair and doom.

Once her body was seized, that would be the same as death. She was just over 20 years old and still had so much time in front of her... how could she be willing?

“Noo!”

Yan Littlemoon struggled with everything she had, but it was all for naught. Compared to this wisp of remnant soul, her entire divine soul was nothing more than a fading candle in front of a

brilliant full moon. She couldn't even call herself a match. She felt her thoughts fading away, becoming increasingly weak, as if she were about to be sealed forever.

"I can't sleep. I can't sleep..." Yan Littlemoon repeated to herself, all the way until the last bit of clearness dimmed to nothing.

.....

In the vast and bottomless magma, Lin Ming's speed soon increased to twice the speed of sound.

In truth, this magma was different from the 18 Hells of Flame. The 18 Hells of Flame was filled with only fire origin energy and heated astral winds. It wasn't like this thick and solid magma with its immense resistance.

Thus, in the 18 Hells of Flame, Lin Ming was able to increase his speed to several times that of sound. But here, just maintaining a speed of two times the speed of sound was extremely arduous!

Normally, if a martial artist flew at more than the speed of sound in the skies, it would produce terrifying sonic booms that would consume a massive amount of energy to resist, much less in this thick and dense magma.

At this time, Lin Ming had already penetrated a million feet deep into the earth. The temperature here and the wild fire origin energy was no weaker than at the fifth or sixth level of the Hells of

Flame.

If he could persist a bit longer and reach a depth that was close to the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, he would have some ability to fight on more even ground. At least, he might manage to escape.

But at this moment, the Asura King shot out with another attack, more crazy and fierce than the last!

“I never imagined that you would only be a little disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, and that your cultivation wouldn’t even be at the Divine Sea, and yet you managed to trick me! You think that if you enter deeper into the magma, I can’t do anything to you? Haha, indeed you would truly have the advantage there, but what a pity, you will never reach that far! I have nearly restored 10% of my strength! I will kill you with the Astral Quadra Dragon Formation!”

The Asura King’s body burst out with endless beams of blue light. At the same time, it brought its hands together and formed hundreds and thousands of seals.

This Astral Quadra Dragon Formation was one of the Ancient Dragon Clan’s Azure Dragon Faction’s array formations. The Asura King had inherited its understanding of this array formation from the previous Ancient Dragon Clan disciples it had swallowed up in the past. As a mystic realm demon, it didn’t yet have the ability to train in human cultivation methods. But, laying down array formations was possible. In particular, because of the massive amount of Azure Dragon essence within its body, learning this array formation was far easier.

This Astral Quadra Dragon Formation wasn't too high level an array formation. But, it had to be known that when the Asura King previously fought, it had nearly only relied on its own strength, without the use or support of array formations and martial skills. Even if this array formation only raised its combat strength by 30-40%, it was still enough to place Lin Ming in extreme danger.

In the magma, there were azure seals flying everywhere. In terms of energy alone, the Asura King had 10 times more than Lin Ming within him!

“Seal, kill him!”

The Asura King brought its hands together and these azure seals gathered in the air, forming a massive azure seal hundreds of feet large that pounded towards Lin Ming!

In that moment, Lin Ming felt all of the space around him being locked down; there was nowhere for him to run. His only choice was to forcefully resist this azure great seal's attack. But, this strike would be several times stronger than the Asura King's previous attacks. It was simply beyond Lin Ming's ability to defend against.

Even if Lin Ming was in his peak state, taking this strike would leave him severely wounded, much less now when he didn't have much strength left in him. It was also near-impossible for him to continue burning the Ancient Phoenix blood essence; there was no way he could block this attack!

At this critical moment, Lin Ming took out three purple beads from his spatial ring. He kept one in his hand and threw the other two at the azure great seal. At the same time, Lin Ming crushed a blue symbol paper in his hands, causing his entire body to erupt with a blazing blue light. His protective true essence instantly thickened to over 10 times what it had been!

This was Lin Ming's final life-saving card, he could only use it once. Before Lin Ming entered the God Beast Mystic Realm, Huo Violentstone had prepared some items for Lin Ming as a contingency measure. There were three god slaying beads and a single divine protective talisman.

These items didn't need any true essence to detonate. Even if a mortal used them there would be a similar effect. In other words, if a mortal used a god slaying bead, they could kill even a Divine Sea master. Of course, this was all based on the premise that it would successfully hit.

Treasures like these that didn't care about cultivation were extremely valuable. Lin Ming didn't want to use these treasures until the last life or death moment, and now was the time to do so.

Bang! Bang!

Two god slaying beads blew up together. A strength that was capable of turning even extreme Divine Sea geniuses into ashes erupted. The azure great seal suddenly trembled as a large gap was ripped into it!

As for the explosive shock waves, all of them were borne by Lin Ming's divine protective talisman, with none of it damaging him. But after undergoing such an impact, most of the thick blue layer of light surrounding Lin Ming disintegrated, with only three or four inches of it left.

The next attack would likely shatter the entire thing.

“Mm? This brat!”

The Asura King had been utterly confident that this strike would kill Lin Ming, but the damn brat had actually managed to block it. This young martial artist's life was simply tougher than a cockroach. Even with the absolute disparity in their cultivation and having been chased down for almost an hour, he still managed to hang onto his final breath.

“It seems you are a core disciple of the four God Beast Clans. Good! When I kill you, the treasures I obtain from you will also be considerable. You can avoid me now, but you can't avoid me forever! The only way is if your clan has some great expert coming to rescue you, otherwise you are destined to die here! But oh, that's right, this God Beast Mystic Realm is completely sealed up, it is impossible for anyone to come and save you! Hahahaha!”

The Asura King madly laughed. Although its words were rampant, they were all facts. Underneath the absolute suppression of their cultivation difference, Lin Ming was pushed to the point of death!

“Although killing you is as easy as catching a turtle in a jar, since this matter involves the supreme dragon bone, I will not give you any time to encounter some lucky chance and escape. To avoid problems popping up, I will completely finish you off here and now. You can forget about going any deeper into this magma!”

The maniacal face of the Asura King filled with bloodthirst.

“Flesh and blood sacrifice!”

The Asura King’s right hand trembled before exploding into a rain of blood! This ruptured flesh and blood twisted in the air as if it had a life of its own. It undulated about before submerging into the Asura King’s body.

The Asura King’s body suddenly turned a blood red, and his strength doubled! It had discarded a portion of its body that it had formed after so much painstaking effort, and then swallowed the flesh and blood essence, transforming that into energy and causing a brief eruption of strength!

Chapter 1061 – Revival After 50,000 Years

The Asura King already had a 90% belief that it would be able to grasp Lin Ming. But, it worried that once it reached any deeper down, there would be some strange change that would occur. In order to guarantee absolute success, it discarded its hand. If it discarded its hand it would still be able to make up for it by swallowing more essence energy in the future, but if it lost the supreme dragon bone then it was over for it.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt death creeping ever closer to him. He only had a single god slaying bead left in his hand, and he had also consumed most of the divine protective talisman's effects. It was uncertain if he could defend against this strike of the Asura King and also penetrate deeper into the magma.

“Give me your life!”

The Asura King grasped down. Its entire body was covered in a thick fog of blood and it suddenly bulged out. Its face no longer had the appearance of a handsome man anymore; it now looked no different than a hideous and cruel demon.

Lin Ming wouldn't just stand there and wait for death to take him. He revolved his protective true essence to the limit and shot out the last god slaying bead in his hand!

Pa!

The god slaying bead was seized by those demonic claws and

wrapped up in the surging blood fog.

Bang!

The god slaying bead exploded, blowing up a great section of the blood fog. But, it simply wasn't enough to stop the Asura King. After sacrificing its flesh and blood, the Asura King's strength was now at 20% of its peak state.

As Lin Ming saw this claw about to reach him, he punched his own chest. He was prepared to force out his own blood essence and burn it!

Phoenix blood essence could be burnt without diminishing, but if Lin Ming burnt his own blood essence there would be nothing left. After punching his chest, Lin Ming had forced out 30% of his blood essence. Once he burnt this, it would greatly reduce his lifespan and affect his future cultivation. But, there was nothing else he could do. As long as he had a single ray of hope to survive this hell, he had to grasp it with all he had.

But just as he was about to burn his blood essence, he was suddenly surprised. His Extreme Violet Ring slipped off his finger as it was grasped by some unknown force.

Mm?

Lin Ming was bewildered. Then, at that moment, a vast and indescribable strength poured forth from the Extreme Violet Ring,

turning into an aurora of dim divine light that gathered in front of Lin Ming, blocking the monstrous bloody demon claws.

“This is...”

Lin Ming was incredulous as he looked at the young woman in front of him. From her clothes and from the shape of her back, she was clearly... Yan Littlemoon!!

Yan Littlemoon!?!?

How was this possible!?

This young woman who had appeared from the Extreme Violet Ring was completely similar in looks to Yan Littlemoon, but there was no way that Yan Littlemoon could ever possess the temperament and terrifying aura of this woman!

“You...”

Lin Ming pushed back down the blood essence that was roiling at the surface. Without enough time to say a single word, the woman had already stretched out a slender white hand towards the claws that were surging with demonic energy.

“Break.”

The woman’s red lips opened and a single word emerged, light

and ethereal, echoing like the commands of heavenly tribulation. The demonic claws became like glass striking a boulder; they began to crack with a ‘ka ka ka’ sound!

“What!?”

Lin Ming was dumbfounded. As for the Asura King, its eyes were wide with disbelief as he stared at this woman that had suddenly appeared from nowhere.

“You... just who are you?”

The Asura King was disoriented. The God Beast Mystic Realm was completely sealed off, so where had this marvelous and astonishing woman come from? And looking at her cultivation, she was only at the peak of Sevenfall, moreover, she had deliberately suppressed her cultivation at this realm. Otherwise, she would have already broken into Eightfall. This was something that only extreme cultivation talents would do, so it didn’t seem fake. In addition, this woman was so powerful that there was simply no need for her to fake her cultivation.

“Is she really at the seventh stage of Life Destruction? How can someone at the seventh stage of Life Destruction have such formidable combat strength! What is going on here!?”

The Asura King felt as if it had fallen into a dream. It hadn’t even seen the woman do anything just now. Well, it was more accurate to say that he hadn’t felt a single true essence fluctuation.

Yes, she didn't use any true essence at all. All she used was a single thought and a single word. But with just that alone it was like she wielded the Heavenly Dao, striking out with the power of heavenly retribution. With just that, she had shattered the attack that the Asura King had summoned at the cost of discarding his hand.

The woman simply didn't spare any attention for the Asura King. She faintly turned her head and glanced at Lin Ming.

As they met eyes, Lin Ming could finally see this woman's facial features. Her face was indeed Yan Littlemoon's: young, soft, beautiful, just like a 16-17 year old girl's.

But, her eyes were completely different.

Yan Littlemoon's eyes were clear and bright like a mountain spring, transparent enough to see the very bottom.

But this woman in front of him seemed to fuse together with the space around her. Her pupils seemed to contain the endless galaxies, unfathomable and unimaginable!

Lin Ming even felt as if he could see the Laws of the universe through these eyes. In these eyes, there were countless stars being born and destroyed at the same time.

"You... are... you are..." Lin Ming stammered out, subconsciously tracing the spot on his chest where the Magic Cube was. He didn't

feel anything there. In fact, ever since the Magic Cube fused into his body, Lin Ming had never been able to feel its existence. If there was any change to the Magic Cube, Lin Ming would not have known either.

But, Lin Ming could faintly feel something from this woman, as if they had met somewhere before. This feeling was the same as that white ball of light in the space of the Magic Cube that had floated in the center of the countless star-like memory fragments!

When the Magic Cube absorbed blood essence, the truth was that it had been absorbed by that ball of light!

When Lin Ming was 15 years old, that was when the Magic Cube first invaded his spiritual sea. He had witnessed a dreamlike scene. He saw a woman, her body slender and clothed in white. She stood proud and alone on an endless field of snow, facing 10,000 masters of the Divine Realm!

And of these masters, the worst of them were on the same level as Fairy Feng and the Demon Emperor!

And the stronger ones among them had been at the Holy Lord level!

Not just that, but there were also those that had reached large success or even the peak of Holy Lord!

And there was even a black-clothed man leading them all.

Although Lin Ming wasn't able to guess his cultivation, he could vaguely make out his strength from how everyone else treated him with utter respect. That black-clothed man was likely infinitely close if not at the World King realm!

And against such a group of powerhouses, a woman, borrowing the power of the Magic Cube, had slain them all with a single move!

All of their souls were twisted and shattered!

The Lin Ming at that time didn't know just how terrifying this scene was, nor did he understand the aura of that woman. But, as his strength constantly rose and he understood more and more, he began to realize just how terrifying a character that woman who sacrificed her own soul was!

And now, as Lin Ming met the eyes of Yan Littlemoon, he had a feeling that they had met somewhere, and the memory that Lin Ming recalled was of that white-clothed woman.

Was it her!?

Did she suddenly revive? And she had even occupied Yan Littlemoon's body!?

The woman only peered into Lin Ming's eyes for a moment. Then, without even saying a single word, she turned back to face the Asura King!

The Asura King was stunned at this time. It could feel a terrifying aura from this woman that made his scalp creep. It nearly turned around and fled, but with the supreme dragon bone still in Lin Ming's hand, it wasn't willing to give up!

“Just who are you? I wish to kill that God Beast Clan junior behind you. If you have nothing to do with this matter, then please move aside. I will thank you again in the future.”

The Asura King cupped its hand across its chest and bowed in respect.

It could already tell that this newcomer likely wasn't good news. But, it also didn't believe that this dreadful woman was brought here by Lin Ming. This was because if a powerhouse wished to enter the God Beast Mystic Realm, they would be limited by the Laws of the world and would need to consume countless violet sun stones to do so. Also, if Lin Ming had prepared such a killing card beforehand, then why hadn't he used it earlier? Why would the Asura King have been able to chase him and cause him to fall into such a miserable state?

It was possible that this woman was some unknown existence in the God Beast Mystic Realm that, due to some unknown reasons, had been residing in some treasure. And, that treasure just happened to have been obtained by Lin Ming somewhere. Thus, the reason for what happened just now. Lin Ming clearly didn't know who this woman was, so it wasn't necessarily true that she would help him. It would be fine as long as he could hide the truth of the supreme dragon bone from her.

As the Asura King thought of this, another bolt of fear struck it. It was afraid that Lin Ming would reveal the existence of the supreme dragon bone.

As the woman heard the Asura King's words, she turned and looked at the Asura King. There was no change in her expression. She simply parted her cherry red lips again and spoke a single word.

“Die.”

This voice sounded light and dreamy to Lin Ming, but as it fell onto the ears of the Asura King, it was actually like a thunderclap descended from the highest heavens. The Asura King felt as if the heavens themselves had fallen down on it, causing its entire body to shake and all of its organs to flip over!

The ‘Die’ word was not just a simple sound, but it contained the Laws themselves. This sound held an inerrable charm, an order that could not be disobeyed. With just a simple word, the Laws of heaven and earth were affected!

This woman's thoughts emitted with this word, combining into a sound that was holy and vast, breaking through everything, punishing all of existence, destroying all of creation, piercing into the body of the Asura King!

For a time, the Asura King felt as if countless beasts roared in its ears and endless rolling thunderclaps exploded in its mind. The

world itself became a volcano that blew up within it and a terrifying buzz overwhelmed its senses, making it dizzy and blind with blood gushing out from its head!

“Ahhhhhhhhhhh!”

The Asura King emitted a miserable cry as it was sent flying back. It could clearly feel that when that woman just attacked, she didn't use any energy at all. In other words, she didn't use even a tiny bit of the seventh stage Life Destruction true essence within her.

All she used was a sound attack with her battle spirit. And with the Laws contained within it, there was actually such a tremendous power behind it!

Just who was this!?

The Asura King was scared out of its wits. At this time it no longer wished to retake the dragon bone. It turned around and fled at full speed!

But behind it, the woman also reacted. In that brief moment after she attacked, she frowned, as if she weren't satisfied with the damage she had done.

“Harden.”

Another word, another command that could only be obeyed. Each word she spoke was filled with her will and the Laws of the

Great Dao. Her world of will projection overlapped with reality, wielding the Great Dao Laws like the power of heavenly retribution!

In that moment, all of the magma in front of the Asura King was filled with the will of the woman. The magma suddenly hardened into incomparably solid divine iron before smashing down at incredible speed!

Bang!

The Asura King crashed into that magma that had hardened to an unbelievable degree, completely beaten up! At this time it was no different from a mouse in a cage. It had no ability to resist; it could only allow itself to be ruined!

And behind the woman, Lin Ming was already left gaping at the scene before him. A battle spirit could be used like this? Without using any true essence and only relying on one's battle spirit and comprehension of Laws, there could actually be such terrifying combat strength?

Chapter 1062 – Mo Eversnow

“Just who are you, why are you doing this to me!?” The Asura King wildly ranted. It could feel that it was already completely covered in the woman’s world of will. In this world of will, every drop of magma could turn into an incomparably sharp killing weapon and also into an inescapable cage. There was truly no path to heaven nor gate to hell!

Puff!

The Asura King suddenly felt an agonizing pain. A surging flow of magma had turned into a large spear that thrust through its chest, causing it to vomit a mouthful of blood!

“Ahhhhh! Flesh and blood sacrifice!”

The Asura King raved, its eyes filled with an explosive color. This time, it exploded its complete right arm, using it as a sacrifice. This right arm burst apart into countless motes of flesh and blood essence energy that flew towards the Asura King. The Asura King intended to absorb this essence energy, transform it into usable energy and then convert that into a last desperate blow.

But at this moment, the Magic Cube Saintess spoke out another word. The flowing magma from all around gathered into a massive ball that smashed into the Asura King’s chest, causing its ribs to break in and blood to cover its entire body.

And after the Asura King’s right arm exploded and turned into

bits and pieces of flesh and blood, it was actually pulled away by the Magic Cube Saintess and turned into a blood bead that spun around in her palm.

The Asura King had sacrificed a part of its physical body that it had formed with bitter effort and attempted to use that flesh and blood to increase his strength. But, after it burst it apart, he wasn't even able to absorb it. Instead, it was stolen away by the Magic Cube Saintess!

Just what sort of grievance was that!

The Asura King's eyes turned blood red, nearly popping out from anger! It had already completely fallen into a maddened state, and now it flushed towards Lin Min and the Magic Cube Saintess like an injured animal that was cornered!

Puff puff puff!

The woman's eyes flashed and in that moment countless flows of magma turned into spears under her will and thrust through the Asura King's body, causing a shower of blood where they passed.

And as this blood rained down, all of it was taken away by the Magic Cube Saintess, without a single exception!

All of the blood formed into blood beads that floated over the slender fingertips of the Magic Cube Saintess. In addition with the previous blood bead formed by the Asura King exploding its right

arm, there were now seven or eight of them spinning around.

Lin Ming was flabbergasted as he looked at the Saintess from behind. The Asura King was actually beaten into such a state. Its body's flesh and blood essence energy were actually turned into blood beads by the Magic Cube Saintess. These blood beads were wondrous treasures! They didn't even evaporate in the sea of magma a million feet underground!

And the Asura King had only formed its mortal body after absorbing almost half the dragon marrow in the supreme dragon bone. This meant that every inch of its body was a heavenly material. Originally, Lin Ming had only obtained the supreme dragon bone. As for the Asura King's flesh and blood as well as the incomparably pure mystic realm energy within its body, he could only look on with regret. He didn't even dare to think of killing it. But now, it seemed likely that the Asura King itself would be completely melted away and refined by the Magic Cube Saintess.

At this time, the Asura King was injured from top to bottom. But, its life force was still vibrant. This was clearly the vitality brought about by the Azure Dragon blood marrow; it was not something that Lin Ming's Gate of Healing could compare with!

As the Asura King looked at those seven or eight blood beads swirling above the Magic Cube Saintess' fingers, its face twitched and it began to maniacally laugh.

“Hahaha! I never imagined that a King like me would be beaten into the ground like this! I even cut off my own flesh to feed others! Since I am doomed to die here, you can give up any further

thoughts of obtaining my essence energy!” The Asura King’s eyes flashed with a ruthless and savage light. Then, it concentrated its thoughts, focusing everything on the core of its source energy in its body. At that moment, the Asura King burst out with a blinding black radiance!

“Shit! He’s going to explode!”

Lin Ming was shocked. An existence like the Asura King was completely composed of energy. With a thought, it could blow itself up, and the speed of this was extremely quick. There wasn’t even an instant to react; this was impossible to guard against!

But at this critical moment, the Magic Cube Saintess’ eyes shined with a severe light. All around the Asura King, time began to wind down. Sound, energy, everything began stretching out to infinity.

Time Laws – Concept of Stagnation!

Under the control of the Magic Cube Saintess, for a short period of time she could display the Concept of Stagnation to the extreme, causing time to nearly come to a standstill!

“Cut.”

The Magic Cube Saintess waved her hand and translucent white ripples appeared around her. At this moment, she finally used true essence. This true essence was not earth-shattering in any way; it was only the true essence of the seventh stage of Life Destruction,

and also the limit of the energy contained within Yan Littlemoon's body. Regardless of how powerful the Magic Cube Saintess' divine soul was, how incredible her battle spirit was, or how profound her comprehension of the Laws was, she could only draw out true essence from the body she was possessing. This was because her own mortal body no longer existed and her soul could not contain heaven and earth origin energy. This was the reason that her strength was doomed to be greatly affected.

Puff puff puff!

Ripples of white energy slashed down on the Asura King's body, sending flesh and blood flying everywhere.

At the same time, the Magic Cube Saintess' battle spirit fused into the surrounding magma, turning it into countless swords that pierced through the Asura King's body. This was truly what one called torn to shreds by 10,000 swords!

In that moment, the Asura King's mortal body was like a ripped bag of blood. It continued to profusely bleed, and all of this blood was gathered up by the Magic Cube Saintess and turned into blood beads.

Due to the absolute suppression of Time Laws, the Asura King was unable to resist at all. In fact, even its thoughts were incomparably slow. It could only allow itself to be slaughtered on the chopping block.

The Asura King was also completely cut off from contacting its

core of energy within its body by the Magic Cube Saintess. Thus, it was also impossible for it to explode.

The Magic Cube Saintess wiped her spatial ring and took out a top grade saint artifact furnace; this was Yan Littlemoon's Fire Pattern Furnace. After her body was possessed by the Magic Cube Saintess, everything in her possession could also be used by the Magic Cube Saintess.

“Receive.”

The Magic Cube Saintess flung out her hand and the Fire Pattern Furnace spun outwards. The Asura King's body and all of the blood beads were completely sucked into the furnace.

Then, a vast amount of fire origin energy surged out from the surrounding magma, towards the Fire Pattern Furnace. For a time, great flames crested around the furnace!

“Ahhhh!”

Faintly, very faintly, Lin Ming could hear the pitiful cries emitted by the Asura King. After absorbing the Azure Dragon marrow, the Asura King's vitality was just far too powerful. At the same time that this brought it a greater combat strength, it also meant that it would have to suffer an even greater pain before dying.

Within the conflagration of flames, the screams became quieter and quieter before completely vanishing. The Asura King's

physical body, and the flesh and blood essence it absorbed from the disciples of the four God Beast Clans, were completely melted away, leaving behind only the blood marrow of the supreme dragon bone. This blood marrow actually formed a small azure dragon within the Fire Pattern Furnace that flew around the flames, cute and lifelike.

Besides the dragon marrow essence, there was also a dark red bead within the Fire Pattern Furnace. This was the purest mystic energy left behind by the Asura King condensed into pill form!

Even an ordinary mystic realm demon had the unique Laws of the God Beast Mystic Realm inscribed into the mystic realm energy within its body. The first time that a genius like Yan Littlemoon had absorbed the energy of a mystic realm demon, it was equal to 10 days of meditating over the Laws. The older a mystic realm demon was, the more Laws it would have within it, much less something like the Asura King.

It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that even if one completely disregarded the dragon marrow essence that the Asura King absorbed, just the mystic realm energy within the Asura King was already a priceless worldly treasure. This sort of mystic realm energy could not be found in the outside Divine Realm. But even though there were actually many Asura Kings that existed in the vast and boundless God Beast Mystic Realm, the problem was that only low level disciples were able to enter. It was simply far too difficult for them to stay alive in the presence of an Asura King, much less hunt one down.

In just one incense stick of time, the Magic Cube Saintess had

completely finished her process of refining. The Fire Pattern Furnace shot open and a black red bead shot upwards, forming a sparkling rainbow hued cloud around it that caused even the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy to be stirred up. Only the birth of a transcendent divine pill would produce such a phenomenon. But in truth, what the Magic Cube Saintess refined was not a pill, but the condensed form of the Asura King's energy and the dragon marrow essence.

After putting away the Fire Pattern Furnace, the Magic Cube Saintess took this black red pill in her hand. The smooth pill was like jade to the touch. On the surface of the pill was the image of an Azure Dragon that wrapped around the entire circumference until the head and tail met again. This was due to the condensed supreme dragon marrow essence.

One couldn't judge this Azure Dragon by how faint it was. The truth was that the space within it was extremely mysterious. The total amount of dragon marrow essence that was compressed into this space had reached an absurdly terrifying degree!

The Magic Cube Saintess glanced over this pill for a moment and then tossed it backwards, throwing it directly towards Lin Ming.

“For you.”

As the Saintess spoke these two simple words, they were completely different from her voice in the beginning. When the Magic Cube Saintess first spoke out, her words dripped with killing intent and her tone was callous and indifferent. It was similar to the Laws of the world that controlled heavenly retribution. Her

words had given off a feeling like nature itself; unbiased, merciless, treating everything in this world as equal to ants.

But as she spoke these two words now, her voice was actually as pleasant as a mountain stream, pleasant and delectable to the ears.

Lin Ming quickly received the bead, feeling extremely flattered at the moment. Although he had always been together with this Saintess ever since he obtained the Magic Cube, he actually had no idea just how she viewed him. Towards this woman that knew all of his secrets and whose strength far surpassed his, he always felt a tinge of fear and awe.

“I have absorbed 80% of the remaining supreme dragon bone marrow blood in order to regain consciousness. As for this blood marrow pill, you may take it as compensation. The amount of blood marrow is around the same. As for the strength of the Asura King itself, you can consider it interest.”

The Magic Cube Saintess had only absorbed the blood marrow within the supreme dragon bone; she hadn't absorbed the bone itself. It had no use to her anyway, thus she didn't bother with it. The dragon bone was left over to be fused into Lin Ming and used to strengthen his bones.

The Magic Cube Saintess was a soul form. Blood essence and blood energy were useful in helping her recover. Before this, whenever the Magic Cube absorbed the blood essence of masters, that was all because of the Magic Cube Saintess. In other words, the Magic Cube itself did not need blood essence. The Magic Cube Saintess had used this method to tell and encourage Lin Ming to go

and seek the blood essence of powerhouses. Of course, when he was in the lower realms, even the blood essence of Yang Yun only had a tiny, imperceptible use to her. But now, in the God Beast Mystic Realm, after obtaining so much dragon marrow essence, the Magic Cube Saintess had finally regained consciousness.

“Lin Ming, right? This isn’t the first time that we’ve met. My name is Mo Eversnow. I am the Saintess of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands.” The woman lightly said as she suddenly looked towards Lin Ming.

Chapter 1063 – Another Dual Cultivator

“Mo Eversnow...”

Lin Ming was dazed for some time.

Ever since he had obtained the Magic Cube, there had been countless riddles he couldn't figure out. He had sought the blood essence of increasingly powerful martial artists for the Magic Cube to swallow, in order to not just obtain the memory fragments within, but also because he subconsciously desired to know the secrets that surrounded the Magic Cube.

The Magic Cube was the most fundamental cause of Lin Ming's rise!

Although, after reaching the Xiantian and Revolving Core realms, the Magic Cube in truth wasn't too helpful to Lin Ming. A great portion of why Lin Ming had his current achievements was because of his own hard work, effort, and perseverance. But, it was undoubtedly true that if he didn't have the Magic Cube, he would likely still be a small martial artist in the Sky Fortune Kingdom. His cultivation would at most be at the Pulse Condensation or Houtian realm; that would have been his limit.

It was the Magic Cube that had given Lin Ming the initial boost he needed to overcome the most difficult early times and also his lack of martial talent.

Lin Ming could confirm that the Magic Cube was one of the most

priceless treasures of the universe. What he had been trying to answer all this time was what the Magic Cube was and also what other functions it had besides preserving memory fragments. Why had it attracted the attention of so many Divine Realm supreme elders to fight for it?

Many of these questions circled in Lin Ming's mind, but he didn't open his mouth to ask. This was because he didn't know what Mo Eversnow's plans were. Although she had borrowed his strength to restore her consciousness, he had no idea just what she would do now. Perhaps she would even just occupy Yan Littlemoon's body and take away the Magic Cube.

If this was what she planned to do then it would be stupid for Lin Ming to ask about the Magic Cube's origins. She might try to silence everyone that knew about the Magic Cube, and Lin Ming wouldn't be able to resist her. He wasn't even able to deal with the Asura King, much less Mo Eversnow.

Mo Eversnow seemed to see the fear and dread in Lin Ming's heart. She said in a soft and calming voice, "You do not need to be nervous. Although I have been slumbering in the Magic Cube for 50,000 years, my consciousness has still had a spark of wakefulness. I have already been aware since you first touched the Magic Cube. My divine soul has been grievously wounded, and I need the power of blood essence to restore myself. I can only hope that a powerhouse will help me seek blood essence to help restore the strength of my divine soul. Of course, if it is a powerhouse that I raised myself, then that would be the best. Only then would I be able to trust them. I have been satisfied in your actions and character so far. You move courageously and you can also kill decisively. You do not make mistakes, nor are you soft when you

shouldn't be. At the same time, you aren't heartless either. You know to repay graciousness, and you have your own bottom line. And most importantly, your will is firm and you seek the peak of martial arts with your entire heart and soul. You're quite good!

“Originally I didn't have much hope in your talent. But, I never thought you would give me such a wonderful surprise in this aspect. For you to reach this step as a martial artist from the lower realms, that is simply a miracle.”

As Mo Eversnow spoke, Lin Ming was able to glean a great deal of information from her words. Every time he entered the space within the Magic Cube to absorb a soul fragment, that had been because Mo Eversnow had led him in and guided him to the Magic Cube, as a way to have him search for the blood essence of masters.

“Now that Miss Mo has awoken, may I inquire as to your plans...” Lin Ming tentatively asked.

After he said these words, Mo Eversnow took a deep breath. In that moment, an icy chill spread out through the air, even stopping the magma around them as if the entire surrounding area would be sealed in ice.

“I will rebuild my flesh and blood body and completely restore myself. In addition, for all of those that dared to move against my Verdant Feather Holy Lands, I will kill every single one of them! And that Tian Mingzi! I will destroy his soul and scatter it to the wind!”

As Mo Eversnow spoke, her two beautiful pupils gleaned with thick killing intent.

Lin Ming felt his heart skip a beat. Although Mo Eversnow was ethereal and lofty, as if she had never been tainted by the world, the truth was that she was actually ruthless and decisive, a person who distinctly knew grudges and gratitude!

This was also an understandable matter. The past Verdant Feather Holy Lands was likely commanded by Mo Eversnow. Even if it wasn't, she was at least one of the high level figures there.

“Tian Mingzi, he... how strong is he?” Lin Ming couldn't help but ask. Without a doubt, Tian Mingzi was that black-clothed man that had led 10,000 Divine Realm supreme elders to assault the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. Finally, Mo Eversnow had been forced to sacrifice her own soul to make a final strike with the Magic Cube. One could see from this alone just how strong he was.

“Early World King!” Mo Eversnow slowly and clearly said. But as these words fell into Lin Ming's ears, he sucked in a deep breath in response. Although he had already faintly guessed this, he was still truly shocked at hearing Mo Eversnow's confirmation.

A World King powerhouse. Between a Holy Lord and a World King, there was a nearly impassable divide. Within the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan's 100 million years of history, there had never been a World King!

Of course, this was ultimately because the Ancient Phoenix Clan

was only a human sect with the Ancient Phoenix bloodline transplanted within them; they were not true descendants of the phoenix. A true God Beast descendent... who knew how many of these characters existed in the entire Divine Realm? There weren't many God Beasts to begin with, and each one was an incomparably proud and haughty existence. How could they possibly deign to mate with a human? And if there truly was a child born from such a union, this sort of person could truly be called the most terrifying talent in the world.

This was because a God Beast symbolized the strongest physical body and compatibility with Laws. But humans had a deep and profound ability to learn and also the ability to study and train in martial arts. Such a person would have unimaginable achievements!

"That was his cultivation 50,000 years ago? If it's now, then shouldn't it be even higher?" Lin Ming subconsciously asked.

"Yes. But 50,000 years ago, Tian Mingzi didn't have his own great world. He only controlled a peripheral medium world. He could not be called a true Great World King, but should be called an ordinary World King."

As Mo Eversnow spoke, Lin Ming was surprised for a moment before immediately understanding. Although there were only 3000 Great World Kings in the Divine Realm, this was because there were only 3000 great worlds in the Divine Realm. In the vast Divine Realm, there were constantly new World Kings being born; they were almost always at a saturated state. But, a newly born World King wouldn't necessarily be able to obtain their own

world. They would have to wait for an old World King to die, or perhaps even simply defeat them and take over their lands.

But wanting to defeat an old World King with a deep background was easier said than done. These World Kings had lifespans that were calculated using millions as the base unit. There were even some extremely powerful World Kings that could live for tens of millions of years!

The reason the Divine Realm had so many World Kings was not that World Kings were like cabbages that could be bought on the street. Rather, it was because the Divine Realm was simply too broad and endless. The total number of lives in the Divine Realm was incalculable. Moreover, these World Kings all lived incomparably long lives, lives that were millions or even tens of millions of years. After accumulating for such a long period of time, this was why there were so many of them.

“Then Miss Mo’s boundary is...” Lin Ming hesitated before asking this. He really did want to know this.

“In the past I was only a half-step World King. All considered, I was only a Holy Lord. I was stranded in that realm for a long time and not able to break through for a reason, and that was because...” As Mo Eversnow spoke to here she looked towards Lin Ming. Her following words left him dumbstruck.

“Because... I dual cultivated body and energy.”

“What? Dual... dual cultivated body and energy?” Lin Ming’s

eyes widened and he gazed at Mo Eversnow with astonishment. She dual cultivated body and energy, just like him!

Of the Divine Realm geniuses, even if one was an extreme talent of their generation, there was an extremely small number that would fumble their way through dual body and energy cultivation. This was because after the rules of the heavens and earth changed, it was simply far too difficult to follow this path. For many people, the gains just weren't equal to the losses. Even if one were the chosen amongst all chosen prides of heaven, they still weren't an exception!

Xiao Daoji, Crimson Strifecloud, Huo Burning Heaven, and even the Ancient Dragon Clan's two World Kings, none of them had dual cultivated body and energy!

In fact, a major reason Lin Ming had stepped onto this road of dual cultivation was because he didn't know just how difficult it would be at the start. By the time he began to realize it, it was already too late as he had begun to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

However, it was impossible that Mo Eversnow didn't know this!

For those that knew just how difficult it was to dual cultivate in body and energy and still chose that route, there were only two possibilities.

The first possibility was that they were an idiot potato who had bitten off more than they could chew.

And the second possibility was... they were an unrivalled genius, with a talent so high that it was unbelievable!

Without a doubt, Mo Eversnow belonged to the latter. Otherwise, there was no way she could have become the Saintess of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. From the way she spoke, this Verdant Feather Holy Lands was also an extremely high Holy Land, possibly even a World King level Holy Land!

This was also reasonable. Otherwise, how could something like the Magic Cube fall into the hands of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands.

And, the reason Mo Eversnow hadn't become a World King before her physical body was destroyed was not that she lacked talent. but rather... it was because she was too young!

She was the Saintess of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, not the ruler. The Verdant Feather Holy Lands should have had someone older and higher ranked as a decision maker, possibly even some Highest Elder. And, Mo Eversnow could only be considered a junior compared to them. But even so, a junior like her was able to cultivate to the half-step World King realm... her talent could be imagined!

All of these thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind.

"I really wonder just what bloodline family background she originates from, or what type of special physique she had?" Lin

Ming wondered. He didn't believe that an ordinary bloodline could reach such a degree of talent. Lin Ming was also constantly searching for ways to improve his own bloodline and body.

Mo Eversnow didn't seem to have any intention of speaking about her glorious and wondrous past. She said, "Lin Ming, I never thought that you would also step onto the road of dual body and energy cultivation. Moreover, you've also managed to come this far. This road you have chosen will be extremely difficult. I only want to ask you a question: do you still intend to continue walking down the path of dual body and energy cultivation?"

Lin Ming froze for a moment before firmly nodding. Giving up all of his previous efforts was not his style. Moreover, since Mo Eversnow had also chosen dual body and energy cultivation, that meant that this road was possible. And, the further one walked down this road, the more benefits there would be. The only problem was that it was an incomparably difficult path to take.

Since there had been someone else that could try it, then why couldn't he? Lin Ming wondered just what boundary Mo Eversnow's dual body and energy cultivation reached. Had she managed to open the legendary Nine Stars of the Dao Palace?

"Good! Then I will help you." Mo Eversnow said, short and to the point.

Help me?

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. These words of Mo Eversnow's

clearly contained another meaning!

She didn't plan to take away the Magic Cube. In other words, she actually planned to stay with him for a very long period of time! Otherwise, how could she possibly help Lin Ming complete his dual body and energy cultivation?

In addition, there was also another, more subtle meaning. The reason Mo Eversnow had helped Lin Ming in the past was to help restore her own consciousness. And now that she continued to help him, there was definitely some other intention.

Lin Ming's eyes widened. "Are you planning to have me help you take revenge?"

Mo Eversnow was slightly stunned for a moment and then spared Lin Ming an appreciative look. "Smart boy. Good, you are correct. Do you have the courage to do so?"

Chapter 1064 – The Bad Luck Dragon One

In this world, there was no good that came for no reason and also no evil that came for no reason. Although today was the first time that Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming had spoken together, they were two individuals that had been aware of the other's existence for 15 years now, and were linked together through the Magic Cube. Their fates could be said to be inexorably linked together.

Without Mo Eversnow, Lin Ming would not have been able to use the Magic Cube even if he obtained it, and thus he wouldn't have his present achievements.

Without Lin Ming, it was unknown just when Mo Eversnow would have ever recovered her consciousness. If someone weak tried to help her, it would be impossible for them to find enough blood essence to bring her back. But if it were someone strong, they might try to delve into the secrets of the Magic Cube themselves and take it for their own. They could even lock down the defenseless Mo Eversnow and use her to refine a magic weapon or pill. After all, she was an unrivalled genius who had once been a half-step World King, and her divine soul was extremely valuable. Moreover, there were many special characteristics about her soul.

Only someone like Lin Ming, whom she had raised for all this time, had the possibility of helping her. Through these 15 years of observing him, she understood his behavior and personality. He was fair and courageous, and knew to repay debts. She could only trust in someone like him.

However, wanting to find someone like Lin Ming was easier said

than done.

Thus, Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming's accidental encounter could be called Lin Ming's luck and also Mo Eversnow's luck.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then said, "Miss Mo, the reason I can come this far today is your kindness. Whether it is revenge or reforming your mortal body, I will do my best to help you. Much less, you are also directing me in my dual body and energy cultivation, so how could I possibly refuse you?"

As Lin Ming spoke, all of this was based on his own view of morality and justice; he simply didn't care about Tian Mingzi's boundary or just what background he had. It was as if he hadn't committed to taking revenge on a World King, but rather was speaking about some insignificant character.

"You're quite confident in yourself! However, you indeed have the capital to be confident. In the Magic Cube, I've already seen everything happening to you. With your current talent and also the supreme dragon bone, you now have the qualifications to aspire to the throne of a World King. But, even that isn't enough! This is because you are tens of thousands of years behind Tian Mingzi, and also... in terms of talent, the Tian Mingzi of the past also stood out amongst all chosen prides of heaven!

"As for me, before I reform my mortal body, my strength will be extremely limited. I cannot use true essence and can only rely on my battle spirit and Laws to fight. At most I can contend with the weakest of Divine Lord realm martial artists."

In the past, when Mo Eversnow was at her highest point she had only been a half-step World King. Moreover, a great portion of her strength originated from her dual body and energy cultivation. Now that she had no body and she was unable to channel true essence, she was only able to rely on her will and use of Laws to attack. With all of her losses, it was already extraordinary that she could compare with a Divine Lord powerhouse.

As for the reason why Mo Eversnow was able to easily kill the Asura King just now, that was because the Asura King's highest level of strength was only equal to a Divine Transformation genius. Then, the Asura King had also suffered serious injuries and was in its weakest state due to having crossed its demonic tribulation. When it died, its strength was only comparable to the most ordinary and weak of Divine Transformation martial artists, thus why Mo Eversnow was able to kill it with such ease.

Lin Ming nodded. He had an approximate idea of how the situation was. To restore Mo Eversnow's physical body was easier said than done. Seizing another person's body was naturally a bad idea. This was because if one's soul and body didn't match up, then it would be difficult to amount to anything. As for reforming her own flesh and blood, that was far more difficult.

Mo Eversnow said, "Your greatest advantage is that no one knows of you. Tian Mingzi likely thinks that I have died already. I will slowly help you complete the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and pull out your greatest strength and potential. When I trained in dual body and energy cultivation, I collected a great deal of knowledge and experience. Not just that, but before the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was destroyed, I left behind some resources

and hid them very well. Only I can access these resources. I was originally planning to save them to attack the World King realm and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, but now I no longer have a need for them. I will give you these resources to help you impact the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. Then, once you reach the Divine Lord realm, your strength will be heaven-shaking!”

Mo Eversnow’s words caused Lin Ming’s heart to move. Resources left over from the Verdant Feather Holy Lands!

It was unknown just what sort of heavenly materials were included in that. Their value and preciousness could be imagined!

However, even Mo Eversnow hadn’t been able to open the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace; one could see from this just how difficult it was. Fairy Feng and Huo Violentstone had both told him that after the Laws of the world changed, trying to reach the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was the same as completely defying the will of the heavens. And now, it seemed that such words were not an exaggeration. Wanting to dual cultivate in body and energy was just too difficult!

Someone like Mo Eversnow could truly be called a heaven-defying genius.

Lin Ming said, “Miss Mo, did you only complete the Eight Inner Hidden Gates?”

“I completed the Eight Inner Hidden Gates extremely early on. Then, I used 1000 years to accumulate the resources and strength I

needed to impact the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. It should be said that I had already taken a step into the threshold of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. As long as I had another 100 years I would have been successful. But alas, I fell short!”

As Mo Eversnow spoke to her, she sighed. Lin Ming was left staring back, nonplussed.

He had no idea just what sort of monstrous genius Mo Eversnow had been in the past. Listening to the meaning behind her words, if it weren't for the fact that she had to expend a massive amount of time and energy cultivating the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, she would have already become a World King!

If she had succeeded, then the war of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands 50,000 years ago might have been another scene altogether.

“Very well. Let us leave first. We can continue discussing these matters in the future.”

Mo Eversnow said as she prepared to leave the sea of magma. But, Lin Ming dithered for a bit before saying, “Miss Mo, I have been thinking about how today's matters will end... the four great clans have lost far too many geniuses, and the dragon bone is also in my possession. If we leave the God Beast Mystic Realm, we will inevitably have to pass through the four God Beast Clans' transmission array. It is definitely impossible to conceal the truth of the dragon bone....and there is also Yan Littlemoon...”

As Lin Ming saw Mo Eversnow appear with Yan Littlemoon's

body, he figured that she should be okay. But, he was still a bit unsure.

And there was also the supreme dragon bone. That was far too important. The four clans had sacrificed so many people for the supreme dragon bone, so how could they resign themselves to allowing Lin Ming to have sole possession of it? The Ancient Dragon Clan might even represent the other clans to force the Ancient Phoenix Clan with all sorts of reasons, and might even have some of their genius disciples accuse Lin Ming of doing unsavory things so that he would be forced to share the dragon bone.

And let alone the other three God Beast Clans, would the Ancient Phoenix Clan sit idly by and allow Lin Ming to keep the dragon bone by himself? Even if the Huo Family supported him, there was still the Xiao Family and the Huang Family. Both of those families had lost a great deal of people. With so many sacrifices, how could they allow Lin Ming to eat up all the advantages by himself?

As for Lin Ming absorbing the entire supreme dragon bone now, that was simply unrealistic. With Lin Ming's current cultivation, wanting to swallow up this supreme dragon bone was too difficult. In simpler terms – he couldn't absorb it; this was a 1000 foot dragon bone!

Even if he could absorb the entire dragon bone, he would be standing on top of the wave of attention after it was discovered when he left this mystic realm. There were many matters that he simply wasn't able to explain. If too many issues got involved and some of his secrets were exposed, then the consequences would be

calamitous.

Mo Eversnow said, “Yan Littlemoon’s divine soul has been sealed by me. As long as it is me occupying this body then no harm shall come to her. As for her memories, I can wipe away any portion I wish. I can make it so that she only remembers you fleeing the battlefield with her. As for the supreme dragon bone and the Asura King pill, that is even easier. Don’t be in a hurry and absorb them now to prevent anyone from noticing anything. Then you can store them in the Magic Cube space. Not even a World King will be able to discover anything strange with you. Once you return to the Ancient Phoenix Clan, look for any chance you can to leave and go adventuring. At that time, you can absorb the supreme dragon bone and I can also lead you to find the resources I left behind in the past. I will have you reach the Divine Sea in a single go. Then, after you reach the Divine Sea, you can hide your aura in your own minor dimension. It will be extremely difficult for anyone to probe into you.”

As Mo Eversnow spoke, Lin Ming was floored. “The Magic Cube space can store items?”

“Yes. The Magic Cube is unfathomable; it simply doesn’t seem like something that should exist in this universe. Its inner space is something that not even a World King can understand or see through.”

“That’s great.” Lin Ming let out a sigh of relief, overjoyed. Ever since he stole away the supreme dragon bone he had been worrying about how to bring it out with him, but now everything was resolved.

“Let’s go then.”

As Lin Ming just spoke, Mo Eversnow’s eyebrow pricked up. “Hmm? Hold on. Someone has come down here. Just a single person. It should be a disciple of the Ancient Dragon Clan...”

Mo Eversnow’s divine sense was remarkably powerful. Even in this sea of magma, with the countless waves of heat and energy causing disturbance to the senses, she could still easily investigate everything within the range of 1000 miles without any problems at all.

“Mm? Ancient Dragon Clan?” Lin Ming paused. If there was only one person, then it was likely Dragon One!

.....

Lin Ming’s thoughts were correct. The one who came down here was indeed Dragon One.

Dragon One wasn’t adept in Earth Laws or Fire Laws. The only reason he had been able to come down this far was entirely due to his deep cultivation.

Originally, with the Asura King opening the road for him, he was able to save his strength. But just before he reached the magma sea, a terrifying explosion buried him alive. A massive pressure pushed down on him right afterwards. All the shattered rock and

soil collapsing on him nearly caused him to vomit blood.

At that time, Dragon One nearly gave up. But, for this supreme dragon bone he had burnt 20% of his blood essence, consumed two Nine Revolving Dragon Pills, and had even personally slaughtered many of his junior-apprentice brothers. The price he paid was simply too great. If he couldn't obtain the dragon bone then his fate once he returned to the clan would be beyond miserable! Just the crime of killing his fellow clansmen was nearly unpardonable.

He no longer had a choice to retreat. He could only succeed; he could not be defeated here!

But whether it was the Asura King or the mysterious existence that stole away the dragon bone, Dragon One had to admit that he wasn't either of their matches. He only had one method of success, and that was to take advantage of the chaos and profit. When the Asura King and the unknown existence were mutually wounded in their battle, he would sneak in and steal away the supreme dragon bone.

Thus, Dragon One was extremely careful as he moved forwards. He concealed his entire aura. In the Ancient Dragon Clan, there was a branch called the Dragon Turtle Branch. The Dragon Turtle was also known as the Bixi, Lord of the Underground. It was one of the Nine Sons of the Dragon and had the head of a dragon and the body of a turtle. And, Dragon One just happened to have a massive amount of the Dragon Turtle God Beast's bloodline in his body. With this bloodline he was able to use a type of turtle hiding technique called the Turtle Shrinking Art. It was an extremely powerful cloaking-type martial skill. Even an ordinary Divine Lord

realm powerhouse would have difficulty discovering Dragon One's location. As for the Asura King, it wasn't at the Divine Lord realm so it certainly couldn't discover him. This was also the greatest reason why Dragon One was willing to risk his life and come down here to steal away the dragon bone.

However, what he never imagined was that he would encounter Mo Eversnow, someone whose divine sense was hundreds, if not thousands of times sharper than a Divine Lord realm powerhouse's.

It could only be said that when people have a stroke of bad luck, they could scald themselves to death just by drinking cold water.

Chapter 1065 – The Wicked Cannot Be Saved From Their Sins

In the surging flows of magma, the passive Dragon One was like a tiny scurrying mouse. His protective true essence was lowered to the weakest state possible, and he didn't produce the slightest sound or energy fluctuation as he went forwards. Even the red light of the magma twisted around him, causing him to be hidden in a constant blind spot.

The Turtle Shrinking Art was truly the number one concealment technique of the Ancient Dragon Clan. It wasn't much worse than Lin Ming's own grandmist space.

"I felt some intense true essence fluctuations before now. That should be an indication that the fight was very intense, but not they've slowed down and nearly stopped. I have no idea what the situation is like right now. That unknown existence must be weaker than the Asura King, otherwise it wouldn't have hidden around waiting for its chance in the chaos. I estimate that its strength is much weaker than the combined strength of my Ancient Dragon Clan's 36 disciples, much less something like the Asura King! However, since it decided to escape downwards and drill into the ground, that must mean that it has some sort of advantage in this environment where it complements the Laws here better. Since this is its own battleground, it must have some chance of contending with the wounded Asura King. If both of them have managed to wound each other then that's my chance!"

All sorts of thoughts passed through Dragon One's mind. There were definitely certain parts of his analysis that were correct, but

no matter how much he speculated, his guesses would never have wandered over to Lin Ming.

Dragon One grit his teeth and ruthlessly swallowed down the third Nine Revolving Dragon Pill. This pill was a wondrous miracle pill meant to save his life. However, it wasn't instant; it was a slow process that required time. If the healing process of the pill was interrupted, it would cause a great deal of the medicinal efficacy to fade away. When Dragon One had swallowed two of these pills, he had been injured afterwards, causing their effects to be majorly weakened.

“I've already restored about 60% of my strength. If I burn another 10% of my blood essence, I can restore myself to my peak condition and fight with everything I have! However, the Asura King has already absorbed the Azure Dragon divine bone marrow, so its resilience and recovery ability is beyond extraordinary. I must be extra careful... mm? What's that? Someone's here?”

Dragon One was shocked and he immediately focused all his strength on the Turtle Shrinking Art and hid himself. After hiding all of his aura fluctuations, he completely blended in with the magma around him.

However, Dragon One's immediate reaction fell into Mo Eversnow's pupils where it was reflected for Lin Ming to see. Lin Ming felt as if Dragon One was nothing but a little mouse that was acting slightly cautious; it was a bit funny.

“How do you want to deal with him?” Mo Eversnow asked. Although she had used the words ‘deal with him’, the truth was

that the moment she spoke, the change in the air around her already indicated her intentions. Although Mo Eversnow was as lofty and high as a fairy from heaven, her heart was ruthless and decisive when it came to killing off any troubles that arose.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. Facing Dragon One this time, he certainly wouldn't speak of anything like kindness or benevolence.

Earlier, if it hadn't been for the disciples of the other God Beast Clans arriving, Dragon One would have already tried to kill Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon. Moreover, this person was too conniving and cruel. Although he seemed like an amiable and compassionate elder senior-apprentice brother on the surface, the truth was that he was sadistic and merciless, bold and with overly great ambitions. Dragon One was the type that would resort to any despicable method to achieve his own personal goals. This sort of person was the same as a rabid tiger and also a deadly viper; leaving him in this world would only mean disaster, and he might even try to bite Lin Ming in the future. After all, the past conflict had been remembered by Dragon One. Although Dragon One might say he wouldn't bear a grudge, he would likely wait for some prime opportunity in the future to enact his revenge.

Lin Ming had already learnt his lesson with Ouyang Boyan.

After combining all of these reasons, Lin Ming certainly didn't have any intentions of letting Dragon One go.

When cutting the weeds, he had to tear out the roots.

Lin Ming said, “I would like to ask Miss Mo to assist in killing him. My current condition is only 10% of my peak state. Even if Dragon One is exhausted, I am still not his match. Since I’ve already stepped on his face, I might as well crush him to death in the meantime!”

“Good, that’s also my intent.” Mo Eversnow waved her hand and a ray of bright light wrapped around Lin Ming. Both of them flew straight towards Dragon One.

.....

“Mm? They’ve discovered me!? That’s impossible!!” Dragon One frowned. He had 120% confidence in his Turtle Shrinking Art. Unless one had a Divine Lord realm cultivation, it was impossible to discover him.

“Eh... it isn’t the Asura King! Their true essence fluctuations are very weak... both of them are at the seventh stage of Life Destruction? Life Destruction realm... humans! They must be disciples of the other three clans, but how would they appear here? Were they also planning to try and profit in the chaos?”

As Dragon One realized this, he immediately became incensed. These bastards actually dared to come and steal food from the tiger’s mouth and pass his own bottom line! The supreme dragon bone was something he must possess at all costs. If these people tried to steal it away from him, that was the same as trying to take his own life!

“If you were Xiao Ping, Jiang Bai, or Argent Gale then I might fear you a bit because I would worry that you would alert the Asura King. But since it’s just you two seventh stage Life Destruction nobodies, I will just solve both of you right here lest you ruin my work.”

As Dragon One thought to here, a ferocious light flashed on his face. He didn’t retreat and instead flew straight towards Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow.

He soon discovered that there were only two people, a young man and woman, both wearing garb of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

“Lin Ming! Yan Littlemoon! So it was you two!” Dragon One didn’t discover anything strange about ‘Yan Littlemoon’. This was because Mo Eversnow had completely adapted to Yan Littlemoon’s body and the terrifying aura she revealed before was no longer as evident. Moreover, Dragon One had already seen Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon travelling together. And now, seeing them appear together, no matter how rich his imagination was he wouldn’t ever think that the Yan Littlemoon in front of him was no longer the Yan Littlemoon of the past.

Dragon One no longer hid his appearance. He only hid his aura and appeared right in front of Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow. Even though Lin Ming could clearly see Dragon One in front of him, he still wasn’t able to find him with his divine sense! Lin Ming couldn’t help but praise this type of exquisite camouflage technique.

“I never thought I’d bump into the two of you here. You two

really have some ability. Not only did you fellows manage to live through the chaos of that battle, but you even have the guts to chase me down here!” Dragon One’s eyes swept over Lin Ming before focusing on Yan Littlemoon. A sinister smile crept over his face. Before, he had been continually rolled over by the Asura King, now he got to experience rolling over others himself. “Hehe, since you’ve come, you two can forget about leaving. Yan Littlemoon, I really must thank you. You personally delivered to me your perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline and primordial yin! I will kindly accept your good intentions. Since ancient times, the union of a dragon and phoenix has always been an auspicious sign. Pillaging all of your energy will be a great benefit to me!”

In truth, Dragon One himself had a perfect Dragon Clan bloodline, but his primordial yang was long gone. Even if it wasn’t, the bloodline strength he gave away wouldn’t be too much. Moreover, Dragon One was the aggressor in this situation. As long as he locked in his own yang essence and used special techniques designed to ravage others and steal away their primordial yin, the advantages he obtained would be far greater than the negligible dragon bloodline he would lose.

As Lin Ming heard Dragon One speak, he shivered. His gaze on Dragon One became the same as if he were looking at a dead man walking. Although Dragon One’s words were aimed at Yan Littlemoon, Mo Eversnow was currently occupying her body. Dragon One’s words were the same as profaning Mo Eversnow.

Wasn’t that just asking to die?

“Really, the wicked cannot be saved from their sins.” Lin Ming

whispered to himself. But at this time, Dragon One already moved.

“I’ll send you off first!” Dragon One shouted out and thrust his palm forwards. Behind him, the phantom of a dragon turtle appeared. This dragon turtle had four thick limbs and bore a stone tablet on its shell. It gave off an incomparably heavy and solemn feeling, as if it were shouldering the stars.

And in front of this dragon turtle was also a five-clawed golden dragon, its entire body shining with a golden light, making all who saw it be blinded by the brightness!

This Dragon One actually had a mixed bloodline. He had a dual bloodline strength originating from both the dragon turtle and the five-clawed golden dragon. This was also the reason why the Ancient Dragon Clan martial artists were so powerful. It was because the dragon race was great and varied, and thus there was more bloodline diversity. By mixing these together, the martial artists of the Ancient Dragon Clan were able to obtain greater strength and more advantages.

Dragon One punched out with his fists, causing the magma to roil around him. But at this time, Mo Eversnow’s eyes flashed with a chilling light!

“Break.”

Lightly speaking this word, Mo Eversnow’s voice regained that feeling of coldhearted indifference, as heartless and emotionless as the Great Dao itself!

This sonic wave carried with it the power of Mo Eversnow's will. It smashed against Dragon One's fist light. Without a single sound, Dragon One's fist light seemed as if it were swallowed up into a black hole, vanishing without a trace!

“Mm?”

Shock and surprise flashed through Dragon One's face. “How...!”

He was floored in that moment. This aura, this feeling, this was absolutely not something that the seventh stage Life Destruction Yan Littlemoon could possess!

In that split second, Dragon One no longer had time to think about all this. All he saw was Yan Littlemoon raise her hand and flick a finger at him. Although she wasn't fast, her movements contained the profound mysteries of the Time Laws. In just this finger flick, time seemed to rapidly pass before his eyes; it was impossible for Dragon One to avoid it.

What Mo Eversnow used was still Yan Littlemoon's seventh stage Life Destruction true essence. But underneath the power of her battle spirit, it had condensed to an unimaginable degree. The lethality of this true essence had reached countless times what Yan Littlemoon could ever hope to accomplish.

A beam of light passed through the air, beautiful and radiant. But, Dragon One could feel a thick aura of death coming from it!

“This light will kill me!”

This idea suddenly appeared in Dragon One’s mind, making him feel as if his soul had crashed into an icy lake!

To an extreme talent like him, death was absolutely the most terrifying matter!

“Hahh!”

In that life or death moment, Dragon One shouted out and punched at the beam of light. However, with a light popping sound, Dragon One’s fist was directly penetrated by that light! That beam of light shot back out of his fist, bringing with it a rain of blood as it continued towards Dragon One’s head!

All of this happened in an extremely brief period. But as this scene fell into Dragon One’s eyes, this brief moment felt as if it had been extended to infinity. This was also the effect of Mo Eversnow’s Time Laws. For what seemed like countless years, Dragon One could clearly feel the god of death approach him a single step at a time. This sort of experience could drive anyone mad!

Su!

The shining beam of light pierced through the point between Dragon One’s eyes!

A fatal hole appeared in Dragon One's head, gushing with blood. His eyes widened, filled with disbelief and unwillingness.

“You... aren't... Yan...Littlemoon?”

Dragon One opened his mouth to say. But, with his brain twisted apart, his words came out completely distorted.

Mo Eversnow waved her jade-like finger and Dragon One's body shook before exploding into a fog of blood. His blood essence was completely taken away by Mo Eversnow.

Woosh!

Dragon One's spatial ring also flew out and fell into Lin Ming's hand. As Lin Ming swept through it with his mind, he was impressed. The grade of this ring was no lower than that of the Extreme Violet Ring, and there were also countless resources piled up inside.

This was the spatial ring of the Ancient Dragon Clan's top number one junior disciple!

Chapter 1066 – Treasures of the Dead

Lin Ming hadn't had enough time to explore the specific inventory within the spatial ring when all of Dragon One's blood essence was formed into a blood bead underneath the towing of Mo Eversnow's thoughts.

Once a human martial artist absorbed the blood of a God Beast, it could no longer be purified and separated anymore. When a human absorbed the blood of a Dragon God Beast, it would directly fuse into that person's bloodline. As for that person's flesh and blood, it would be transformed, completely assimilating the dragon blood.

However, the dragon blood that the Asura King absorbed was different. The Asura King was a higher form of a mystic realm demon. The core of its existence was a being of pure energy. Thus, the quality of the dragon blood wouldn't be affected, nor would it assimilate the dragon blood.

In fact, the Asura King actually didn't absorb the dragon blood. And, after it died, its energy form could also be absorbed by a martial artist. If it had absorbed the dragon blood then that dragon blood would have melted and become one with the martial artist's blood vitality.

Dragon blood was a one-time use treasure for a martial artist. This was also reasonable. Otherwise, the bloodline strength within the four God Beast Clans could be recycled without end.

Although this was so, there were still some martial artists with a very deep cultivation, or some genius disciples with a perfect God Beast bloodline, that had an extremely pure blood essence. Their blood essence would contain the source strength of a God Beast and had a similar effect to a God Beast's blood.

For instance, when Lin Ming obtained the Phoenix Blood Spear from Saint Artifact Pavilion, he had obtained the source strength left behind by the old Palace Master. Although this source strength couldn't compare to the richness of the old Palace Master's bloodline when he was alive, it was still extremely precious to a lower level disciple

Dragon One had the perfect Dragon Clan bloodline. Thus, Mo Eversnow also conveniently took away his blood essence.

This blood essence finally fully condensed into a shimmering red blood bead that fell into Lin Ming's palm.

Lin Ming already had the supreme dragon bone, and there was still a portion of the bone marrow blood remaining. In addition, there was also the blood marrow left behind by the Asura King; there was a bit over half of the original total left over. That was countless times more valuable than this blood bead. Even so, Lin Ming still planned to absorb this blood bead. This was because the only dragon bloodline that Lin Ming had obtained came from the drop of reverse scale blood that he had wasted 99% of. What he needed now was some lower level dragon blood to build a foundation for him. That would allow him to absorb the dragon marrow blood with the greatest efficiency.

Moreover, what Lin Ming had obtained was the bone of an Azure Dragon. The bone of an Azure Dragon itself contained the Concept of Endlessness as well as an extremely powerful resilience and regenerative ability.

As for Dragon One's bloodline, that was the bloodline of a Dragon Turtle and a Five-clawed Golden Dragon. A Dragon Turtle excelled in its amazing defensive abilities, and the Five-clawed Golden Dragon was for fast and fierce attacks. Both of them had different Laws that followed them. It would always be best to fill in the blanks whenever possible.

Then, Lin Ming immersed his sense into Dragon One's spatial ring.

As Lin Ming searched through the spatial ring, he sighed in praise. This Dragon One clearly came from a distinguished noble family of the Ancient Dragon Clan. He was near-certain that it was a family like the Huo Family or Xiao Family. This was a super family of their clan, and the Ancient Dragon Clan was itself 10 times greater than the Ancient Phoenix Clan to begin with. A super family of the Ancient Dragon Clan should have a much deeper background than the Huo and Xiao Families.

As he opened Dragon One's belongings, first were the violet sun stones. There were around 90 million violet sun stones. Violet sun stones were a common energy stone used in the Divine Realm. They were required to activate and maintain arrays, drive spirit boats, stimulate powerful magic weapons, and had all sorts of other uses. Because of this, violet sun stones were one of the most common currencies of the Divine Realm. Although Lin Ming's net

worth wasn't low, he didn't actually have many violet sun stones.

Besides violet sun stones, there was also a massive number of saint artifacts and pills. The worst of the saint artifacts were still high-grade saint artifacts. There were even two top grade saint artifacts. When combined with the ones that Dragon One had been wearing, there was a total of five!

These top grade saint artifacts were a pair of gloves, a vestment, a pill furnace, a necklace, and a pair of shoes.

Dragon One's combat method was extremely rare: he actually fought with his fists. An Ancient Dragon Clan disciple would normally use a spear. As they said, saber like tiger, spear like dragon; only a spear could display the greatest might of the Ancient Dragon Clan's cultivation methods.

However, Dragon One's weapon choice should have been related to his Dragon Turtle bloodline. A Dragon Turtle had an incomparably hard body and their strength was without limit. So, using fists in this situation wasn't a bad idea.

"A disciple of a distinguished family is indeed wealthy. Everything that Dragon One wore is a top grade saint artifact, and they are even top grade saint artifacts that approach the existence of transcendent saint artifacts!"

Of these saint artifacts, the one Lin Ming valued the most was the top grade saint artifact vestment, as well as the top grade saint artifact pill furnace.

“Dragonscale Robes! Eightsplit Heaven Furnace! Good heavens, these two items actually have the source strength of an old Elder from the Ancient Dragon Clan. Their quality is no lower than the Phoenix Blood Spear’s!”

Lin Ming’s robe and pill furnace were only ordinary high-grade saint artifacts he won from Huo Yanguang, so how could they compare with Dragon One’s! With this robe and pill furnace, Lin Ming’s defensive power and alchemical ability would increase by a great deal.

Mentioning alchemy technique, because Lin Ming had been busy cultivating, he actually hadn’t had time to train his alchemy skills, thus they had fallen behind. Luckily, now that Mo Eversnow had awakened she should be able to help him with his alchemy.

There was also that top grade saint artifact necklace. Although the quality was a bit lower, it was still a top grade saint artifact after all. And, an accessory-type saint artifact was much rarer than armor and weapon types.

“Mm... it’s mainly used to defend against soul and will attacks.” Lin Ming concluded after investigating the necklace a bit.

Generally speaking, accessory-type treasures had a much less extravagant effect than weapons, armors, and pill furnaces. But, their value was actually much higher, because the difficulty in making them was also that much higher.

Besides saint artifacts, there were also many pills that Lin Ming glanced over. Most of them were for healing wounds, recovery, or curing poisons.

“Mm? This is...”

Lin Ming pulled out a longan-sized pill from an exquisite wood spirit jade box. This pill was deep green like jade and had an incomparably rich medicinal fragrance to it. Lin Ming didn't know that this was the Nine Revolving Dragon Pill of the Ancient Dragon Clan. Dragon One had brought four with him, but now there was only one.

Mo Eversnow's thoughts stirred and she added in, “Lin Ming, this is an extremely wonderful healing pill. It will have the best effect when used on martial artists below the Divine Transformation realm. It can probably heal even someone on the verge of death back to 80-90% of their peak combat strength in a quarter hour.

“Oh?”

Lin Ming was startled. If even Mo Eversnow said this was an extremely good medicine, then its effects could be imagined.

After putting away all of the pills and saint artifacts, Lin Ming suddenly discovered that there were also several corpses in Dragon One's spatial ring. Looking at their clothes, they were clearly disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan, and they had also died under the hands of the Asura King.

Lin Ming didn't believe that Dragon One was so kind-hearted to gather up the bodies of his fellow disciples that had died to bury them later. The greatest possibility was that Dragon One had gathered their corpses in order to extract and burn their blood essence at some critical moment.

“This Dragon One is far too ruthless and cruel. Killing him is doing a favor for all the martial artists of the Divine Realm!”

Since Dragon One brought so many corpses with him, Lin Ming wouldn't be polite either. He took all of their spatial rings.

Like this, he gained many more saint artifacts, pills, as well as several bottles of dragon blood.

Lin Ming discovered that these Ancient Dragon Clan disciples all brought a great deal of dragon blood with them. There was ordinary dragon blood and even high quality dragon blood. Normally speaking, the disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan wouldn't save up dragon blood, they would absorb it if given the chance. But, these disciples that entered the God Beast Mystic Realm were faced with immense dangers from all sides. If they encountered something strange and were somehow deeply injured, then they would be able to use this dragon blood to quickly recover. Or, they might come across some great lucky chance and would need to immediately make a breakthrough. If they absorbed this dragon blood, it would make their breakthrough smoother and more thorough.

Thus, they were able to prepare for a number of exotic situations by gathering a massive amount of dragon blood. However, all of their efforts were taken in by Lin Ming.

“I have the supreme dragon bone as well as Dragon One’s source blood essence. This other dragon blood can be left behind for Yan Littlemoon. Dragons and phoenixes together have always been a good sign. The dragon bloodline will be an enormous advantage for her. Moreover, this dragon blood won’t leave behind any signs from Dragon One or the others. It won’t be a problem for her to absorb it.”

This time, Lin Ming had indeed obtained a heaven-shaking advantage, but Yan Littlemoon had only managed to obtain a few pieces of black coral; it was indeed a sad harvest. Then again, when Mo Eversnow had saved him, she had relied on using Yan Littlemoon’s body to do so. From this alone, Yan Littlemoon had helped him a great deal. The dragon blood from the spatial rings of these people could be considered as her compensation.

“Alright. Let’s leave now.”

Lin Ming organized everything. With the technique that Mo Eversnow taught him, he put everything that he could into the Magic Cube space to avoid unnecessary trouble.

At this time, Mo Eversnow guided Lin Ming into the space of the Magic Cube. This was already the seventh time that Lin Ming had entered the Magic Cube space. He never imagined he would be re-entering under such circumstances.

In the past, when Lin Ming entered the Magic Cube space, besides the glittering memory fragments that shined like countless stars, everything else was covered in a thick gray fog, blocking his sight. But as he entered this time, that fog had actually dispersed. Now, he could see that behind that fog was actually a vast and boundless expanse of starry sky.

The space within the Magic Cube was as broad and vast as the universe itself.

Lin Ming sighed with emotion. Then, as he looked ahead he could see that the 1000 foot supreme dragon bone was quietly floating in space, emitting a vast sublime aura. Most of the remaining blood marrow in the dragon bone had been absorbed by Mo Eversnow. She had used that to regain consciousness.

However, the dragon bone itself hadn't been reduced at all. To Lin Ming, the dragon bone was even more precious than the blood marrow. It could be used to directly enhance his body and lay a solid foundation so that he could break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace in the future.

At this time, Mo Eversnow turned into a wisp of white light that departed Yan Littlemoon's body and shot into the Magic Cube space.

The soul form of Mo Eversnow that stood in front of Lin Ming was her true form.

She was dressed in pure white, and her clothes flowed down the contours of her body like streams of water. Her curved eyebrows, her snow-white skin, her slender and curvy figure, her proud and tall form... she actually wasn't much shorter than Lin Ming was.

Her body fused into the very space around her, and her enchanting eyes seemed to contain the light of galaxies within them. From her head to her toes, every inch of her being exuded an inviolable and sacred flavor, a goddess descended from the highest heavens, an enthralling messiah. Just by standing still, the space around her seemed to be purified.

This was Mo Eversnow's original appearance. She had an immaculate and sacrosanct air about her that Yan Littlemoon could never hope to attain, as if she were the manifestation of etherealness itself'.

Lin Ming stared at her in a stunned daze, nearly unable to stop his jaw from dropping. The Mo Eversnow that existed in reality was far more dazzling and appealing than anything he remembering seeing in his dreams. He stood there, speechless for some time.

Chapter 1067 – Leaving the Mystic Realm

“Yan Littlemoon’s memories of this have all been erased by me. We may leave now. If I don’t have a body to possess, then my combat strength will be much lower than it is now. You will have to rely on yourself in the future.”

Mo Eversnow softly said. In terms of the soul, she was absolutely a peak master. Otherwise, doing something as reckless as erasing someone’s memories or possessing their body might cause damage to their soul. But in Mo Eversnow’s hands, there was no danger of any of that happening.

“Mm, I understand.” Lin Ming also didn’t plan to rely on Mo Eversnow to help him fight. What he could truly rely on in the end was his own strength.

“That’s right, concerning your grandmist space and the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower, in the future I will teach you an auxiliary cultivation method. Not only will it increase your strength, but when you use martial skills, this cultivation method will activate and it will conceal special energy fluctuations. Even if someone has seen the grandmist space with their own eyes, it will be impossible for them to recognize it. Moreover, those that have seen the grandmist space are far too few. Those that have are either Emphyreans or World Kings. And even amongst World Kings, only a truly small minority of them have been able to witness the grandmist space with their own eyes. In the past, Emphyrean Primordius was an extremely secretive character.”

As Mo Eversnow spoke, Lin Ming was overjoyed. Lin Ming truly

did have a great headache over the grandmist space. A great portion of his combat strength relied on the grandmist space, but on the other hand he was also afraid that some wondrous character would be able to discern clues from it. If that happened then he would truly be in danger. After all, there were too many variables when it came to something like a transcendent divine might.

Thus, when Lin Ming fought others, he wasn't able to utilize grandmist space in its purest form. If he had some special method to hide the grandmist space's energy fluctuations then he would be much better off. He wouldn't need to be so cautious and timid about his combat methods in the future.

Like this, Lin Ming brought Yan Littlemoon and left the sea of magma underneath the mystic realm. He deliberately chose another route to leave through. When Lin Ming finally emerged from the ground, he felt the pressure on him reduce by a great deal. He let out a deep breath, his tight nerves finally relaxing.

"It's over. This could be called a full harvest!"

Lin Ming said with zest. And at this time, he could feel that next to him, Yan Littlemoon's eyelids moved. She was finally regaining consciousness.

"No..."

Yan Littlemoon rubbed her own forehead, her mind a bit pained and fuzzy.

“Mm? Lin Ming...” Yan Littlemoon was stunned as she first opened her eyes and saw Lin Ming. Then, she twisted her eyebrows together as if she were trying strenuously to recall something. She remembered that after the 100,000 mystic realm demons attacked, Lin Ming had received her into his Extreme Violet Ring. But, she didn’t know what happened after that which had left her unconscious.

“You’ve woken up. I ran into a 20,000 year cultivation mystic realm demon during the chaos and my ring was destroyed in the process. During the destructive space vortex, you were knocked unconscious by the mystic realm demon.”

Lin Ming had already thought of the words to say. And, vague hints and conjured scenes were placed into Yan Littlemoon’s mind by Mo Eversnow. As long as Lin Ming mentioned this, Yan Littlemoon would indeed have such an impression.

As for the Extreme Violet Ring, that had already been taken into the Magic Cube space by Lin Ming. Now he wore an ordinary spatial ring.

“I have to apologize... I’ve burdened you again.”

Yan Littlemoon discovered that Lin Ming was in a bit of a pitiful state at the moment. Large holes had been burnt all over his clothes and he seemed exhausted. He had clearly fought through a violent battle just now.

As Yan Littlemoon realized that she would have been torn to

shreds and eaten without even any bones left by that army of 100,000 mystic realm demons, she felt extremely grateful, but at the same time she also felt very guilty. She had done nothing to help, and had instead only added to his troubles. When the Extreme Violet Ring had broken, if it hadn't been for Lin Ming saving her from the space storm then he probably wouldn't look so miserable.

“Thank you...” Yan Littlemoon whispered.

Lin Ming shook his head and said, “It's no problem.”

He continued, “Alright. We don't have much time until the God Beast Mystic Realm closes. Let's go and look a bit for some more lucky chances and prepare to leave.”

“Mm, that sounds good.” Yan Littlemoon quietly said.

After obtaining the supreme dragon bone, Lin Ming experienced several more situations. However, his harvests were much smaller. They were around the same as the black coral he had obtained before.

Like this, they continued all the way until the time within the mystic realm had run out. Each person was only allowed to stay within the God Beast Mystic Realm for 96 hours. Afterwards, they would all be transmitted away, regardless of where they were...

....

Ancient Dragon Clan – Celestial Dragon World.

On the small planet that the God Beast Mystic Realm transmission array was located at, many martial artists had gathered. Among these people were Elders of the four great clans and even Highest Elders.

These people had all come to greet and receive their returning disciples.

Normally, after the disciples of the four clans entered the God Beast Mystic Realm, they would return with some harvests. The best treasures amongst these would even tempt a Holy Lord. In this case, it was certainly safer to have an Elder come and escort them away.

And on the Ancient Phoenix Clan's side, the Elder who came was surprisingly Huo Violentstone.

“Haha, isn't that Elder Huo? Isn't this just a smelting trial for junior disciples? To think that even you would be bothered to personally come.” On the Ancient Dragon Clan's side, a middle-aged man laughed as he spoke. Generally, this sort of trial wouldn't be enough to alarm someone on the level of a Highest Elder.

Huo Violentstone looked up at the man speaking and said, “There is a junior disciple that went in this time that I appreciate and am quite concerned about, so I thought that I would come and take a

look since I'm free. Gold Evenmoon, didn't you personally come here too?"

"Hehe, is that disciple you're speaking of Lin Ming? I've already heard that in the Illusionary God Combat Array, he managed to complete the Thousand Slaughter, and even defeated Crimson Strifecloud in a vivid battle. Not bad. But what a pity, his cultivation is too low and there are many dangers in the God Beast Mystic Realm. I want to see just what sort of lucky chances Lin Ming managed to obtain this time, hahaha!"

Hearing Gold Evenmoon imply that Lin Ming would have encountered some catastrophic danger in the God Beast Mystic Realm, Huo Violentstone was a bit annoyed. He had never gotten along well with this Gold Evenmoon. This was also unavoidable. They came from different factions and certainly had to compete with each other. Moreover, Huo Violentstone had always been wild and hot-tempered in how he acted, so there were far too few people that were able to get along peacefully with him. "Humph, an extreme talent has a destiny that soars like a rainbow. Even if they encounter a calamitous situation filled with dangers, they can still manage to escape. It isn't easy for them to perish anywhere!"

"Haha, you may say that, but each one of those disciples that enter the God Beast Mystic Realm is an extreme genius of their era. Even so, there are still losses every time. This is an indisputable truth! Even though this is the first time for my Gold Family's top junior disciple Gold Skyedge to enter the God Beast Mystic Realm, he is still at the middle Divine Sea realm!" As Gold Evenmoon mentioned Gold Skyedge, he stroked his beard, a smug expression blooming on his face.

“Gold Skyedge...” Huo Violentstone echoed. Normally, geniuses of the Ancient Dragon Clan would be ranked on the Divine Fate List and then be called Dragon One, Dragon Two, or Dragon whatever, based on their corresponding rank. For him to suddenly hear this name, he really had no idea who it was. The four God Beast Clans had a new batch of junior disciples every 20 years or so anyway, and it was impossible for someone like Huo Violentstone to pay attention to all of them.

“It looks like you came this time for that little fellow called Gold Skyedge. I wonder what rank he is on the Divine Fate Decree?”

“Haha!” As Gold Evenmoon heard Huo Violentstone ask about Gold Skyedge of his own volition, he was extremely satisfied and proud. This was exactly what he hoped for. He said, “The first time that Skyedge participated in the Ancient Dragon smelting trial, he managed to take first place on the Divine Fate Decree. Luckily, he’s managed to maintain that spot.”

First place on the Divine Fate Decree? Huo Violentstone’s eyebrows arched up. That must be the so-called Dragon One then. This person must have quite the skill to be ranked that high. After all, there were just far too many competing disciples in the Ancient Dragon Clan.

Chapter 1068 – Marriage

As Huo Violentstone and Gold Evenmoon were speaking, the God Beast Mystic Realm's ancient transmission array began to violently oscillate. Ripples appeared on the surface, spreading out. It was finally time for the smelting trial disciples to return through the transmission array.

“It's time. I wonder just what the disciples who went in have managed to obtain.” Gold Evenmoon smiled, and the other martial artists present also appeared expectant. Normally, no more than 10% of the smelting trial disciples that entered the God Beast Mystic Realm would perish. Compared to the harvests that could be obtained, this was a necessary sacrifice. After all, the four God Beast Clans had a new batch of junior disciples every 20 or so years. Although it was a massive loss for some to die, that wasn't enough to affect the destiny of their clans. Moreover, geniuses required life or death adventures in order to grow.

As the ripples became increasingly intense, the first wave of disciples appeared. These people all seemed glum and spiritless. Some disciples even had visible wounds. They had clearly had a hard time.

“Mm?”

Huo Violentstone's eyebrows shot up. An ominous premonition appeared in his heart. Gold Evenmoon also stood up.

Huo Violentstone asked, “Was there a change in the mystic

realm?”

The Ancient Dragon Clan disciples looked over at Huo Violentstone with dazed eyes upon hearing this question. They looked at each other, clearly not knowing what to say.

“Was there a problem? Did several people die?”

All the Elders stood up, each of them deeply frowning. It was clear that some great event had occurred, otherwise it was impossible for so many people to be involved.

“Around 20 disciples died; we’re not sure of the exact number.” The Ancient Dragon Clan’s Dragon Eight said in a stammering voice. Dragon Eight was a Divine Sea disciple and could also be considered a vice captain of the Ancient Dragon Clan squad that went in this time. Although Dragon One would receive the main punishment as the captain, Dragon One hadn’t reappeared ever since he dove into the black swamp. They had sent an Iron Dragon Command but there still wasn’t a reply. It was possible that Dragon One’s fate was more perilous than they thought.

Thus, the responsibility of this debacle would be assumed by the several vice captains.

“20!”

Gold Evenmoon was immensely shocked. This was absolutely a great matter! Even Huo Violentstone became nervous. His eyes

wandered over the crowd, looking for Lin Ming and Huo Clearheart. Especially Lin Ming – his cultivation was limited, so if something so massive happened, would he still be able to live?

“What happened in there?” Gold Evenmoon hurriedly asked.

“It was... an Asura King. We came across an Asura King as it was going through its demonic tribulation. But, the Asura King was just far too strong. All of the disciples gathered together to attack it, but we failed to kill it in the end. Instead, we suffered critical losses and it’s likely that 60% of the disciples have died.” Dragon 12 said with a dose of shame. He was also a vice captain of the squad, and this sort of defeat upon defeat was truly a loss of face. It proved just how incompetent the decision maker had been.

“What!? 60% of the disciples! Gold Skyedge!? Just what the hell kind of sickness came over him!? The clan gave him so many resources and treasures and had him take the lead, but he actually issued such a preposterous order!?”

Gold Evenmoon said in an apoplectic rage. The Gold Skyedge he referred to was naturally Dragon One. He didn’t think that anything would happen to Dragon One. Dragon One was the strongest out of all the disciples of the four clans who had gone in, so if anyone died it shouldn’t have been him.

“Dragon One, he...” As Dragon One was mentioned, Dragon Eight and Dragon 12 both had ugly complexions. They eyed each other, motioning for the other to speak. Finally, no one said anything at all.

Gold Evenmoon felt his heart thump in his chest. Dragon One was the greatest talent that his Gold Family had produced in the last 1000 years, and also the most outstanding disciple of the Ancient Dragon Clan for the last 200 years. Although Gold Evenmoon had been yelling at Dragon One just now, if there really had been something that happened to him, then the losses would be unimaginable!

Dragon Eight and Dragon 12 didn't reply.

Then, a light flashed and more disciples were transmitted out.

Huo Violentstone swept an eye over the newcomers and simultaneously saw Lin Ming and Huo Clearheart arrive. In addition, even the weakest Yan Littlemoon was still perfectly safe. He finally let out a long breath of relief. Everything was okay!

“Coming back alive is great, it's great!” Huo Violentstone said, his palms a bit sweaty. At this time, he didn't care what harvests they had. It could be said that their coming back alive was the greatest harvest of all.

Gold Evenmoon also swept through the crowd. When he didn't find Dragon One, his complexion became thoroughly gloomy. After several more breaths of time, a few more disciples were sent out. And at this time, the fluctuating ripples of the transmission array began to die down. This was proof that no more disciples would be passing through the transmission array.

In other words, Dragon One... had perished!

The most outstanding young genius that the Ancient Dragon Clan had produced in the last 200 years, who had high hopes of becoming a Holy Lord level character, whose cultivation reached the middle Divine Sea realm, whose strength far surpassed all others', and who also had multiple life saving methods, had actually died in the God Beast Mystic Realm!

This sort of matter had likely not occurred in the last 10,000 years!

“Who killed Dragon One!? Was it the Asura King!?”

Gold Evenmoon wildly growled, his eyes bloodshot. As he looked around he was like a wild beast. In his opinion, although Dragon One wasn't the Asura King's match, he should still have had the ability to escape, especially amongst so many other people. Could he have been tripped or stopped by someone, preventing him from escaping?

Lin Ming was watching from the side. He remained with an indifferent look on his face upon meeting Gold Evenmoon's bloodthirsty eyes. It was indeed far too difficult to find evidence of who killed who in the God Beast Mystic Realm, so he didn't fear anything at all. As for some special tracing mark being left on the killer, Lin Ming also asked Mo Eversnow to look over him and she assured him everything was okay. In this situation, as long as Lin Ming insisted it had nothing to do with him then everything would be okay.

Huo Violentstone also realized an accident had occurred to Dragon One. Normally, with his personality, he would have been gloating to Gold Evenmoon and even mocking him for several rounds, but with the Ancient Phoenix Clan also having lost several disciples, he wasn't in the mood to do so. He only lightly shook his head and turned to his disciples, saying, "What did you brats obtain?"

The remaining disciples all took out the treasures that they obtained in the mystic realm for Huo Violentstone to see. Yan Littlemoon and Lin Ming took out their black coral. The value of this treasure wasn't enough to make up for the cost of the violet sun stones for entering the God Beast Mystic Realm.

"Mm... your harvest is alright." Huo Violentstone nodded. He was satisfied enough that Lin Ming had emerged alive.

Xiao Ping, the one with the highest cultivation of the Ancient Phoenix Clan disciples, had actually found something quite valuable. It was a bit of phoenix guide grass. Phoenix guide grass was a type of spirit grass that grew alongside a phoenix. It was extremely valuable and was even useful for a Holy Lord.

By all reasoning, there hadn't been a God Beast in the God Beast Mystic Realm for countless hundreds of millions of years, so any phoenix guide grass should have already withered away. But, the phoenix guide grass that Xiao Ping found was actually sealed within a piece of wood spirit jade and preserved well, just like an insect in amber.

Xiao Ping's harvest was naturally praised by the Protectors behind Huo Violentstone. With their status, they had to flatter Xiao Ping. After all, Xiao Ping was destined to become a high level figure of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

But Lin Ming looked on indifferently. This Xiao Ping was not any sort of good or righteous fellow. When the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan had been besieged by mystic realm demons and even some with 10,000 plus year cultivations, he had waited for the time when one of his teammates had died and then escaped by himself.

“Let's go. We're returning to the Ancient Phoenix Clan.” Huo Violentstone lightly sighed. Although the losses were serious this time, this was also the fate of those that chose to walk down the road of martial arts. There was nothing else to say.

At this time, Lin Ming said with a true essence sound transmission, “Honorable Master, this disciple does not wish to return to the Phoenix Clan for the time being. I wish to go out and adventure a bit.”

The supreme dragon bone could not be revealed, and absorbing it was also a very long and strenuous process. Lin Ming didn't plan on absorbing it within the clan. He wasn't even able to tell Huo Violentstone about it. After all, the supreme dragon bone was a type of treasure that even a World King would go mad with envy for. If Huo Violentstone found out, then even maintaining their current relationship would be more than he expected. It could be said that in some situations, not even the ties between a father and son could be trusted, much less the fact that he was not a direct descendant of the Huo Family to begin with.

“Mm? You want to go out and adventure?” Huo Violentstone frowned. There were indeed many disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan that went out adventuring to gain experience, but now wasn’t a good time for Lin Ming to do so. “Lin Ming, you aren’t even at the Divine Sea. Do you know how many masters exist in the Divine Realm? If you are not careful and stumble into some ordinary Divine Transformation realm martial artist, even they will be enough to kill you! Moreover, it is almost time for you to attack the eighth stage of Life Destruction. If you return to my Huo Family we can provide you with many resources to assist you, and there is even the Sacred Flame Testament which you can meditate over. There is even... well, I was planning on arranging a wedding for you. You two can be considered a young golden couple, perfectly suited for each other. A marriage like this is definitely a good thing!”

As Huo Violentstone spoke to her, he inadvertently glanced at Yan Littlemoon, who was standing beside Lin Ming. His eyes flashed with a barely traceable happiness. Although this happiness seemed simple, there was actually a mischievous and devilish meaning to it, as if he were up to no good.

Yan Littlemoon froze. From the start, she didn’t know what those words meant, but as realization began to slowly dawn on her, her large eyes widened. She looked over to Huo Violentstone in disbelief. Could it be...

The so-called young golden couple, perfectly suited for each other... that was... that seemed... to be her and Lin Ming!

Within the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, there were actually several women that had the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. But, besides herself, everyone else was a senior disciple or already married – they clearly didn't suit Lin Ming. In addition, there was also that look that Huo Violentstone shot at her just now. She already had a firm grasp that she was the subject of this marriage talk!

As Yan Littlemoon realized this point, she didn't know what to feel. For a woman with a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, if a man was to take her primordial yin, that would have a tremendous effect on her own bloodline strength. After all, essence energy was the same as bloodline and double cultivation also meant to fuse a portion of her bloodline with the man's, so how could she not be affected?

Yan Littlemoon had made a vow to never marry until she became a Holy Lord, because she didn't want the power of her bloodline to be diluted. But now, if she married Lin Ming, then she...

As Yan Littlemoon imagined such a scene, she found this a bit difficult to accept, and yet not at the same time...

She couldn't help but sneak a glance at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming didn't seem to have any intention or interest in a marriage with anyone, thus he never even thought of it. He only looked at Huo Violentstone and said with all seriousness, "This disciple truly wishes to go out and adventure, I ask that Honorable Master approves!"

Chapter 1069 – Secret of the Magic Cube

“You brat... why are you insisting on leaving?” Huo Violentstone huffed. But as he saw Lin Ming’s earnest expression, he relented. He knew that when Lin Ming did things, he naturally had his own reasons for doing so. He wouldn’t do something that he didn’t have a full grasp of. Whether it was Huo Yanguang or seizing the drop of Ancient Phoenix blood essence, he had done so with full confidence.

Lin Ming hesitated. In truth, having to think of a reason wasn’t too difficult. In fact, he could even come up with some ridiculous reasoning like he was being drawn in by the dark grip of destiny or something like that. After all, destiny was an illusory enough concept that he could attribute his reasons to that and there wasn’t anyone that could doubt it.

However, just as Lin Ming was about to speak, Huo Violentstone waved his hand and said, “Well, whatever. It’s fine as long as you know what you’re doing. I trust in your judgement.”

“Thank you Honorable Master for your approval.” Lin Ming was glad. If possible, he didn’t want to come up with some random lie to deceive Huo Violentstone.

Beside Lin Ming, Yan Littlemoon also relaxed. If Lin Ming didn’t leave then Huo Violentstone would truly bring up the idea of marriage to her Yan Family, and then she would be stuck in a conundrum of having to make two difficult choices. On one hand, she couldn’t help but admit that she held some good will towards Lin Ming. On the other hand, she had once made a vow to herself.

Everyone boarded the spirit ship and began to fly back to the Ancient Phoenix Clan. As for Lin Ming, he departed midway through the trip by himself. Just before leaving, Huo Violentstone gave him five million violet sun stones as well as his own spirit ship so that he could travel through space.

Lin Ming left the majority of the dragon blood to Yan Littlemoon. Most of this dragon blood was placed in a spatial ring. He only told her that this was a lucky chance he had obtained while she was unconscious and decided to divide a part of it to her, and also asked her not to leak out this secret.

When Lin Ming left, Yan Littlemoon finally searched the spatial ring. It was only then that she found over 1000 drops of dragon blood in the spatial ring, and this dragon blood was also of relatively high quality. This left her dumbfounded. She didn't think that Lin Ming would gift her something of such high value.

“Where did Lin Ming obtain so much dragon blood? Did he find a dragon blood pool in the God Beast Mystic Realm?” Yan Littlemoon mumbled to herself. In her opinion, if Lin Ming divided her this much dragon blood, then he must inevitably have kept far more with him.

“Could Lin Ming's lucky chance have been the same as the phoenix blood pond I found in the past?” As Yan Littlemoon put away the dragon blood, she looked out of the window of her room, gazing at the infinite void and countless stars of space. She felt an inexplicable sense of loss as she fell into a deep and pensive trance.

Yan Littlemoon never thought that Lin Ming would leave for years this time, and by the time he returned, she would already be at the Divine Sea realm...

.....

In the vastness of the endless space, a light gray spirit ship rapidly flew through. This spirit ship wasn't too big, and its gray surface seemed to fuse into the starry skies. In addition, there was a concealing array formation carved onto the surface of the spirit ship. If a master didn't carefully probe with their senses, it was impossible to discover.

The master of this spirit ship was naturally Lin Ming.

At this time, Lin Ming was sitting in the center of the spirit ship, studying the array formations that drove it. "Even for such a small spirit ship, passing through space with the great void shift just once costs 100,000 violet sun stones. It takes too many violet sun stones to pass through space... and, if one were to travel across the great worlds of the Divine Realm, one would also have to use transmission arrays, and that consumes even more violet sun stones. Poor martial artists can never afford interstellar travel..."

"That's right. In the Divine Realm, very few people use violet sun stones for training. They are mainly used to drive a variety of array formations. Especially for a Holy Land level palace, they must consume a massive number of violet sun stones to be maintained. Violet sun stones are the most common power source in the Divine Realm."

With a faint whimsical voice, Mo Eversnow appeared beside Lin Ming. She had been hiding in the Magic Cube during this, so it was impossible for anyone to detect her presence.

Lin Ming asked, “Miss Mo, I’ve had some questions that have been trapped in my heart for a long time. I wonder if it’s alright to ask you about them?”

“Ask away.” Mo Eversnow said.

Lin Ming paused for a brief moment, then asked, “Miss Mo, I want to know, just what is the Magic Cube? What rank treasure is it? Besides storing soul fragments, just what functions does it have? Why would it cause so many people to struggle for it in the past?”

Mo Eversnow gently shook her head. She said, “I have no idea just what the Magic Cube is. Perhaps it is the leftover crystallized soul of an existence beyond our understanding. It has the ability to crush apart the souls of all existence. However, with my strength, it is very difficult to meditate and perceive it, much less thoroughly control it.”

“Crush apart souls? Is it a soul attack type of treasure?” Lin Ming recalled that in his first dream of Mo Eversnow, he had seen her use her half-step World King strength to instantly annihilate 10,000 Divine Realm powerhouses. Many of them were at the late Divine Lord realm and even Holy Lord realm. She had even been able to severely wound the early World King, Tian Mingzi. One

could see from this alone just how powerful the Magic Cube's soul attack function was.

Mo Eversnow said, "To attack the soul is only a single function of the Magic Cube. It has another effect that truly defies the will of the heavens. That is... after it crushes and absorbs a soul, it can erase that soul's spirit mark and turn it into ownerless memory fragments. If one swallows these memory fragments, they can completely obtain the memories of others. This includes cultivation methods, martial skills, auxiliary skills, array formation techniques, and everything else you can think of! In other words, if you can gain control of the Magic Cube, if you kill someone that has studied a transcendent divine might, you can kill them and swallow up their divine soul with the Magic Cube. Then, you can erase their spirit mark and absorb their memories. You will obtain that entire transcendent divine might without the least bit missing."

Mo Eversnow slowly nodded. To date, this was the most powerful function of the Magic Cube she had discovered.

It had to be known that in the martial world, the foundation of every sect was their inheritances.

But, these inheritance jade slips could only be carved by those who had an extremely high level of understanding of these inheritances, and it also required a massive amount of time and effort to do so. This caused the inheritance jade slips of these cultivation methods to be even more precious, because those that were able to let a martial artist study extremely powerful top level cultivation methods to large success were far too few in number.

There were even many inheritance jade slips that were singular and unique, without another copy in existence.

Even if a normal disciple were to look at this jade slip and record it all in their mind, they still wouldn't have the ability to duplicate it. If they were killed by someone, that killer could use a soul searching technique, but all they would find would be incomplete fragments. It would simply be impossible to use this method to reproduce a full cultivation method.

In other words, as long as a sect preserved and kept their inheritance jade slips, they would never leak out their inheritances.

Similarly, array formation technique, alchemy technique, refining technique, all of this was the same.

In order to completely obtain someone's cultivation methods or array formation techniques, auxiliary skill memory, practice experience, and so forth, there was only a single way to go about that, and that was to directly fuse souls with the other party.

But all souls had a spirit mark. Once absorbed, the spirit marks would fuse together and one would begin to lose themselves – everything that made that person that person.

A spirit mark was thoroughly integrated into every piece of a soul. If one wanted to erase a spirit mark, that was actually very simple. One only needed to use a battle spirit to wipe out the spirit mark, but this action would also destroy the soul.

When comparing the brain to the soul, the spirit mark would be the same as every nerve and blood vessel that ran through the brain. It was impossible for a doctor, no matter how skilled they were, to remove those nerves and blood vessels without ruining the brain. Thus, when one erased a spirit mark, the soul would also not be able to withstand it. The soul would eventually completely break down into nothingness.

But the Magic Cube was different. It could perfectly remove all spirit marks. It allowed one to completely absorb all of an opponent's memories and experiences, no matter what top cultivation method or auxiliary skill it was.

Mo Eversnow's words didn't surprise Lin Ming; he had already been able to take advantage of this function. But, the memory fragments Lin Ming absorbed in the past were all of average quality and he had only been able to do so passively. If he could one day perfectly control the Magic Cube, then whenever he slayed a genius, he would be able to swallow their memories and take out whatever he found useful. This was the same as countless extreme geniuses helping to train Lin Ming. Once this began to accumulate, it would become increasingly terrifying. Lin Ming would be able to hold more and more information in his mind until it was limitless.

Lin Ming couldn't help but ask, "Miss Mo, from what I know, this Magic Cube is likely some legendary magic tool. How could it have fallen into the hands of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands? It seems as if the Verdant Feather Holy Lands is only..."

Mo Eversnow faintly smiled and said, "You're saying that the

Verdant Feather Holy Lands was too weak to control the Magic Cube? In truth, the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was a World King level Holy Land, and the one with the highest cultivation was my grandfather, the Verdant Feather World King. And, my great nemesis Tian Mingzi was once the direct disciple of my grandfather. The Magic Cube was first accidentally obtained in a mystic realm by my grandfather, but at that time, he didn't know what it was, thus the reason that he was able to keep the Magic Cube for so long.

“At the time, my grandfather only felt as if the aura of the Magic Cube was extraordinary. He began to concentrate his time on slowly studying and unraveling it, but unfortunately, there was some mutation that happened later. Perhaps when my grandfather was meditating on the secrets of the Magic Cube he caused some massive backlash, but regardless of what happened, the end result was that my grandfather's soul was seriously wounded. During this time period, my grandfather's strength was severely lowered because of these soul injuries. If a World King level powerhouse's soul is seriously injured, wanting to restore it is extremely difficult! One would need an unimaginable level of heavenly materials. For instance, something like the supreme dragon bone. A supreme dragon bone is something incomparably difficult to find, even for a World King level Holy Land, thus my grandfather had no choice but to slowly recuperate.

“But coincidentally, Tian Mingzi had also managed to break through into the World King realm at that time. His strength rose dramatically and his original talent was also astonishingly high. The only thing greater was his ambition. When he learned of the Magic Cube, he took advantage of the period when my grandfather was injured to ambush him and try to steal the Magic Cube! The result was that he underestimated how strong my grandfather was.

My grandfather had been a World King for many years and his background was incomparably deep. He paid a great price to force out Tian Mingzi. But then... more wounds were added to my grandfather's original soul wound, and he finally perished because of that..."

As Mo Eversnow spoke to her, her eyes flashed with sadness. Lin Ming also became aware. No wonder Mo Eversnow hated Tian Mingzi with every fiber of her body. He had been nothing but a rabid wolf. He was once the chief disciple of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, but he in turn wiped out the Verdant Feather Holy Lands! Such a person truly deserved to die!

Mo Eversnow continued, "Afterwards, the Magic Cube fell into my hands. But, because of what happened, a great schism appeared in the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. Some people decided to betray me and follow Tian Mingzi, later founding their own Netherworld Holy Land. You should already know what happened after that.

Chapter 1070 – Absorbing the Dragon Marrow

“Betray?”

Lin Ming’s eyebrows jumped up. After Mo Eversnow’s grandfather died, Tian Mingzi was actually able to tear apart the factions of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. This sort of plan had probably been percolating for a painstakingly long time, and he had likely even had the thought of revolting much earlier.

It was difficult to ascertain all the different interests and conflicts within a super sect. Although Tian Mingzi was the direct disciple of Mo Eversnow’s grandfather, as time passed and his wings grew, he began to reveal greater ambitions. And, when Mo Eversnow’s grandfather felt this, he began to guard against it. Tian Mingzi then in turn discovered that Mo Eversnow’s grandfather was guarding against him and thus their conflicts would never be resolved.

With Tian Mingzi’s strength and status, it was certainly easy for him to win over supporters. In the past, even though Mo Eversnow’s talent was beyond belief, she was still too young. After the old World King died, it was far too hard for her to manage affairs. Thus, the World King level Verdant Feather Holy Lands had been destroyed because of all these circumstances gathering together. It was a truly sad and mournful time.

However, through Mo Eversnow’s description, Lin Ming also developed some vigilance towards Tian Mingzi. This sort of person was extremely talented, moreover he was someone that was

ungrateful and had no virtues. He was cruel, merciless, and would resort to any means necessary to achieve his goal. He was a character who had even subverted a World King level Holy Land. Although he had managed to do so because he grasped the perfect timing, this still wasn't something that an ordinary person could accomplish.

“Enough. Let's not mention the past for now. The reason we left is to help you absorb the supreme dragon bone. There is simply too much marrow in this dragon marrow, and it is also too pure. Normally, a general martial artist wouldn't be able to swallow all of it. Even someone like Dragon One would have to slowly absorb the dragon marrow over an extremely long period of time.”

Let alone Dragon One, even the Asura King had used an exceedingly long time and only managed to absorb less than half of it. That was the same amount that Lin Ming was planning to absorb. Of course, that was the dragon marrow that was refined from the Asura King after it died.

Mo Eversnow changed the topic and said, “I actually want you to absorb all of it at once! First you will absorb the dragon marrow. As for the dragon bone, that is mostly related to your body transformation technique, so you can take your time with that. Because you are about to cross Life Destruction again, the more dragon marrow you have within your body, the greater the advantage will be, otherwise a great portion of its effects will be weakened. You dual cultivate body and energy so your meridians, flesh, and bones – all of it far exceeds an ordinary person in terms of tenacity. If you can't absorb the dragon marrow in a single breath then your dual body and energy cultivation can be considered wasted!”

Mo Eversnow sounded indifferent, but her words actually left Lin Ming speechless. Having grown so much, he had nearly surpassed all other geniuses he had encountered on his road, wherever and whenever. He had received countless praises from countless people, but now with Mo Eversnow here, her strict instructions left him flabbergasted. Lin Ming only thought that he could meet her requirements; wanting to go beyond them wouldn't be easy at all.

This was also reasonable. Mo Eversnow was someone that could have easily become a World King and she also chose to dual cultivate in body and energy; her talent had reached an unimaginably high level. The standards that she set for herself were naturally the standards she set for Lin Ming.

“Look for a place to absorb the dragon bone marrow first. Then I will lead you to find some more resources from the Verdant Feather Holy Lands in the past. And, although the Verdant Feather Holy Lands met great calamity in the past, they actually didn't completely fall apart. There were still some factions that were left behind. This is also due to the planning of my grandfather; even Tian Mingzi doesn't know if it. When my grandfather was on his deathbed, he revealed all of this to me. The majority of the wealth was taken away by my aunt so that she could integrate it into an influence somewhere. That influence should have slowly developed upwards by now. That influence should have completely cut off contact with the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, otherwise I fear that Tian Mingzi would have already eliminated them.”

As the saying went, even when a centipede was chopped up it

could still move, much less a World King level Holy Land like the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. It wasn't surprising that such a Holy Land saved up a great portion of its resources during its most glorious time so that they could have escape routes for the future.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. He asked, "Is your aunty trustworthy? She might..."

"She is trustworthy!"

Mo Eversnow firmly nodded. "My parents died early on. Besides my grandfather, my aunty was the closest person to me."

"Good. Then we'll go look for your aunty. I hope that everything goes smoothly..."

.....

Half a month later, in the vast expanse of space, there was a common-looking planet. This planet was countless billions of miles away from the great primary worlds, and the planet was also a hundred thousand miles in diameter. In the great Divine Realm, there were countless planets like this.

And at this time, deep within the planet, there was a hidden cave dwelling that had just been formed. This cave dwelling was layered with all sorts of clever concealing array formations. Even a Divine Lord realm powerhouse would have difficulty seeing through it.

“This is good. Let’s have you absorb the dragon marrow here. I’ve scanned over the surrounding area and there are no martial artists that should be able to threaten you. In addition to my concealing array formations, nobody should be able to find you here. You should be safe.”

In the Divine Realm, one needed to be at least a Divine Sea powerhouse to go out and adventure. Otherwise, one could die countless times. This was because there were far too many Divine Transformation realm powerhouses in the Divine Realm. Even someone whose talent wasn’t all that great could still cultivate to the Divine Transformation realm. No matter how talented a Life Destruction genius was, if they ran into some garbage Divine Transformation martial artist, they would still be done for.

This was also the reason why Huo Violentstone didn’t want Lin Ming to go out adventuring. But with Mo Eversnow accompanying him, none of that was a problem.

“Okay.”

Lin Ming sat down on a stone bed and took out the Extreme Violet Ring, directly entering it. Within the Extreme Violet Ring, the 1000 foot supreme dragon bone rose high into the sky. And around the supreme dragon bone floated a black red pill. This pill was the size of a pigeon egg and it was smooth as if it were carved from black jade. And on the pill’s surface, there was the image of an Azure Dragon. This Azure Dragon was the condensed dragon marrow essence of the dragon bone. Although it was faint, it actually contained inherent Space Laws that Mo Eversnow had placed within it. The dragon marrow essence was compressed in

this space and the total quantity was extremely terrifying!

Lin Ming took a deep breath but didn't move the dragon bone. He instead grabbed the pill. This was a pill formed from the marriage of the 100,000 year old Asura King's source energy and the supreme dragon bone's dragon marrow essence. Regardless of which one, both were precious treasures. In particular, the dragon marrow essence. That was something that would even cause the envious rampage of a World King level powerhouse.

As Lin Ming held the pill in his hand, he felt as if the pill itself was breathing, like there was a little living dragonling within it.

Lin Ming had already absorbed some dragon blood as well as the source strength left behind by Dragon One. All of that had allowed Lin Ming to lay down a foundation and had helped his body adapt to absorb more in the future. Now, it was time to absorb the dragon marrow.

Lin Ming directly swallowed the pill in his mouth. At that moment, he felt as if there was a tiny snake twisting around his tongue.

“What mysterious dragon marrow essence. The Azure Dragon that left behind this dragon bone has already been dead for countless hundreds of millions of years, and yet its blood marrow still has so much vitality!”

The ancient Azure Dragon, had a special characteristic, and that was that its energy had the attribute of endlessness. Its resiliency

and vitality were powerful to an incredible degree. Thus, even though the Azure Dragon had been dead for so long, the dragon marrow it left behind still managed to maintain its vitality.

As the dragon marrow entered his body, Lin Ming felt a flow of tyrannical and brutal energy surge into him, flooding through his meridian channels, bloodline, acupoints, and impacting through his entire body!

Lin Ming had already expected this situation. After all, he was suddenly absorbing a great deal of dragon marrow, and the dragon marrow had an extreme amount of vitality left within it. After entering his body, the dragon marrow would definitely not be resigned to allowing itself to be assimilated. Thus it tried to resist, hence the beginning of the pain in his body.

Lin Ming felt his body becoming increasingly hot, as if he were placed into a giant pot of boiling water. Although this heat was far from being comparable to the eighth level in the 18 Hells of Flame, when Lin Ming was there he at least was able to keep the heat away from his body by using the power of the Fire Laws and also his protective true essence, thus the true temperature he faced wasn't high at all.

But now, the situation was completely different. The heat was directly swelling up within Lin Ming's body.

A martial artist's physical body didn't have too great an ability to resist high temperatures. Even though Lin Ming dual cultivated in body and energy, he wasn't that much different either. His entire body began to drip with sweat. Because of the blazing heat, even

his thoughts became slow. Soon, his clothes began to burn until they were reduced to ash, leaving behind nothing but the top grade saint artifact Dragonscale Robe draped over his naked skin.

Lin Ming took great breaths of air, and every time he breathed out, fire would follow. All of the acupoints of his body expanded, and faint red steam flowed out from his body, nearly gushing out due to the amazing heat.

“Seal off your acupoints otherwise you will lose the power of the dragon marrow. That red steam escaping is the purest bloodline strength.” Mo Eversnow said, standing beside Lin Ming. In the past, she had absorbed a great number of soul fragments, thus her experience was extraordinarily vast. She was able to guide Lin Ming so that he could absorb the dragon marrow to the greatest effect.

“Seal off the acupoints...”

Lin Ming shouldered the agonizing pain and forcefully moved his senses to seal off his acupoints. As he did so, he felt as if his entire body were about to explode. A brutal energy tore through all of his meridians and blood vessels. Even though he dual cultivated in body and energy and his meridians were far tougher than normal, they still couldn't withstand such an overbearing energy.

Puff puff puff!

Meridians and blood vessels all over Lin Ming's body burst apart from the energy. His skin ruptured, causing crimson streams of

blood to flow out.

In this current situation, the pain of his skin cracking apart wasn't anything to Lin Ming at all. The true pain came from the dragon marrow that burned within his body. If Lin Ming's will hadn't been tempered for so long, if it wasn't incomparably tough, and if his battle spirit hadn't reached the gold level, his consciousness might have collapsed by now.

“Do not worry. The blood leaving your body is common blood! Even though you condensed a spirit body after crossing Life Destruction and your every cell was tempered by energy, your flesh and blood is still your original flesh and blood; you cannot yet be considered as having been reborn, only transformed. And afterwards, when you absorbed the drop of phoenix blood essence, that may have been an incomparably precious treasure, but that was still a mere single drop! That is far too little! Now, for you to absorb this dragon marrow is for you to truly be reborn, discard your old blood and your old marrow!”

Although Lin Ming looked like a fountain that was erupting with blood, Mo Eversnow was still calm as she watched this scene. She slowly explained the effects of the dragon marrow.

In truth, at this time, every single tiny change in Lin Ming's body was being covered by Mo Eversnow's senses and was under her complete control. As long as the tiniest unwelcome change appeared in Lin Ming's body, she could instantly respond and guarantee that his life wouldn't be in danger.

Chapter 1071 – Crossing Eightfall

Time slowly passed. Lin Ming withstood the agonizing suffering for an entire hour. This pain simply couldn't be described with words. It was like every bit and piece of his flesh and blood was being grinded down by the dragon blood. This was even more painful than being roasted within the Hells of Flame; his body was directly burnt from the inside out.

And at this time, the dragon marrow began to show its miraculous effects. As a part of the dragon marrow fused with Lin Ming's body, it began to display its powerful regenerative abilities.

Some of Lin Ming's shattered meridians and torn organs began to slowly regenerate. As they did, he felt his entire body itch. But before these wounds could fully heal, they would tear right back open. This painful ripping along with the unbearable itching was a feeling that made one wish for death.

All of Lin Ming's blood and sweat was mixed together in a crimson pool on the ground. Lin Ming had lost over 80% of his blood. An ordinary person would have died to the point of not being able to die any more. Even if it were a martial artist, losing so much blood would begin to affect their life source. But, Lin Ming had dragon marrow in his body, and this dragon marrow was slowly fusing into Lin Ming's own marrow and beginning to replace it. Now, the blood that he produced was no longer ordinary blood, but blood that was close to being a dragon's blood!

This was truly washing the marrow and bringing in new blood. He was replacing his own blood with dragon blood!

In this sense, the dragon marrow contained within the supreme dragon bone had a fundamental difference from the dragon marrow blood that the Ancient Dragon Clan had. Dragon marrow blood was only the blood from a dragon's marrow. Once it was transplanted into a human's body, it could only transform their bloodline. That sort of transformation could not compare with the complete dragon marrow. With the transplantation of dragon marrow, that was truly transformation of the marrow. One's own marrow would change too, and that was the equivalent of altering the very basis of one's blood. It would make one's blood more similar to dragon blood.

Mo Eversnow continued to stand guard beside Lin Ming. Every single change within Lin Ming's body fell into her eyes. Whenever some phoenix blood leaked out with the ordinary blood, she would cast a seal and lock that phoenix blood into his body.

This was the so-called union of dragon and phoenix. The newly-absorbed dragon marrow did not conflict with the phoenix blood in Lin Ming's body at all. Rather, they fused together perfectly and even mutually benefited each other. In the scope of Mo Eversnow's senses, she could see that Lin Ming was being thoroughly transformed. The blood in Lin Ming's blood vessels began to shine with a bright light. If one took a drop of Lin Ming's blood into a completely dark room, they would be able to see his blood emit a light golden radiance, similar to a shining night pearl.

At this step, Mo Eversnow knew that Lin Ming's transformation was thoroughly completed. She also let out a light breath. For an entire hour, she had been combing her senses through every single inch of Lin Ming's flesh and blood, feeling every minute change

happening. This wasn't an easy process at all.

“This is truly an extraordinary lucky chance... in the past, if my Verdant Feather Holy Lands had such dragon marrow then my grandfather's injuries would have been healed. If he was able to live longer then I would have been able to break into the World King realm. At that time, I would naturally have assumed the position of ruler of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. I might have even become the next World King of the Shifting Feather World and saved the Verdant Feather Holy Lands from falling apart.”

Mo Eversnow sighed. She had never had such a lucky chance in the past, but now Lin Ming did. If this continued, then Lin Ming would begin to accumulate more and more superiorities. His future accomplishments would reach a terrifying degree.

At this time Lin Ming had fallen into a coma. Rather, it wasn't exactly a coma, but a dormant state where he had fallen completely unconscious. Every single cell in his body had also entered a dormant condition. In this state, Lin Ming's body, meridians, bones, organs, all of them were experiencing earth-shaking changes!

This was a change on the cellular level. Dragon blood now flowed through Lin Ming's veins, and blood was what carried energy to nourish the cells throughout the body. To have a body nourished with dragon blood and common blood, of course the effects were different!

Slowly, Lin Ming's cells became more dense and the connection between them more solid. Every single strand of Lin Ming's body

could withstand a tearing force of a million jins!

As Lin Ming's body changed, even his nails fell off for new ones to appear. These new nails shined like crystal and seemed to be as soft and glossy as jade petals. They could even be called perfect.

A few hours later, Lin Ming's broken meridians began to slowly mend together. After washing his marrow and switching his blood, there were countless injuries littered through Lin Ming's body. But, underneath the new regenerative properties of Lin Ming's body, all of these wounds healed up. It would only be another one or two hours for Lin Ming to completely recover.

And at this moment, a sudden change occurred. All of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy began surging towards Lin Ming. The energy within his body rapidly expanded, and the regenerated skin ruptured again. Deep and shocking fissures appeared through his body, causing his flesh to split apart and blood to rain down.

Following this, Lin Ming's meridians and blood vessels began to shatter. Immense amounts of energy swelled up within him as if he would explode at any moment.

Mo Eversnow wrinkled her eyebrows as she saw this sudden change. "He's actually crossing Eightfall at such a time, mm... so he had been suppressing his cultivation all this time..."

In truth, Lin Ming had long been able to cross Eightfall, but he had been tamping down his own strength because he wished to

better perceive the Laws. If he did so, then when he crossed Ninefall he would be able to have a greater baptism of the Heavenly Dao and obtain a much more significant advantage from that. But now, with his body having entered a dormant state and no consciousness lingering in his spiritual sea, he was naturally unable to suppress the energy in his body. Thus, he began to spontaneously cross the eighth stage of Life Destruction; this was caused by the Laws of the Heavenly Dao.

As Mo Eversnow saw the limited amount of energy within the Extreme Violet Ring be completely sucked dry by Lin Ming, she quickly formed several seals and slammed them into his body, unlocking the energy within the pill he swallowed.

When Mo Eversnow refined the Asura King, she had sealed all of the Asura King's source energy into the pill. As for the dragon marrow, that formed the Azure Dragon that wrapped around the bead.

From the very beginning when Lin Ming swallowed the pill, he had only absorbed the dragon marrow. The Asura King's source energy was still sealed away. This was because Mo Eversnow had considered the amount of energy Lin Ming could withstand. Absorbing that much dragon marrow was already at the edge of his limits. If he had absorbed the Asura King's source energy during that, then his body would have exploded into ashes.

But now that Lin Ming had completely fused the dragon marrow into his body and was starting to cross the eighth stage of Life Destruction, this was naturally the best time to unlock the energy within the pill.

“One lucky chance has just ended and now another lucky chance has come. This is the total source strength of the Asura King, but it is used for you to cross the eighth stage of Life Destruction.”

Although there were countless mystic realms scattered all throughout the Divine Realm, there were great energy barriers that blocked entry to many of them. The strong were unable to go, and the weak were definitely not the match of an opponent like the Asura King. The Asura King's source energy contained the special Laws of the God Beast Mystic Realm, and it would be able to make up for Lin Ming's comprehension of Laws to an extremely great degree.

In fact, the mystic realms of the Divine Realm were far larger than most people ever imagined. Every single mystic realm could be called its own separate universe. With the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds and the billion worlds of the lower realms, there were different Laws everywhere. Every single world contained infinite mysteries and countless different space-times. The God Beast Mystic Realm was only a single one of these.

Bang!

As the seal was undone, Lin Ming's body shined as if a sun appeared within him. A pure mystic realm energy thoroughly erupted, savagely attacking his body.

In the moment that the energy erupted, Lin Ming's physical body completely decomposed as his flesh collapsed!

At that moment, Lin Ming began to officially attack the eighth stage of Life Destruction!

In the past when Lin Ming was in the Sky Spill Continent, because of the limitations on one's horizons due to insufficient resources and inheritances, Eightfall was the symbol of a top character that would be remembered throughout history. And now, Lin Ming had finally stepped into the eighth stage of Life Destruction.

The rays of light became increasingly bright. Lin Ming's skin, organs, muscles, everything began to break down into the tiniest particles. Even his dantian broke and his black hole revolving core split apart. Then, his soul also began to decompose.

At the seventh, eighth and ninth stages of Life Destruction, the human body would break down, the revolving core would shatter, and even the soul would dissolve. This was the so-called breaking and reforming of a martial artist's essence, energy, and divine.

Normally, an extremely talented character like Lin Ming would not experience any dangers upon crossing Eightfall. But, he cultivated dual body and energy, and thus his body was extremely tough. He would encounter multiple layers of resistance in crossing Eightfall.

But, Lin Ming's foundation was solid and he even had the source strength of the Asura King supporting him. In addition, with Mo Eversnow watching over him, there wasn't any problem at all. A

normal dual body and energy martial artist would find crossing every single stage of Life Destruction to be a tremendous life or death hurdle. If their talent, resources, or lucky chances were lacking, they would instead directly perish during Life Destruction.

However, from the very start and up until now when he was crossing the eighth stage of Life Destruction, Lin Ming had consumed all sorts of heavenly materials, gathered all sorts of rare lucky chances, and had even borrowed the strength of special thunder and flames to arrive at this point. Just this alone would cause nearly all geniuses of the Divine Realm to shrink back in fear from ever choosing the path of dual body and energy cultivation. After all, a person had limited time and energy. If so, then maybe it would be more beneficial to spend all that time meditating on the Laws so that they could experience a greater baptism of Laws during Ninefall.

As Lin Ming's soul completely broke down and mixed into his primordial soup of life, his consciousness still faintly existed. He could feel a sea of special energy floating all around him. This energy was completely different from the energies currently present in the Divine Realm, and it also represented a different power of Laws: these were mystic realm Laws.

Lin Ming wandered through this sea of mystic realm energy and mystic realm Laws for an untold period of time. His soul broke again and again and again. He forgot the passing of time and even his sense of self.

During this period, Mo Eversnow continued to stand guard next

to Lin Ming. As she looked at a nearby hourglass, she could see that 18 days had passed. Lin Ming's crossing of the eighth stage of Life Destruction was finally coming to an end.

The process of Lin Ming crossing Life Destruction this time was extremely slow. His body, dantian, and soul were far more thoroughly broken down. This was because of the mystic realm Laws. It could be said that Lin Ming's soul was experiencing a continued baptism.

And at this moment, Lin Ming's body began to truly reform. Above the hidden cave dwelling, with the clapping of thunder, all of the heaven and earth origin energy was stirred up. The heaven and earth origin energy for several hundred miles around was stirred up, forming a massive vortex!

A cloud slowly formed in the skies. This was Lin Ming's Eightfall origin energy cloud!

As Lin Ming crossed Eightfall, without any surprise at all, an origin energy cloud world phenomenon appeared once more!

Chapter 1072 – Display of Strength

As soon as Mo Eversnow sensed the appearance of the origin energy cloud, she perked up. Although there had been several layers of concealing array formations laid down, they were only to hide the cave dwelling. It was extremely difficult to hide this sort of turbulent heaven and earth origin energy. Luckily, there wasn't any sort of extremely powerful master on this planet. As long as no Divine Lord powerhouse appeared, Mo Eversnow would be able to kill them.

The origin energy cloud grew increasingly large. From three miles, to six miles, nine miles, 12 miles... all the way to 18 miles!

“Six Layered Heavens Life Destruction?”

Mo Eversnow's complexion changed as she sensed the size of the origin energy cloud outside of the cave dwelling. A Six Layered Heavens ninth stage Life Destruction couldn't be considered anything at all, but a Six Layered Heavens eighth stage Life Destruction was something else. When Lin Ming finally broke through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction, the size of the origin energy cloud he produced then would be on a horrifying scale.

At this moment, the particles of Lin Ming's flesh and blood turned into a red light that broke out of the cave dwelling, piercing straight into the origin energy clouds. The heavens and earth lost their color as winds and storms surged about!

The origin energy clouds contained both Mystic Realm Laws as

well as Grandmist Laws. The simultaneous existence of both of these caused the clouds to alternate between a dark gray and dark red. This was a completely different scene from the origin energy clouds that appeared when an ordinary martial artist crossed Ninefall.

It would take some time for Lin Ming to finish his baptism of Laws in the origin energy clouds. Mo Eversnow cast out her divine sense as far as she could reach, keeping a tight guard over every minor change. If she encountered a middle or late Divine Lord realm powerhouse then she would rather interrupt Lin Ming's eighth stage Life Destruction and have him not fully complete it than risk his life.

Of course, the chances of this happening were extremely tiny. When Lin Ming left, his whereabouts were kept completely secret. Besides Huo Violentstone, Yan Littlemoon, and a few other people, no one even knew that Lin Ming had left the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Then, he had used the universal great void shift on the spirit ship and had long ago arrived at a different great world of the Divine Realm. He had even chosen a planet where the average martial artist's cultivation was extremely low. If he happened to run into a Divine Lord powerhouse that was simply travelling about, then it could only be said he was extremely unlucky.

“Mm? Some people have arrived.”

Mo Eversnow turned and glanced in a distant direction. She was looking towards an island several thousand miles away. There was a large gang located on this island. The difference between a gang and a sect was that a sect had a core inheritance continually passed

down, whereas a gang was nothing but a loose organization of martial artists gathered together for some purpose.

This was only a ‘large gang’ in the context of this planet. Of course, even saying that, the truth was that its strength was around equal to the Sky Spill Continent’s Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. In the Divine Realm, there were numerous Holy Lands. As for small sects and small gangs like this, they had reached a terrifying number. There were more of them than there were drops of water in the endless sea. When adventuring in the outside world, one would usually encounter small sects and gangs like these. As for a larger influence like the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there couldn’t be said to be too many of them on a great world of the Divine Realm, thus they were relatively rare.

“What is that?” An early Divine Sea martial artist discovered the changes happening in the distant heaven and earth origin energy, as well as the flashing gray and red lights.

“Is it a world phenomenon of a heavenly treasure being born? Or is it the Ninefall phenomenon listed in the ancient texts?”

“I doubt it is someone crossing Ninefall; it is different from what I’ve read. Then again, it’s not like crossing Ninefall is so easy. On our continent such a situation hasn’t appeared in several thousand years! Judging from how intense the heaven and earth origin energy fluctuations are, it is probably a rare treasure being born unto the world. This might be our great lucky chance. Let’s go and take a look!”

The location that Mo Eversnow had chosen for this cave dwelling

was the richest point of origin energy on this planet. Going into seclusion here would be extremely beneficial to Lin Ming. But, this place having the richest origin energy also meant that it had the most sects and gangs, and the competition between powerhouses here was also the most intense.

In fact, there were indeed a great number of heavenly materials here, thus many robbers and bandits had gathered here too.

And Lin Ming had stirred up too much heaven and earth origin energy in his crossing of Eightfall. Soon, the martial artists or three nearby gangs spotted him and began rushing over.

Among these people, there were only over a dozen Divine Sea realm martial artists, and the majority were Life Destruction realm martial artists along with several Revolving Core realm juniors out for adventuring. Even in the Divine Realm, most martial artists were still low level ones like these, especially on such a small planet.

“Mm? There’s an energy field barrier blocking the way!”

“Is this an energy field formed by the treasure?”

“Attack it, destroy it!”

Before these martial artists arrived, Mo Eversnow had already used her world of will projection to lock out the surrounding space, not allowing anyone to approach or discover what was

happening inside. For someone like Mo Eversnow, it was extremely easy for her to keep out this group of people. And at this time, Lin Ming's Life Destruction also began to come to an end. The origin energy clouds began to contract and shrink downwards.

Lin Ming's brain, bones, organs, muscles, blood, skin, hair, all of it began to form one after the other. This included even his soul. After being tempered with so much energy, the Law fragment runes had carved themselves into Lin Ming's very flesh and blood, and even into his marrow.

He had finally crossed the eighth stage of Life Destruction.

Lin Ming suddenly opened his eyes and lightning seemed to crackle in his pupils. Every breath he took seemed to inhale and exhale pure heaven and earth origin energy. From the seventh stage to the eighth stage of Life Destruction, although he had only crossed a small boundary, his strength had actually soared to another level. This sort of effect was far from what passing a small boundary could be described with.

If he had to fight against the Eightfall Crimson Strifecloud from the Illusionary God Combat Array, he could even roll right over him!

"Not bad." Mo Eversnow said some rare words of appreciation. "There are quite a few people that have gathered outside. Deal with them as you wish."

Mo Eversnow took back her own world of will projection and

submerged into the Magic Cube.

As the energy field was removed, Lin Ming immediately fell into the encirclement of the martial artists from the three gangs.

Of these people, the ones leading were mostly at the late Divine Sea, and the strongest one even neared the Divine Transformation realm. That person wore a black medium-grade saint artifact armor and had an extremely large and robust build.

The black-armored large man looked through Lin Ming's cultivation and his eyes flashed with a cold light. He released and covered Lin Ming with his killing intent, trying to suppress Lin Ming with his own pressure. "Brat, are you the only one here? Which gang are you from?"

Every world in the Divine Realm had different customs and traditions. This planet had more gangs than they did sects. Martial artists that joined a gang did so through a combination of interests. They might join together to help complete various tasks given to them by their sects from different planets, or they might be organizing more people to explore mystic realms, or they might even be part-time robbers. In fact, many large gangs were nothing but roaming packs of robbers.

The black-armored large man didn't think Lin Ming travelled here from some other planet. For an eighth stage Life Destruction boy to engage in interstellar travel was a completely idiotic idea. And looking at Lin Ming's solid foundation, this boy seemed to have some talent.

“You fucker, our boss has asked you a question! Are you deaf!?” Seeing Lin Ming remain silent, several of the black-armored large fellow’s underlings grew angry. Their group had over a dozen Divine Sea masters, and they were now threatening an eighth stage Life Destruction boy with their killing intent, however, the boy did not kneel and beg for mercy, nor was he scared shitless. How could any one of them feel comfortable about this?

It had to be known that these martial artists were all people that constantly danced on the edge of death. They were masters who had been tempered through countless bloody battles. They could tell at first glance that Lin Ming was likely one of those disciples of a distinguished family. These people had deep backgrounds, but they were in reality nothing more than flowers grown in a greenhouse; they simply couldn’t withstand the wind and rain of the world.

“Fuck! This damned idiot, I think that he has already taken the treasure. Cut off his limbs and search his soul; we’re taking the treasure back!”

An early Divine Sea monkey-faced man unhappily said. He was originally a bandit to begin with, so doing this sort of thing came naturally to him.

He prepared to act as soon as he spoke. Lin Ming’s cultivation was simply too low for him to develop any sort of caution in his heart. But just as he was about to attack, Lin Ming was actually the first one to do so.

Lin Ming didn't even use the Phoenix Blood Spear. He simply lifted two fingers. Using fingers as a spear, a spear light shot outwards. A shimmering blue beam of light crossed through the skies. No one was able to clearly make out the path of this beam of light. With just a light 'puff' sound, the monkey-faced man's forehead was directly pierced through by the light. Blood splashed out from the back of his head as he died on the spot.

In that moment, everyone was stunned. No one had sensed Lin Ming's killing intent. All they saw was a flash of blue light and then the monkey-faced man had died.

This was too strange. Some people even suspected whether or not that was Lin Ming who had just attacked.

"Everyone be careful. There is some sort of unknown offensive treasure on that brat's body. It might even be what caused those heaven and earth origin energy fluctuations just now. Let's attack together!"

As Lin Ming killed a person with a single strike, even the black-armored large fellow was alarmed by this. However, he didn't panic. He didn't believe that Lin Ming had this sort of strength to begin with; there must be some other secret to such a trick. If he ran away just because he didn't understand something, and in the end it turned out that all his fears were due to his own idiocy, then he really wouldn't have any face left. Then again, his cultivation neared the Divine Transformation realm, and he could also instantly kill that monkey-faced man. There was just no need for him to fear Lin Ming.

Over a dozen Divine Sea powerhouses attacked together as well as several eighth stage Life Destruction martial artists. As for Ninefall geniuses, they weren't cabbages even in the vast Divine Realm, so how could they possibly appear on such a small planet like this.

“It seems that all of you are used to being bandits. Your cultivation methods and understandings of Concepts are far too different from each other; truly a crowd of rabble, nothing more than the dregs of the Divine Realm. Today, I shall enforce justice on behalf of the heavens!”

Facing over a dozen Divine Sea powerhouses, Lin Ming's expression was calm and steady. He flicked out his fingers and dozens of spear lights instantly shot out. These spear lights were a deep azure color and they also contained the Concept of Endlessness. A single wisp of azure true essence could destroy a wisp of ordinary true essence several times stronger!

As for these Divine Sea powerhouses, their talent was even inferior to that of the worst Firebird Hall disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace. As for the strongest black-armored large fellow among them, he was about the same as Yang Yun.

In front of Lin Ming's attacks, their protective true essence was nothing more than rotten paper, easily pierced through.

Puff puff puff!

Blood rained down. Of those Divine Sea martial artists, over half

of them immediately died, all of the eighth stage Life Destruction martial artists died, and the survivors were all left severely wounded. There were even some spear lights that stabbed through several people together!

“This... this is...”

“Monster!”

All of the surviving martial artists were petrified. The black-armored large fellow leading them turned paler than death, his entire body trembling. This time, he had been able to clearly see that Lin Ming hadn't used any type of saint artifact to attack; all he did was send out his true essence to kill his enemies. This was only possible because his control of his true essence had reached a terrifying degree. Thus, when he killed his enemies, he hadn't wasted even a bit of true essence!

As for why there had been no killing intent when Lin Ming had killed the monkey-faced man, this was because killing intent was originally a type of force field formed by one's desire to kill. If one were up against fundamentally insignificant opponents, for instance a man stepping on ants, then there would be no killing intent at all.

In other words, in front of Lin Ming, the monkey-faced man had been nothing more than an ant. It wasn't until now, when he faced several late Divine Sea martial artists, that Lin Ming revealed his killing intent.

Chapter 1073 – True Martial World

“Run away! Quickly run away!”

“Everyone scatter!”

“Great master, I beg you not to kill me, foolish little me was confused. I had eyes and yet I still couldn’t see Mount Tai, and now I’ve offended great master. I beg that great master spare my life.”

As these murderers and robbers saw Lin Ming kill them so aggressively, all of them were scared witless. In just a split second, over half of all the Divine Sea martial artists had been killed. This sort of strength surpassed the scope of their understanding. And since they were nothing more than a gang that had gathered together casually, they began to surrender upon the sight of such a powerful enemy.

As Lin Ming saw the disgusting looks on these people’s faces, he sneered, “When you want to kill others you kill them, but when you find out you can’t, you decide to kneel and beg for mercy instead. Where is there such a wonderful deed in this world? Since you’ve already decided to murder someone, you should have come to terms with your own potential death.”

Chi chi chi!

A spear light flashed. Seven or eight martial artists were pierced through, instantly dying.

“Ahhh! Fight him to the death!”

As the martial artists saw that there was no path to survival left for them, they decided to desperately go all-out against Lin Ming. But, Lin Ming simply swept his hand out and a spear light crossed through the horizon, beheading all of them!

As he killed these people, some early Life Destruction and Revolving Core junior martial artists had already fled dozens of miles away by now. Lin Ming didn't bother with them. He directly chased the black-armored large man.

The black-armored large man was the only peak late Divine Sea martial artist in the group and he had also reached the eighth stage of Life Destruction; Lin Ming would naturally focus on him.

He didn't use his fingers as a spear anymore. He directly flourished the Phoenix Blood Spear.

999 small blood spears waved through the skies, forming a crimson storm.

Chasing Thunder!

Lin Ming's speed reached the peak. The Phoenix Blood Spear thrust straight towards the black-armored large man's back.

The black-armored large man crazily roared and then swiveled around. He took out his own high-grade saint artifact serrated sword and chopped down at Lin Ming. He knew that he wasn't Lin Ming's match, thus he used this suicidal type of attack. As long as Lin Ming stabbed him then he would definitely be able to tear apart Lin Ming!

If one was up against a much stronger opponent, this method was indeed a smart choice. Unfortunately, the one that the black-armored large man had bumped into was Lin Ming.

As the Phoenix Blood Spear was about to clash with the serrated sword, in that moment, Lin Ming's thoughts dove into his spiritual sea. The grandmist battle spirit broke out, forming a world of will projection!

Ca!

The black-armored large fellow felt his shoulders sink. He could only feel that his serrated sword suddenly seemed to be wrapped up in some invisible web. His speed plummeted!

At the same time, Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear rapidly accelerated. He let go of the spear and with the support of the grandmist battle spirit, the spear shot forwards with a shrill whistling sound, piercing through the black-armored large fellow's chest!

Peng!

With his heart torn apart, the black-armored large man looked down at the massive hole in his chest that blood gushed from. Even at the end, he still couldn't believe that he had been instantly killed by an eighth stage Life Destruction martial artist!

“Gold... gold battle spirit? Are... are you really a Life Destruction martial artist?”

The black-armored large man whispered. Soon, his eyes glazed over and he no longer spoke.

Lin Ming put away the Phoenix Blood Spear. Because he had been so fast, the spear edge hadn't even been wetted with blood. After this fight, those several Life Destruction and Revolving Core juniors that managed to luckily escape wouldn't believe that the one who slaughtered them had an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation. They all thought that Lin Ming was hiding his true strength from them.

Lin Ming wasn't some demon who killed without rhyme or reason. Out of the dozens of martial artists that had gathered here, there were some who didn't have any killing intent. They were the ones who had come purely to seek treasures and without the intention of robbing other martial artists. He simply let those people run away.

As for the possibility of those people revealing his whereabouts because he let them go and thus drawing the attention of his enemies, that was simply impossible. The Divine Realm was just too vast. There were countless planets with countless strange and miraculous events occurring at all times. No matter how great an

intelligence organization was, it would still be impossible to cover the entirety of the Divine Realm!

Moreover, Lin Ming was at a great world far away from Atlas Word. What happened just now was also a minor matter that simply didn't warrant anyone's concern.

Like this, Lin Ming left this small planet. His destination was... True Martial World!

True Martial World wasn't ranked among the largest of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds, but it did have one of the most glorious reputations. This was because it was one of the busiest and most prosperous trade markets in the Divine Realm.

On True Martial World, countless great trade associations and auctions houses were converged. At any given moment there were limitless heavenly materials being bought and sold. It was said that in the marketplaces and auction houses here, there were even harvests for a World King level powerhouse.

Of course, Lin Ming didn't come here for True Martial World's bustling economic scene. Although he had many priceless treasures, most of them could not be revealed to the public and it was impossible for him to trade them for money.

As for the currency of the Divine Realm, that was violet sun stones. Besides the violet sun stones that Huo Violentstone gave Lin Ming, the rest of the ones he had were taken from the corpses of Dragon One and the other disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan.

However, although he was currently much wealthier than a martial artist at his level should be, compared to those people that came to True Martial World to bid on items, he was simply a joke.

The true reason that Lin Ming came to True Martial World was to seek out the chess piece that the Verdant Feather Holy Lands had arranged for in the past, as well as to obtain the resources that Mo Eversnow had left behind!

.....

In a great and endless red desert, every grain of sand was bright red like blood. Above the desert, wild winds raged about, stirring up massive tornados of sand and creating great crimson seas that reached the heavens!

These wild winds contained an extremely powerful disintegrative and smothering power. Any Xiantian realm martial artist that was sucked into these sandstorms would be blown into pieces and suffer a horrifying death!

And above this blood red desert, the skies were also a deep red.

This was a divergent world. In the Sky Spill Continent, when one referred to a divergent world they could be referring to the Holy Demon Continent or even the Divine Realm. But in the Divine Realm, a divergent world often held a simple meaning – that was a Divine Realm mystic realm!

These different worlds had different Laws compared to a primary world of the Divine Realm, and there was also a space barrier that separated them. These mystic realms came in multiple layers with endless distances; they could even be called another universe.

When Lin Ming entered the God Beast Mystic Realm, that was only one of the countless mystic realms of the Divine Realm.

Although there were countless mystic realms in the Divine Realm, only a small portion of them had known entrances that connected to the Divine Realm primary worlds. The other mystic realms were either sealed off or their entrances were unknown.

Without a doubt, a mystic realm meant exorbitantly rich resources and fortuitous encounters. Because these mystic realms were incomparably ancient, many of them had a history that was longer and more wondrous than many great worlds of the Divine Realm.

These mystic realms had continuously gathered heavenly materials over an immeasurable span of time. Moreover, they were rarely visited. Thus, the amount of wealth accumulated within them could be imagined.

The entrance to this mystic realm with the limitless red desert was located at the main continent of True Martial World. It was referred to by others as the Red Desolate Mystic Realm.

This mystic realm was jointly governed by several influences of True Martial World.

At this time, above the desert, a number of martial artists had gathered in the air. There were around 700-800 of them that were scattered in small groups all over the vast red desert. From high above the skies, they looked no different to ants.

The overwhelming majority of these martial artists were at the Revolving Core realm, and the remainder were at the Divine Sea realm. Of the Divine Sea powerhouses, the ones with the highest cultivation among them were at the middle Divine Sea. Even then there were only several of them. The rest were at the early Divine Sea realm.

These people all seemed to be searching the desert. Once they made a discovery they would begin to excavate it. At times, they would dig out something similar to black crystals, and sometimes they would dig out small pieces of beast bones, spirit medicines, and even spirit plants. It was obvious that these people were all gathering resources in the mystic realm. As for those Divine Sea martial artists, although they also helped in gathering resources, their main duties were to oversee the operation and to stand guard over everyone else.

These martial artists were all disciples of True Martial World's Carefree Island.

"Everyone hurry up as much as you can. We have less than an hour left until we are automatically transported out of here by the Laws of the Mystic Realm. We have to take advantage of this time we have left to gather as many resources as we can. Our harvests this time cannot be low!" The one who spoke was a young blue-

clothed martial artist. He was clearly leading this group of excavators. His cultivation was at the peak of the middle Divine Sea and he was just a little bit away from breaking into the late Divine Sea realm.

“Yes!” The martial artists below responded in unison. It was clear that this blue-clothed martial artist had a great deal of prestige here.

“Perk up your minds and keep guard all around you! This final stretch of time is always the most dangerous of all. Be careful that those fellows from Splintersoul Mountain or the Occult Bone Clan don’t try to come and steal our spoils at the last moment!”

“Don’t worry Elder Senior-apprentice Brother. If anyone dares to steal from us we’ll slaughter them until they run away with their tails between their legs!” Several Divine Sea disciples casually chatted. But, one could see that they were in fact very nervous and vigilant, not seeming relaxed at all!

To a martial artist, resources were life. In a mystic realm of a divergent world, there was wealth to be found everywhere. But, this wealth was often found at the edge of life or death. There were countless extreme talents in the Divine Realm that had perished in these divergent world mystic realms!

Just as that disciple’s voice was heard, the blue-clothed youth captain’s expression suddenly changed. He looked up into the distance, and he could see that faintly, between the endless grains of blood red sand, there was the appearance of people’s shadows!

These people were menacingly rushing over. Their intentions were clearly bad!

As everyone else saw this, their complexions also changed.

“Splintersoul Mountain! Occult Bone Clan! So many... there must be 60-70 of them!”

“Heavens! How could there be so many!”

The disciples of Carefree Island felt a chill crawl down their backs. In this divergent world mystic realm, sending a Revolving Core martial artist here cost an extremely low price. But, for a Divine Sea martial artist to arrive here, they actually had to pay a massive number of violet sun stones. As for sending 60-70 of those people, that was truly an astronomical figure!

“They’ve come to steal our resources.”

“Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao, what do we do!?” Several Divine Sea martial artists cried out in panic. Although they were outstanding geniuses among martial artists of their level, their opposition wasn’t poor either. And facing numbers several times their own, once they fought, the results could be imagined.

The blue-clothed youth called Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao grit his teeth and shouted, “Fight! Although they are here to steal our resources, that doesn’t mean they’ll let us live even if we

surrender. Fight with everything you have! We have less than an hour left until we're transmitted out of here! If we can last until the end then we win!"

"Fight!"

"Kill!"

The 10 plus Divine Sea disciples of Carefree Island shot into the sky. A tragic and cruel battle soon commenced...

.....

"I'm here. This is True Martial World." Lin Ming floated high above a light yellow continent. Looking from high up, he could see no limit to its ends. The place that Lin Ming had arrived at was not a planet, but the central continent of True Martial World!

Chapter 1074 – Carefree Island

Every great world of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds had a central continent called the primary world. This primary world was a landmass of nearly unimaginable breadth, and was also considered the core of a Divine Realm great world. The heaven and earth origin energy here was the richest and the resources bred here were also of the highest quality. The number of people living on a primary world reached an incalculable number, the average strength of the martial artists was higher, and the inheritances they studied were also much better.

Even the common people practiced martial arts. If one walked into the marketplace of mortal nations, they would see Altering Muscle and Bone Forging realm martial artists everywhere. Even Houtian and Xiantian martial artists were relatively common.

If the foundation of people was excellent, then there would naturally be more masters and the sects would also be larger. Almost 90% of the Holy Lands were located on primary worlds.

Far above the seas of True Martial World's primary world, looking down, one could see vast and surging waves of mist with countless islands scattered all throughout. These islands came in various sizes. The smaller ones were a few dozen miles wide, and the larger ones were tens of thousands of miles wide, no smaller than a continent.

There was a particularly large cluster of islands; this cluster of islands was a quasi-Holy Land sect called Carefree Island.

The main island of Carefree Island was tens of thousands of miles wide, and there were also 36 branch islands. In this regard, it was similar to the Ancient Phoenix Clan's 72 branch palaces.

However, Carefree Island's overall power was far worse than the Ancient Phoenix Clan's. One was a peak Holy Land whereas the other one was a quasi-Holy Land.

According to how sects were divided in the Sky Spill Continent, a Divine Realm Holy Land would be considered a ninth-grade sect. But, Carefree Island was only an eighth-grade sect.

In other words, Carefree Island was two grades higher than the Demon God Imperial Palace of the past. Demon God Imperial Palace had taken Divine Sea realm powerhouses as Elders, whereas Carefree Island took Divine Lord powerhouses as Elders. But in the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Divine Lord realm powerhouses could only serve as branch palace Elders.

At this time, on a branch island that was several thousand miles wide, many martial artists were gathered, loosely spread. The younger ones were in their teens and the older ones were 30-40 years old. They were all outstanding geniuses amongst their peers.

They were on a blue stone road that curved up a mountain, slowly walking towards the entrance of a grand palace. Each of them had excitement written all over their face. If one walked amid this crowd, they would often hear conversations beginning with, 'my blah blah cultivation method has reached a blah blah boundary' or 'my blah blah comprehension of Laws has reached an incredibly blah blah degree'. These words were spoken with vivid

passion, and there was occasionally the sound of surprised acclaim.

These young disciples were all preparing to cross Carefree Island's entrance examination.

As a sect, Carefree Island had to accept talented disciples from all walks of life. If they were a martial family then they would often only accept their own descendants and disciples. As for the Ancient Phoenix Clan and Ancient Dragon Clan, they were situated in between. As long as one had their respective God Beast bloodline and their martial talent wasn't too poor, then they could join no matter what their last name was or where they came from.

And in this group of people, there was a blue-clothed youth, calmly and firmly walking forwards, climbing the mountain with the many other young disciples.

This blue-clothed youth was Lin Ming.

On the journey here, he had followed Mo Eversnow's directions and passed through several ultra long distance transmission arrays before finally arriving here – Carefree Island.

Along the way, with the cost of powering the spirit ship and paying transmission array expenses, it had cost several hundred thousand violet sun stones to come here. Interstellar travel like this really wasn't something that an ordinary martial artist could hope to withstand.

Upon arriving at Carefree Island, Lin Ming wasn't stupid enough to think he would be able to boldly saunter into their headquarters and take away whatever resources he needed. After all, these were the accumulated resources of a quasi-Holy Land level sect. How could they simply give everything away?

Moreover, how to find Mo Eversnow's aunt was another problem. According to Mo Eversnow, her aunt was the hidden Highest Elder of Carefree Island and she had never appeared in public.

Let alone the common disciples, even most Elders of Carefree Island didn't know that such a character existed. This was also a reasonable matter. Mo Eversnow's aunt was the daughter of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands' old Holy Lord; she was on the same rank as Tian Mingzi. The two of them might have even been fellow apprentices. It was impossible for Tian Mingzi not to recognize her. In this situation, Mo Eversnow's aunt would have to remain hidden away and she certainly couldn't reveal herself. Otherwise, if she were to be discovered by Tian Mingzi, then even this entire quasi-Holy Land level Carefree Island would be instantly razed to the ground.

In fact, only an extremely small minority of high level figures at Carefree Island knew of Mo Eversnow's aunt. If Lin Ming wanted to reach her, he would naturally have to go through some detours. But, with his current eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation, it wasn't easy for him to see the current Elders of Carefree Island. The only way to do so was to stir up trouble at Carefree Island. However, if he really did that then even a Divine Transformation realm talent of a large sect would be able to capture him. If he were to ask to see an Elder at that time then his requests would

definitely not be accepted.

Thus, Lin Ming had to remain a bit more low-key. He would honestly enter Carefree Island and then raise his reputation. If he did that then he naturally would be able to contact the high level figures of Carefree Island.

“Eh? Hey there friend, you seem to come from a scattered martial family, your foundation is very solid! For you to have such a foundation coming from a random martial family isn’t easy at all!” A sixth stage Life Destruction martial artist gaily said as he looked over Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming glanced back at this person, he could see that this youth also came from a free roaming background. In this way, the Divine Realm was similar to the lower realms. If one didn’t have the support of a large sect then it was nearly impossible to cultivate to a high boundary.

The people that had come to participate in Carefree Island’s entrance examination all had tremendous differences in their cultivation. The lowest were at the Xiantian realm, and the higher ones were at the seventh or eighth stage of Life Destruction. There were even several that were at a half-step Divine Sea.

However, the scene was a bit unusual. The Xiantian realm youths were all in high spirits and were calling out to each other like long acquainted friends, their expressions filled with glee and elation.

But as for those high stage Life Destruction martial artists, they

didn't seem happy at all. Some of them even glared at those Xiantian realm disciples with envy on their faces.

This was because these Xiantian realm disciples were mostly outstanding juniors from martial families. Thus, while they were in their teens they decided to try and enter into Carefree Island. By seeking the support of a large sect they would be able to learn a better inheritance and also have a brighter future.

As for those high stage Life Destruction and half-step Divine Sea martial artists, they were mostly wandering martial artists. They had participated in this type of large sect entrance examination in their youths but were eliminated. Then, they wandered and wandered and eventually wandered their way into the higher stages of Life Destruction and then decided to test out their luck once again. Although many sects weren't willing to raise martial artists with low natural martial talent, they didn't mind accepting these high stage Life Destruction martial artists into their sects; they had considerable war strength.

Lin Ming had restrained his aura at this moment and his cultivation was also at the eighth stage of Life Destruction, thus he was naturally thought of as a wandering martial artist. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to enter a large sect at such a late cultivation.

Lin Ming smiled, cordially responding with a few words. He didn't speak much. He continued to follow the group towards the summit of the mountain where everyone had stopped before the entrance.

Lin Ming swept his eyes around and discovered that several divine senses had covered over the group. He followed them back to their source and discovered that they originated from a group of five or six Divine Sea martial artists that were standing around 10 miles away. These Divine Sea martial artists were observing the group and commenting on them.

“It’s about time. The examination can start now. But the ones entering this time don’t seem too spectacular. Besides some martial family juniors, there are a few wandering martial artists that are acceptable...”

“Mm... there’s nothing we can do about it. These are orders from above. We have to loosen restrictions this time and accept an additional 30% of disciples. Half a month ago, Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao was attacked in the divergent world mystic realm. Over a dozen fellow apprentices went there but only six managed to make it back alive. Moreover, they were all severely wounded. As for those Revolving Core realm martial artists that were responsible for gathering the materials, most of them died. Currently, many of the disciples are too afraid to enter the divergent world mystic realm. We have to search for some fresh meat.”

“Humph, those gutless cowards. When the island sends the resources, each of them has eyes redder than a rabbit. But when it’s time to risk their lives, all of them shrink back in fear. Where is there such a good deed in this world? Let’s go! Let’s test these disciples and see if there’s anyone here that gives us a pleasant surprise.”

As these Divine Sea realm disciples spoke, they flew towards the entrance.

Shua shua shua!

Six shadows fell in front of the crowd, giving the younger martial artists a good scare.

Looking at these six people, their cultivations were all at the middle Divine Sea realm. There were even several among them with a Ninefall Divine Sea cultivation!

For these wandering martial artists and martial family juniors, a Ninefall Divine Sea master was a shocking strength! This was also the symbol of a large sect. It had to be known that when Lin Ming entered the Divine Realm and joined Phoenix Cry Palace, even though there were several hundred million Ancient Phoenix Clan clansmen that served as a base, there were only 20 Ninefall martial artists that were below 100 years of age. Huo Yanguang and Huang Yuegong were both considered ordinary amongst Ninefall martial artists, but their status was exorbitantly high in Phoenix Cry Palace!

And that was Phoenix Cry Palace. There was no need to mention those sixth and seventh-grade martial families. To them, a Ninefall talent was something that occurred every several hundred or even thousand years.

Chapter 1075 – Entering the Sect

“Welcome, everyone. I am the host for this entrance examination. My last name is White, so you may call me Senior-apprentice Brother White. All of you have waited for a long time already. I won’t mince words. First, those of you below 20 years of age who have a recommendation letter from a sixth-grade martial family or above may directly go and stand over there; you have passed.”

The blue-clothed youth surnamed White languidly said. As he finished speaking, several Xiantian realm martial artists glanced at each other, happily standing out. They were two men and two women, all of them in their teens. They also seemed a bit puerile.

These four were all at the early Xiantian and middle Xiantian realm. Their families were influences that were subordinate to Carefree Island and they had the qualifications to be recommended to join Carefree Island. Although they knew that crossing the threshold with their family’s recommendation wouldn’t be a problem, they were still happy to be given such preferential treatment.

As everyone looked at these four geniuses, everyone, especially those wandering martial artists, revealed looks of envy. They were young, they were talented, and they had now even joined a large sect; their future was limitless. In the future it wouldn’t be any problem for them to step into the Divine Transformation realm. They even had hopes of reaching the Divine Lord realm. This was far from what the other examinees could compare with.

The blue-clothed youth turned to everyone else and continued to say, “Alright then. Everyone else, follow me to the martial field!”

The blue-clothed youth turned and walked away with everyone quietly following behind. Before long, they arrived at a large square area. This was the so-called martial field. There was a large arena here as well as a giant protective array formation that surrounded the arena so people didn’t have to be careful of their every move.

And on this side of the martial field, there was a black palace. The gates of this black palace were carved with all sorts of tiny and mysterious runes. It was unknown just what was inside.

“You may start the examination now. The content of the examination is simple. That is... to defeat a red desolate ogre puppet!”

“A red desolate ogre? What is that?” Some wandering cultivators were startled upon hearing this. A faint foreboding feeling filled their chests, but as for what this red desolate ogre was, none of them knew.

“Hehe, this red desolate ogre is one of the types of creatures that live within the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. Their nature is cruel and brutal and their strength is immense. They love to pick up humans and rip them apart, limb by limb. The Red Desolate Mystic Realm is considered a great portion of the source of my Carefree Island’s resources. Many of Carefree Island’s alchemy and refining materials come from there! Every time a disciple of my Carefree Island enters the Red Desolate Mystic Realm and kills a red

desolate ogre, they bring back the corpse so that they can be made into red desolate ogre puppets! Their body is as hard as divine iron and they do not know exhaustion, fear, sadness, or pain. They are all bloody killers, bred for battle. When you fight them you had all best be careful. Although I will step in to save your lives if need be, sometimes I cannot act in time and you will be seriously wounded. Breaking an arm or a leg here is highly likely!”

The blue-clothed youth wasn’t trying to needlessly scare people. During every entrance examination there would always be people who would be severely wounded. These examiners wouldn’t save someone until the very last moment.

“Okay. We’re going to start now. You fellows will come up one at a time. I will arrange a corresponding red desolate ogre puppet as your opponent according to your cultivation! If you can defeat it or persist for an incense stick of time then you pass. Otherwise, you fail!”

“You, come out to the martial field!”

The blue-clothed youth pointed to the martial artist closest to him. And behind the blue-clothed youth, another disciple pushed open the gates to the black palace. Inside was pitch black darkness. Then, a pair of bright red eyes lit up, like two red lanterns at night.

With a terrifying roar, a 10 foot tall red desolate ogre puppet rushed out. This puppet was wrapped up in chains and its muscles were as hard and tight as black rock. Its fangs were half a foot long and sharp claws glinted on its hands!

“Red Desolate Mystic Realm, red desolate ogre...” Lin Ming looked at the ogre puppet. Without a doubt, the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was a mystic realm similar to the God Beast Mystic Realm, but the beings living inside each of them were completely different. The mystic realm demons in the God Beast Mystic Realm were existences of energy, and these red desolate ogres clearly had physical bodies.

Rahh!

The ogre puppet rushed forwards like a bolt of lightning. In an instant, it rushed towards the martial artist in front.

Hu – !

That martial artist was indeed shocked at the start. But for him to grow to this point, he had experienced a number of life and death battles in his time. He regained his wits and grasped a thick saber. He slashed down and a brilliant saber light cut towards the ogre puppet!

Peng!

The ogre puppet suddenly brought down its claws, crushing the saber light. Then, without slowing down, it seemed to teleport behind the martial artist’s body and thrust a palm out!

The speed was far too quick. The martial artist simply wasn’t

able to respond. With only a loud clapping sound, the martial artist's protective true essence was smashed apart and he was sent flying away vomiting blood.

“Fail!”

The blue-clothed youth expressionlessly said. Beside him, another Divine Sea martial artist rang a small bell and whispered a few incantations. The originally bloodthirsty ogre puppet that was chasing after the martial artist to rip him apart suddenly stopped. Its eyes glazed over as it returned to the black palace in complete obedience.

“Next!” The blue-clothed youth pointed towards a second person. He looked over this person's cultivation and then without further ado another ogre puppet came out from the black palace!

Although these ogre puppets followed a different cultivation from humans, Lin Ming could faintly feel that these ogre puppets were around three small boundaries higher than their human opponents. It wasn't any surprise that those martial artists found them so difficult to contend with.

Without any suspense, the second person failed!

Third person, fail!

Fourth person, fail!

Gradually, those martial artists that hadn't yet gone up began to pale. The visual impact these ogre puppets left behind on them was too shocking. They were incomparably cruel and savage, and every time they struck they would cause their opponents to vomit blood! The martial artists wavered, unnerved. They knew their own abilities and realized that lasting against these ogre puppets was extremely difficult.

Even those several Xiantian young men and women who had entered Carefree Island due to recommendations from their families began to look sick and pale. They secretly estimated the strength of these ogre puppets in their hearts and they discovered that it would be a great hurdle to last an incense stick of time against them, much less defeat them. Trying to defeat these monsters would simply be a joke.

After seeing so many people try and fail, a middle Divine Sea disciple said with a sound transmission, "Senior-apprentice Brother White, isn't this a bit too difficult? The ogre puppets you choose are around three small boundaries higher than the disciples themselves. Weren't we short on manpower to enter the divergent world mystic realm, and thus we were ordered from above to lower the standards and allow more disciples in?"

"Junior-apprentice Brother, that is because you don't understand how human nature works. If they pass then they will be the same as us Carefree Island disciples. If we then send them on dangerous missions, they will not be happy nor willing. However, if they fail this examination they will be disappointed in their hearts. As long as we tell them that they can become official disciples by going into a divergent world mystic realm to complete some gathering task then they will all scramble to go, even if there is a great chance

that their lives will be in danger.”

“So that’s how it is! Indeed, that makes sense. But this sort of method... it seems a bit villainous.” The previously speaking disciple said, looking a bit sorry.

The blue-clothed youth glared at the disciple and coldly said, “Our Carefree Island is not some charity house. There are no free lunches in this world. If they want harvests, they naturally must pay the price! Because the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain have been joining forces to suppress us these past years, the central island isn’t much better off. The reserves of resources have been dwindling. If this continues then it will be impossible to make ends meet!”

“Ah... Senior-apprentice Brother’s teachings are correct. I spoke out of turn.” The disciple quickly said. It was clear that this blue-clothed youth was greatly respected.

As these examiners spoke with true essence sound transmissions, several more martial artists were eliminated. But, there were those among these people that were able to last for over 10 breaths of time. The blue-clothed youth paid special attention to these people. After this examination was over, he would offer to bring them into the sect. Of course, the premise of that was if they were willing to go to the divergent world mystic realm.

“Eh? Isn’t that the son of the peak sixth-grade martial family, the Zheng Family’s Zheng Shuang? He wasn’t recommended by the Zheng Family?”

When a white-clothed youth with a heroic aura stepped on the martial field with a sword in hand, there was immediately a disciple who recognized him.

“He probably has confidence in his own strength. He wants to undergo the examination himself. Zheng Shuang’s fame has spread quite far. That sword in his hand, that’s a high-grade saint artifact. A peak sixth-grade family is truly wealthy!”

As several disciples spoke, Zheng Shuang had already started fighting with the ogre puppet. Facing an enemy that was several small boundaries higher than him, Zheng Shuang decided to adopt an evasive and defensive type of swordplay. This choice wasn’t bad, however the ogre puppet was not only strong, it was also quick.

The ogre puppet was like a fierce and violent beast. It instantly rushed to Zheng Shuang’s side, smashing down with its chain-twined body!

Bang!

The ground of the martial field exploded. Zheng Shuang was sent flying back by the explosive shock waves. However, just as his protective true essence was on the verge of bursting apart, he abruptly changed angle in mid air and slashed out with his sword!

“Sword Setting Mountains and Rivers!”

The angle of this sword strike was extremely tricky. The ogre puppet failed to dodge and the sword strike cut through its shoulder. But in that moment, Zheng Shuang felt as if his sword was stuck in a block of divine iron. The sword entered three inches into the ogre puppet's body before being stuck in the muscles, unable to move any further.

The ogre puppet howled with rage. It brought its claw crashing down.

Zheng Shuang was alarmed. He wanted to pull back his sword and retreat, but no matter how he pulled, the sword wouldn't come out. His complexion changed and he abandoned his sword. But in that moment, his protective true essence and clothes tore apart, and five bloody gashes were left on his shoulder!

Without the high-grade saint artifact, Zheng Shuang definitely had no ability to directly contend with the ogre puppet. He switched to a medium-grade saint artifact sword and constantly flit around. Finally, although he was struck several more times, he managed to last for an incense stick of time.

“Time is over! Qualified!”

The blue-clothed youth wasn't surprised. He had actually seen Zheng Shuang before and had expected this result. Although the examination was difficult, there couldn't be not a single person who qualified. Otherwise it would just be too unsightly a result.

“This Zheng Shuang is quite good. But, among the wandering martial artists there’s also one that seems quite fierce. He should be able to qualify too.” The blue-clothed youth turned his eyes to Lin Ming. In his opinion, Lin Ming’s foundation was extremely solid!

“You, come up for the examination.”

The blue-clothed youth said to Lin Ming. Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred. According to the ongoing order it would still be a while until it was his turn. He didn’t think the examiner would suddenly jump to him.

Lin Ming was certainly glad to be able to go on ahead of time. He didn’t go straight to the martial field. Instead, he turned to the blue-clothed youth and asked, “Senior-apprentice Brother, before this examination starts I have a matter I would like to ask you.”

“Mm?” The blue-clothed youth said, frowning. “What is it? Speak quickly.”

“I would like to ask, in Carefree Island, what rank disciple has the right to request an audience with the Island Master, and to become such a disciple, what sort of result do I need to achieve in this examination?”

Lin Ming slowly asked. But, the blue-clothed youth was actually shocked. This question was completely against his expectations.

Chapter 1076 – Riverbliss Jadeheart

Carefree Island was a quasi-Holy Land level sect. At the main continent of True Martial World, the Island Master of Carefree Island could be called someone that ruled over their own considerable dominion. In the eyes of Carefree Island's ordinary disciples, he was a mythical existence, how could anyone see him just because they wanted to?

The blue-clothed youth stared at Lin Ming, "Could it be you want to see the Island Master?"

Lin Ming nodded without hesitation. He might not be able to reveal that he was searching for Mo Eversnow's aunt, but there was no reason he had to hide that he wanted to see the Island Master.

As Lin Ming nodded, the Divine Sea disciples present were shocked. This boy had certainly taken the wrong medicine. Just who did he think he was? He had only just arrived at Carefree Island yet already wanted to see the Island Master? The Island Master had gone into seclusion for such a long time that not even these disciples had seen him before.

The blue-clothed youth looked Lin Ming up and down, frowning. "Not everyone can see the Island Master. Only those on the Council of Elders are allowed an audience with the Island Master. As for disciples, your only chance is if you become one of the top direct disciples. Only then will you have the qualifications to request an audience with the Island Master. You also must wait until the Island Master is out of seclusion."

“Direct disciple? If my results on this entrance examination are good, can I become a direct disciple?”

After being questioned by Lin Ming again, the blue-clothed youth became a bit annoyed. “We’ll speak again after you cross the entrance examination first! Listening to your words, it’s as if you don’t place this entrance examination in your eyes?”

The blue-clothed youth was clearly unhappy. Lin Ming’s tone was far too casual. In truth, the entrance examination they presided over was for outer court disciples. Only those with outstanding results could become an inner court disciple. As for a direct disciple, the blue-clothed youth was also a direct disciple, but he wasn’t even at the higher ranks of direct disciples, how could he possibly have such authority?

“This brat, I want to see just what capital you have.” The blue-clothed youth’s thoughts moved and with a deep and bass roar, a wild ogre puppet rushed out from the black palace. This ogre puppet was half the size of the previous ones, and it held an axe in its hands instead of iron chains. Its entire body was covered with long hair and its killing intent was overwhelming!

Although a red desolate ogre’s cultivation system didn’t include Life Destruction or the Divine Sea realms, if this ogre puppet’s strength was converted to a human’s, it would be equal to an early Divine Sea powerhouse. This was much more than three small boundaries higher than Lin Ming. The blue-clothed youth obviously knew that Lin Ming was extremely strong and didn’t appreciate his attitude either, so he wanted to have Lin Ming suffer

a bit.

Seeing this ogre puppet rush towards him, Lin Ming slowly raised two fingers as a spear and thrust them at the ogre puppet's neck!

Xiu!

The spear light extended into a beam of light that shot towards the approaching ogre puppet's throat!

This wasn't a casual spot that Lin Ming chose to attack. He discovered earlier that this ogre puppet had a much stronger defensive ability than anticipated. If he used the Phoenix Blood Spear he could naturally kill it without any problems, but this was only a freehanded attack that used true essence to simulate spear light. If he wanted to pierce through the ogre puppet's forehead or solid chests muscles, it wouldn't be all that easy. Eventually he chose the throat in order to make this kill as fast as possible and with the least amount of strength.

Puff!

The spear light penetrated the ogre puppet's throat, bringing with it a loose spray of blood. The ogre puppet continued to barrel towards Lin Ming with its momentum but it was easily dodged. It was already dead!

Bang!

A 15 foot ogre crashed down on the ground, causing a cloud of smoke and dust to rise up. On the side, the blue-clothed youth was shocked to the core and even the other martial artists participating in this entrance examination were dumbfounded. They thought Lin Ming would have to struggle with this ogre puppet so they wanted to see if he could last an incense stick of time. They never imagined he would clearly eliminate it, as if the ogre puppet was no different from a paper figurine.

“Is that really an ogre puppet?”

“Is the examination disciple purposefully helping him?”

“How could that be? Did you not see how unhappy those senior-apprentice brother examiners were. I’m already surprised they didn’t try to ruin him from behind.”

Under the arena, many martial artists discussed. In fact, this ogre puppet’s strength had far surpassed the standard which was the reason why the several presiding disciples were even more stunned.

“You! Are you really a wandering cultivator?” The blue-clothed youth stared at Lin Ming, a bit of dread in his eyes. He could absolutely confirm that Lin Ming would become a Ninefall master in the future, and not even a normal Ninefall at that. He had instantly killed a Divine Sea level ogre puppet while only being at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. If he became a direct disciple with this sort of talent, he would absolutely be one of the peak

talents of Carefree Island.

Such a person... the blue-clothed youth could not believe that such a person was a wandering cultivator.

After entering the Divine Realm for so long, Lin Ming's lower realm aura was already completely covered over. He didn't answer the question but instead asked, "I would like to see the Island Master. This senior-apprentice brother, can I trouble you to inquire for me?"

The blue-clothed youth fell deep into thought for a moment. He gazed at Lin Ming and said, "I can only notify an inner court Elder and ask if he can report this matter to the Island Master. As for whether or not the Island Master will see you, I can make no guarantees."

The blue-clothed youth could see that Lin Ming didn't come to pass the entrance examination from the start. If this sort of person went to any large sect, even a Divine Realm Holy Land, he would be able to easily become a direct disciple. Why would he join an entrance examination of Carefree Island?

The blue-clothed youth understood this and the others present weren't idiots either. They all looked at Lin Ming with incredulity in their eyes. They hadn't imagined that such a powerful character would randomly come join an entrance examination. As for those genius disciples of sixth and seventh-grade martial families, they were nothing but jokes in front of such a true peak talent.

“He can definitely become a Divine Lord in the future...”

“Not just a Divine Lord. He might even have a faint chance of becoming the greatest character of Carefree Island!”

Lin Ming ignored the discussions of these disciples. He said, “Ah, there’s also one more matter. If I could trouble senior-apprentice brother, when you report about this matter can you also include the name of a keepsake, Riverbliss Jadeheart.”

“Keepsake? Well, alright...” The blue-clothed youth’s thoughts stirred. He guessed that Lin Ming must have some sort of unknown relation with the Island Master. He might be the descendant of someone the Island master cared for, and because there was some problem in his family, he decided to come here to seek an audience with the Island Master himself. As he thought of this, his attitude towards Lin Ming shifted a great deal. This sort of person was related to the Island Master and was also a monstrous genius himself. He certainly didn’t want to recklessly offend such a person.

“This junior-apprentice brother, the message has already been relayed. Perhaps you would like to step into the grand hall and wait there?” The blue-clothed youth said in a friendly manner. Lin Ming naturally understood why this youth’s manner towards him changed. He laughed and said, “Then I’ll have to trouble senior-apprentice brother.”

Underneath the envious gaze of the other martial artists, Lin Ming arrived in a grand hall with a Divine Sea disciple to await the summons of the Island Master.

The truth was that the Riverbliss Jadeheart was a token that Mo Eversnow's aunt had left with her. This was so that her aunt could recognize her and any of her future descendants. But Mo Eversnow's body had been destroyed afterwards and all of her personal possessions were naturally destroyed in the process. With everything turned to ash, the Riverbliss Jadeheart naturally wouldn't exist anymore.

Even Carefree Island's Island Master didn't know about the Riverbliss Jadeheart, the word Riverbliss was the given name of Mo Eversnow's aunt, Mo Riverbliss. He should be able to make the association.

Lin Ming didn't worry. As long as the message was passed to the right people, the Island Master would meet with him.

As they waited in the grand hall, Lin Ming could actually feel a trace of restless unease from Mo Eversnow's soul fluctuations.

In Lin Ming's impression, Mo Eversnow was a decisive woman and every step she took she did with absolute resolution. She was an extremely cold and detached person, as if nothing much mattered to her at all. This was the first time Lin Ming sensed such intertwining and contradicting emotions within her; those of anticipation, anxiety, unease, fear, hope, and all sorts of other emotions.

"Miss Mo?" Lin Ming gently called out. Indeed, seeing one's loved ones after 50,000 years and after so much had changed

would cause one to be filled with emotion. Moreover, Mo Eversnow didn't even know if her aunty was still alive.

"I'm fine. I was just thinking back of some events that happened in the past when we parted ways. I also don't know where my little sister is..." Mo Eversnow's eyes seemed to glaze over. In that great catastrophe, she had sent her little sister away and had bid her to live well. Would her little sister have come here to look for their aunt and stay?

In all likelihood, her little sister didn't even know that her soul form was saved from that disaster.

As Mo Eversnow thought of this she shook her head, darkly sighing. It was hard to describe with words the feeling of meeting her loved ones again after such a long time. Even if her heart was as cold as a field of snow, it would still melt at this time.

"Apprentice Nephew Lin?" After Lin Ming waited for an hour, a gray-clothed old man appeared in the grand hall. He already knew Lin Ming's name.

"That is this junior."

"Haha, the Island Master has summoned you. Please follow me!" The gray-clothed old man sized up Lin Ming. He heard from the blue-clothed youth how great Lin Ming's talent was and also that he had some unknown relationship with the Island Master. He naturally had a curious interest towards him.

“Yes.”

Lin Ming was ecstatic. He rose up and followed the gray-clothed old man. The two of them passed through a transmission array and arrived at the main island of Carefree Island.

The total area of the main island was larger than the other 36 branch islands combined. Besides Carefree Palace, there were also a massive number of common mortals living on this island. These mortals were similar to Phoenix Cry Palace’s mortal disciples. They began training since childhood, and their training conditions were also quite good. The most excellent amongst them would be chosen to enter Carefree Palace.

The ash-clothed old man flew through the air with Lin Ming in tow. The old man looked back at Lin Ming and casually asked, “Apprentice Nephew Lin, are you a descendant of someone close to Island Master Xiao?”

Lin Ming responded, “This junior is a distant relative of Island Master Xiao. My family can be regarded as a collateral branch.”

This was the excuse he had come up with originally. He certainly couldn’t bring up Mo Riverbliss, so he decided to pose as the Island Master’s distant relative. Such an identity was reasonable while it also wouldn’t bring too much attention to him.

“Haha, as they say, heroes come from the young. The Island Master’s relative is astoundingly strong.” The gray-clothed old man praised. “Ah, we’ve arrived.”

The gray-clothed man pointed towards a massive floating palace in front of them. This palace was a deep blue crystal color, as if the entire structure had been carved from sapphire.

Looking from afar, Lin Ming discovered that the entire palace was a magic tool, and it was also at the spirit artifact rank. It was similar to Phoenix Cry Palace's Saint Artifact Pavilion. With this sort of spirit artifact level palace in play, if an enemy attacked, those within would hold the complete advantage.

Chapter 1077 – Reunion

Lin Ming followed the gray-clothed man into Carefree Palace, all the way forwards. Lin Ming could feel the countless array formations layered upon every inch of Carefree Palace. There were numerous time and space tunnels leading to other zones and pathways just like an endless labyrinth. If these array formations were activated and managed by a powerhouse, even a late Divine Lord master would be instantly twisted to death.

The gray-clothed old man brought Lin Ming flying into Carefree Palace for some time before finally stopping at the entrance doors of a hall. He gestured forwards. This gray-clothed old man was only able to send him this far.

Lin Ming thanked the old man and then pushed the doors open, walking inside. As he looked behind these doors, he was surprised to find what seemed like another world through them, incomparably broad, as if it were a separate space and time. Lin Ming could even hear the roars of massive ancient vicious beasts in the distance. He didn't know whether these roars were sounds produced by the array formation or if they were true great beasts that were raised in this spirit artifact; it was truly shocking.

In this world, there was a green-clothed young woman already waiting. She faintly smiled as she saw Lin Ming and said, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I am a disciple of Carefree Island, Ye Rosewater. Please wait here. The Island Master will soon arrive."

The young woman formed a seal and sent it out with a sound transmitting talisman. This was clearly a message to the Island

Master. Lin Ming looked over the green-clothed woman again. She had a late Divine Sea cultivation and her talent was also quite good. For her to appear in Carefree Palace and in this place, that was enough to prove she was an important figure of Carefree Island, and her status was higher than that gray-clothed old man that led him here.

Not long after the sound transmitting talisman was sent out, ripples began to appear in the space around them. A white-clothed youth with a long sword strapped to his waist languidly strolled out from the void.

This person wasn't tall and his aura was completely collected. His eyes were bright and profound, like a lake without a bottom.

Without a doubt, this young man was Carefree Island's Island Master. From his appearance alone he seemed to be less than 20 years old. Of course, for this person to reach the level of Carefree Island's Island Master, it was no longer possible to judge his age by his appearance.

As Lin Ming stood in front of Carefree Island's Island Master, he didn't feel any pressure from any kind of aura at all. Instead, he felt as though this young man were quite friendly and amiable. If Lin Ming didn't know of his status ahead of time, he might have even thought him to be a common mortal scholar.

"Rosewater, you may leave." The white-clothed youth said, waving his hand towards Ye Rosewater.

“Yes, Island Master.”

Ye Rosewater bowed, excusing herself. In this world, there was only the white-clothed youth and Lin Ming left behind.

The white-clothed youth deeply glanced at Lin Ming. As their eyes met each other, the white-clothed youth's aura suddenly changed. His bright and deep eyes seemed to connect to the endless void of space, as if they were trying to suck Lin Ming in. In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if he had been completely seen through without any secrets remaining.

Lin Min was startled. His thoughts focused on his spiritual sea and his gold battle spirit shook, his mind stabilizing along with it. After experiencing the aura of Huo Violentstone, a Holy Lord level powerhouse, Lin Ming was just barely able to deal with the aura released by this white-clothed youth.

“Eh...?” The white-clothed youth was stunned. His eyes flashed with a trace of disbelief. “Your battle spirit actually reached such a boundary at such an age! Just who are you?”

“I am Lin Ming. I have a matter that I wish to speak to Senior Mo Riverbliss about.”

“Mo Riverbliss!” Although the white-clothed youth already expected this from the start, his pupils still shrank upon hearing Lin Ming speak out this name. “The keepsake! Have you brought it?”

The keepsake that the white-clothed youth mentioned was naturally the Riverbliss Jadeheart, Mo Eversnow's Riverbliss Jadeheart. In truth, that keepsake had already been destroyed 50,000 years ago. Just as Lin Ming was wondering how to answer, a long sigh echoed through the vast space. "Skywhite, there is no need to ask any further, bring him to see me. I sense a familiar aura around him, it shouldn't be wrong."

As this voice sounded out, Lin Ming could clearly feel Mo Eversnow's divine soul in his body tremble. Without a doubt, the one who spoke was Mo Riverbliss.

"This... I understand." The white-clothed youth sent out a wave of light that covered Lin Ming. Lin Ming felt a bit dizzy before suddenly arriving at a spring paradise.

The scenery here was like a landscape painting, with majestic mountains and rivers drawn throughout. Spirit flowers bloomed everywhere. It looked like a fairy tale come to life. In this paradise, there was a green bamboo house. Although the bamboo had been cut down a long time ago, they were still clear and hard like exquisite jade. They seemed moist and vivid, with a light fragrance that gladdened the heart.

A white-clothed old woman stood before this bamboo house, holding onto a long peach walking stick that was as high as a man. Her eyes locked onto Lin Ming.

Before Lin Ming spoke, a beam of white light shot out from his body and turned into the silhouette of a woman. The image solidified, arriving before the old woman's body like the wind and

bowing.

“Aunty...”

50,000 years had passed. The Verdant Feather Holy Lands had long ago turned to dust that was swept up by history. Upon seeing her dear family again, Mo Eversnow could feel the roiling emotions underneath her veneer slowly gush over. Her beautiful eyes trembled. Originally she had even steeled herself to learn that Mo Riverbliss had died. But now that she saw her aunty well and alive, her heart filled with a palpable excitement.

The white-clothed old woman had only felt a familiar aura from Lin Ming’s body. She never imagined she would see Mo Eversnow, her niece that she thought had died long ago. But before she had time to bask in her happiness, she saw that Mo Eversnow had no mortal body, and all that was left of her was her divine soul!

For a time, countless conflicting emotions swelled up in Mo Riverbliss’s heart.

50,000 years!

Although this numeral seemed distant and strange, one only had to look at how often a mortal dynasty changed to see how significant it was. A mortal dynasty changed every 500 years. 50,000 years was 100 dynasties. That was enough for a mortal civilization to rise and fall!

The passing of time, the tides of the years, things remain the same and yet people have already changed, everything seemed as if it happened a lifetime ago.

Tears silently fell down Mo Riverbliss's face. She stretched out her hand to touch Mo Eversnow's face, but as she reached her cheeks she actually couldn't touch anything at all. Such a desolate and empty feeling caused a pang of pain in Mo Riverbliss's heart, as if someone had thrust a knife through her chest. She was unable to imagine what happened to Mo Eversnow and what she had experienced in order for her to turn into the current state, where she couldn't even touch her!

"Everything's fine now that you're back, everything's fine now," Mo Riverbliss said, choking on her tears. She could imagine just what misery, pain, and suffering Mo Eversnow had gone through all this time. Her physical body, her divine form that was the envy of countless geniuses, was not lost. But as she thought back to how her niece had been chased down by Tian Mingzi and so many other Divine Realm powerhouses, how could she not be content that her niece had managed to keep her complete divine soul?

"Brightmoon, what about Brightmoon?" Although all sorts of thoughts and feelings gushed out in Mo Eversnow's heart, she had no mortal body so she didn't have the ability to weep. She suddenly thought of her sister, Mo Brightmoon. In truth, when she saw Mo Riverbliss she didn't see Mo Brightmoon. Mo Eversnow had an ominous and disappointed feeling in her heart, but she still had to ask even if there was no hope.

"Brightmoon, she..." Mo Riverbliss shook her head, her eyes

seeming bleak. “She last came back 30,000 years ago, and that was also the last time I saw her. She didn’t believe that you died. She said that even if she had to search to the ends of the heavens or the edges of the seas, she would still find you.”

Mo Eversnow felt her heart gripped upon hearing Mo Riverbliss’s words. Her eyes flashed with a brief confusion. She hadn’t come back for 30,000 years? Just where could she have gone to? Could she have experienced some kind of accident....?

With aunty and niece meeting once again, there were countless things that needed to be said. However, none of them knew where to begin.

Seeing this, the white-clothed youth sighed. He had also correctly guessed Mo Eversnow’s identity. If that were so, there naturally wasn’t any problem with Lin Ming himself.

The white-clothed youth turned to Lin Ming and said, “Let’s leave. Let the two of them catch up after all this time.”

Lin Ming nodded. In the next moment, a white light wrapped around him and the two of them returned to the hall of Carefree Palace where Ye Rosewater was waiting for them.

“Rosewater, go and help Lin Ming settle down. Prepare a long term residence for him at Carefree Pavilion.”

“Carefree Pavilion?”

Ye Rosewater was slightly startled as she heard the orders. She turned to Lin Ming and said, “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, please follow me.”

As Ye Rosewater spoke she flew upwards, bringing Lin Ming to leave Carefree Palace. They passed through several mountain ranges before finally descending into a deep mountain valley.

A thick mist filled the mountain valley. As Lin Ming stepped down, he could feel that the heaven and earth energy was extremely pure and rich here. The reason for the fog was that the heaven and earth origin energy was far too rich so it naturally condensed into tiny droplets.

Compared to the wild and potent heaven and earth origin energy in most of the Divine Realm, the heaven and earth origin energy here was extremely calm and quiet.

In this hazy mist, he could faintly make out rows of peach wood pavilions. They were ancient, courtly, and incomparably refined.

“What a wonderful place. The land of Carefree Pavilion is where reclusive individuals would long to live for in their dreams.”

Ye Rosewater walked over to a peach wood pavilion. She turned and glanced over at Lin Ming, then said, “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you will be staying here from now on. What do you think?”

Lin Ming glanced at the pavilion and said, “The heaven and earth origin energy here is extremely rich and vibrant. I fear that even in the entirety of Carefree Island this is one of the best places to live. I have no idea how many disciples would dream of staying here. I’m flattered I’m allowed to live here, so there is nothing that I am dissatisfied about.”

“Great.” Ye Rosewater chuckled. She raised her hand and the characters on the peach wood pavilion’s signboard changed. It had originally read ‘Free Jun Pavilion’, and now it read ‘Free Ming Pavilion’.

Lin Ming was startled. He didn’t think that Ye Rosewater would suddenly place his name onto the pavilion signboard. But as he thought about it some more, every pavilion they passed just now likely had their own corresponding name.

Ye Rosewater was clearly skilled in Wood Laws. Changing the characters on a signboard was a trivial task for her.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, please stay here for now. There will be special maids sent to bring you any daily necessities and meals. If you have any matter to discuss with me, feel free to look for me; I live just next door.” Ye Rosewater smiled. After Lin Ming nodded, she turned away. Her pale hands grasped each other, nearly touching her inky black hair that hung to her waist. She sashayed away at a brisk pace.

Lin Ming walked inside the newly crowned Free Ming Pavilion

and found the interior to be extraordinary. There were over a dozen rooms, each one was elegant and unique in their own away. There was also a spirit spring in the rear courtyard, with flower petals floating on the water surface. Thick and rich spirit energy filled the senses. If one could bathe here every day, the advantages to one's cultivation could be imagined.

“This Carefree Island is quite generous with me. Since Senior Mo Riverbliss was found here, Miss Mo will likely stay at Carefree Island for some time. Since I'll have to stay here too, I should take advantage of this time and absorb the dragon bone.”

Chapter 1078 – His Skin Is Not of Ordinary Thickness

In the past when Lin Ming absorbed the dragon marrow and the Asura King's source energy, his body had reached the limit. It was impossible to eat heavenly materials without end; he would be unable to absorb them at some point. For the left over dragon bone, Lin Ming had to slowly fuse with it.

“The resources that Miss Mo left behind are divided into the body transformation system and the essence gathering system. The essence gathering system resources were collected at Carefree Island, and they are also what I need to break through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction,” Lin Ming thought out loud.

Because he dual cultivated in body and energy, his body was incomparably solid and durable. It was far harder for him to make breakthroughs in Life Destruction than an ordinary martial artist. As for breaking through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction, that was at least a hundred times more difficult than it would be for others!

If he were to fuse the supreme dragon bone as well as open another one of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates before attempting to cross Ninefall, the difficulty would rise to an unbelievable degree!

Ultimately, the rules of the universe had changed some inestimable period of time ago, and now those that chose to dual cultivate in body and energy could be said to be defying the will of the heavens. How could this be empty talk? In the past, there were even top geniuses that were far too confident in their own talent

and recklessly chose to embark on this dangerous path, only to be trapped in the Life Destruction realm. Finally, they had no choice but to cripple and break up their body transformation cultivation and continue cultivating the essence gathering system.

To be like Mo Eversnow and have a half-step World King cultivation as well as being close to opening the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, that was simply a miracle among miracles.

The further one went in the body transformation system, the harder it was to cross into Ninefall. With Lin Ming's current situation, once he opened the Gate of View, he'd have opened six of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, only missing the Gate of Life and the Gate of Death. As for the Gate of Life and the Gate of Death, they were called the true life and death threshold. The difficulty to open them was on a completely different level, and these two gates were much more powerful. They were each equal to half a large boundary in the body transformation system. If Lin Ming completely opened the first six gates, that was the same as completing a certain goal of the body transformation system; his bodily physique would experience a qualitative leap upwards, but at the same time it would also become far more difficult to break into the ninth stage of Life Destruction.

However, the more difficult it was to step into the ninth stage of Life Destruction, the greater the advantages would be. The body would be tempered much more thoroughly. Especially after fusing with the dragon bone; whether it was Lin Ming's body transformation system or essence gathering system, it would hold incalculable advantages to him.

For Ninefall, Lin Ming would need to have the support of a terrifying amount of resources. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to succeed.

In the end, the current Lin Ming was going against the heavens!

Lin Ming submerged himself into the spirit spring in the rear courtyard and entered into a contemplative state. What he didn't know was that at this time, in Carefree Palace, there was actually a special meeting being assembled because of him. Those people participating in this meeting were either inner court Elders, peak direct disciples, the Highest Elders of Carefree Palace, the several Vice Island Masters, and even the Island Master himself, Xiao Skywhite.

“Island Master Skywhite? Are you playing a joke on us? You want to take Carefree Island's destiny stabilizing treasure, the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and give it away to an outsider? The Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree is an incomparably supreme divine medicine! In this world, such a divine medicine is unique, singular!”

As Xiao Skywhite slowly laid out the reason for this meeting, the Council of Elders' Great Elder Xiao Haogan asked this question, his eyes wide as if he didn't dare to believe his own ears.

The Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was Carefree Island's most precious divine object, without anything else even coming close. It was a treasure used to stabilize Carefree Palace's destiny. Moreover, the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree would produce ten fruits every 1000 years. These fruits would be plucked and made

into wine using a special technique. This wine would be rewarded to the sect's most outstanding disciples. The Ten Severing Fruit Wine was extremely valuable. Without them, there might have been disciples that would never have broken into the Divine Lord realm.

Not just that, but Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan were already joining forces to suppress Carefree Island. If they actually handed out the divine treasure they used to stabilize the destiny of their sect, wasn't that the same as being told to roll over and die?

Xiao Skywhite frowned, not answering. But then, the Elders of the Council of Elders began to whisper among each other, all of them were panicked and confused and everything was in chaos. None of them could believe Xiao Skywhite's decision!

As for the core disciples, they were even more appalled. In the future, to make further progress, they would have to rely on the Ten Severing Fruit Wine!

"Everyone quiet!" Xiao Skywhite shouted. His voice contained true essence that spread through everyone like a strong breeze, immediately silencing all the Elders and core disciples.

Once the entire grand hall was calmed down and silent, Xiao Skywhite slowly spoke, "It seems that all of you have forgotten. When the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was planted 50,000 years ago, my father told me that it did not belong to my Carefree Island. Rather, it was placed here by a benefactor. There would be a day when this benefactor would return for it. Did you all forget this?"

For these last tens of thousands of years since the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was planted, we have been able to pluck the Ten Severing Dao Fruits. This has even faintly helped to improve the destiny of our sect. In all these years, geniuses have poured forth from our sect and now our sect is only a step away from becoming a Holy Land. The reason for this is that we have received the graciousness of that person. Did you all think the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree would always remain planted on Carefree Island?”

As Xiao Skywhite spoke, everyone froze for a moment before remembering this. Indeed, they knew of this. It was just that the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was planted at Carefree Island such a long time ago that they nearly forgot that this divine tree never belonged to Carefree Island to begin with.

“So what’s the meaning of this? That person has come back to take away the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree?”

The Great Elder’s thoughts stirred. He suddenly recalled the report relayed to him by a disciple responsible for the entrance examinations. An extremely talented young man with an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation had entered Carefree Island to request an audience with Xiao Skywhite. He also called himself a distant relative. This was most likely the person!

“Is it the youth with the eighth stage of Life Destruction? Is he the descendant of that mysterious person from the past?”

Xiao Skywhite remained silent, quietly acquiescing.

Realization stirred up the Great Elder. “It’s true that the Ten Severing Dao Fruit is not ours, but it has already been planted at my Carefree Island for the last 50,000 years. Does he think he can just take it away because he wants to?”

“That’s right! We have helped store it for them for 50,000 years and yet they want to just take it away. Where is the justice in that!?”

Another Elder echoed in agreement. However, more Elders stayed quiet. Although they definitely didn’t want the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to be taken away, their skin wasn’t so thick that they could raise their voices. Although they had helped ‘store’ the tree for 50,000 years, the truth was that they obtained massive benefits from it. For those benefits to now be suddenly taken away, they definitely didn’t want that to happen. Of course, this was also a completely natural matter.

To give a cup of rice was grace and to fight for a cup of rice was enmity. Once one obtained a benefit from others and was used to it, if that benefit disappeared, that kindness would turn to anger.

At this time, a purple-clothed youth asked, “Elders, may this disciple speak?”

The one who spoke was the top direct disciple. In truth, this purple-clothed youth’s status was even higher than a normal inner court Elder. It was only that he was a junior so by customs he wasn’t allowed to interrupt a meeting.

“Speak.” The Great Elder said. This purple-clothed youth was named White Mirrorjade and he was an extremely favored disciple. He would likely become one of the top figures of Carefree Island, and he even had a chance of becoming the next Island Master.

White Mirrorjade politely bowed as a junior did, then began to slowly speak, “This disciple believes that if the descendant of the mysterious person that left behind the Sovereign Dao Fruit Tree comes to our Carefree Island after 50,000 years to take it away, there must have been some sort of accident. Otherwise, it’s impossible for such a long period to pass. As for that mysterious person, they have likely died by now. As for his descendant, they likely found some letter left behind by this mysterious person detailing the matter. It is likely that countless generations have already separated that mysterious person from his descendant. By depending on this alone, for this descendant to come to Carefree Island to demand the return of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, that is far too ridiculous.”

“Since ancient times, those with strength and those with the destiny were able to take and occupy heavenly materials. But that junior called Lin Ming is only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. No matter how great his talent is, how high can his combat strength really be? This disciple also believes that this Lin Ming doesn’t have some supreme elder supporting him from behind. Otherwise, if he came here to do something so important as taking back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, he surely would have brought a master for a display of shocking strength. If such a top character were to come demand the return of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, the process would be much smoother. One could see from this that there is no one supporting Lin Ming; there is only him.”

“In this case, even if he obtains the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, it will be impossible for him to keep it. A man’s wealth is also his ruin. He will surely bring upon himself a calamity because of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. He will be cursed to death by the divine tree. That is because his fate is too shallow, that is because he cannot withstand the destiny of the divine tree! If we do not return the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to him, in truth, we are helping him. This can also be considered as returning the kindness of that mysterious person from the past.”

“As for my Carefree Island, we are thriving, and every single day we make more and more progress. Now we’re just half a step away from becoming a true Holy Land level sect. With the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree supporting us, we’ll become even more powerful, and our strength can also handle it. As for a lucky chance, for us to obtain the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree 50,000 years ago and for the mysterious person who left it with us to die, that is our lucky chance. The heavens themselves have granted the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to my Carefree Island. If we do not accept the gift of the heavens, that will instead bring upon us misfortune. If we were to give away the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to a junior whose strength is negligible, causing him to die, that would be the most stupid sort of behavior. That is the same as cutting off the hope for our Carefree Island to become a Holy Land.”

“Also, 50,000 years ago when the Ten Severing Dao Fruit was planted, we also had to use up a massive amount of celestial spirit water to nourish it. Only then did it begin to produce the Ten Severing Dao Fruits. How could we just give it away so easily after all that?”

White Mirrorjade’s words were clearly eloquent enough to turn

black to white and switch good to evil, but his words were even plausible and backed up with undeniable logic, as if keeping the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree would actually be the greatest kindness to Lin Ming. As the Elders heard this, all of them were stunned. When the Great Elder spoke, he obviously shed all face and pretense of cordiality in not wanting to give up the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, so no one spoke up. But now that White Mirrorjade spoke, there were some truths mixed into his words and he had even taken the side of justice and morality. He had come up with all sorts of reasons that the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree should stay here; really, it was enough to leave one gawking.

Ye Rosewater, the one who brought Lin Ming to Carefree Pavilion, was sitting beside White Mirrorjade. As she heard him speak, she was left stunned. She sighed and thought to herself, "This man, his skin is not of ordinary thickness."

Chapter 1079 – To Make Things Difficult

“What Mirrorjade said makes a great deal of sense!” As the Great Elder heard White Mirrorjade’s words, he praised him without hesitation. “Good. Then, if we do not return the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, that is the same as protecting him! Also, we’ve paid no small price in order to defend the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree these past years. Although we’ve managed to block off all news of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and keep it highly confidential, this news did leak out 10,000 years ago. Because of that, a powerful influence tried to move against our Carefree Island and steal away the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. The old Island Master paid a great price to invite a half-step World King master here to personally manage the array formations of Carefree Palace; only then were we able to repel that powerful influence. Without us, how could the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree still be safe!?”

The Great Elder suddenly recalled the great war that had been stirred up 10,000 years ago for the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and found another reason to keep it.

From the start, Xiao Skywhite had been watching on from the sidelines with icy eyes. As he heard the Great Elder mention the war of 10,000 years ago, he sneered and said, “The truth is that there is a matter I’ve hidden from you all. 10,000 years ago, in the war of our sects, it wasn’t my father who hired a master to come and help us. Rather, that half-step World King was significantly related to the mysterious person who left behind the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and that was the only reason they helped us. Really, did you all think it was so easy to invite a half-step World King powerhouse?”

“What?”

As Xiao Skywhite spoke, everyone was left shocked. The Great Elder’s eyes widened like he had swallowed down a pound of arsenic, staring on speechlessly with flummoxed eyes.

The Great Elder thought for a moment and said, “Impossible! That’s impossible! If that mysterious person really had the ability to take back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, then why would he wait for such a long time? Just who would leave such a divine tree at some place without taking it back for 50,000 years and even help to protect it! I do not believe that someone would be kind-hearted to such an extent! Moreover, he actually sent an eighth stage Life Destruction junior to come and request to take back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree! Isn’t that just a joke? Island Master Xiao, I know that the old Island Master is your father and you do not wish to violate the promises you made, but that doesn’t mean you have to come up with such baseless reasons like this! If you feel sorry then there are also other ways in which we can compensate that boy Lin Ming.”

After hearing Xiao Skywhite’s words, the Great Elder’s expression softened a bit but he clearly didn’t believe the given reasons.

At this point, White Mirrorjade seemed to nonchalantly say, “That Lin Ming is extremely talented. In the future, the boundary he reaches might be no less than mine. If we give him too many benefits and also allow him to leave Carefree Island, he might not remember our kindness nor understand that we are trying to protect him. On the contrary, he might bear a grudge for not being

able to take back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. After a thousand years, when he's grown, he might return and..."

White Mirrorjade let his words trail off as he spoke. However, those present weren't idiots; they naturally understood the meaning behind them. This move was truly ruthless. This man was merciless to the extreme!

Great Elder Xiao Haogan's eyebrows jumped up. But, what White Mirrorjade said was true. If they gave Lin Ming some compensation and allowed him to leave then that was the same as releasing the tiger to the mountain. This would only bring trouble in the future. It would be good if he didn't manage to grow, but once he did he would surely bring a calamity back to them. This was what people meant when they said that a truly great man had to be ruthless and their actions also had to be decisive. They could not allow themselves to be shackled down by ideas of morality and justice, otherwise they would reap what they sowed!

"Island Master Xiao, how about this. If you want to follow the wishes of the old Island Master then you can return the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to that boy, and then you can be considered as having completed your father's will. Then, I will send some people to take back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. Wouldn't that be perfect? The Divine Realm is a jungle where strength is the only law. Isn't people killing and robbing others something that happens all the time?"

As Xiao Skywhite saw Xiao Haogan and White Mirrorjade become increasingly cruel in their words, his eyebrows jumped up. Mo Riverbliss was also watching this meeting from Carefree Palace!

However, Mo Riverbliss had a special status; she couldn't appear before these people. In the war of 10,000 years ago, she had changed her appearance and risked herself to help when she had no other choice. But if she appeared again, and with the ruckus around the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree added on, then that would surely arouse a great deal of interest and make things that much more dangerous for her!

After all, Mo Riverbliss was a character who was just a bit away from becoming a World King. Even though the Divine Realm was immeasurably vast, this news would spread far.

Xiao Skywhite certainly didn't want Mo Riverbliss to appear, but he was not the only one in Carefree Island. It was difficult for him to handle all of these people. Even though there were many Elders that wouldn't outwardly oppose returning the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree because of their ideas of morality, they would still pull their support after being convinced by Xiao Haogan and White Mirrorjade.

Xiao Skywhite deeply glared at the Great Elder and White Mirrorjade. Then, he slowly said, "You want to kill someone and steal their wealth? I fear that before you can do that, you will have already died! Some matters are beyond the scope of your understanding. She will have scruples about some matters, but if you dare to touch her bottom line you will die without even having known how you died. Do not blame me for not having reminded you!"

Xiao Skywhite's words began to contain a clear killing content.

The Great Elder shrank back, his back going cold, and even White Mirrorjade stiffened, fidgeting about. Xiao Skywhite's words seemed random, but they weren't lies meant to scare them.

Who was this 'she'?

If there really was such an existence, then why would she place the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree at Carefree Island for 50,000 years, and then send some junior to take it back when she wanted it returned?

After Xiao Skywhite spoke, he left in a fit of anger. The old Island Master was his father, but thousands of years ago he had gone wandering the universe to seek adventure and a turning point to break through to the next boundary. As for Xiao Skywhite, his records of qualifications and merits were lacking, thus he couldn't control the situation in the sect.

Moreover, Xiao Skywhite knew that behind Great Elder Xiao Haogan, there was actually the three Highest Elders supporting him. In other words, if he wanted to return the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree then he would have to suppress these three Highest Elders first. Each one of them was a cornerstone of Carefree Island.

“Senior Mo...”

As Xiao Skywhite returned to the mystic realm in Carefree Palace, he stood in front of the bamboo house and called out with a bit of shame.

“Mm... there’s no need to say anything. I have an approximate understanding of the situation. In truth, when I agreed to place the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree in the keeping of Carefree Palace 50,000 years ago, I already expected that something like this would happen. But, I still did so because Carefree Island is the escape path for the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. In the future, if Eversnow wishes to reform the Verdant Feather Holy Lands she must take Carefree Island as the foundation. Thus, Carefree Island’s strength is naturally important.

“The Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree is Carefree Island’s dragon vein, its vital treasure. To take it away is the same as tearing out that dragon vein, and it will also have an enormous effect on Carefree Island’s destiny; it will even slow down Carefree Island on its path to becoming a Holy Land. I naturally wouldn’t make such a decision easily, and I definitely wouldn’t use brute strength to kill those factions that oppose it. This is because my decision is related to whether or not the Verdant Feather Holy Lands will be able to smoothly reconstruct itself in the future. I can’t be careless with the choices I make.”

Xiao Skywhite relaxed and let out a sigh of relief upon hearing Mo Riverbliss’ words. He had thought that Mo Riverbliss would support Mo Eversnow without reserve, but as he thought about it, to Mo Riverbliss, both Carefree Palace and Lin Ming were important; both were the meat of her palm. Even with Mo Eversnow here she wouldn’t immediately or easily give the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to Lin Ming. Rather, she needed to observe him to make sure that he had enough talent and strength to shoulder the great responsibility that was the future reformation of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. Only after doing that would she make her decision.

As for the meeting today, that was just to make sure that the Elders of the opposing factions were mentally prepared, lest there be confusion in the upper echelons of Carefree Island if the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was suddenly taken away.

Xiao Skywhite felt much more at ease as he thought of this. At the minimum, he didn't have to worry about some people enraging Mo Riverbliss and causing her to kill some of them in secret. This would place Carefree Palace, which was already experiencing troubles, in an even more tenuous position! Moreover, if high level powerhouses of Carefree Island were to suddenly die, this would surely cause panic. With the threat of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan constantly looming over them, if they weren't careful this would even cause damage to Carefree Island's very foundation.

Xiao Skywhite excused himself. Then, in that bamboo house, Mo Eversnow appeared in front of Mo Riverbliss, her soul form slowly floating in the air. With her slender feet peeking out of her long dress, she seemed like an immortal fairy fluttering through the wind, elegant and untainted by the world.

"Aunty... you seem like you don't believe Lin Ming?" Mo Eversnow said in a soft tone. Although her face was calm, there was a trace of exasperation in her eyes, barely perceptible. She was clearly not too pleased with Mo Riverbliss' methods.

As Mo Riverbliss caught sight of Mo Eversnow's expression, she chuckled and serenely said, "I naturally trust Little Snow's judgment. It's just that... aunty is already old. I wouldn't be able to withstand a mistake again, otherwise I fear that I won't be able to

see the day that the Verdant Feather Holy Lands will be reformed. In the past, your grandfather made a mistake, and that was that he didn't kill Tian Mingzi upon discovering the seed of ambition that grew in his heart, finally ending with the worst result possible..."

As Mo Riverbliss spoke to her, she let out a deep sigh. Mo Eversnow also let out a sigh, no longer saying anything.

.....

At this time, Lin Ming was still training at the spirit spring at Free Ming Pavilion, completely unaware of the matters occurring at Carefree Palace. He couldn't be blamed for being dull-minded. He simply didn't know that the resources Mo Eversnow spoke of were already being used by Carefree Palace, and that taking them away would affect Carefree Palace's foundations.

Lin Ming had originally thought that these resources were kept solely by Mo Riverbliss and that the Elders of Carefree Palace didn't know of them. Also, since Mo Riverbliss seemed to love her niece very much, she wouldn't have much resistance in passing the resources to him.

As Lin Ming was training, a few miles away from Free Ming Pavilion, several core disciples of Carefree Island appeared. Ye Rosewater and White Mirrorjade were among them.

"Free Ming Palace? Haha, is that the boy Lin Ming's residence? Did you change the signboard for him?"

The one who spoke was a disciple named Liu Yun. After arriving at Carefree Pavilion, he was the first one to spit out these words. He glanced at Ye Rosewater, a faint smile on his face as he spoke. He was also a direct disciple of Carefree Island and his talent was quite good, just a bit worse than Ye Rosewater and White Mirrorjade's.

“Yes, I changed it.” Ye Rosewater frowned, not too comfortable with the sly look that Liu Yun was shooting her.

“Okay. Senior-apprentice Brother White, this is the boy you spoke of? He's just an eighth stage Life Destruction nobody, someone whose existence is no different from an ant's. And yet he actually came to my Carefree Island and he wants to take away the divine tree? That is just the funniest joke I've heard in my entire life. Come on, let's go and take a look at just what sort of pure-hearted fool this boy is.”

Chapter 1080 – Simulation Mystic Realm

Lin Ming wanted to take away the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. This more than affected the benefits of Carefree Island's disciples; it was the same as holding a saber to their chest. How could he not draw their hatred in such a situation?

If Lin Ming had the strength of a half-step World King, then although they might be dissatisfied, that was still a level of power that they could not question, thus they naturally wouldn't say anything. But, Lin Ming was only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. The eighth stage of Life Destruction was far lower than most of the direct disciples' cultivations. For instance, Liu Yun himself was at the early Divine Sea. Now that everyone knew Lin Ming was only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction and was also coming to steal away their lifeblood, it was inevitable that there would be trouble stirring up around him.

White Mirrorjade faintly smiled as he saw Liu Yun's aggrieved and angry expression. He absolutely would not surrender the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. He had ambitions of becoming the next Island Master. In other words, the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree would be his in the future, so how could he give it up to some outsider?

But when Xiao Skywhite ended the Council of Elders, the final warning he gave had caused White Mirrorjade to feel some fear. Otherwise, he would have already united the three Great Elders together and killed Lin Ming before he had a chance to grow.

Currently, White Mirrorjade didn't believe Xiao Skywhite's

words. He only thought that Xiao Skywhite was trying to threaten them with baseless lies.

But, he also didn't dare to put himself in danger. Thus, he tossed out a testing stone. This sort of testing stone was far too easy to find. As long as he described Lin Ming's cultivation and also mentioned his goal in coming to Carefree Island, White Mirrorjade wouldn't even need to act; there would be a mob of people picking up pitchforks to go after Lin Ming themselves.

For instance, this Liu Yun.

Ye Rosewater had participated in the Council of Elders and had also followed White Mirrorjade here. She certainly could see through his plans. But now that she saw Liu Yun's current agitated state, she knew that he wouldn't believe her no matter what warning she gave him, so she simply shook her head and remained silent.

“Fuck, isn't this just some descendant that is separated by countless generations from that mysterious person? That person has likely died already, otherwise why would they wait until now to send a little shit like this to take back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree? Perhaps that brat wasn't even related from the start and he just happened to come by some sort of record that was left behind, then he thought to come to my Carefree Island and trick all of us. Does he think we're idiots or something?”

Liu Yun's words became uglier the further he spoke, but it was also what everyone else was thinking. Lin Ming's appearance here was far too strange. If one didn't know of the Verdant Feather Holy

Lands, they would inevitably be suspicious of Lin Ming's identity. Just coming back after 50,000 years to take back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree didn't make any sense at all.

Ye Rosewater found it hard to continue watching, "Liu Yun, although I also don't wish for Carefree Island's benefits to be damaged, your words are far too disgusting. Lin Ming is not as simple as you think he is. His talent is high and there is surely some super influence supporting him from behind, otherwise it's impossible that such a genius could be trained."

"Haha! His talent is high? How high could it possibly be? Did you know that he simply underwent Carefree Island's entrance examination? That is an examination prepared by outer court disciples, in other words, nothing more than a pack of nobodies. If I chose to participate in the entrance examination I could also sweep them all away like nothing!"

As Liu Yun spoke, he had already arrived in front of Free Ming Pavilion. At this time, Lin Ming was training in the hot springs in the back. He didn't care what they were speaking of, but he could feel that these people had come looking for him.

Lin Ming languidly stepped out of the spirit spring. The spring water slowly rolled down his smooth skin. This was a result of his body's boundary having reached a certain realm. After obtaining the perfect spirit body of legends, after bathing, the water simply wouldn't wet the body, so one didn't need to dry off at all.

With a wave of his hand, all of the remaining drops of water evaporated off of his body. Then, fire origin energy spontaneously

gathered to form red clothes that draped and twisted around him.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin.” Ye Rosewater smiled as she saw Lin Ming appear. White Mirrorjade also smiled and nodded, hiding all of his hostility towards Lin Ming.

Only Liu Yun didn’t bother hiding his overbearing and arrogant expression. His eyes were filled with provocation as he glared at Lin Ming.

“Mm?” Lin Ming frowned. He didn’t seem to know this fellow, so how could he have randomly made another enemy?

“You’re Lin Ming?”

Liu Yun sized up Lin Ming, his eyes like an officer looking at a criminal, scrutinizing and filled with disdain.

He didn’t wait for Lin Ming to answer before jeering and saying, “I’m Liu Yun. I heard that your results at the entrance examination were quite good! At that time, you seemed to ask the examiner what the qualifications were to become a top direct disciple, right? It seems like you meant as if you could achieve such a point easily?”

As Lin Ming heard these words, he was left flummoxed. But what he did know now was that this Liu Yun was clearly looking for trouble.

Just when did he manage to annoy such a person? Ever since he arrived at Carefree Palace, he had stayed at his residence. Besides Mo Riverbliss, the Island Master, and a few others, he basically hadn't seen anyone at all. He had spent the majority of his time training in the spirit spring, and even so, he had managed to attract trouble. Really, he could be lying on the ground and still be hit by marrows.

At this time, Ye Rosewater's true essence sound transmission echoed in Lin Ming's ears, "Sorry... Junior-apprentice Brother Lin. Liu Yun has been striving to obtain some Ten Severing Dao Fruit for these past years so he's a little bitter towards you."

"Ten Severing Dao Fruit?" Lin Ming was startled. "What is a Ten Severing Dao Fruit?"

"Huh?" It was Ye Rosewater's turn to be surprised. "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, didn't you come to Carefree Island to take back the Ten Severing Do Fruit Tree?"

Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree...

Lin Ming pondered for a bit and vaguely recalled that he did read something about a Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree in one of the ancient texts he read. It was a type of heaven-step miracle medicine, and there was likely only one that existed in the world. Only when it died would another one be born.

The medicines of the Divine Realm were divided into four levels: heaven, earth, mystic, and mortal. Heaven-step medicines were

the highest, but above heaven-step medicines, there actually existed transcendent miracle medicines. These types of transcendent miracle medicines were on the same level as a transcendent divine might, something that could even make a World King go crazy with desire. Those were legendary medicines that could grow to even a hundred million years old. That was not an existence that Lin Ming or even a Holy Land level influence could grow. Only someone like Mo Eversnow's grandfather would be able to accidentally stumble upon such a treasure. As for others, they wouldn't know about nor would they understand it.

Lin Ming quickly understood what was happening. "So that's how it is. It seems I thought that things were simpler than they are. I thought that the resources Mo Eversnow left behind were all with Mo Riverbliss, and as long as I obtained Mo Riverbliss' approval and passed her tests then I could take them. I didn't actually think that those resources were currently being used by Carefree Island! If I want to take them now, the resistance would be tremendous!"

In Lin Ming's opinion, it was normal for Carefree Island to not want to return the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. Rather, he would find it strange if they smoothly gave it to him. This sounded shameless, but this was simply human nature. It was already an excellent result that Carefree Island didn't try to kill him. This was likely due to Mo Riverbliss acting as a deterrent.

"Brat, did you not hear what I said?" Liu Yun spat out angrily as he saw Lin Ming a bit distracted.

After understanding the key points of what was going on, Lin

Ming faintly smiled at Liu Yun and said, “And just what is it that you want to say?”

Even a blind man could see what Liu Yun wanted. Liu Yun clearly wanted to make a show of his own power so that Lin Ming would back down. At the very least, Liu Yun would be able to vent some of his anger and feel better about himself.

As White Mirrorjade saw the tense atmosphere between Liu Yun and Lin Ming, he stepped out to mediate the situation. “Junior-apprentice Brother Liu, what sort of attitude is this? This isn’t how my Carefree Island treats their guests. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin has just come to Carefree Island and he hasn’t been anywhere yet. How about we change the scenery a bit?”

Lin Ming glanced at White Mirrorjade. He couldn’t feel any hostility from his expression, but he was well aware that he was the focus of hate for all the disciples of Carefree Island at the moment. He certainly wouldn’t believe that anyone would be treating him with kindness.

Liu Yun was surprised for a moment. He looked at White Mirrorjade, puzzled, and said with a true essence sound transmission, “Senior-apprentice Brother White, what is the meaning of this? Why are you being so polite to this Lin boy?”

In the end, Liu Yun didn’t know if there was anyone supporting Lin Ming, and he also didn’t know that Xiao Skywhite was fully supporting Lin Ming. This couldn’t be blamed on him. There was simply no way for him to imagine all the convoluted connections between Carefree Island and the Verdant Feather Holy Lands from

50,000 years ago. This caused him to be confused and also careful, lest he stumble into some pit.

“What, did you want to fight with him right here?” White Mirrorjade countered.

Liu Yun was surprised, and then he deeply said, “Well, I actually do want to kick his ass right now and beat him into the ground. But, my cultivation is a large boundary higher than his. If I beat him up like this then others will say that my victory wasn’t the martial path. Moreover... yes, this boy made such a ridiculous request and yet he can still stay at Carefree Pavilion. Is there someone in the sect supporting him?”

Liu Yun suddenly realized that something didn’t seem right. White Mirrorjade said, “Mm... well, regardless of what it is, the old Island Master owes his graciousness to the mysterious person who left the divine tree here. We shouldn’t push this too far.”

“So it’s like that. Humph, the martial world is about the survival of the fittest. Things like grace and kindness can only be discussed between people of similar strength. If the difference is too great then there is simply no meaning at all! I fear that this mysterious person has already died!”

As Liu Yun spoke, Lin Ming had been watching with bored eyes from the sidelines, obviously not caring too much about them. White Mirrorjade thought little of this. He laughed and said, “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, your talent and cultivation are both amazing. This is an excellent time for you to enter a divergent mystic realm and gain experience. Have you gone yet?”

“I have.” Lin Ming nodded. He had only been to the God Beast Mystic Realm.

“Haha, my Carefree Island just happens to preside over a divergent mystic realm. If Brother Lin has any time, feel free to go and have a look. You might be able to obtain some treasure there. Then again, there are always dangers when entering a divergent mystic realm. In order to reduce the casualties in such a divergent mystic realm, my Carefree Island has paid a great price to specifically create a simulation mystic realm. Brother Lin, do you have any interest in taking a look?”

“Simulation mystic realm?” Lin Ming’s mind stirred. He was actually somewhat interested.

At the side, Liu Yun’s eyes brightened. He obviously thought of something.

“That’s right, a simulation mystic realm. There are all sorts of dangers in a simulation mystic realm, but you’ll be able to safely leave. And, the shorter your time within, the greater the value of the simulation treasure you will obtain, and this will also prove that you are much stronger! If you experience a simulation mystic realm for long enough, then once you enter a true divergent mystic realm, you will be able to deal with unexpected situations much more easily.”

Chapter 1081 – Perish Together?

The simulation mystic realm that White Mirrorjade spoke of was less than 10 miles away from Carefree Pavilion. Carefree Island spent a great deal of energy and resources in constructing this simulation mystic realm. There were a massive number of array formations as well as aggressive puppets and vicious beasts. It was able to copy the situation inside the divergent mystic realm to the closest degree so that disciples could gain experience.

After all, it was no small cost to enter a divergent mystic realm just once. If someone went in and died, that would truly be a great price.

Lin Ming stood before the simulation mystic realm and investigated it with his senses. This simulation mystic realm covered an area of a hundred miles, but what was fascinating was that there were countless space folding array formations within. This meant that the space within was many times larger than expected. If one wanted to go in and obtain the simulation treasures, it truly wouldn't be easy.

“Haha, Lin Ming, do you have the guts to test yourself? I'll join you!”

Liu Yan chortled as he stood before the simulation mystic realm.

Lin Ming glanced at Liu Yan. At this time, Ye Rosewater said with a true essence sound transmission, “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, this simulation mystic realm is created with array formations,

but after you enter you may be injured, especially if there are true battle puppets placed inside. In other words, there is a chance you will be severely wounded.”

There were countless risks and dangers within a divergent mystic realm and people often lost their lives exploring them; they weren't games for kids. Carefree Island had done their best to reproduce a mystic realm to its greatest degree. But no matter how lifelike an array formation was, there would inevitably be differences between it and a true environment. Carefree Island had prepared true battle puppets for this reason.

“Thank you for the advice,” Lin Ming whispered back. This Liu Yan clearly wanted to kick him into a pit and have him suffer in this simulation mystic realm.

“What? Scared? Do you want to back out?” As Liu Yan spoke he already stood in front of the simulation mystic realm's entrance. At this time there were already people being tested within.

Several disciples actually exited from the simulation mystic realm. From their appearances Lin Ming could tell they were wounded but also very excited. They had clearly passed the test.

“A 27th level difficulty completed in just 45 minutes! Senior-apprentice Brother Hua is fierce!”

“Haha, it's okay. I haven't made much progress since last time.” The youth called Senior-apprentice Brother Huo said with deliberately fake modesty. But he couldn't conceal the smile on his

face. He was clearly proud of his achievement.

“Eh? Isn’t that Senior-apprentice Brother Liu Yun? Mm? There’s also Senior-apprentice Brother White Mirrorjade and Senior-apprentice Sister Ye Rosewater!”

As these disciples saw who arrived, they were startled. These were the direct disciples of Carefree Island. Especially White Mirrorjade and Ye Rosewater; those two had an exceptional status. As these disciples saw them, they stared in awe.

“Oh? Who’s that boy? He isn’t someone from our Carefree Island.”

Everyone naturally noticed Lin Ming. They didn’t know about the matter of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, and Liu Yun naturally wouldn’t miss out on this opportunity to heap even more public hatred and anger on Lin Ming. He began to send out true essence sound transmissions to these people, telling them in vivid terms about Lin Ming and his goal for coming to Carefree Island.

“What? Senior-apprentice Brother Liu Yun, is what you said true?”

“What a joke! Do we have to return the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to him? He is only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction! How could a junior possibly handle such an important manner? This requires at least a Holy Lord level master!”

In the Divine Realm, Holy Lord was a title and also the name of a boundary. A Holy Lord level master wasn't necessarily the Holy Lord of a Holy Land. Carefree Island was just half a step away from becoming a Holy Land, and the Highest Elders of Carefree Island were also Holy Lord level masters. For such an important matter, it naturally needed to be managed by a Holy Lord level master. To send an eighth stage Life Destruction junior was just taking things too lightly!

“How could anyone still think that? He probably doesn't even have a Holy Lord level powerhouse supporting him. I guess that after his bloodline reached this generation, there is only this boy left!”

“Impossible, this boy is too naïve!”

“How interesting. This boy comes to Carefree Island to take the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, and he actually dares to stand here. He really isn't afraid of being beaten to death by others.”

Several martial artists conversed with true essence sound transmissions, all of them looking at Lin Ming with a joking light in their eyes. This was because Liu Yun's description of Lin Ming hadn't been as detailed as White Mirrorjade's. Liu Yun had deliberately mocked and belittled Lin Ming, so these disciples didn't know that the high level figures of Carefree Island already convened the Council of Elders to specifically discuss this matter, let alone that Xiao Skywhite himself supported Lin Ming.

None of them were worried at all that Lin Ming would walk away with the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. They didn't look at Lin

Ming with fury or hate, but instead looked at him with a thoughtful and amused expression. To them, this was the same as a countryside bumpkin going up to the emperor and saying that he will take the emperor's throne.

“Haha, Lin Ming, I remember that you said that you would easily be able to become a top direct disciple of Carefree Island, right?” Liu Yun maliciously smiled, speaking out loud in front of everyone.

Humph, this father will mess with you until you're done with!

Indeed, these words were simply to create more anger. It had to be known that although these disciples were direct disciples, they were only in the middle reaches of direct disciples; they were far from being able to compare with peak characters like White Mirrorjade and Ye Rosewater. To become a top direct disciple was a goal all of them struggled toward. Although they put forth all of their effort, it was just far too difficult. But now that they heard Lin Ming said he'd be able to easily accomplish their goal, this was the same as ruthlessly stomping all over their dreams and then spitting on them.

Wasn't this the same as ridiculing all of their efforts from before? How could they not be angry!

“How interesting! It looks like you're quite confident in yourself! I heard your entrance examination results were quite good?” A disciple jeered.

“Haha, number one on the entrance examination! How fierce!” another disciple said in an exaggerated tone, his voice full of mocking irony.

“I think that those that are number one on the entrance examination can become an inner court disciple, right? I’m sorry, I forgot to ask my junior-apprentice brother who manages these sorts of things.”

As the several disciples were taking turns deriding him, Lin Ming smiled and said, “You all seem to be mistaken about the matter. I did not say it would be easy to become a top existence among your Carefree Island’s direct disciples. Although that isn’t considered anything to me at all, I don’t have such an interest. If I have to be blunt, I have no interest in joining Carefree Island now or in the future. You don’t have to try and feel good about yourselves. The reason I joined Carefree Island’s entrance examination is only because I wanted to see the Island Master.”

These words of Lin Ming were not just slapping them across the face, but taking a big pile of shit and smearing it all over them! The disciples were infuriated. This Lin Ming clearly didn’t place their Carefree Island in his eyes.

Liu Yun cracked his knuckles. “Brat, you’ve got guts! I want to see today just how crazy you are! If you have any courage at all, enter the simulation mystic realm with me! Junior-apprentice Brother Luo, open the 29th level of difficulty! And put forth the true slaughter puppets, if we’re going to play, let’s play for real!”

Liu Yun shouted out to a disciple named Luo, but that disciple

seemed indifferent as he responded. “Senior-apprentice Brother Liu, there is no need to kill a chicken with a knife meant to kill an ox. I can deal with him myself.”

“No need. I’m more than enough to educate this idiot.” A ninth stage Life Destruction martial artist interjected.

When Lin Ming arrived, he had heard that someone called Senior-apprentice Brother Hua had passed the 27th level of difficulty. From this he was able to glean an approximate understanding of this simulation mystic realm’s difficulty.

In most cases, Lin Ming wouldn’t be interested in fighting with others over things like his, but that didn’t mean he feared them. Moreover, according to what Ye Rosewater told him and also thinking about Mo Riverbliss actions, he realized that for such an important matter as the Ten Severing Dao Tree, she would surely test him.

Perhaps everything that was happening right now was seen by Mo Riverbliss. She might be secretly observing him and seeing whether or not he could deal with the siege of these young disciples.

Once Lin Ming realized this, he naturally couldn’t avoid the fight ahead. If he retreated to Free Ming Pavilion and hid there, he would only be considered easy to bully without any ability at all. How could he earn the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree like this?

He faintly smiled at the disciples and said, “Since you’re

interested in ‘teaching’ me, then how about you all come at me together? This mystic realm can hold more than one person.”

“Haha, that’s what I wanted to hear!”

“Since you want to die, let me help you!”

The smile on these disciples’ faces became increasingly arrogant and reckless. “Thank you all for agreeing, but Liu Yun, since you put forth a 29th level difficulty, that should mean you’ve cleared it before. Don’t you think that using a difficulty you’ve already cleared to deal with me is a bit boring?” Lin Ming said as he turned to Liu Yun.

Liu Yun frowned, “What do you mean?”

As for the other disciples, they were left in a daze. The majority of them had passed the 27-28th level of difficulty, and the 29th level would likely mean they would suffer an agonizing death and defeat. As for anything above that, that was simply a joke.

“What I mean is that we should increase the difficulty. Only then is there a challenge,” Lin Ming spoke, a playful smile dancing on his face.

“What?”

“This brat is crazy!”

“What do you mean crazy, he’s just an idiot! He’s never entered the simulation mystic realm so he definitely doesn’t know what the 29th level means. He just wants to die.”

The surrounding disciples paled as they heard Lin Ming want to raise the difficulty. They couldn’t even deal with the 29th level of difficulty.

“What about it? Weren’t you all loudly speaking about teaching me a lesson? Are you all cowering back now?” Lin Ming’s eyes swept over everyone. These people all had cultivations at the early Divine Sea realm or below, and their overall talent was far below the monstrous geniuses of the four God Beast Clans that had entered the God Beast Mystic Realm. The four God Beast Clans were each peak Holy Lands, and the Ancient Dragon Clan in particular was once a World King level influence.

“You!” The disciples all stiffened. They weren’t afraid of the ruthless, but they were afraid of those that didn’t care for their lives. Was this Lin Ming trying to perish together and bring them all down with him?

“I understand. He clearly understands his cultivation is too low and cannot defeat us, that’s why he’s trying to pull us all down with him!”

“What’s there to be afraid of? This is only a simulation mystic realm! Although it is true battle, if we are severely wounded, we’ll be kicked out by the array formations before we die. At worst,

we'll just have to recuperate in bed for half a month. He only has an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation. His wounds will definitely be worse than ours!"

"That's right. Who cares about some wounds? We can't back down and lose our pressure on him."

Several disciples spoke with true essence sound transmissions before coming to a unanimous agreement. As for Liu Yun, the corners of his lips twitched for a bit before he seemed to come to a great decision. He grit his teeth and said, "Fine! Open the 30th level and bring in the true battle puppets and vicious beasts! This is going to be a true fight!"

Chapter 1082 – Easily Passing

Liu Yun was aware of his own skills. He knew that it was impossible for him to pass the 30th level. As long as he wasn't too miserably injured and lasted until the end then he would be fine.

However, Lin Ming would be in a wretched state. He would inevitably be beaten until his bones were crushed and he might even be crippled. The simulation was extremely dangerous. Although the transmission array would save one's life at the end, changes in a battle still occurred within the blink of an eye. It was normal for the weak to lose an arm or a leg.

As Liu Yun thought of this he grinned, a sinister light flickering in his eyes.

When Ye Rosewater saw Liu Yun's smarmy smile, her eyes twitched. She didn't think that Lin Ming would lack all understanding of the simulation mystic realm and would dare to challenge the 30th level of difficulty so casually. She had wanted to give him some advice, but from Lin Ming's appearance he mostly wouldn't listen to her. She could only tell him, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin... don't try to take the treasures, just wander around the edges, the pressure there is lesser too..."

Liu Yun said, "Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, what are you trying to speak to him for, he clearly won't listen to you. Open the array. You and Senior-apprentice Brother White can manage the array formation."

Ye Rosewater and White Mirrorjade were far stronger than the other direct disciples present. It was naturally appropriate for them to manage the array formation.

“Alright.” Ye Rosewater glanced at Lin Ming one final time before opening the array formation.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The array formation opened. All of the disciples turned into beams of light that shot into the mystic realm. But, Lin Ming’s speed actually surpassed everyone present.

“Nice speed! However, in the simulation mystic realm, what matters is your strength.”

White Mirrorjade crossed his arms against his chest, a satisfied smile on his face. To him, the 30th level of difficulty wasn’t anything at all.

Bang bang bang!

Sounds of fierce energy impacts were already sounding out from the simulation mystic realm. Lin Ming discovered that upon entering, he had been separated from everyone else. There were multiple parallel space layers in the simulation mystic realm; it was an incomparably complex area.

Woosh woosh woosh!

In front of Lin Ming, several dozen beams of light came shooting towards him. These were killing array beams. If he were hit by them, although it wouldn't injure him, it would still consume a great deal of his protective true essence.

Lin Ming's feet turned as he stepped on Golden Roc Shattering the Void. His figure instantly vanished and those beams of light naturally struck nothing but empty air. But in that moment, with a loud roar, over a dozen ogre puppets rushed towards him as well as various vicious beasts of the mystic realm. These vicious beasts had already died, but underneath the manipulation of the array formation they were able to reproduce a part of their strength from when they were still alive.

“Grandmist space!”

Lin Ming didn't hold back. With the special arcane skill that Mo Eversnow taught him, he was now able to hide all the energy fluctuations from his martial skills and thus he could use the grandmist space without scruples anymore.

Hou!

The gray grandmist space expanded outwards, immediately shrouding over the dozen plus ogre puppets.

The Grandmist Laws with the power to annihilate all matter began to rapidly disintegrate their bodies and the energy within them. Even though they had an extremely high defensive power, it

seemed as if they had fallen into a quagmire and their reactions had become dull and slow.

“Die!”

Lin Ming swept out the Phoenix Blood Spear, and fire energy with the strength of manifestation gleamed on the spear edge. Wherever this spear went, ogre puppets would completely explode. These shattered bits would then completely break apart in the grandmist space, becoming a miniscule amount of elementary grandmist energy.

Lin Ming killed over a dozen ogre puppets in a single move, each of them equal to an early Divine Sea martial artist. Yet, he didn't feel as if he had used any energy at all. After absorbing the dragon marrow, his endurance had been enhanced to an unbelievable degree. Before this, he had trouble displaying the grandmist space for an extended period of time, but now he could definitely use it for a time long enough that it could be considered a passive skill.

Chasing Thunder!

Xiu!

A purple light flashed and two vicious beasts were seared into charcoal by the power of thunder. As for Lin Ming, he took advantage of Chasing Thunder's extreme speed and rushed over a dozen miles away. Several divine killing lights of array formations flashed, but Lin Ming passed through the narrow gaps between them like a tiny fish in water!

However, what he didn't expect was that after passing through the gap between the killing lights, several hundred knives would shoot out from hidden array formations. These knives were all scattered over a wide range, extremely accurate. They blocked every possible direction that Lin Ming could evade in!

“Mm? It can't be dodged!”

Lin Ming was surprised. This tricky and precise attack trajectory was actually quite exquisite. Moreover, these knives were sharpened with the energy of the array formation. If these knives were to strike an ordinary martial artist's protective true essence, they would tear through it like waste paper. No wonder those disciples had paled upon hearing the 30th level of difficulty.

But to Lin Ming, none of this was a problem. He had several methods to block these sharp knives.

Just as these hundreds of knives were about to strike Lin Ming, the gold battle spirit in his spiritual sea howled out. The gold battle spirit split into dozens of copies, each of them attaching to a knife and causing them all to come to an immediate stop!

Then, like an escaping rabbit, Lin Ming passed through the openings of these knives.

With the sound of metal crashing on metal, those knives were twisted into pieces after he passed them.

Lin Ming didn't stop. He continued to hurtle forwards, sending out his senses at the same time to search his surroundings.

The treasure in the simulation mystic realm could appear anywhere. There was no fixed position and this position would also be hidden. This was to reproduce the situation within a divergent mystic realm. After all, when entering a mystic realm, nobody would be able to predict the locations of treasures.

After an incense stick of time, Lin Ming had thrust forth his spear countless times, each spear strike bringing down a puppet. In Carefree Island, even if there was a massive number of ogre corpses supplied from the mystic realm, an early Divine Sea puppet was still considerably valuable. It was impossible to always activate this sort of simulation smelting trial.

And at the same time, in a different parallel space, Liu Yun fell into a bitter struggle with the simulation mystic realm's ogre puppets. If one didn't kill these puppets quickly enough then more and more ogre puppets would be attracted to the fluctuations of energy from the battle. In the end, the trial challenger would fall into a complete siege of puppets and fail.

“Shit, only a quarter hour has passed, but this simulation mystic realm will last for a whole hour; that is four quarter hours! If I can't find the treasure during this time then that will be considered as a defeat. But, I've already given up on the idea of seeking the treasure. What I have to do is last for three quarter hours instead.”

Liu Yun estimated the time he could last depending on the rate he was consuming energy, and his complexion became ugly. This was the first time that he had attempted the 30th level of difficulty and he discovered that he had underestimated it.

“Humph, the more difficult this is, the better it is. This is my test, a test to stimulate my physical strength to the limit. Moreover, that brat Lin Ming will surely be in a more miserable state than me!”

As Liu Yun thought of this, he brought forth more true essence and vigorously fought. After striking down a puppet, his eyes brightened; he discovered that there was a gap in the encirclement of ogre puppets.

“Chance!”

Liu Yun launched his movement technique and flushed through in a single go. In the process of breaking through, he could feel a puppet savagely slash at his back with sharp claws, causing blood to spill forth.

An agonizing pain spread out. Liu Yun stiffly coughed and forcefully left the siege of ogre puppets. But at this time, dozens of sharp knives shot out at Liu Yun from hidden array formations, blocking all of his escape paths.

“Fuck!”

Liu Yun had rushed through this simulation mystic realm countless times, so he certainly knew how dangerous these knives that cut at all angles were. They were simply impossible to pass through.

Liu Yun cried out and swung the heavy sword in his hand, knocking away seven or eight knives. Then, he lifted his hand and buried his head in his arms. He shrank his legs, found the area with the least amount of knives and then rushed through that spot.

Although he had a battle spirit, it was far from reaching the gold level so he simply wasn't able to form a world of will projection. It was no problem for him to pour his battle spirit into ownerless objects, but for him to control these extremely sharp energy knives was impossible.

Puff puff puff!

Blood shot out. Liu Yun's protective true essence was pierced through as three knives stabbed into his arm, thigh, and stomach. His face became paler than paper, but for better or worse, no vital points had been pierced. After making it through this difficult pass he did not turn back; through paying the price of being wounded in several places, he had to escape these puppets that were chasing after him.

And besides Liu Yun, the other disciples were in an even more pathetic state.

Their strength was far inferior to Liu Yun's. A disciple using a saber was struck by a vicious beast puppet in the chest. The beast's horn gored the disciple, breaking several of his ribs and causing him to vomit a great mouthful of blood. The disciple crashed into the ground, his eyes filling with stars.

But as he looked up, he could see the vicious beast lunging towards him.

The disciple immediately cursed, "Fuck, my wounds are bad so how come I haven't been transmitted out yet?!"

In Carefree Island's simulation mystic realm, one wasn't able to withdraw of their own initiative. Only when one was seriously injured or had lost the majority of their combat efficiency would they be sent out. This was to cut off all paths of retreat for the disciples and force them to their limits. After all, in a true divergent mystic realm, there was only life or death.

As the disciple saw the vicious beast rush at him, he began to panic in abject fear. He didn't know what degree of wounds he would suffer at the claws of this beast; in the simulation mystic realm, there was no danger of true death.

The disciple's thoughts stirred and just as the beast was about to pounce on him, he gave a loud shout and slashed out with his saber. However, this saber was not aimed at the vicious beast, but at himself. If he fought the beast and was severely wounded in some vital spot, he might have to recuperate for half a month in bed. But, if he injured himself, he had a much firmer grasp of being able to recover quicker.

Puff!

Blood flew out. In the next moment, a light flashed and the disciple was kicked out of the simulation mystic realm.

At this time, a quarter hour had passed. Just as Lin Ming pierced through another vicious beast puppet, he suddenly perked up. A trace of a smile curved up his lips. He had found the position of the treasure!

The treasure was hidden below a large, rolling hill. It seemed to be a type of earth-step miracle medicine.

“There are also array formations on the hill? But, that’s useless against me.”

Lin Ming’s thoughts touched upon the Heretical God Sprout. The power of thunder and fire erupted as he thrust his spear outwards.

Penetrating Rainbow!

Bang!

With a loud explosive sound, the hill completely blew apart. In the next moment, Lin Ming had already taken away the simulation treasure and had flown out of the flames and wreckage, headed straight towards the simulation mystic realm’s exit.

Chapter 1083 – The Sad Brother Liu

At this time, outside of the simulation mystic realm, White Mirrorjade and Ye Rosewater were both managing the array formation. Suddenly, the simulation mystic realm's array formation shuddered.

“Mm? Someone came out?” Ye Rosewater said.

Beside her, White Mirrorjade glanced at the time and faintly said, “There's no way it can be so fast. Someone is probably severely wounded and sent out. There are many of them that can't pass through the 30th level; lasting for an hour is more than adequate.”

“Mm, that should be right.” Just as Ye Rosewater nodded, a light flashed and a bloodied Carefree Island disciple was sent out.

White Mirrorjade's senses swept over the disciple's body. This disciple hadn't been injured too greatly; he would only need to spend a few days in bed. In the simulation mystic realm, as long as one didn't surpass their own limits and run into a great deal of bad luck, there wouldn't be any life-threatening injuries.

“Here.” White Mirrorjade tossed out a recovery pill from his spatial ring and the disciple caught it with a great deal of shame before swallowing it down. After getting into this sort of quarrel where his boasting had gotten him into such a situation, he certainly didn't have any face remaining.

After this disciple appeared, the array formation continued to

shake. Several more disciples were kicked out, all of them heavily injured. But to a high level martial artist, as long as one didn't lose an arm or a leg, they would be able to fully recover with enough medicine.

“Two quarter hours have passed. There's only four disciples that haven't been sent out yet. Lin Ming is in there, and besides him, everyone else is at the early Divine Sea realm,” White Mirrorjade said, stroking his chin. His eyes flashed with a bright light, but there was also a faint imperceptible chill in this light. “This Lin Ming's talent is quite good. I wonder just how long he'll be able to last for. If he can last as long as Liu Yun, that means his eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation is similar to an early Divine Sea genius. This sort of talent is even slightly better than Junior-apprentice Sister Ye of the past.”

As Ye Rosewater heard White Mirrorjade mention her, she didn't respond. She naturally remembered the speech that White Mirrorjade gave at the Council of Elders. Letting Lin Ming go here was the same as letting a tiger return to the mountain.

At this time, the simulation mystic realm's entrance rocked once more, and a youth shot out like an arrow before slowly falling to the ground.

“Mm?”

White Mirrorjade's eyes widened. From this person's speed and steady movements, it seemed he hadn't been injured at all.

In the simulation mystic realm, if one wasn't injured but also left before the allotted time, that meant they had completed their mission inside and had managed to obtain the simulation treasure.

“Lin Ming, you...”

Shock dawned on White Mirrorjade's face as he saw this youth's face. This youth was Lin Ming!

“Lin Ming, you completed the mission?”

Ye Rosewater was floored. She stared at Lin Ming in a daze. As for the martial artists that were recovering, they also stopped healing themselves and looked over at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming slowly traced his spatial ring and took out some medicinal herbs that overflowed with rich origin energy. But after leaving the simulation mystic realm, these 'medicinal herbs' began to rapidly lose their spirit energy before completely vanishing. The medicinal herbs also changed their appearance, turning into a single token with the word 'mystic' written on it.

This was truly the simulation treasure from the simulation mystic realm!

“He really completed it!”

Ye Rosewater's eyes widened. Although she knew that it wasn't impossible to finish the mission inside the simulation mystic realm

and leave, as she saw Lin Ming pull out the simulation treasure with her own eyes, the shock was immense.

Behind Ye Rosewater, the heavily wounded disciples all glanced at each other. They looked at their completely bruised and bloodied appearances, and then looked at Lin Ming's immaculate appearance. They felt as if they had been slapped again in front of everyone. They wished that they could turn into ants and sneak away into some dark, unseen corner.

They had risked their lives and crazily fought inside, but the result was that they were kicked out, not lasting very long. But not only was Lin Ming not wounded, he even completed the mission. As they recalled themselves laughing at Lin Ming, all of them wanted to smash their heads into a wall and die. They were simply too ashamed to be seen in such a situation, especially in front of Lin Ming.

Lin Ming casually left the token on a table and looked up at Ye Rosewater. "Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, I will return to my residence to train first."

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you..." Ye Rosewater gulped, at a loss for words.

Like this, Lin Ming left. All of the injured disciples lowered their heads. It was only when Lin Ming completely left their sights did they let out a long sigh of relief. Because of their little argument from before, and the slight glance that Lin Ming had given them, all of them felt their faces burning red with shame. Now that he left, they finally began to relax.

As for White Mirrorjade, he continued to stare at Lin Ming's back until his figure faded away. His eyes flashed with an icy light.

“How is this possible, this sort of talent is several times greater than me when I was at his level! Is this even human!?”

White Mirrorjade slowly clenched his fists, his nails digging into his palm. He felt a great and impending crisis creep over him. Lin Ming was simply an enigma. The birth of a true genius not only depended on their naturally born will, perception, martial talent, or even the struggle of their destiny. There was also the struggle of resources, background, and inheritances. Otherwise, no matter how talented a genius was, they would still be wasted if they weren't cultivated. For Lin Ming to grow to this step, White Mirrorjade would not believe that there wasn't some great influence supporting him from behind!

But with such a great influence supporting him, why didn't they send a master to retrieve the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree? The only reasoning was...

White Mirrorjade's eyes shot up in realization. There was indeed some great influence behind Lin Ming, but that great influence must not know of the matter concerning the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. They simply weren't related to this whole debacle, and Lin Ming had come with his own private status to take back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree.

After realizing this, White Mirrorjade became enlightened.

If this were true, he didn't need to fear Lin Ming as Lin Ming hadn't grown up yet. But this might not be true in the future!

“This brat, if he is allowed to live, he'll absolutely become Carefree Island's enemy! The only chance is if he is given the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, but that is impossible!”

White Mirrorjade thought, lost in his ideas. At this time, three quarter hours had already passed. There was only a quarter hour until the one hour time limit was over, and the three early Divine Sea martial artists were actually still persisting inside.

After a small period of time, when there was only an incense stick of time left until the end of the smelting trial, the simulation mystic realm shook once again and two bruised and bloodied figures were shot out in succession. Neither of these two were Liu Yun.

These two disciple had both reached their limits. Right after leaving the mystic realm, they fell into a half unconscious state. Ye Rosewater hurried up to help heal them.

These two were considered quite good; they had nearly lasted until the smelting trial ended. They didn't look around before starting to heal themselves. Before long, the sand in the hourglass completely flowed through, signaling the end of the smelting trial.

Hu – !

The last person, Liu Yun, was kicked out by the array formation!

His entire body was dyed in blood and his hair was ruined. He had consumed over 90% of his true essence and was only managing to support himself with a single breath. However, this sort of smelting trial where he had to walk on the thin edge of life or death was also greatly beneficial to him. He held himself up. Although his entire body was wracked in pain and he was exhausted to the extreme, he was still filled with joy and vigor.

“Haha! One hour! I finally made it to the end! Hahaha!”

Liu Yun was clearly the strongest of everyone present. When the other two martial artists came out, they didn’t even have the strength to speak, but he was still able to stand and laugh out loud.

“Haha, a man’s potential is truly squeezed out when they reach their limits. I relied on my own will to last until the end! This feels awesome!” Liu Yun bellowed, his voice spreading out far and wide. However, as he didn’t hear the returning praise and exclaim, he felt something was off. He looked around and saw that the other disciples were all far more heavily injured than he was and they had also been sent out ahead of time; they clearly hadn’t managed to make it to the end. Even so, they were all looking at him with a strange light in their eyes. Even White Mirrorjade and Ye Rosewater were doing so.

“Mm? What are you looking at? Where’s Lin Ming? Why don’t I see that brat here? I want to see just how miserable he was beat up

after arrogantly challenging the 30th level, hehe!”

After looking around and not seeing Lin Ming, Liu Yun wasn't happy at all. In order for his success story to be complete, he naturally needed a beaten up Lin Ming to gloat over and serve as contrast. But Lin Ming actually wasn't here at all.

“He... already left.” A recovering disciple couldn't help but say as he saw Liu Yun's happy appearance.

“Left? Were his wounds so great he had to be lifted away to be treated?” Liu Yun frowned. If Lin Ming had been carried away, how could he still show off?

“This...” The several injured disciples glanced at each other, none of them knowing what to say. They could be considered as being on Liu Yun's team, and now that they saw Liu Yun making a complete clown of himself, none of them had the heart to be cruel and tell him the truth.

At this time, Ye Rosewater glared at Liu Yun and snapped out, “Lin Ming wasn't injured. He completed the mission and decided not to wait for you, so he left ahead of time.

“Eh...?” Liu Yun froze where he was. After some time, he jumped up. “Wh-what?”

Liu Yun's eyes suddenly widened like two plates. “What sort of joke are you playing, how can that be possible!?”

“I have no interest in joking around with you. Look over there and see for yourself. Do you recognize that?” Ye Rosewater testily said and pointed to the token on the table after being questioned by Liu Yun. No longer bothering to speak, she turned and left.

As for White Mirrorjade, he let out a long sigh and patted Liu Yun’s shoulder, no longer speaking. But it was clear what this shoulder pat meant.

This, this was impossible!

“Brother Liu, it’s true.” Several injured Life Destruction disciples said after White Mirrorjade left. All of them had morose expressions like their mothers and fathers had died.

“Lin Ming left after half an hour, not injured at all. He didn’t seem as if he had used any energy at all. He laid the token on the table and left. We all saw it with our own eyes.”

“Brother Liu, don’t be sad.”

Chapter 1084 – Resource Struggle

Everything that occurred within the simulation mystic realm, all of the fighting and chaos, fell into Mo Riverbliss's eyes. When she saw Lin Ming form a force field space around him that was able to shield against all attacks and even twist apart the iron bodies of the puppets, she was startled. "What sort of force field is that, that could be so powerful?"

Mo Riverbliss was naturally referring to Lin Ming's grandmist space. There were an infinite number of force fields and a martial artist could even form their own unique force field, so not recognizing this one was normal. What Mo Riverbliss was surprised at was that the quality of Lin Ming's force field was extremely high.

Mo Eversnow hesitated for a moment and ultimately told everything that happened to Lin Ming in the Road of Emperor to Mo Riverbliss. Towards Mo Riverbliss that had watched over and taken care of her growing up, Mo Eversnow had complete trust.

"Mm? What did you say? Empyrean Primordius? Grandmist space!? What Lin Ming used just now was the Primordius martial intent!?" Mo Riverbliss was alarmed. If Mo Eversnow didn't tell her this, she would never have recognized it. Empyrean Primordius had disappeared 100,000 years ago, and at that time Mo Riverbliss wasn't even famous.

Even before Empyrean Primordius was missing, he had gone into a semi-reclusive state. The time when he shook the Divine Realm and conquered its heroes had been millions or even tens of millions

of years ago. At that time, Mo Riverbliss hadn't even been born. Thinking about it even further, even the old Holy Lord of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands hadn't been born yet back then.

Mo Riverbliss only ever heard stories and tales about a legendary figure like Empyrean Primordius. These stores only mentioned the grandmist space. As for what the grandmist space was, she had no idea. If Mo Eversnow didn't tell her, she would never have realized this.

Mo Eversnow said, "What Lin Ming comprehended is not the complete Primordius martial intent, but only a part of it – the Heavenly Demon martial intent."

"Only a part?" Mo Riverbliss's eyelids trembled. "The legends say that the complete Primordius martial intent is divided into three parts. They're the Heavenly Demon martial intent, Heavenly Mortal martial intent, and Heavenly God martial intent. Demon, Mortal, God, when all three are combined, that is the complete Primordius martial intent. This martial intent is considered an extremely high ranked ability even amongst all the different transcendent divine mights."

Mo Riverbliss stood up, revealing a thoughtful expression. She whispered, "Unbelievable, to think that Lin Ming obtained the inheritance of Empyrean Primordius is simply unbelievable!"

Mo Riverbliss's expression was complex. She was incomparably clear as to what an Empyrean was; that was an existence that truly stood at the very peak of the Divine Realm. Once one reached the boundary of an Empyrean, they no longer bothered with the

general affairs of the Divine Realm. In their opinion, even if two great worlds of the Divine Realm were to wage war against each other, that would simply be nothing but a little squabble. What they wholeheartedly searched for was the Great Dao, and to find the clues to eternal, everlasting life. To the martial artists of the Divine Realm, they were the true divine gods that could not be touched.

If it weren't for Mo Eversnow telling her, Mo Riverbliss would never have known about the fight between Emphyreans 100,000 ago. It was even more impossible to think that Emphyreans would battle in some place like the lower realms and not the Divine Realm.

Between Emphyreans, just why would they fight? And a life or death war at that?

It was hard to imagine what existed in this universe that was worth them desperately risking their lives for.

Was it a treasure on the level of the Magic Cube?

The old Holy Lord of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was able to keep the Magic Cube because the existence of the Magic Cube was a secret to begin with. Very few people knew about it. Even the allies of Tian Mingzi only knew the name of the Magic Cube when they helped assault the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. As for what it was, they weren't sure.

Everything that Mo Riverbliss knew about the Magic Cube and

how valuable it was had all been speculated by the old Holy Lord. But Mo Riverbliss was not able to fully confirm any of this. She had no choice but to wonder; could even something like the Magic Cube cause Empyrean level masters to fight in a life or death war?

Of course, a war between Empyreans was not something that Mo Riverbliss could imagine or even ask about. Perhaps only Empyrean Primordius and Empyrean Thunder Punishment, who had both participated in that war 100,000 years ago, would know these secrets.

However, if Lin Ming could obtain Empyrean Primordius' inheritance, in comparison, the Verdant Feather Holy Lands' inheritances were actually somewhat pale and weak.

After thinking of this, Mo Riverbliss's impression towards Lin Ming underwent a great change.

“Aunty, do you still plan on testing Lin Ming?” Mo Eversnow asked. She had thought for some time before revealing this matter to Mo Riverbliss. It wasn't that she didn't believe Mo Riverbliss was untrustworthy, but rather that this matter was far too significant and the less people that were aware of it the better. In the end, she told Mo Riverbliss because she wanted her aunt to trust Lin Ming more.

Mo Riverbliss was lost in thought for some time. She said, “Although you said that Lin Ming stumbled into Empyrean Primordius' inheritance and obtained it in a mystic realm, for such a character like Empyrean Primordius, even if he perished, his inheritance is still not something the average person could ever

hope of laying their hands on. It could be said that Lin Ming is the designated descendant of Empyrean Primordius. For him to obtain this inheritance, that might even be faintly part of the calculations that Empyrean Primordius made so long ago. Since Lin Ming is the descendant chosen by Empyrean Primordius, I truly do not have the qualifications to test him. Compared to an Empyrean, even our Verdant Feather Holy Lands is not worth mentioning.”

“Little Snow, don’t blame aunty for being so stingy. The issue is that the Ten Severing Dao Fruit True is equally significant to Carefree Island, so I had to carefully consider it. Moreover, Carefree Island is also experiencing extremely difficult troubles. The disciples of Carefree Island are being suppressed in the divergent mystic realm by the joint forces of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan. Now, the lifeline of our resources is in an increasingly tenuous position. If Carefree Island loses the Ten Severing Dao Fruit and Lin Ming cannot grow within the next 1000 years, Carefree Island will truly be in danger. Let alone becoming a Holy Land, even maintaining our current status will be dangerous. If I make any mistakes, the chess piece your grandfather placed down with so much effort will lose all of its value...”

“Occult Bone Clan? Splintersoul Mountain?” Mo Eversnow asked, surprised. “Who are they?”

“They are Carefree Island’s rivals and enemies. The sea area that our Carefree Island is located in is named the Red Desolate Sea. This name originates from the divergent mystic realm hidden beneath the seabed, the entrance to the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. As for Carefree Island, the Occult Bone Clan, and Splintersoul Mountain, they are the three great influences that

exist in the Red Desolate Sea. In the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, there is all sorts of raw medicinal herbs, ores, and other types of resources. Although these resources aren't considered too precious, there's an extremely large quantity of them, so this divergent mystic realm is the greatest source of resources for our three sects.

“Tens of thousands of years ago, the three sects were small and weak. In order to maintain control over the Red Desolate Sea and the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, the three sects joined together to combat outside enemies. At that time, even though the relations between the sects were volatile, they were still relatively harmonious. But as the years progressed and the three sects developed, growing larger and larger, there inevitably appeared the ambition to rule over the entire Red Desolate Sea. If one sect could rule of the entire Red Desolate Sea and also absorb the other two sects, in another 10,000 years of growth, it is absolutely possible to become an upper level Holy Land.”

“The relations between the three sects began to gradually worsen. Because Carefree Island has the support of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, our growth is the fastest of the three sects and now we are only a bit away from becoming a true Holy Land. The other two sects were threatened by this so they joined forces to suppress us. At the start they merely played their games behind the scenes, but now they have already blatantly revealed their intentions. This is especially true in the competition for resources in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. Every time rivers of blood flow through the mystic realm!”

Although Carefree Island's Red Desolate Mystic Realm and the four God Beast Clans' God Beast Mystic Realm were both places

that supplied resources, they were extremely different.

In the God Beast Mystic Realm, there were extremely few resources. But once these resources were found, their value would inevitably be enormous. There were even some shocking heavenly materials that would move the heart of a World King. Correspondingly, the dangers in this mystic realm were extremely high and it was also suitable as a smelting trial location for disciples.

But the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was the complete opposite. There was an immeasurable amount of resources. Here were endless wilds with raw medicinal materials and large swathes of mineral resources. As long as one went in with the intention of gathering materials, they wouldn't even need to look. They could just turn around and gather up a massive amount of resources. However, the value of these resources was relatively low. An extreme talent wouldn't be interested in these resources but they were actually very important to a sect. Carefree Island had countless disciples and all of them required the support of resources. In a sense, the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was like a mine and the disciples that entered this mystic realm were the miners.

As long as the location was a divergent mystic realm, it would be separated from the Divine Realm by a space barrier. The higher cultivation a martial artist had, the more difficult it was for them to pass through. There weren't many dangers in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm to begin with, so one only needed to send out Revolving Core level disciples to gather resources and some Divine Sea realm martial artists to protect against the mystic realm ogres. However, because of the fighting between the three sects, Carefree

Island had no choice but to send more and more Divine Sea disciples. At the start it had been purely about gathering resources, now it had become a proxy war.

However, in order to send a Divine Sea disciple, that required a massive amount of violet sun stones. As it stood, Carefree Island was now stuck in a very difficult position. Carefree Island's reserves of violet sun stones certainly couldn't keep up with the combined reserves of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain. Because of this, Carefree Island now held a tremendous disadvantage in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm.

On the other hand, it was impossible for a true war to break out between the three sects. If there was truly a war in which the sects tried to annihilate each other, the Red Desolate Sea might be swallowed up by some outside influence instead. Weakening Carefree Island's foundation through the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was the most effective way to handle things.

As Mo Eversnow understood this, she thought about it for a moment, then said, "So this is what aunty was worried about. I have a proposal. Next time, allow Lin Ming to escort the group in. His cultivation isn't high so it won't cost much to send him through. His combat strength is obscenely high!"

"Mm?"

Mo Riverbliss frowned, "Lin Ming is only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. Although his strength surpasses an early Divine Sea genius, in the divergent mystic realm, when a true battle starts, even a late Divine Sea martial artist could appear. When an

all-out slaughter breaks out, even characters like Ye Rosewater and White Mirrorjade will join the fray. Although these resources are important, an extreme talent has no price. If Lin Ming perishes because of this, the loss will be far too great.”

Mo Riverbliss certainly placed importance on the man that Mo Eversnow chose. She had only personally seen Lin Ming’s performance in the simulation mystic realm. It would be no problem at all for him to become a Holy Lord level character in the future. To send such a genius out into a divergent mystic realm was too risky.

But Mo Eversnow smiled and said, “Aunty, there is no need for you to worry. There is absolutely no problem. Moreover, to Lin Ming, this is a rare opportunity to temper himself.”

Chapter 1085 – Traitor

In the early morning of Carefree Pavilion, the heaven and earth origin energy was especially rich. The faint rising mist and the light of dawn flooded the mountain valley. The scenery was like a paradise on earth, with thick spirit energy that could extend the life of a mortal by a hundred years just by drinking it.

In Free Ming Pavilion, Lin Ming was completely immersed within the spirit spring, naked. Water flowed into his mouth and nose, throughout his entire body and out his pores, a faint trace of essence staying behind in his body.

Currently, Lin Ming's foundation had already reached an unbelievably solid degree. In truth, if he wanted to and decided to give up the path of dual body and energy cultivation and solely focus on the essence gathering system, he wouldn't need any heavenly materials to break into Ninefall. If he further decided to give up perceiving the Laws, he could easily rely on his own passive accumulation and break into the Divine Sea, Divine Transformation, and even Divine Lord realm with utter ease and speed. But this would also be where he stopped. He would encounter another bottleneck, one he wouldn't be able to pass.

Lin Ming naturally wouldn't choose to do something like that. The path he chose was a difficult one full of pitfalls and traps. He needed to consume a massive amount of resources and time in order to continue on this road, but if he did, his future achievements would be endless.

“Lin Ming.”

As Lin Ming was bathing in the spirit spring, a pleasant voice sounded out in his ears. It was Mo Eversnow.

Lin Ming opened his eyes. With a wave of his hand, clothes wrapped around his body and he jumped up from the spirit spring. “Miss Mo.”

Light flashed and the white-clothed Mo Eversnow appeared in front of Lin Ming. For these past days, Mo Eversnow stayed at Carefree Palace.

“Lin Ming, aunty has already agreed to give you the Ten Sovereign Dao Fruit Tree. In addition, she will also give you 500 million violent sun stones. However, she only needs you to do a little favor for her first.”

In the Divine Realm, violet sun stones were one of the main types of currency. Besides acting as a power source, the other main reason was that they were used to open up transmission arrays for divergent mystic realms. Divergent mystic realms happened to be a great source of resources and status for many sects in the Divine Realm.

As long as one had enough violet sun stones, they could purchase many valuable things in all the various city squares and auction houses of the Divine Realm.

“Miss Mo, please feel free to speak.”

Mo Eversnow reiterated her conversation with Mo Riverbliss in Carefree Palace to him, and Lin Ming immediately agreed. In his mind, he felt nothing but grateful toward Mo Eversnow. Without Mo Eversnow helping him pass his difficult early days, Lin Ming would likely still be at the Sky Fortune Kingdom; he would never have seen or experienced such a vast world.

Of course, in return, Mo Eversnow was also grateful toward Lin Ming. Although the time that the two truly met was very short, the trust between them was actually very strong and reliable.

.....

Two days later, in the Red Desolate Sea territory, news spread out of Carefree Island exchanging their spare resources for a massive amount of violet sun stones.

For a divergent mystic realm, the more disciples that were sent and the higher their cultivation was, the more violet sun stones needed to activate the transmission array.

If Carefree Island exchanged a great number of their sect's reserve resources for violet stun stones, that undoubtedly meant they were about to make a massive move.

At this time, in the Red Desolate Sea, there was a spirit island. In a beautiful mountain valley of this island, there was a gushing hot spring. The waters of this hot spring carried a faint hint of red that smelled like blood. But it was different from the viscous and

coppery tang of blood. Rather, it tasted refreshing and smooth, just like a wonderfully aged wine.

Within this light red spirit spring, there were over a dozen young women wearing veils that were playfully frolicking about. Each one of them was slender with round waists and perfect bottoms, completely proportional to their heart. Not just that, but at the edges of their flirtatious crescent eyes, there was a thin layer of scales. It was clear they weren't pure blooded humans.

Between these young women, there were four tall and burly young men. Their bodies were wrapped in solid muscles and there was not a single hair on their bodies. They had strange runes carved onto their head and also a pair of small horns; they were young disciples of the Occult Bone Clan.

The Occult Bone Clan focused on the Laws of Life, and especially the Concept of Flesh and Blood. They primarily trained through double cultivation the disciples of their clan indulged in all the sensual pleasures of life. The men and women would slowly enlighten themselves on the mysteries of life through endless amounts of sex.

In addition, their natures were gluttonous. This sort of gluttony was not referring to sex, but to eating up all types of heavenly materials. They would even eat metal ores to further perfect their living bodies and perceive the Laws of Life.

As they said, "appetitive for food and sex was natural." The most primal desires of life were to reproduce and eat, and the Occult Bone Clan believed that these two points were the most essential

characteristics of life. Only by displaying these two sorts of desires to the extreme could one become aware of the source rules of life.

A young man hugged a pretty young girl that swam up to him to his chest and began to knead his arms all over her body. He said, “I heard that Carefree Island is exchanging for a massive amount of violet sun stones. Those fellows, are they planning to send out a large number of disciples to the Red Desolate Mystic Realm to rigorously gather materials?”

This young man’s name was Gongyang Bonesmash. The Occult Bone Clan had their own language, so their names sounded a bit crude and strange in the common language of the Divine Realm.

“Hehe, I think they are frightened by us so they’re now sending out more disciple to help guard the mining of resources. They don’t want us to kill them and steal everything again.”

Soon, another Occult Bone Clan disciple had the beautiful young woman in his chest quaking with moans of pleasure. Each one of their clansmen were considered masters in bed. Because they were skilled in the Laws of Life, they all had an intricate understanding in what actions to take. They could cause a woman to be far more sensitive and aroused. Not only was this pleasing them on a physical level, but also stimulating them on a spiritual level. They were even able to form true essence tentacles to directly stimulate a woman’s fires of life, making their desire and climax reach the peak of pleasure.

It had to be known that these women were all captives the Occult Bone Clan stole away from the Jadescale Clan Branch of the Fey

race. There were even some women with a noble status, and some of them even had a faint hint of the royal bloodline. From the start, they had resisted with all of their will. However, due to the stimulating technique from the Occult Bone Clan's disciples, their bodies and minds were slowly worn away before finally fading to nothing. These captives naturally turned into drones that lost nearly all of their personality, becoming nothing but slaves to their own sexual pleasures.

Because of this, the sects, clans, and families that had many beautiful women but were also not too strong avoided the Occult Bone Clan like a nest of vipers.

“I don't think that's necessarily true. Although the Red Desolate Mystic Realm is rich in resources, the amount one can gather in a single time is limited. Moreover, no matter what boundary the martial artists are at, there usually isn't too much of a difference in the amount of resources they can gather. Sending Revolving Core realm disciples into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm is the most cost-effective method; the harvests will be the highest. Low stage Life Destruction disciples that enter will barely be able to make up for their costs. As for high stage Life Destruction and Divine Sea realm disciples, their losses are great. If they send too many Divine Sea disciples and too few Revolving Core disciples, they'll be unable to recoup the costs. I think that Carefree Island is planning to gather a massive amount of resources in a single go. They will likely send out several thousand Revolving Core disciples and a hundred or so Divine Sea disciples, enough so that they will only need to go gather resources once. And, the more Divine Sea disciples they send, the more difficult it will be for us to attack them. They want to engage us in a war of resources.”

“Haha! Carefree Island is wealthy, but our Occult Bone Clan isn’t much worse. On top of that, we have an ally in Splintersoul Mountain. With two against one, there is no way they can win. Since they want to compete with us in resources, let’s see just who can send out more and stronger Divine Sea disciples!”

“Well said! I also can’t wait to start this battle! I’m interested in studying the flesh and blood of those geniuses! Hahaha!” Gongyang Bonesmash wantonly laughed and suddenly thrust up his pelvis, entering deep into the body of the woman on him and causing her to scream.

While the Occult Bone Clan was discussing the situation, something similar was also occurring at Splintersoul Mountain. But what was different was that an unexpected visitor had come to Splintersoul Mountain.

This stranger wore a demon mask. He was tall, with muscles wrapping around his body like the claws of a dragon. He stood on the ledge of a sea cliff. Below him, the tides beat against the reef, causing salt water to splash into the air.

In front of this demon-masked man, there were two youths wearing cloaks. Their cloaks were long and tattered and they floated in the air as though they didn’t weigh anything at all. Because of the cover of their cloaks, one couldn’t see their feet. Looking closely made one doubt that they even had feet.

These two youths were both as pale as death. One of the youth’s lips lifted up. The expression was strange; it was hard to tell if this was a smile or a twitch. “So you’re saying that Carefree Island

really is planning on entering the Red Desolate Mystic Realm to gather reserve resources. If I understand this correctly, does this mean they are trying to stir up a war between the young disciples of our three sects?”

This youth's name was Soul Thousandmile. He was a core disciple of Splintersoul Mountain. His voice was thin and sharp and also grating to the ears.

“The war was provoked by you lot to begin with. A struggle of the three sects will only allow someone to profit from the chaos,” the demon-masked man coldly said. His voice was hard to hear, and there was also some faint underlying meaning to his words. He turned toward Carefree Island.

“Hehe, did I hear wrong? The disciples of Carefree Island do have the right to say that, but you do not. If it weren't for this war, how would Xiao Yanyu, the one with the qualifications to struggle with you for the throne of the Island Master, have died in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm? At that time, we received some anonymous information, ah, I think it was a detailed lists of the Laws that Xiao Yanyu excelled in as well as his weaknesses. Thinking about it, weren't you the one that provided this information, Brother Mirrorjade?”

The demon-masked man suddenly froze. Because of the mask, one couldn't see his expression, but the temperature around him suddenly fell. His voice became extremely grim, “Don't speak such nonsense or you'll lose your life!”

“Hehe, consider it done. I was just casually speaking. So, what

did you come for this time around? Don't tell me you came to deliver information that we already knew." Soul Thousandmile chuckled. Combined with his pallid face, this sort of humorous laugh left one feeling faintly scared.

It wasn't some great secret that Carefree Island was purchasing violet sun stones, and the use of violet sun stones was transparent. Although those from Splintersoul Mountain were only guessing, this guess was more or less correct. Moreover, when Carefree Island truly decided to enter the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, the other two sects would be able to feel the fluctuations coming from the portal of the divergent mystic realm. From these fluctuations, one would even be able to judge just how great the scale of people that Carefree Island was sending through was.

Chapter 1086 – The Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the Sixth Gate

The demon-masked man was silent for a moment. He finally said, “I’ve come here today to inform you about a top genius of Carefree Island. The degree of his talent far surpasses even that of Ye Rosewater, but his cultivation is only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. Without accident, in just several hundred years he will grow to a degree that can give Splintersoul Mountain a headache of problems. If he is allowed to grow for a thousand years, he will even be able to shake the foundations of Splintersoul Mountain. Here is information on him. This time he should also be participating during this entry of the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. You should all know what to do next.”

He flung a jade slip into Soul Thousandmile’s hand.

“Keke.” Soul Thousandmile licked his lips as he swept his sense through the jade slip. The first thing that caught his attention was an energy projection image of Lin Ming. “Eighth stage Life Destruction? Is Carefree Island really so poor that they’re out of soldiers? They are even sending such a talented disciple with a low cultivation into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm and not waiting for him to grow up. Aren’t they afraid that he’ll die there?”

“Haha, it looks like Carefree Island is really desperate. They’re taking such drastic measures. It’s like they want to bring this fight to an end. It seems it’s do or die for them,” another Splintersoul Mountain disciple echoed.

At this time, the demon-masked man coldly humphed and said,

“You think Carefree Island’s decision makers are fools? Although I’ve listed Lin Ming’s information, that is only the strength that he has shown. As for what the limits of his strength are, no one knows, not even me. I advise you all to not underestimate him, otherwise you will surely pay a steep price! The information is already written in the jade slip so you can pour through it yourself. I can only say that this person is my enemy, so you do not need to worry that this information is false!”

“Haha, don’t worry. We’re both clear about how ‘moral’ and ‘just’ Brother Mirrorjade’s character is!” Soul Thousandmile emphasized the words moral and just, clearly mocking White Mirrorjade. He wasn’t saying that White Mirrorjade was a righteous man that wouldn’t give wrong information, but that White Mirrorjade had too many ambitions and wouldn’t tolerate anyone to threaten his ambitions, so his information wouldn’t be wrong.

As he spoke up to here, Soul Thousandmile seemed to think of something else. A playful smile crossed his face. “You know Brother Mirrorjade, it seems as if you aren’t doing too well in Carefree Island. You seem to always be pushed aside and your status is constantly under threat. How about you join my Splintersoul Mountain instead? Our Splintersoul Mountain has extremely advanced studies into the soul. In fact, in that aspect alone we can be considered at the top of the True Martial Great World. If we pay a great enough price and help you increase the strength of your divine soul, your talent will absolutely rise.”

“You sure spout enough crap!” the demon-masked man icily said.

Soul Thousandmile stiffened, about to burst with anger, but at that moment the demon-masked man's entire body combusted into flames. Before long, he turned into a giant conflagration. All of these flames came from the body of the masked man. Moreover, the temperature was extremely high; it easily burnt the demon-masked man to ashes.

As Soul Thousandmile looked at the remains of the demon-masked man, he shook his head, "He's too careful. He never sends his main body here, and every time before leaving he will immolate himself and turn himself into ashes without clues left behind."

The disciple beside Soul Thousandmile spoke up, "Of course he has to be careful. Not only does he have to guard against his identity being exposed to Carefree Island, but he even has to watch out for us ambushing him and capturing him. No one will believe this type of person."

"Mm, even we aren't exactly sure of his true identity. With the available information and his motives, I can approximate that he is White Mirrorjade. But as for evidence, we don't have any."

"Hehe, it should be more or less correct. Although he can hide his appearance, he can't hide his motivations. Not just that, but the information he's given us is so detailed; it's not what the average disciple can provide. So who else could it be? This person really goes to extreme lengths to achieve his goals; he's even willing to betray his own sect without an ounce of hesitation!"

"Humph, what does it matter if he betrays his sect? Even if

Carefree Island is suffering setbacks in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, they will only be weakened and slowly diminish to an upper eighth-grade sect. It's impossible for the likes of them to truly be exterminated. This simply doesn't have any effect on White Mirrorjade. In any case, his only goal is to become Island Master. As for whether Carefree Island is a ninth-grade Holy Land or an eighth-grade sect, that's not as important as him becoming Island Master. If you had to choose, would you rather become a minion of a peak sect? Or the Sovereign of a lower grade sect?" Soul Thousandmile rhetorically asked.

The disciple nodded, "That sounds about right. Being a Sovereign would feel much better!"

As the two Splintersoul Mountain disciples were discussing, on Carefree Island within a secret seclusion chamber, White Mirrorjade opened his eyes.

"Humph, those two fellows keep trying to use words to probe my status, as if they are already completely sure about who I am. Humph, what a waste of time! They want to find my weak spot and use it to threaten me, but what a pity, they will never find any evidence. These puppets were made many years ago and also found by me in a secret depository deep underneath the seabed of the Red Desolate Sea. After I use them to pass on a message, I immediately destroy them. Even if these puppets are caught, there is no evidence on them to indicate they are related to me, because they simply don't come from Carefree Island and the method of manufacturing them isn't related to Carefree Island in any way."

White Mirrorjade thought to himself as he stood up, "Lin Ming,

to think that you would refuse the road to heaven and rush through the gates of hell instead. If you are on Carefree Island, I wouldn't dare to move against you, but since you want to join in on the war between the three sects, you should also be aware that there are no eyes in battle. Who can be blamed if you die in all the chaos?"

As White Mirrorjade thought of this, a sinister smile flashed across his face. He didn't leave his seclusion chamber but instead closed his eyes and continued to meditate. This war was likely to be spread over a wide area with rivers of blood flowing. He had to maintain his peak state, otherwise even he might perish in the mystic realm!

As for White Mirrorjade's information, in truth he hadn't betrayed Carefree Island. He had only pointed out Lin Ming so that his chances of living in the chaotic battle would be much smaller. Of course, if Splintersoul Mountain was really useless, White Mirrorjade wouldn't mind hiding in some secret place and helping them kill off Lin Ming.

Although he was one large boundary and another four small boundaries of cultivation above Lin Ming, he still wouldn't lower his guard. For Lin Ming to grow to such a degree, his life must inevitably be extremely tough. Those that plotted against Lin Ming might find their plans bouncing back on them instead. Moreover, the high level figures of Carefree Island had an extremely ambiguous attitude toward Lin Ming; this also caused White Mirrorjade to have all sorts of doubts.

As White Mirrorjade was training, Lin Ming was also in training.

As for the area where he was training, that was in Carefree Palace's mystic realm space!

This entire space was like a boundless field of flowers, as if it were a sunny and breezy spring day. But high above him was actually a vast expanse of stars with distant celestial bodies. It was like he was in a field of green wilderness floating within the boundless universe.

In front of Lin Ming, a dragon bone floated, faintly glowing with an azure light. Although this dragon bone weighed more than a mountain range, this space had no gravity, so it easily floated where it was.

At this time, Lin Ming went into seclusion to open up the sixth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates—the Gate of View!

The Gate of View was located in his back and was in charge of defense. After opening it, Lin Ming's defense would rise to another level. But the truth was that in comparison to the defensive power gained from opening the Gate of View, the defensive power that he gained from absorbing the dragon bone would actually be much greater.

Once he fused the dragon bone essence into his own skeleton, his bones would become tougher than a top grade saint artifact!

By absorbing the dragon bone, Lin Ming's ability to resist attacks would undergo a qualitative leap.

In addition to his terrifying endurance and regenerative ability, even if Lin Ming stood still and allowed martial artists at his boundary to attack him, in all likelihood, they wouldn't even be able to harm him.

Mo Eversnow stood next to the dragon bone like an otherworldly fairy. And beside her was another woman. This woman had white temples and her face was etched with the passing of the years. One could see from her appearance that she had also once been an outstanding beauty. This woman was Mo Eversnow's aunt, Mo Riverbliss.

Absorbing the dragon bone was an extremely long and vast project. In the God Beast Mystic Realm, the Asura King had obtained the dragon bone for a very long time already. Even so, it had only managed to absorb half of the dragon marrow. As for the dragon bone itself, it wasn't able to do anything to it, because absorbing the dragon bone was simply too difficult.

The dragon bone was different from dragon marrow. For such a massive dragon bone, there was simply no way Lin Ming could swallow it. His only chance was to refine the dragon bone into its purest essence and fuse with it that way.

But the Ancient Azure Dragon was a God Beast of the primitive, archaic times. Even if its main body had died for countless hundreds of millions of years, its bones weren't something that an ordinary person could refine.

Wasn't wanting to refine its essence easier said than done?

This dragon bone also couldn't be exposed to the world. Lin Ming hadn't even dared to take it out in the Ancient Phoenix Clan. He wasn't able to show it to his master Huo Violentstone, much less others.

If he didn't have an expert like Huo Violentstone to help him, he could only rely on Mo Eversnow using the power of Laws to slowly refine the essence of the dragon bone. This was an extremely inefficient way of doing it. But now things were different; there was Mo Riverbliss. Her strength was at a half-step World King. She was stronger than Huo Violentstone, and even the current Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

Mo Riverbliss stood in front of the dragon bone and looked it over. She glanced at Lin Ming, a glorious light shining in her eyes once more. "I never imagined that such a great lucky chance would be found by you. In the past, if I had this dragon bone, my father's soul injuries would have been healed and the Verdant Feather Holy Lands would not have ended up in such a state..."

Lin Ming bowed. "I'll have to bother Senior Mo. I am very thankful for your help."

Lin Ming knew that refining the dragon bone essence was not a simple matter. It would consume a great deal of origin energy and strength. This was not a minor favor.

Mo Riverbliss dismissively waved her hands. "There's no need to thank me. If it weren't for you, Little Snow would still be sleeping

in the Magic Cube. Perhaps I would have passed away without ever being able to see her again. I will certainly keep this graciousness in my mind! Compared to that, what can refining this piece of dragon bone be considered? If you can help rebuild my Verdant Feather Holy Lands in the future, you will truly become the great benefactor of my Mo Family. I fear I won't be able to ever repay such a benevolence in my lifetime. But at that time, I also fear that you won't need my favors anymore."

As Mo Riverbliss spoke, she waved her hand and a three-legged furnace flew out from her spatial ring, growing larger and larger. The furnace sent out a strong suction force that covered the supreme dragon bone. On the other hand, the supreme dragon bone began to shrink, until it was finally completely sucked into the furnace.

Lin Ming looked on from the side. This was actually a spirit artifact level treasure, and was even a first-class existence amongst all spirit artifacts.

Chapter 1087 – Dragon Bone Relics

After Mo Riverbliss received the supreme dragon bone, she formed dozens of seals and sent them out. In the blink of an eye, the space around her and the spirit artifact furnace was isolated from the outside. A strange space barrier came falling down. On the walls of this space barrier, there were countless faint traces, as if they were made of water.

Lin Ming recognized that these were the traces of the Time Laws. Mo Riverbliss sectioned off a space around her using the power of the Time Laws, in order to speed up the passage of time. Looking at the fluctuations of energy coming from the patterns, he estimated that the time inside was a few dozen times faster.

In other words, one day outside would mean around one month inside.

From this, Lin Ming could see that refining the dragon bone essence was more difficult than he had imagined. Even with the assistance of Mo Riverbliss, it would still take a long time.

Accelerating time couldn't be considered some profound use of the Concept of Time. Geniuses of large sects didn't use this to train often; they would only occasionally use it for specific circumstances.

This was mainly because accelerating the time within wouldn't extend one's life. If ten years passed inside the isolated time space, one would age ten years. There wasn't much meaning in doing

this. Another reason was that there would also be slight distortions in the Laws due to the different flow of time, and meditating in there on the Laws would have minor errors. Doing this for a short period of time was okay, but meditating on these distorted Laws for an extended period of time wouldn't provide any benefits.

As Mo Riverbliss was refining the dragon bone, Mo Eversnow turned to Lin Ming and said, "Lin Ming, I've said that the essence gathering system and the body transformation system are two inherently contradictory cultivation systems. This is particularly true in the Life Destruction realm. To dual cultivate body and energy is to defy the will of the heavens. If you absorb half of this dragon bone and also open the sixth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the difficulties you will face in crossing Ninefall will rise to yet another level! You must be aware of this."

"I understand."

"Mm, also, this dragon bone is 1000 feet long and is as heavy as a mountain range. Even if the essence is refined from it, there's no way for you to fully absorb it. I estimate that absorbing a third of it will be your limit. As for the remaining two thirds, I will use that to create medicine for you to use as the foundation to open the last two of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. They are the most difficult gates to open—the Gate of Life, and the Gate of Death."

Lin Ming nodded. It felt extremely good to have someone teach him and not have to stumble through everything himself. In the past, when he first touched upon the body transformation system, if he had someone at his side informing him of the horrifying dangers he would experience in the Life Destruction stage, he

might not have chosen to dual cultivate body and energy.

If no one was here to teach him, then although he might be able to strike luck once or twice, eventually he would definitely have to take a great deal of detours.

“Listen carefully. I will teach you the words to the Celestial Tyrant Manual. This is a completely new body transformation law formula. The Celestial Tyrant Manual details the three great boundaries of the body transformation system; the seven initial stages of body transformation with Tempering Marrow included, the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. But its greatest advantage manifests itself in the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Compared to the Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians, it is several times better. This law formula is something that my grandfather found in a mystic realm along with the Magic Cube. The reason that I chose to dual cultivate in body and energy is also because I had this body transformation law formula as my foundation. However, in the past I wasn’t able to fully complete the Celestial Tyrant Manual. Now, my mortal body has been destroyed and all of that has been lost. I currently do not have the ability to fully engrave a complete Celestial Tyrant Manual jade slip for you; I can only temporarily teach you a part of it. As for the rest, you will have to obtain the Celestial Tyrant Manual jade slip to learn it.”

As Mo Eversnow spoke to here, Lin Ming was startled. The Celestial Tyrant Manual was actually discovered together with the Magic Cube? Mo Eversnow had said that the mystic realm where the Magic Cube was discovered was hidden in an extremely hard to find spot. Besides those from the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, no one knew of it. To think that this mystic realm had not only the

Magic Cube but also the Celestial Tyrant Manual. Just how were the two related?

Lin Ming didn't have time to think about this. Mo Eversnow already started to repeat the words of the Celestial Tyrant Manual. In front of Mo Eversnow, heaven and earth origin energy currents began to gather up, swirling and forming into all sorts of strange runes under the control of her mind. These runes contained mysterious Laws, each marked with the energy revolution pathways of the body transformation system. A cultivation method's contents were extremely broad and profound; it wasn't something that could be covered with mere words. Rather, it was composed of all sorts of things. Engraving all of this onto a jade slip was far harder than perceiving it through meditation.

Lin Ming started to revolve the energy within his body according to Mo Eversnow's instructions. Like this, three and a half days passed. Lin Ming only glimpsed at the initial wonders of the Celestial Tyrant Law when the space barrier around Mo Riverbliss opened up.

An exhausted looking Mo Riverbliss walked out; she had clearly consumed a great deal of energy. Beside her, the spirit artifact level furnace slowly revolved, spilling forth with a dazzling golden light.

For a worldly existence like a God Beast, if it were living, even if it stood still and didn't resist, a half-step World King still wouldn't be able to kill it. Naturally, refining its remains was also difficult.

"It's done."

Mo Riverbliss whispered. She waved her hand and the spirit artifact furnace popped open. A string of jade-like spirit beads shot out from the furnace, floating in the air. These jade beads linked together in the sky. They were large and small and floated high and low, as if they naturally revolved according to the mysterious paths of the celestial bodies that floated in the universe.

There were a total of 108!

After carefully calculating it, Mo Riverbliss had entered into that separate time-space for a total of 108 days, refining a total of 108 spirit beads.

“These are dragon bone relics, also known as dragon pearls. When a top powerhouse or a powerful God Beast’s bones are refined, it will form these sorts of bone relics. The more powerful the being was, the more bone relics that would be produced, and the higher the quality they would be too. From this dragon bone I was able to refine a total of 108 bone relics. Take them and use them well.”

As Mo Riverbliss spoke, the 108 bone relics all flew toward Lin Ming and he received them. As he grasped the bone relics, he could feel incomparably hot heat surging within them. They appeared to be very smooth but they were also extremely dense. It was clear that they were a tremendous amount of essence concentrated within.

“Very well, Little Snow, aunty has done everything she can. I

must go recuperate now. Everything else will be left to you.”

As Mo Riverbliss spoke, she casually stepped out and passed through the separate time-space of the Carefree Palace and left this mystic realm space.

Mo Eversnow waved her jade-white hands and took 36 of the 108 dragon bone relics around Lin Ming. She said, “Lin Ming, revolve the Celestial Tyrant Manual according to what I taught you. I will fuse the dragon bone relics into your body.”

Mo Eversnow raised her palms flat and concentrated her battle spirit onto the dragon bone relics. In that moment, an incomparably powerful force erupted forth from the dragon bone relics. They shot forwards at a speed difficult to see with the eye, and their target was Lin Ming!

36 dragon bone relics all aimed at the 36 acupoints in his body!

If dragon bone relics were used to transform the body, the best method was not to swallow them but to directly thrust them into the skeleton!

These extremely heavy dragon bone relics also had Mo Eversnow’s battle spirit poured into them; their penetrating power could be imagined. Even if Lin Ming’s defensive power was top notch, it was still nothing to these dragon bone relics.

Puff puff puff!

Blood splashed out and Lin Ming miserably coughed. His body was struck by a massive impact force and sent hurtling backwards. 36 points of agonizing pain broke out all around his body as the dragon bone relics drilled through his skin, muscles, organs, and finally sank deep into his skeleton!

At that moment, Lin Ming's entire body gushed red with blood. His acupoints were torn apart, his bones fractured, his joints torn, and his ligaments collapsed. He had lost all ability to move.

“...So this is the method to absorb them...you could've said something in advance...”

Lin Ming was left somewhat speechless by this. As he lay bleeding on the ground, he was unable to move. He could clearly feel the blood bubbling out from his wounds, but he was unable to lift so much as a single finger. It was obvious that Mo Eversnow had carefully chosen which 36 acupoints to strike at. Once she struck, all of Lin Ming's ligaments had been completely torn apart.

Mo Eversnow said, “You will need to lay down for some time. It won't be easy for you to absorb the dragon bone essence. Luckily, you have a foundation of dragon marrow blood within your body; you should be able to complete this in a month or two. I have only cut apart your ligaments, but your meridians are completely intact. You can now continue revolving the Celestial Tyrant Manual. Two months from now, after you have completely absorbed the dragon bone relics, you can take advantage of the momentum to break into the Gate of View.”

As Mo Eversnow finished speaking, she used the Time Laws to form a separate time-space, enveloping Lin Ming within it. This was a 10:1 time flow difference. As long as 5-6 days passed, Lin Ming would be healed.

Lin Ming's entire body was wracked with pain. This pain not only came from the fact that his body had been pierced through by the dragon bone relics, but because the dragon bone relics that were inserted within him were struggling with his skeleton.

The dragon bone relics wanted to swallow Lin Ming's bones, but Lin Ming's bones also wanted to swallow the dragon bone relics. Such a battle was truly a pain as deep as the marrow; this time the battlefield was Lin Ming's own marrow. Fortunately, Lin Ming was already used to such torturous pain and his will was also extremely firm, otherwise he would not have been able to withstand this agony.

Lin Ming didn't stop bleeding. It was only when Mo Eversnow placed medicinal powder on his 36 wounds that they slowly stopped bleeding. However, the wounds didn't seem as if they would start regenerating at all. Rather, they seemed to become increasingly worse.

With Lin Ming's regenerative ability, even if he shattered his bones and tore his muscles, he would still be able to heal himself in 1-2 hours. But now, with the dragon bone relics within him swallowing his flesh and blood, he wasn't able to heal himself in a short time. He would heal a little, the dragon bone would swallow that, and then he would heal a little more again, the process ever repeating itself.

If the dragon bone was compared to mercury, then Lin Ming was using his own bloodline marrow to wear down this mercury, layer by layer. The difficulty of doing so could be imagined.

Whether it was absorbing dragon bone or absorbing dragon blood, they did not replace the human body. Rather, with the human bones and blood as a foundation, they fused together and the human body would gain characteristics of a dragon's body. This was definitely difficult.

Like this, one day passed, two days, three days...10 days, 20 days, 30 days...

Lin Ming continued to suffer the excruciating pain the entire time. At the start, the pain Lin Ming was in could already be called an exquisite torment. It was true that he was skilled at bearing pain, but to continuously bear such a pain for days and even weeks on end, even someone with a strong will would be close to collapse.

But later, as Lin Ming continued to revolve the Celestial Tyrant Manual, completely focusing his mentality on revolving the energy within him and revitalizing his wounds, he slowly began to feel that it wasn't as painful as before.

After 20 some days passed, Lin Ming began to feel that the pain of his wounds turned into a numbing feeling.

After 30 some days passed, even the numbness disappeared. His entire body felt comfortable, and his absorption of the dragon bone

continued at a breakneck pace. If things continued like this, then forget one month, he wouldn't even need 10 days to finish.

Chapter 1088 – Six Gates Opened

As Lin Ming revolved the Celestial Tyrant Manual, he felt heat swell forth within his body as if he were soaking in a hot spring.

Currently, Lin Ming could feel all of his torn ligaments and muscles beginning to repair and regenerate themselves. His flesh and blood became even more tight and compact. On the fifth day, Lin Ming's entire body itched. As he slightly moved, his joints crackled, a strangely pleasing comfort.

He could also feel the muscles within his body changing. Now he could alter them however he liked, making them as soft and malleable as a rubber band or as hard as divine iron.

However, the 36 wounds on Lin Ming's body still hadn't completely healed. There were even some places without any feeling at all. It was obvious that the dragon bone relics hadn't been completely absorbed yet. Even so, Lin Ming didn't feel any pain at this time. In the end, pain was simply a response produced by the body. When one's body transformation technique reached an extremely high boundary, one was able to control their body and thus control the pain they felt.

On the 40th day, Lin Ming felt that all of his wounds were about healed. At this time, he felt that the energy within his body suddenly connected together, and the 36 wounds around his body seemed to resonate together, vibrating with a peculiar energy that united as one. Lin Ming couldn't help but release a clear shout.

“Attack the Gate of View!”

Even with Mo Eversnow’s warning, Lin Ming was still able to realize that this was the perfect opportunity to break through the Gate of View.

Lin Ming’s thoughts dove into his spiritual sea. He manipulated all of the energy in his body to rush towards the Gate of View.

In that moment, all of the meridians throughout his body completely linked together. His flesh and blood essence gathered together, surging towards the Gate of View like a massive tsunami.

Peng!

With a loud crack, the flesh on Lin Ming’s back burst apart. The stone underneath Lin Ming’s body blew apart, causing rubble to fall everywhere.

His entire body twisted, and the sounds of his joints popping were like the cries of dragons, reaching to the horizon.

This sort of comfortable feeling left Lin Ming drunk on pleasure.

The sixth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the Gate of View, had finally been opened!

Years since opening the Gate of Opening, which was able to

enhance perception, Lin Ming had finally opened the sixth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

The Gate of Healing, located between the collarbones, able to increase one's endurance and recovery ability.

The Gate of Limit, located at the spine, able to increase one's strength and explosive force.

The Gate of Wonder, located at the knees, able to increase one's speed.

The Gate of Pain, located at the fists, able to increase one's striking power.

The Gate of Opening, located in the brain, able to increase one's perception.

And finally, the last of the first six Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the Gate of View, located at the back of the body, able to increase one's defense.

The first six of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates had been completely opened!

And in the future, there was still the Gate of Life and the Gate of Death. Those two gates were called the true tests of life or death. Although they belonged to the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, they were actually equal to half a large boundary each. If one wished to

rush through the Gates of Life and Death, that wasn't something that was able to be accomplished overnight.

In the Celestial Tyrant Manual, it was written that if one wished to attack the Gates of Life and Death, there needed to be two kinds of pills. To attack the Gate of Life, one required the Esoteric Immortality Pill, and to attack the Gate of Death, one required the Esoteric Mortality Pill.

After training to this step, Lin Ming once again realized how difficult dual body and energy cultivation was. Up until now, he had used countless resources, many of them extremely precious. In particular, the supreme dragon bone. The supreme dragon bone was something that would be considered incredibly luxurious even if he used it to break into the Divine Lord realm.

However, Lin Ming absorbed the supreme dragon bone not only to attack the next boundary, but also to improve his physical body, building a solid base for himself and building upon his foundations.

Even without the supreme dragon bone, Lin Ming would still have been able to use some body transformation medicines to open the Gate of View. In the future he would even be able to break into the Gates of Life and Death. However, his chances of breaking into the heaven-defying Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were actually uncertain. Even Mo Eversnow of the past had been stuck at that bottleneck and she hadn't been able to break through.

These were also the reasons why dual body and energy cultivation had nearly disappeared from the Divine Realm.

Mo Eversnow said, “Lin Ming, there is still a month or two until the foray into the divergent mystic realm. In such a short period of time, even if the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree were given to you, you could not break through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction. You haven’t been at Eightfall long enough, and your accumulations are insufficient.”

“Mm, I understand.” Lin Ming nodded. In truth, if he wanted, he could attack Ninefall at this moment. But, in order to seek the true Ninefall, he had to experience the truths that existed at every stage of Life Destruction.

Every stage of Life Destruction corresponded to a different field of vision. A martial artist needed to enlighten themselves on the Laws of the world in each boundary, allowing their foundations to constantly consolidate.

Only like this could one truly become a dragon that soared to the heavens in Ninefall, and seek the Nine Divine Shifts.

Thus, to a genius, breaking through boundaries was not a problem. What they were concerned about was not just speed, but many other aspects.

After opening the Gate of View, Lin Ming felt weakness all throughout his body. After all, he had gone through dozens of days of having serious wounds all over his body, and his flesh and blood had been continuously regenerated and swallowed up. This was extremely taxing on Lin Ming. After opening the Gate of View, that

also consumed the great deal of essence energy that Lin Ming had saved up within his body. Thus he didn't dive into training, but began to meditate for a few days instead.

With the support of the dragon marrow blood, Lin Ming's resiliency was amazing. His body soon returned to its peak condition.

In the darkness, Lin Ming's eyes shot open and his aura burst out. His eyes were like twin bolts of lightning that pierced through the void, making people unable to look into his eyes.

The lines of his muscles were far more perfect, flowing as smoothly and naturally as the mountains and rivers. Now, after taking a bath, Lin Ming didn't even need to wipe down his body or use fire-attribute true essence to dry himself; the water would naturally roll down the beautiful and exquisite hard curves of his naked body, without the least bit remaining, as if it were the purest of glass. As for an ordinary person, after taking a bath, their body would be covered with drops of water.

This was a high boundary found in the ancient texts – skin as fragrant as flowers, as pleasant as a lotus, untainted by water.

After a martial artist reached this boundary, only when their life was coming to an end and the fires of their life were nearly extinguished and their appearance started to decline would this sort of phenomenon gradually fade away. This also meant that their body was aging and they would no longer have a perfect spirit body.

For this time, Lin Ming continued to train in Carefree Palace.

Not only did the Celestial Tyrant Manual contain body transformation techniques, but it also contained a combat technique, called Celestial Tyrant's Hundred Layered Waves. It allowed a martial artist's strength to multiply when they fought, and could be used with fists, swords, sabers, and spears.

What Lin Ming naturally used was the spear.

As he was practicing the Celestial Tyrant Manual, he certainly wouldn't miss out on the specialty product of Carefree Island, the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Wine.

After drinking the fruit wine, his dantian was filled with a hot energy that shot straight through his head. Lin Ming's mind felt blurry as if he were drunk.

However, under this half-sober and half-drunk state, where he was almost unconscious, his mind didn't have a single distracting thought. It was a state similar to hypnosis, and all of the potential within his body that was normally suppressed was also released. This was the best time to practice martial arts.

The mortal world's 'drunken fist' also followed this principle.

Without knowing pain, without knowing fear, without knowing sorrow, although one seemed crazy, they were actually able to

explode with an immense potential at a critical moment, displaying a strength and speed far surpassing normal times.

However, a martial artist was not suited for this type of boxing style. This was because a martial artist's mental strength and soul force were far too powerful – they weren't able to get drunk on one or two jars of mortal alcohol. But, this Ten Severing Dao Fruit Wine just happened to have such a wondrous effect.

In such a state, Lin Ming used his spear skills with the Celestial Tyrant Manual, not knowing the passing of time or exhaustion in his body. Everything he did was based on his instincts to attack. Blood surged in his body like waves crashing upon the rocky shores, over and over again.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Lin Ming's aura constantly gathered, his strength continuously rising. Suddenly, with a loud explosive sound, Lin Ming stepped forwards, his feet rupturing the ground, and a terrifying flux of energy burst out from the Phoenix Blood Spear, turning into a blazing beam of light that tore through the skies!

With a distant ringing sound, the beam of light smashed into the space barriers of Carefree Palace's dimensional realm, and this actually caused the skies to tremble. Following that, the entire dimensional realm shook. Deep cracks appeared in the ground and the rivers reversed their flow, as if an earthquake had happened.

“What an amazing power!”

Lin Ming looked at the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands. That spear strike did not contain the Concepts of Thunder or Fire – it had been his physical strength alone!

In using the Celestial Tyrant's Hundred Layered Waves, one's strength could actually be superimposed, layered over and over on top of each other, constantly gathering until the last moment in a massive eruption!

Superimposing strength sounded easy, but it was actually extremely difficult. This was because a martial artist needed to start the second attack before the first had even ended. Even if a martial artist was able to slash out 100 sword energies in a split second, this was only because they were too fast so it formed an illusion to the eyes of others. If one were able to look past this illusion and see its origins, one could see that every move was sent only when the previous one ended.

Thus, wanting to superimpose one's attacks was far too difficult.

However, the Celestial Tyrant Manual used the absolute control over the physical body that a body transformation martial artist had to complete this nearly impossible superimposition of attacks.

Just this point was enough to stun Lin Ming.

If one's bodily strength could be superimposed, then when he used the Concepts of Thunder and Fire, could fire true essence or thunder true essence also be superimposed?

Lin Ming suddenly felt as if the Celestial Tyrant Manual had opened up a completely new mentality for himself.

It had to be known that this wasn't the true Celestial Tyrant Manual, but a portion reproduced from what Mo Eversnow had learnt herself. The true Celestial Tyrant Manual was naturally far more mysterious.

That's right, the Celestial Tyrant Manual was a body transformation law formula that was discovered together with the Magic Cube!

As Lin Ming thought of this, something popped into his mind. He turned and asked Mo Eversnow, "Miss Mo, what rank cultivation method is the Celestial Tyrant Manual?"

"I do not know." Mo Eversnow shook her head, "Besides the normal classifications for martial arts inheritances, the known transcendent divine mights are only focused on the essence gathering system; I do not know of a body transformation-based transcendent divine might. Thus, I cannot confirm what rank the Celestial Tyrant Manual is at. However, this body transformation law formula is truly incomparably mysterious. A great part of the reason that I decided to step onto the path of dual body and energy cultivation was that I was captivated by the Celestial Tyrant Manual. Unfortunately, the Celestial Tyrant Manual is also incomplete. It focuses mainly on the Eight Inner Hidden Gates without going too in-depth about the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace."

“So that’s what it is!” Lin Ming sucked in a light breath. When Mo Eversnow had taught him the Celestial Tyrant Manual, she had done so in a very casual manner, so he hadn’t realized just how precious the Celestial Tyrant Manual was at the start. But as he thought about it some more, this manual was found together with the Magic Cube, so how could it be ordinary?

During the following days, Lin Ming paid more and more attention to this cultivation method. Finally, the day to enter the Red Desolate Mystic Realm had arrived!

Carefree Island had prepared 20 billion violet sun stones for this reason!

To the geniuses of Carefree Island, entering the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was not about finding lucky chances, nor was it to hunt treasures. Rather, it was to engage in a life or death war that would be thick with the smell of blood.

Chapter 1089 – The Red Wilderness

At dawn, the sky above the Red Desolate Sea was already covered with a layer of morning mist. On Carefree Island, a large group of disciple had gathered, around 3000-4000 cultivators in total.

These 3000-4000 cultivators were the main force that was being sent into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm.

Of these people, 95% of them were Revolving Core disciples. Of true high stage Life Destruction and Divine Sea realm disciples, there were only about a hundred of them.

These Revolving Core disciples were basically the young disciples of Carefree Island. On average, their talent wasn't too great. There were some that came from distinguished martial arts families that were a bit better than the rest. But even so, upon arriving at Carefree Island, they all had to follow the rules. If they wanted to be vigorously trained by Carefree Island, they would have to show unparalleled talent or honestly carry out the missions assigned to them.

Of the over 3000 Revolving Core disciples, each one of them had a saint artifact level spatial ring. These were given to them to gather resources in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm.

As for the 100 plus high stage Life Destruction and Divine Sea realm disciples, they were the direct disciples of Carefree Island. Even peak direct disciples like Ye Rosewater and White Mirrorjade were among them.

This was a large transmission event that required 20 billion violet sun stones. As for the four God Beast Clans, it only cost them a few billion violet sun stones when they sent their disciples to the God Beast Mystic Realm smelting trial.

Of course, the four God Beast Clans only did so to help temper their disciples, giving them more experience, and allowing them to seek their own lucky chances in the God Beast Mystic Realm. To them, violet sun stones were only considered an investment into their junior disciples. The payoff would only be seen in the future.

As for Carefree Island, they went to gather resources for their sect; this mission involved the livelihood of their sect's future. It wasn't a mission to help train their junior disciples. Moreover, as long as they weren't robbed, then the greater their investment, the more profit there would be. The two instances naturally couldn't be compared.

Of the 20 billion violet sun stones, 80% of them was used to transmit the 100 plus direct disciples. As for the 3000-4000 Revolving Core disciples, they only cost the remaining 20% to send over.

Lin Ming was also in this massive troop of people. He stood by himself in a corner. All around him, the other disciples were casting glances his way. Some had fear in their eyes, some had curiosity, some had goodwill, and some were even hostile.

The news of Lin Ming entering the 30th level of the simulation

mystic realm and taking the simulation treasure without a single wound had already spread to the ears of all the direct disciples.

“He’s Lin Ming? He looks to be around 30 years old.”

Some of the direct disciples began to speak to each other with true essence sound transmissions. Lin Ming was over 30 but still appeared to be around 20 years old; it was impossible to tell his true age from his appearance alone. Lin Ming was destined to break into the Divine Lord realm in the future. Once he did, he would be able to maintain this appearance for perpetuity. He wouldn’t need to consume part of his cultivation to maintain his youthful good looks like many female martial artists chose to do.

“At this age, an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation is quite the ruthless suppression. If it were an ordinary talent, this would be normal but for a genius like Lin Ming, the greater they suppress their cultivation the more it shows off their ability. This is because it is more difficult to perceive the Laws when one’s cultivation is low, so the average martial artist simply can’t afford to do this. Only those monstrous geniuses would forcibly suppress their cultivation so much to consolidate their foundation and perceive the Laws to a high degree at the lower realms.”

“Don’t look at his eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation. His true combat strength is far greater than an early Divine Sea powerhouse.”

“Yeah, just look at that Liu Yun and what sort of fate he suffered.”

The disciples discussed with each other. At this time, in front of Lin Ming, a white-clothed youth appeared, holding a folding fan in his hands. He had a light and courtly appearance, nothing suggesting he was about to head to a life or death battlefield. Rather, it looked like he was about to wander around and enjoy the scenery.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I never imagined that you would be participating in this life or death war. Honorable Sect Master, he, seems a bit too willing.” The youth who spoke was White Mirrorjade. At the same time he sighed again and said, “For such a talent like Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you should at least break into the Divine Sea before entering the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. If you did, you would surely be able to fight one against a hundred, overwhelming any and all. But now, it seems a bit dangerous. After all, there will be late Divine Sea powerhouses participating in the war within the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. If Junior-apprentice Brother Lin were to meet them, perhaps...”

White Mirrorjade faded off here, no longer speaking. But Lin Ming spoke up, “Senior-apprentice Brother White does not need to worry about me. I naturally have methods to save my own life.”

“Haha, that would be for the best. If Junior-apprentice Brother Lin meets life threatening danger, remember that your life is the most important thing and to escape as soon as you can. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is worth far more than any amount of resources,” White Mirrorjade advised.

He turned to the other disciples and began to caution them one at

a time. Everything he said was just worthless chatter, but many of the disciples were moved. After all, White Mirrorjade's status was far higher than these ordinary direct disciples.

“Everyone has arrived! Prepare to embark!” The one responsible for today's operation was Carefree Island's Great Elder. Of course, he was only directing the transmission; he wasn't truly able to go to the Red Desolate Mystic Realm.

The Red Desolate Mystic Realm had three transmission array entrances, each belonging to the three different sects. They were all located underneath the seabed of the Red Desolate Sea.

Over 3000 disciples boarded a spirit ship. The spirit ship dove into the water, heading for the transmission array at the bottom of the sea. The Great Elder took out the 20 billion violet sun stones. In truth, these were not violet sun stones but violet sun crystals. Each violet sun crystal was worth 10,000 violet sun stones, so he didn't take out 20 billion violet sun stones but 2 million violet sun crystals instead. With so many violet sun crystals piled up, they formed a massive crystal mountain. For a time, the brilliant purple light pierced through the 10,000 foot deep seawater, directly piercing through the skies.

A thousand miles away from Carefree Island, on a lonely and isolated mountain, there were several black cloaked martial artists secretly hiding deep beneath several layers of extremely hidden concealing array formations. They looked toward the purple light that shot up from the distance.

“The transmission array has opened. They didn't even think of

hiding the light of the violet sun stones.”

“Humph, hiding is useless. The three transmission arrays are connected to each other. Once one is activated, everyone else will know. Since they’ve gone in, so shall we! Mine the resources first and in 80 hours from now go and kill them all and take their resources. Give no quarter!”

“Haha, I can’t wait.”

The time to enter the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was 96 hours. After that, everyone would be transmitted out. 16 hours was enough for the final battle at the end. In order to maximize profits, it was best to allow everyone to gather resources for the first 80 hours.

.....

“So this is the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. It feels a bit different from the God Beast Mystic Realm.”

Lin Ming looked at the endless red desert under his feet. His surroundings seemed barren and the heaven and earth origin energy here was also very sparse. It was hard to imagine that there was a nearly unlimited amount of resources buried beneath this sand. By all reasoning, where there were resources, the heaven and earth origin energy should be extremely rich; just like it was in the Temple of Marvels.

It wasn't just Lin Ming, but many disciples entering the Red Desolate Mystic Realm for the first time had this question. White Mirrorjade seemed to guess their thoughts and slowly explained, "It isn't anything strange. The sand of the Red Desolate Mystic Realm is not ordinary sand. It is able to isolate origin energy fluctuations and also makes it very difficult for senses to penetrate through. The spirit energy of the Red Desolate Mystic Realm is covered up by this endless red desert. To look for resources, we have no choice but to dig down and hope that we get lucky. Even a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse would be in the same situation. Basically, using your divine sense here is useless. Regardless of your cultivation, there isn't too great a difference in the amount of resources you can dig out."

As White Mirrorjade spoke, many of the disciples began experimenting themselves. Their divine sense wasn't able to penetrate more than several inches underground, but it was perfectly fine when investigating outwards.

"Alright, less banter and more work. We've paid a great price to enter this time to excavate resources, so let's begin. Everyone will be listening to me. Are there any objections?"

White Mirrorjade glanced over at Ye Rosewater. Out of everyone present, only Ye Rosewater was similar to him in cultivation and status.

Ye Rosewater didn't speak. She was clearly indicating that she had no objections at present.

White Mirrorjade faintly smiled. He pulled out a jade plate. Atop

this jade plate was a vague three-dimensional image; this was a projection of this part of the red desert.

White Mirrorjade smiled as he saw this. “Hoh! Our luck isn’t too bad. There just happens to be a slightly purple mountain range near us. According to what we’ve learnt in the past, these purple mountain ranges should be filled with violet sun stone ore. But this purple mountain range isn’t too great. Several hundred people should be enough to excavate the area. To guarantee the highest efficiency, we’ll divide everyone into two groups for gathering. A smaller group will go to the purple mountain and everyone else will search the desert.”

As White Mirrorjade spoke, he pointed at the desert projection on the array disc. There really was a purple mountain range nearby.

After hearing this plan, Ye Rosewater frowned. “Split up? Our combined strength is much weaker than the joint forces of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, so why would we divide our forces?”

White Mirrorjade answered, “This is to ensure the highest degree of efficiency. This is the only way to do it, otherwise it will be very difficult to move around several thousand people. Moreover, this is the intent of the Highest Elders. They didn’t mention it before because they didn’t want any information leaking out.”

As White Mirrorjade spoke he flung out a jade slip token from his spatial ring toward Ye Rosewater.

Ye Rosewater caught the token and swept her senses through it. Indeed, there was mention of splitting up the forces so that more area could be covered. Although this meant improved efficiency, it was also much more dangerous.

“Junior-apprentice Sister Ye, you need to think about it some more. There simply isn’t anything for you to worry about. We just entered the Red Desolate Mystic Realm and we haven’t even had any time to gather resources. During this time, Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan aren’t so idiotic as to immediately attack us. Otherwise they will just lose people without being able to steal anything at all. There is no way they would do something so thankless and without benefits. That purple mountain range is very safe. The sand and rock of the Red Desolate Mystic realm shield all senses and you’ll even be mining in tunnels of the purple mountain. There will absolutely be no danger to anyone. Then again, even if you encounter danger, we can still hurry up to the location for support.”

White Mirrorjade’s words sounded fair and he also had the instructions of the Highest Elders on his side, so Ye Rosewater didn’t complain.

“I’ll divide the teams.”

White Mirrorjade easily divided the main group into two. White Mirrorjade’s own team had the vast majority of the group’s strength, and also his cronies. Those like Liu Yun and the others were all in his team.

As for the smaller team, they were far, far weaker. That team contained all of Ye Rosewater's subordinates and there was even Lin Ming.

As for Ye Rosewater herself, she had been selected for White Mirrorjade's team.

Ye Rosewater was immediately dissatisfied with such a distribution. "White Mirrorjade, just what are you trying to do? The difference in strength is far too great!"

Chapter 1090 – Purple Mountain

Of the two teams, the main team consisted of 90% of the original group's strength, while the secondary team consisted of only 10%. Both of the two great masters, Ye Rosewater and White Mirrorjade, were on the main team.

The strongest martial artists on the secondary team were two middle Divine Sea female disciples. Both of them were Ye Rosewater's trusted subordinates. Besides them, there was only Lin Ming. Lin Ming had an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation, and his strength was able to suppress the early Divine Sea Liu Yun. But as to where the true limits of his strength lay, no one but Lin Ming himself actually knew.

Ye Rosewater was completely perturbed with such a distribution.

White Mirrorjade calmly said, "I've already said they will be going to a tunnel underground. There are layers of rocks that can shield them from the senses of others, and it will serve to hide their positions so they won't be in any danger. On the other hand, the main team will be wandering about the vast dessert. We have thousands of people and our goal is also much greater. As long as Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan aren't blind, they'll discover us. Did you want me to send the main force into the mining tunnels and leave the scattered rest of us to die in the desert? Not just that, but going into the tunnels is only temporary. No matter how rich the tunnels may be in resources, you'll have to return to us 80 hours from now and help fight in the following battle. In the last 16 hours in this mystic realm, Splinter Soul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan will definitely move against us!"

White Mirrorjade's excuses sounded reasonable. Ye Rosewater hesitated. In all fairness, the tunnels were truly much safer and didn't need much manpower. No matter who it was, no one wanted to be separated from those they trusted and they also didn't want their people to be sent to another team either. That was simply human nature.

Ye Rosewater thought for a moment, then said, "Fine. I agree. But I will go to the tunnels with them." Although Ye Rosewater had a naturally gentle personality, she wasn't someone that was resigned to mundane ordinariness. She had long ago decided to compete for the position of Island Master and had won over some female disciples to be her subordinates. Those that were sent to the tunnels were her people so she naturally had to accompany them.

"Mm?" White Mirrorjade frowned. "Junior-apprentice Sister Ye, I think you've mistaken something. I am leading this group on the orders of the Highest Elders. I am not discussing terms with you but am ordering you! If you insist on going to the tunnels, I can allow you to go, but only this once! If you still question my orders, I will deal with you as someone who violated the sect rules!"

White Mirrorjade's voice was sharp but Ye Rosewater didn't retreat nor flinch as she glared at him. Her status was originally on par with White Mirrorjade so she certainly didn't need to fear him.

"You stupid bitch, I originally allowed you a path to live because I only wanted to kill Lin Ming and weaken you a bit, but you actually decided to rush to your death. Don't blame me for your own decisions," White Mirrorjade thought as he turned around. In

that split second that he turned, a fierce light sparked in his eyes. He certainly wasn't giving Ye Rosewater a chance to live because he felt some sort of pitiful affection for her or because he was drooling over her looks. Ye Rosewater was a beautiful woman with amazing talent, and he certainly wouldn't mind marrying her and allowing her to become the wife of the Island Master, but he also knew that although she often appeared quiet and gentle, she was actually arrogant to the bone. She refused to be under anyone, so how could she possibly submit to him? Moreover, she had long ago decided to struggle for the throne of Island Master, so they were destined to become enemies. Sooner or later, White Mirrorjade would have moved against Ye Rosewater!

No, the reason that he had originally decided not to kill Ye Rosewater on this trip into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was because he didn't expect the Occult Bone Clan or Splintersoul Mountain to show him any mercy just because he gave them information on Lin Ming. In the last 16 hours here, there would inevitably be a life or death war breaking out. If he was missing the strength of Ye Rosewater, that battle would be far more difficult.

“Forget it. I'll end you in this Red Desolate Mystic Realm and allow you to die with Lin Ming,” White Mirrorjade thought. He turned to the disciples behind him and said, “Everyone on the main team come with me. The Revolving Core realm disciples are responsible for mining. The direct disciples do not need to help, they will be responsible for watching and securing the perimeter. In the first several dozen hours, although Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan aren't likely to show up, we also have to guard against the unexpected. After all, this Red Desolate Mystic Realm still has red desolate ogres!”

After White Mirrorjade issued his orders, he brought the disciples of the main team to leave. As for Ye Rosewater, she brought the secondary team disciples and set off toward the mine.

The projection jade plate White Mirrorjade used was extremely mysterious. Although it looked very small, the truth was that the cost to construct it was exorbitantly expensive. It was able to create a projection of the surrounding several hundred miles. Lin Ming, Ye Rosewater, and the others all walked several thousand feet in a direction and finally saw a faintly purple mountain range. There was a massive pit right beside it.

“Purple mountains, and there is even a pit with tunnels right there! We got lucky this time! Everyone put some more effort into it. Although we have to give the gathered resources to the sect, the sect will also reward us with resources according to our own merits. We’ll keep resources equal to 2-3% of what we bring back!” Ye Rosewater said, trying to inspire morale in the team.

With the natural mining pit here, it meant that the violet sun stones in this purple mountain were absolutely high-grade. The so-called pit was actually due to the heaven and earth origin energy in the purple mountain being far too rich. It accumulated and then finally erupted, just like a volcano, creating a massive pit and rough tunnels inside.

“Everyone, maintain your guard. The direct disciples will go first to scout the area.” After separating from White Mirrorjade, the late Divine Sea Ye Rosewater naturally became the leader of this squad.

This secondary squad had a total of 300 people. There were only a dozen or so direct disciples here. Besides Lin Ming, everyone else was a subordinate of Ye Rosewater.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, join Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao, Junior-apprentice Sister Zhou, and Junior-apprentice Brother Song to keep watch outside. I’ll lead some people inside first to take a look.

In Ye Rosewater’s opinion, besides herself, the strongest person in this squad was Lin Ming. With Lin Ming keeping guard outside, he would be able to deal with any unexpected incidents that cropped up.

“Mm, alright.” Lin Ming indifferently nodded.

Exploring the tunnels of the mining pit was a bit more dangerous than staying outside. Although he didn’t care much, he felt quite comfortable that Ye Rosewater left him outside. Ye Rosewater wasn’t aware of Lin Ming’s true strength; she only knew that he had completed the 30th level of the simulation mystic realm with ease.

Three people stayed with Lin Ming. Two of them were at the early Divine Sea realm and the other was at the ninth stage of Life Destruction. They were all Ye Rosewater’s subordinates. In terms of influence, Ye Rosewater was much worse than White Mirrorjade by a considerable amount. After all, she was a woman, so most of the subordinates she won over were also women. In addition to her character, she was much worse than White Mirrorjade when it came to forming a faction.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, my name is Xiao Raingem.” Beside Lin Ming, a woman blinked at him. She had an overly buxom figure. Her chest was spilling over and her bottom thrust proudly outwards. She had all the sensual charm of a mature young woman seeped into her bones.

Of course, this was only her outer appearance. Xiao Raingem was actually 75 years old. In the future she would have tens of thousands of years of youth.

Beside Xiao Raingem, the young woman called Junior-apprentice Sister Zhou seemed extremely shy. She had a very naïve and waifish appearance. Out of the three direct disciples outside, she was the only one not at the Divine Sea realm. She was a ninth stage Life Destruction martial artist.

Even out of all the direct disciples of Carefree Island, Ninefall geniuses only formed 30-40% of them. Many disciples stepped into the Divine Sea after reaching Eightfall.

Based on this alone, this Junior-apprentice Sister Zhou was much better than the Junior-apprentice Brother Song. This Junior-apprentice Brother Song was only an Eightfall early Divine Sea martial artist. In terms of combat strength, the two were about equal.

As Lin Ming kept guard outside, he saw a cloud of light red dust forming in the distance. This red clouds became increasingly rich and dense, until it finally blotted out the skies and surged towards

them.

Lin Ming could clearly see that this was a terrifying sandstorm that had been whipped up by the endless winds of the red desert. The sand storm rose thousands of feet high into the air. Listening to the tearing sounds of the winds, they were similar to knives cutting on glass. With such an incredible wind speed, if a martial artist with a low cultivation were to be caught up in that sand storm, they would be shredded to pieces and immediately die.

“That’s a sand storm. It’s a common occurrence in this Red Desolate Mystic Realm. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, there’s no need to be nervous,” Xiao Raingem explained with a gentle smile. “Talking about it, those exploring mountain tunnels will be much more relaxed. Those out wandering in the desert will be far more miserable. They’ll have to form shields of true essence to block the winds. That’s going to take quite the toll on all of them.”

As Xiao Raingem spoke, Ye Rosewater’s voice sounded out from within the tunnel. “There’s nothing dangerous in these tunnels. Everyone can enter.”

The 200 some Revolving Core disciples immediately walked toward the tunnels. The great red sand storm in the distance was placing a great deal of mental pressure on them. Although they didn’t need to fear this degree of sand storm with their cultivation, who knew if there were still other dangers in the sand storm?

After entering the tunnel, Lin Ming immediately felt as though he had had entered a purple world. There was bright and dazzling purple light sparkling from all over. Even the thick dust wasn’t

able to block it.

Many young martial artists widened their eyes in awe as they saw the copious amounts of violet sun stone ore. Most of them came from small family backgrounds, so they had never seen wealth of such a magnitude before.

“Start mining!” With Ye Rosewater’s order, the Revolving Core disciples swarmed forwards. The rock purple mountain was no ordinary rock; it was as hard as metal essence. Otherwise, it would never have survived the erosive onslaught of the red sand storms over the past hundreds of millions of years. Even a Revolving Core martial artist had to use a great deal of strength to mine chunks of violet sun stone.

As the Carefree Island disciples were mining in full swing, thousands of miles away, there was also another group of people gathering resources in the red desert. These people were all tall and burly with small horns on their head. They were clansmen of the Occult Bone Clan.

“Mm, according to the signal we agreed on, that White Mirrorjade really did send us a message. Our prey is currently in a mountain tunnel 3000 miles away. There’s a dozen or so direct disciples as well as a few hundred garbage level miners. The only surprise is that Ye Rosewater is also with them.”

“Haha, Ye Rosewater? That little girl is quite good, but could this be a trap set by Carefree Island?”

“This information should be true. This isn’t the first time White Mirrorjade betrayed his comrades.”

“Hehe, there is that genius called Lin Ming as well as Ye Rosewater. Our gains are far too great this time. There’s no need to mention Ye Rosewater, but that Lin Ming fellow must have a massive amount of treasures on him. For someone to grow to such a level, it’s impossible that they haven’t experienced a great number of lucky chances.”

“Just gather some resources and rest up. We’ll set out soon. I can’t wait for this!”

Chapter 1091 – The Enemy Raid in the Storm

In the purple mountain pit tunnels, Lin Ming casually struck the faint purple walls. With the faint rustling of powder stone falling down, a tiny black fragment dislodged and fell down.

Lin Ming reached out and grabbed this black fragment. Although the fragment appeared simple, when he sent his senses through it he could feel a strange chill around it.

“What is this?” Lin Ming wondered. He felt that this was a tiny fragment from some weapon. But it was hard to imagine that a weapon fragment would still have a tiny fluctuation of energy after all this time.

“It’s a fragment of an extreme quality spirit artifact.” Mo Eversnow’s voice suddenly echoed out in Lin Ming’s mind.

There was a space barrier that separated a divergent mystic realm and the Divine Realm, and the stronger one was, the more difficult it was to pierce through this veil. Even battle puppets and incarnations were no exception. However, the Magic Cube and the space within the Magic Cube were not subject to this restriction.

When Lin Ming first entered the God Beast Mystic Realm, the Magic Cube had entered unhindered too. Moreover, at the Sky Spill Continent, Empyrean Primordius had sealed away the entire planet of the Sky Spill Continent with his incredible supernatural powers. Besides native martial artists, any martial artist from the Divine Realm that surpassed the Divine Sea realm was unable to

enter. This was one of the protections Empyrean Primordius had left behind to guard his inheritance.

But the Magic Cube had still managed to pass through this barrier with Mo Eversnow's soul inside, where it was obtained by Lin Ming.

To this point, Lin Ming could only assume that the Magic Cube was not bound by the Laws of these divergent mystic realms.

Mo Eversnow investigated the fragment with her senses and said, "This fragment already exists for countless hundreds of millions of years. The only reason it was able to maintain its existence for so long is because of the violet sun stone mine here. The thick heaven and earth origin energy nourished it all this time, if not, it probably would have turned to dust by now."

"Extreme rank spirit artifact fragment. I wonder what sort of strength was needed to destroy it. Just what sort of events happened in this divergent mystic realm?"

"I have no idea what secrets divergent mystic realms hold. Perhaps they are worlds left behind by universes that were destroyed."

The existence of divergent mystic realms were an enigma to the martial artists of the Divine Realm. Even someone on the level of Mo Eversnow didn't know the truth behind them.

“What sort of use would this kind of fragment have?” Lin Ming asked.

“It’s not too useful. If there was a top refining grandmaster, he would be able to make a top grade saint artifact, or perhaps an offensive talisman of some sort. For instance, that protective charm you took from Saint Artifact Pavilion in the past was a fragment of an ancient extreme rank spirit artifact. However, because it contained its master’s source bloodline, I absorbed it.”

As Mo Eversnow said this, Lin Ming recalled that when he first came to the Divine Realm, he had indeed taken two top grade saint artifacts from Phoenix Cry Palace’s Saint Artifact Pavilion. One was the Phoenix Blood Spear, and the other was a talisman called Saint’s Will. However, that talisman was later absorbed by the Magic Cube.

Now that he thought about it, that talisman should have served as some sort of support for Mo Eversnow’s awakening. Otherwise, Mo Eversnow might not have had enough strength to pull out the dragon marrow essence from within the dragon bone.

Lin Ming tossed this extreme rank spirit artifact fragment to a Revolving Core disciple. Since Mo Eversnow had already thoroughly appraised it for him, he didn’t care for it too much. After all, it wasn’t like a refining grandmaster was easy to find.

To Lin Ming, there was nothing in these pit tunnels that were able to tempt him. In terms of violet sun stones, something had to be worth several hundred million or even billions of them to be useful.

Like this, 200-300 Revolving Core disciples continued mining in the tunnels non-stop. They dug out massive hunks of violet sun stones, which they stored into their spatial rings.

A martial artist wouldn't be tired if they didn't sleep for ten days and ten nights. However, gathering violet sun stones was still an energy consuming task. This was because the rock here was simply too hard. These Revolving Core disciples quickly used up their true essence reserves and would have no choice but to stop for a moment and take some pills.

As for the direct disciples, they didn't do any work at all. They saved up their strength, waiting for a battle that could erupt at any moment.

However, these pit tunnels were indeed very well hidden. These people worked on for days without being disturbed. Let alone an assault from Splintersoul Mountain or the Occult Bone Clan, there hadn't even been any red desolate ogres that appeared. Moreover, the red sand storms that constantly stirred up outside had no effect at all on the martial artists mining in the tunnels.

“Haha, I thought that we had too few people, so we would die if there were any dangers. But it seems as if our gains are immense. We've been able to mine for nearly three full days without pause, and my spatial ring is already half full. Not only do I have violet sun stones but I even have the more valuable violet sun crystals. Although I'm more tired than a dog, I get excited thinking about the portion I'll receive in return when we leave.”

In the pit tunnels, the Revolving Core disciples were all tired and soaked in their own sweat, but they were actually all in high spirits. When they listened to Ye Rosewater saying the sect would return 2-3% of the net harvests to them, they hadn't realized what sort of concept that was. But now, as they looked at the immense amount of violet sun stones in their spatial rings, they began to realize that this was a truly huge amount of wealth.

Everyone was able to gather around 60-70 million violet sun stones each so far. When they returned, they would be able to keep over a million violet sun stones. To a small family, this was a mind boggling amount of wealth.

“If everyone gathered 60-70 million violet sun stones, with several thousand disciples together, we'll have over 100 billion violet sun stones in total. Carefree Island only used 20 billion violet sun stones to send us here. That is a profit of 5-6 times what they paid! But there is also the hidden cost that will be the lives of the sect's direct disciples. That will come from the all-out war that's going to happen at the end of this.”

As Lin Ming was thinking, his eyes suddenly flashed with a cold light. He turned his head to look outside the mining pit. There was a terrifying red sand storm that was blowing around, so it was impossible for ordinary martial artists to cast their divine senses out too far. This was because the Red Desolate Mystic Realm's blood sand was able to block senses. When this blood sand blew everywhere through the air, it limited the senses of an ordinary martial artist to a mere few miles.

Was this an enemy raid?

Lin Ming stood up. If there was an ambush in such bad weather, not even gods or ghosts would be aware of it. No one would be able to detect it. This was just like two armies in the mortal world trying to battle on a day when a thick fog made it so one couldn't even see their hands.

However, the crux of the issue was that in this sand storm, if they weren't able to discover the enemy, the enemy shouldn't be able to discover them either. How could the enemy possibly follow their trail here? Not just that, but they were even hidden in this giant pit that isolated senses!

“Was there a traitor!?” As Lin Ming thought of this, a grim expression crossed his face. He stood up, flew over to Ye Rosewater, and whispered a few words. He didn't use a true essence sound transmission. Martial artists had very sharp hearing to begin with; they were able to clearly hear all clanking sounds from the mining occurring around them.

Ye Rosewater and the several direct disciples near here were stunned for a moment.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, what did you say? The enemy is about to ambush us? Are you sure?” Ye Rosewater looked at Lin Ming with utter incredulity. She cast her own divine sense out of the pit but was only able to reach out for a few miles before being completely shut down by the massive amount of blood sand. In that blood sand she could only see endless red; there was nothing she could investigate!

“This...”

Ye Rosewater found this a bit hard to believe. She had a late Divine Sea cultivation and Lin Ming was only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. How far a cultivator could sense completely depended on their soul force. Even though Lin Ming was an unprecedented genius, could his soul force still be stronger than her own?

Although Lin Ming had restrained his own soul force, Ye Rosewater could still vaguely feel it. When she looked at Li Ming, she could make out a sharpness in his eyes, like a bolt of lightning was dancing within them. However, this was a manifestation of Lin Ming's will and battle spirit, and a cultivator's senses had nothing to do with their battle spirit.

Taking 10,000 steps back and thinking about it, even if Lin Ming's soul force was stronger than hers, it was still useless. In order to discover an enemy raid in such horrible weather, his soul force would have to be 10 times, 20 times, or even many times more stronger than her own!

Ye Rosewater wasn't the only one with such doubts. The other direct disciples were also suspiciously looking at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming faintly frowned. If he were them, even he would find his own words hard to believe. But there was no way he could explain his reasoning. His soul force was indeed not any stronger than Ye Rosewater's, and he couldn't tell them that there was a strange hidden space within him with the soul of a half-step World King powerhouse living there. With Mo Eversnow's titanic soul

force, she could even easily discover the enemy if they were hundreds of miles away in this red sand storm.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, how did you discover the enemy? You can’t make a joke like this. If there is a mistake and our group goes out to hide, our position might be exposed even if there aren’t any enemies outside. That will make things very troublesome.” Behind Ye Rosewater, the Junior-apprentice Brother Song from before piped up.

“That’s right. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you should at least give us a reasoning for your thoughts. You can’t say that you depended on just your own divine sense to discover the enemy,” a female disciple echoed.

“I’ve already reminded you all. As for how I know, I’m sorry, but I cannot explain it to you. Don’t forget that I am not a disciple of Carefree Island. I’ve done everything that I could already. If you don’t believe me, there’s nothing else I can do to convince you. I’ll be on my way first. If we stay here in these pit tunnels, we’ll be caged in by the enemy and completely annihilated.” Lin Ming said, turning around to leave.

This incomparably hard mining pit was a potential death trap. If the enemy launched an assault here, the power of these attacks would multiply in this sealed environment. Once that happened, his fate could be imagined!

“Wait, wait! Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I believe you!” Ye Rosewater suddenly called out. A genius like Lin Ming had far too many lucky chances. She could believe he had some special method

that she couldn't understand. The other disciples hesitated but didn't object.

A disciple said, "Since Senior-apprentice Sister Ye agrees, we'll join you. We should hurry and retreat from here. We can communicate with Senior-apprentice Brother White using the Carefree Command and ask him to hurry here to support us. Hopefully, he won't laugh at us."

As the disciple spoke, he looked a bit ill as though he were imagining the scene of this humiliation. In his opinion, this was something that had a pretty high chance of happening.

Lin Ming sneered, "Support?"

The disciple wasn't too comfortable seeing Lin Ming's derisive sneer. He said, "You! What's so funny? Do you think we shouldn't do this? If the enemy dares to travel over such a long distance to attack us, their strength is surely much greater than ours. How can we fight them without support?"

Chapter 1092 – Entering the Sandstorm

The disciples of Carefree Island didn't have the confidence or spirit to face the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain together. Although Carefree Island was strong, their enemy was still the joint forces of the two other sects. In these past years, Carefree Island had mostly suffered disastrous defeats in the battles within the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. Moreover, there was only a very tiny number of disciples that came to this purple mountain to mine, and even fewer amongst them were direct disciples. Their cultivation levels were also much lower on average. Thus, when facing an enemy attack, it was natural to first think of retreating and finding support.

For many of the disciples, they would rather Lin Ming be wrong and be laughed at by everyone while desperately looking for the main team than face the villainous Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain.

The previously speaking disciple wasn't feeling too good about Lin Ming's sneer. The other disciples were also confused as to what he was hinting at. Even Ye Rosewater was frowning, as if she were deep in thought.

Lin Ming took out the Phoenix Blood Spear from his spatial ring, his aura also spreading out with it. In the dark mine, everyone could clearly see the faint purple arcs of electricity that glittered in Lin Ming's eyes, making everyone feel stifled.

“Our position is a secret and there is also a red sandstorm blowing outside. If you were the captain of Splintersoul Mountain

and the Occult Bone Clan, would you choose to come out in this sort of weather and search for an enemy trail in a situation where you couldn't even see more than five miles ahead of you?"

Lin Ming's words shocked all of the disciples. Indeed, mining in this weather was already difficult, let alone looking for enemies to fight. And, what was even more incredible was that their position had been suddenly found. There was no way that this was a coincidence.

"You... what are you saying?"

"What am I saying? That's simple..." Lin Ming shrugged his shoulders and casually waved his spear. "I believe that we have been betrayed."

"What!?" Upon hearing this, everyone was alarmed.

"Who would betray us!?"

"Are you saying that the traitor is Senior-apprentice Brother White? That... that is impossible!" The previously speaking disciple's eyes widened like full moons. He wasn't an idiot. Lin Ming had stopped him from sending a message to the main team, and in addition to what he had said before, it was clear that he was referring to White Mirrorjade!

"Why would Senior-apprentice Brother White betray us!? Don't speak such nonsense!"

“That’s right. What advantage is there in betraying us? That would only reduce Carefree Island’s war strength!”

As someone pointed out that Lin Ming suspected that White Mirrorjade was the traitor, everyone else began to panic!

None of them were willing to believe that White Mirrorjade had betrayed them. It wasn’t that they believed in White Mirrorjade’s moral character, but that he was their last ray of hope in this situation. If White Mirrorjade had truly abandoned them, then all of them were isolated from help and stuck in a fatal dead end!

In terms of strength, besides Ye Rosewater, only Lin Ming was passable. The other disciples all had limited combat strength. In this situation, not only had they been betrayed by White Mirrorjade but they also had to face the threat of the allied forces from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan. This meant that their chances of surviving were beyond slim!

No one was willing to cut off their own hope. Thus, subconsciously, no one was willing to believe that Lin Ming’s speculations were true.

At this time, Lin Ming wasn’t in the mood to take care of these disciples’ fragile glass hearts. He only coldly said, “The enemy is less than 80 miles from here. In the sandstorm, their speed is a bit slower, but they should still reach us in less than half an incense stick of time. If they manage to ambush us here then we’ll just be turtles in a jar. If you want to stay here then go ahead, but I’m not

joining you.”

As Lin Ming spoke, a rising hysteria began to swell up in the minds of the early Divine Sea disciples.

“What do we do? Do we send a request for support or not?”

“I don’t know. I also don’t believe that Senior-apprentice Brother White has betrayed us. Although what Lin Ming says makes sense, Senior-apprentice Brother White has been in Carefree Island for so many years and he is also a direct descendant disciple. As for Lin Ming, he just arrived and he’s not even a disciple of our Carefree Island. If it were you, would you rather believe Lin Ming or Senior-apprentice Brother White?”

“What do you mean? Are you saying that Lin Ming was the one to betray us?”

“I’m not saying that...”

“What are you worrying about? Maybe the enemy isn’t coming at all. Didn’t you listen to what Lin Ming said just now? He said the enemy was 80 miles away! What sort of concept is 80 miles in this red sandstorm? Even if Lin Ming had some secret detection methods, it might not be accurate at such a range. He could be wrong.”

The dozen plus disciples were all stirred up in a panicked frenzy like ants in hot water. They were all discussing the situation with

true essence sound transmissions. Although they spoke a lot, it only took several breaths of time to speak with true essence sound transmissions.

A disciple had already taken out a Carefree Command and was prepared to send out a call for help.

But at this time, a blue light suddenly flashed and the Carefree Command was snatched away from that disciple by a jade white hand.

“Se-senior-apprentice Sister Ye...” The disciple glanced at Ye Rosewater and gulped, confusion written all over his face.

“Don’t send it!” Ye Rosewater grimly said as she put away the Carefree Command. She recalled White Mirrorjade’s words during the Council of Elders – he had clearly wanted to send Lin Ming into a deathtrap. But, she never imagined that White Mirrorjade would be so crazy as to betray his own sect and collude with Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, even sending her and several other direct disciples to die here!

As she thought back to how he divided everyone, Ye Rosewater became increasingly sure of her own guess. “No wonder he kept me at the main team, it was because he thought I still had some use left. But my subordinates are actually people he has to get rid of. He sent those people here at the same time to avoid having any suspicions cast on him, otherwise, there would be no way to explain sending Lin Ming here by himself. White Mirrorjade, you are far too ruthless!”

As these thoughts flashed through Ye Rosewater's mind, she actually didn't voice them out loud. She only calmly faced the other disciples and said, "We're going with Lin Ming."

"Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, do you also suspect that Senior-apprentice Brother White has betrayed us?" A disciple asked, stunned. Whether it was from an emotional aspect, or because they didn't want their last ray of hope to be cut off here, no one wanted to believe that the man they all called their Elder Senior-apprentice Brother and who they also respected had been the one to deliver them to ruin.

"Cut the crap. If you don't want to die then hurry up!" Ye Rosewater's voice became increasingly desolate. Her beautiful eyes flashed with an ice cold killing intent!

After being betrayed by White Mirrorjade, Ye Rosewater didn't lose her cool, nor did she complain about how White Mirrorjade could betray her or the sect. Instead, all that came from her was a thick killing intent.

Lin Ming glanced at Ye Rosewater, a bit surprised. Without saying anything, he rushed towards the exit of the mining pit.

"Everyone listen! All Revolving Core disciples, enter my saint artifact spatial ring!"

Ye Rosewater issued an order to all of the Revolving Core disciples. In a fierce battle, these Revolving Core disciples could be

called defenseless babies. Receiving all of them into her spatial ring was the best method of protecting them, but the premise of this was that she wouldn't die. Otherwise, if she died and her saint artifact spatial ring was destroyed, all of them would be cast out. With their Revolving Core cultivation, they should still be able to barely withstand the disintegrating space storm and escape, but then they would be severely wounded while facing the joint forces of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain. At that time, their fates could be imagined. After the three sects had fought to this degree, there was no more mercy to be found. No one was willing to allow their enemy's disciples to return to their sect and freely grow.

The Revolving Core disciples nervously entered Ye Rosewater's spatial ring, all of them filled with a great unease. They did not have the power to change fate; they could only accept the judgment of those stronger than them. Although they didn't have to fight after entering the saint artifact spatial ring, the truth was that this was a great torment and tremendous test on their mentality. They would have no idea what was happening outside and could only anxiously wait.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin... what do you plan on doing...?”

The one who asked this question was the curvy and full-figured Xiao Raingem. At this time, her normally suggestive face was actually pale white, making her seem a bit ill. To these disciples, not only had they been abandoned, but they were also surrounded by the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain. The pressure on them was just too great.

“We’ll get out of here first. It shouldn’t be hard to avoid their senses in this red sandstorm.” In fact, with Mo Eversnow’s divine sense, they could definitely borrow the red sandstorm as a shield to avoid the encirclement and smoothly escape.

However, the battle had to be fought sooner or later. The reason that Lin Ming had come to the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was to slaughter others, tempering his own Laws in the heat of battle and precipitating his cultivation. If he only played hide-and-seek with his enemy then there wasn’t any meaning in coming here.

After all of the Revolving Core disciples entered the spatial ring, there were only a dozen or so people left over.

As they arrived at the entrance of the mining pit, the wild and fierce red sandstorm blew towards them, endless and overwhelming, blocking out the skies. This scene appeared as if it were the end of the world.

The red sand blowing through the air had already surpassed the speed of sound. Everyone could clearly hear the grating sonic blasts as it cut through the air.

The sounds of a billion trillion grains of sand blasting through the air were like countless knives cutting ice, grating and harsh.

“Everyone, take back your senses! You only need to send out a little wisp of your sense to lock onto my body.”

Lin Ming issued an order with a true essence sound transmission. If these people carelessly investigated their surroundings then they would be easily detected by the enemy. Although the enemy didn't have Mo Eversnow's ability, it was still possible for them to investigate an enemy's divine sense without being sensed themselves.

"This..." These disciples all looked at each other, hesitation on their faces. In the sandstorm, their divine sense could still extend a few miles. But, if they relied on only their eyes then they wouldn't be able to see more than 10 feet in front of them. That would really be walking blind. Wherever Lin Ming brought them was where they would go. Even if he brought them to a danger zone, they wouldn't be able to detect it.

"Do it!" Ye Rosewater coldly shouted out. The disciples all obeyed.

"Follow me!" Lin Ming didn't care too much. After all, he was an outsider so it was normal that they didn't trust him. But, he was actually surprised that Ye Rosewater placed so much faith in him.

Lin Ming plunged into the limitless red sand. The countless grains of sand struck his protective true essence before shattering, causing a sound like crackling rice.

For the direct disciples present, it wasn't difficult to pass through this red sandstorm, so they were able to easily follow Lin Ming.

Like this, the dozen plus people followed Lin Ming through the

sandstorm, changing direction again and again.

Such a route left them all puzzled and also filled with doubt. But after coming to this step, their only choice was to rely on Lin Ming.

Chapter 1093 – Ambush

They walked for several breaths of time as Lin Ming led the disciples of Carefree Island to the back of a giant crag.

“Stay here and hide. Don’t move!”

“This is... what are we doing?”

Many disciples were confused. But they were used to obeying orders, and in this sandstorm, they were no different from being blind. It was simpler to do whatever Lin Ming asked of them.

“Do you guys know how to use attack array formations?” Lin Ming suddenly asked, remembering something.

When he was in the God Beast Mystic Realm, the battle formation the Ancient Dragon Clan used had left a deep impression on Lin Ming. If it weren’t for that terrifying combined combat strength that forcefully diverted the Asura King’s attention, there was no way Lin Ming could have obtained the supreme dragon bone and helped Mo Eversnow reawaken.

If the disciples of Carefree Island could form an array formation, their striking power could multiple by several times. That would be a great help in this situation!

After all, there were many enemies this time. In such a battle, the role of the individual was inevitably lessened.

“We do.” Ye Rosewater nodded. These disciples were her subordinates and they had trained in some offensive array formations together.

“Good. First wait here and restrain your senses. Wait for my order, and on my command, launch your array formation attack!”

“Okay!”

Like this, the Carefree Island direct disciples hid behind the rock crag, waiting in ambush. Lin Ming was clear that in such horrible weather, Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan wouldn't randomly attack. Once the disciples of Carefree Island scattered in all directions to escape into the sandstorm, there would be no hope of chasing after all of them.

The enemy would definitely wait until the sandstorm stopped before they began their assault.

At this time, six or seven miles away from Lin Ming and the Carefree Island disciples, a group of black-cloaked martial artists were completely buried in the blood sands. They didn't even need to dig their way down. The sand falling down from the storm was enough to bury them. These people were all disciples from Splintersoul Mountain.

Not too far away from them, the disciples from the Occult Bone Clan were also lying in wait. There were around 20 of them, and there was even a late Divine Sea master leading them.

“Hehe, that’s the pit. I can already smell the delicious scent of prey. Ye Rosewater, I’m really looking forwards to you!”

The Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain sent two late Divine Sea disciples to lead this expeditionary group to kill Lin Ming. The two late Divine Sea disciples were specifically to suppress Ye Rosewater. It would be two against one, and in a situation where they had the advantage due to a sneak attack, the result of the battle could be imagined.

“I have no idea if White Mirrorjade’s information is reliable. It might be a trap.”

“It shouldn’t be. I caught a sandworm around here and read its memories. There were truly only over a dozen direct disciples that walked towards the direction of the purple mountain. The intel shouldn’t be wrong. These disciples are nothing but fish on the chopping block, and White Mirrorjade’s main force is a thousand miles away, so how could he possibly ambush us?” the Occult Bone Clan captain said with a proud expression.

Those from Splintersoul Mountain couldn’t help but praise the special skills of the Occult Bone Clan. Because the Occult Bone Clan was skilled in the Laws of Life, they were even able to read the memories of sandworms. This method of detection was nearly impossible to guard against. Of course, this technique also had its limitations. One could only see places where the target had passed through, and if one really controlled a sandworm, a master would be able to discover the traces of divine sense left behind in the sandworm.

“Why won’t this sandstorm end already? I just can’t wait!” The late Divine Sea Occult Bone Clan martial artist greedily rubbed his hands together. The Occult Bone Clan focused on sexual obscenity and gluttony; through these two vices, they were able to perceive the Laws of Life. The women that were in the ranks of their enemies often ended up with a miserable fate. He especially wouldn’t miss out on such a top grade beauty like Ye Rosewater.

“Calm down. The sandstorms in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm appear in a very ordered fashion. They don’t last too long each time; this one should end soon,” the late Divine Sea Splintersoul Mountain disciple said with a true essence sound transmission. “Hehe, speaking of which, although we can kill Ye Rosewater, trying to capture her alive with her level of cultivation won’t be easy. I think you shouldn’t keep your hopes up. That is, unless you’re interested in her corpse.”

“Humph! My Occult Bone Clan is focused on perceiving the essence of life. A corpse has already lost all hints of life. Even if she is far more beautiful, I still wouldn’t be interested. Only you cultivators from Splintersoul Mountain are so interested in gross things like corpses and ghosts. You don’t need to worry about me, I already have a method to capture her alive. With so many people and surprise on our side, this should be absolutely easy. Moreover, I also have a final killing move!” the late Divine Sea Occult Bone Clan martial artist said with confidence.

“Hehe, I’m not interested in arguing with you. I don’t care what you do as long as you don’t take too long. Once the storm dies down, we’ll only have half an hour to attack! Afterwards, we have to hurry back and support the main force. They should have

already started their assault against Carefree Island by then. With several thousand of Carefree Island's disciples here, the harvests will be enormous."

The main team White Mirrorjade brought with him was too large. There was no way to hide even if he tried.

As the two late Divine Sea martial artists were talking, the sandstorm gradually diminished. The endless amounts of red sand fell down from the sky, forming a terrifying deluge of sand, enough that it blocked out the heavens themselves. If a mortal were here, they would have been buried alive.

"Pay attention! The sandstorm is about to end!"

"Haha, it's finally time! Everyone, listen up, prepare the array formation and ready yourselves to attack. We're going to give it everything we've got!"

The eyes of the Occult Bone Clan martial artists began to shine. They sensed that there was a great deal of women in this small group of martial artists. The process in which they had sex with women was not called dual cultivation nor was it to steal their energy, but rather to 'perceive'.

With extremely talented and beautiful women to help them 'perceive' the Laws of Life, they could further understand the mysteries of the essence of life.

The sand in the sky slowly dispersed, and the wind speed already dropped a great deal. They could make out the giant mining pit just 10 miles away!

In the sandstorm, 10 miles was a great enough distance that the disciples of Carefree Island wouldn't be able to sense them. But once the sandstorm stopped, to a martial artist, 10 miles simply wasn't anything to them at all. Their attacks could cross 10 miles in just the blink of an eye!

“Attack!”

The captains of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain shouted out together. In unison, nearly 40 martial artists emerged from the red sands, and the light from all sorts of attacks shot out together!

After gathering their attacks with an array formation, their combined striking power doubled. This was an attack they were preparing for some time already!

The first strike had to be the strongest. The greater their opponents were damaged, the easier it would be for them to win. They put forth everything they had, even overdrawing on their strength to attack.

Bang bang bang!

In that instant, the earth shook and the mountain trembled. All

of the attacks crashed into the mining pit where they exploded together. In that confined space, the force of the detonation was even greater. Even though the purple mountain was hard to an unimaginable degree, it still began to collapse under the attacks of so many masters!

“This – !!”

Ye Rosewater and the other direct disciples’ eyes shot open. The surprise attack of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain gave them a fright.

Chapter 1094 – Counterattack

Rumble rumble rumble!

The purple mountain was smashed apart and countless pieces of shattered stone flew through the skies, scattering in all directions. A powerful shockwave rolled outwards, causing endless waves of red sand to shoot up into the sky, as though the apocalypse were unfolding. The disciples of Carefree Island never thought the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain were lying in ambush just 6-7 miles away, and they attacked as soon as the sand storm stopped!

They looked at the terrifying attack that was launched at the purple mountain. If they were still there, the consequences would have been unbelievable!

Even if they instantly reacted and summoned their protective true essence, there would inevitably be calamitous casualties. None of the Revolving Core realm disciples would have been able to live and most of the direct disciples would have died. The ones remaining would have been seriously wounded. In this situation they would have to face an enemy that was several times their own size. They would be nothing but fish in a barrel, completely suppressed!

Ye Rosewater glanced at Lin Ming, shocked speechless. In this sand storm, a martial artist's senses should have been limited to five miles at most, but Lin Ming was actually able to sense that the enemy was lying in ambush six or seven miles away, and even do so in an extremely accurate manner without the slightest mistake.

What was even stranger was that he had accurately guessed their plans. The Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain were both waiting for the moment the sand storm ended to attack!

However, Lin Ming was also waiting for this moment!

“Attack! Give it everything you have!” Lin Ming coldly shouted out. In that moment, the many disciples of Carefree Island no longer hesitated. All of them overdrew their strength and combined their combat skills with an array formation to attack. Although they were far from being able to compare with their enemy, they had the initiative and also the mysterious Lin Ming on their side. Their confidence soared upwards, their momentum rising like a volcano!

In that moment, countless sword lights shot out. The disciples of Carefree Island studied the Wood Laws, so these sword lights were like a deluge of green beams that twisted through the air, lighting up the horizon!

As the disciples of Carefree Island attacked, Lin Ming’s aura also erupted. He opened the Heretical God Force to the limit, and at the same time a blazing gold light began to shine from between his eyebrows. He was burning all of the Ancient Phoenix blood within his body!

As he combusted the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, Lin Ming felt as if his bones were heating up like tempered metal. His blood and even his marrow began to boil over, and his joints issued endless crackling sounds that extended into a single loud explosive burst, as though a dragon was roaring into the vast skies.

The blood of the Azure Dragon was resonating with the blood of the Ancient Phoenix!

Dragon and phoenix, rejoicing together!

In that moment, a massive amount of origin energy gathered towards Lin Ming, as if a glorious blue lotus were slowly blooming around him!

This was an attack that combined three Concepts of Fire; Burning Heat, Annihilation, and Creation—the Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

This was Lin Ming's self-created attack which he had comprehended during the smelting trial at Fire Spirit Star. It was a fusion of the first three level Concepts of the Fire Laws!

Lin Ming had first used this move when he rushed to complete the Illusionary God Combat Array's Thousand Slaughter and fought Crimson Strifecloud. Now was the second time!

In Lin Ming's peak state, even Crimson Strifecloud had difficulty directly contending with the Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

A spear thrust forwards and a flaming light lit up the entire sky. A heaven-shaking dragon roar echoed through the world. As the Phoenix Blood Spear flashed through the air, the massive blue lotus phantom fully bloomed!

At this time, Ye Rosewater was completely dumbfounded as she saw Lin Ming's attack. Just what sort of attack was this!? The striking power was far too freakish! Just the sole power of this attack was far stronger than the combined attack of all the other disciples together!

.....

“Haha, our attack was too brutal. Everyone inside should be dead.” A Splintersoul Mountain disciple recklessly laughed as he saw the purple mountain collapse.

“What a pity. Those women were extremely good vessels to help perceive the Life Laws. If –” The Divine Sea Occult Bone Clan martial artist's words were caught in his throat. He suddenly twisted around to see terrifying beams of divine light tearing across the earth, shredding apart the wilderness as they hurtled towards them with an unstoppable momentum! Wherever this light went, endless red sand would turn into dust, forming a massive fissure!

“What!?”

“Enemy attack!”

The disciples of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain all paled. They never thought they would be the ones suffering a sneak attack at this time, and one so horrifying at that!

“Hurry and defend!” The late Divine Sea Occult Bone Clan captain shouted out. But as he quickly issued the command, all the other disciples were left panic-stricken. They wanted to defend, but they discovered they had exhausted all of their accumulated true essence in their own attack just now. They didn’t have enough time to gather more strength!

The point right after a martial artist attacked was when they were at their weakest. Even though this time was short, it could bring a fatal disaster! When masters fought, they would always reserve 30% of their strength in their attacks. Only at the end would they go all-out in desperate attack. But at this time, even if they weren’t able to kill their enemy, they could still cause enough trouble for them that they had enough time to gather their strength again.

If they completely used all of their strength to hit nothing and then had to face the enemy’s own all-out attack without having their guard raised, the result of this could be imagined!

Bang!

Unstoppable beams of light fell down like a rain of meteors. Terrifying explosions swallowed up everything. In this moment it was as though the entire divergent mystic realm had been lit up!

The disciples of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain all howled out in pain and misery. Many early Divine Sea disciples were blown to pieces, and many middle Divine Sea martial artists were grievously wounded! It had to be known that this barrage of attacks contained the strength of two great masters in Lin Ming

and Ye Rosewater!

“This is...”

The disciples of Carefree island were surprised to see their attack have such a wondrous effect. They only had a dozen plus people, but they caused the nearly 40 some disciples of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain to suffer serious losses!

“Attack together! Kill them all!” Lin Ming frostily commanded. At the same time, he opened the Gate of Wonder and activated the Mystic Lightning Shade, shooting to the front!

A six or seven mile distance was far too short a distance to Lin Ming!

Ye Rosewater followed close behind. She had no idea what method Lin Ming had used to investigate the situation, but in addition to that terrifying striking power he displayed just now, she was utterly convinced by him.

The other disciples all rushed forwards. At that time, even if an archaic great beast were lying in front of them, they would still attack without hesitation!

“You bastards!”

“What’s going on here!?”

The two captains of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain had the lightest wounds. Even if they had all-out attacked, they were still able to rely on their solid foundation and multiple life-saving methods to block that attack. The attack just now barely affected their combat strength at all.

But their subordinates were off much worse. A third had immediately died. Of the nearly 40 people they brought here, only just over 20 were left remaining, and all of them were wounded.

The two captains simmered with a seething rage. As they saw a youth rush towards their front, their hatred and anger burst open like a roiling volcano!

“Only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction! You’re looking to die!”

“Mm? Eighth stage Life Destruction! It’s that damned Lin Ming!”

The two captains instantly recalled Lin Ming’s name. Lin Ming was also their top priority for coming here.

“So you are Lin Ming. You came at just the right time! I’ll carve you up first to boost morale!” The Occult Bone Clan’s late Divine Sea captain gave a loud shout. Layers upon layers of bone armor burst out from his body, covering his entire self. He grasped a giant bone sword and cut towards Lin Ming.

At the same time, the captain of Splintersoul Mountain also attacked. The weapon in his hand was very unique. It was a ghost banner. As this ghost banner shot forwards, cold winds appeared in the air and the pained screams of ghosts echoed outwards. These ghosts melded together, forming into a giant demon claw that grasped towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming had to face the simultaneous attacks of two late Divine Sea powerhouses!

“Junior-apprentice Brother, be careful!”

Although Ye Rosewater admired Lin Ming to the extreme, she also worried that Lin Ming would be severely wounded by these attacks.

As the attacks of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain’s two captains fell down, behind Lin Ming, a blood red lotus began to bloom!

Prime Emperor Lotus Flower – grandmist space!

With the concealing technique Mo Eversnow taught him, Lin Ming could fully utilize the grandmist space. He no longer needed to worry about it.

As the grandmist space activated, it was like a desolate ancient beast that devoured all. It met the attacks of the two captains!

The Occult Bone Clan captain's bone sword energy was continuously weakened by the grandmist space. Although the Occult Bone Claw's Laws of Life were mysterious, in the formation of the universe, life only appeared at the latter stages. How could the Laws of Life possibly resist the annihilating strength of the Grandmist Laws? As for the countless ghost phantoms that were sent out by Splintersoul Mountain, they were all reduced to ashes underneath the power of the grandmist space!

By the time the two masters' attacks reached Lin Ming, they were already weakened by over half. Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and swept outwards!

Penetrating Rainbow!

Bang!

The power of thunder and fire furiously wove together in a deafening explosion, tearing apart the bone sword energy and the demon claw at the same time!

“What!?”

“How, how could this happen!?”

The two masters never expected their combined attack to be directly defeated by Lin Ming. Without time to think, Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear had already turned towards Splintersoul Mountain's captain.

Lin Ming could see that the Splintersoul Mountain captain had weaker defenses. Moreover, his attacks were based on the Laws of Soul; they were completely suppressed by Lin Ming's own abilities.

“Chasing Thunder!”

As the Splintersoul Mountain captain saw Lin Ming rushing towards him, a black energy surrounded his entire body as he waved his ghost banner. A black demon appeared from this black energy and plunged towards Lin Ming. While he used a physical attack, he also used a soul attack!

However, the power of ghosts were restrained by the power of thunder to begin with.

In front of Lin Ming, soul attacks were even more of a joke.

Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear thrust downwards without change.

A fierce explosion sounded out and waves of violent energy billowed outwards. The Splintersoul Mountain captain was directly smashed backwards by Lin Ming's spear! His protective true essence crazily trembled and his bamboo hat flew away, revealing an incomparably pale face. Flows of red blood flowed down from the corners of his mouth, trailing into the wind.

Chapter 1095 – Lure the Enemy

“You... how did your soul...”

The Splintersoul Mountain captain looked at Lin Ming with fear etched on his face. He wasn't injured because of Lin Ming's direct attack, but because he had suffered a backlash after sending out his soul attack. Lin Ming's soul defense was so powerful that it left him horrified. In front of Lin Ming, the Laws of Soul and Life that he was so skilled in had become a joke.

“Lin Ming!”

Ye Rosewater rushed over to Lin Ming's side. Because she had used up her immediate energy in her attack and because of her panic over Lin Ming being attacked, her face was flushed red and her chest was heaving up and down.

She glanced over at the two captains from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan. Of these people, one of them had been struck back by Lin Ming and the other had been wounded to the point of spitting blood. They were both direct disciples of their sects; ordinary late Divine Sea martial artists could not compare with them.

Behind Ye Rosewater, the other disciples of Carefree Island also rushed forwards. As they saw the Splintersoul Mountain captain with blood spilling out from his mouth, their eyes shined. Before, Lin Ming's accurate discovery of the enemy had reassured them, but that was only discovering the enemy. In the world of martial

artists, strength was placed above all else. Only strength could cause others to feel awe and admiration and give others confidence.

Lin Ming's strike had simultaneously forced back the two great masters from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan. Without a doubt, this caused their confidence to sharply rise upwards!

They could win this!

At this time, although Ye Rosewater was surprised, she naturally wouldn't exclaim in surprise or stare in marvel like some idiot. This was a battle between the two forces; not even a single blink of the eye could be wasted.

She loudly shouted, "I will stop the Occult Bone Clan's captain. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, do your best and kill that captain of Splintersoul Mountain. All other disciples, surround the remainder and slaughter them all!"

"Great!"

"Kill!"

With a loud cry from Ye Rosewater, the disciples of Carefree Island moved forwards with surging momentum like light spilling forwards. As for the disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, they felt a tremendous pressure!

“Do you think I’m some dough that you can knead however you want!?” The Occult Bone Clan captain’s eyes turned red. He madly roared, grasping the bone sword and rushing towards Ye Rosewater!

Ye Rosewater sneered. In a one-on-one fair battle, Ye Rosewater didn’t fear anyone, not even White Mirrorjade!

If the Occult Bone Clan was by itself, the truth was that they would be weaker than Carefree Island, so how could she fear the Occult Bone Clan captain?

10,000 Wood Germination!

Ye Rosewater’s attack contained the endless Wood Laws. The Wood Laws had a similarity with the blood of the Azure Dragon, and that was that they grew endlessly. Although the Wood Laws didn’t have the sharpness of the Metal Laws or the explosive force of the Fire Laws, they had the characteristics of being tenacious and flexible. If one wanted to destroy Ye Rosewater’s Wood Law origin energy, they would have to use up twice the energy.

Peng!

Ye Rosewater’s wood-attribute sword energy clashed with the Occult Bone Clan captain’s bone sword energy, destroying each other!

The two followed right after their sword energies. Their bodies twisted and blurred, each of them exchanging attacks in rapid succession. And on the other side, the disciples of Carefree Island were fighting with the disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan.

Carefree Island only had a dozen plus people and Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan had over 20, however, the disciples from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan had all been wounded and they were still dazed at the sudden shift. In particular, after seeing Lin Ming repel the two masters from their sects and also wound one of them, this had been a massive strike on their morale!

Their side's two strongest disciples had been repulsed by Lin Ming alone; could this battle still be won?

This idea inevitably appeared in the minds of the Splintersoul Mountain and Occult Bone Clan disciples. With the sudden shift, the fight suddenly became one-sided. The disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan were continuously forced to retreat again and again. In just several breaths of time, two severely wounded early Divine Sea disciples suddenly had their heads lopped off, their blood spraying onto the ground!

“Damn!”

The Splintersoul Mountain captain was flustered. The original agreement had been that their small team would attack as soon as the sandstorm stopped, and then the main team would attack Carefree Island's main forces half an hour later. They were

supposed to rush back and support the main team, and trap Carefree Island in a pincer attack.

But now, forget about rushing back in half an hour, it was already uncertain if they could survive or not!

He no longer had time to think, and he didn't even have time to send out a sound transmitting talisman. Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear thrust out again, aiming at his vital points every time!

Through that brief collision just now, Lin Ming could confirm that although the Splintersoul Mountain captain was a late Divine Sea master, he was still a level weaker than the middle Divine Sea Dragon One. This person would be a top talent if placed in Splintersoul Mountain, but in front of a genius like Lin Ming, he was nothing but ordinary.

After Lin Ming absorbed the dragon marrow and dragon bone, he could almost frontally contend with Dragon One. Killing the Splintersoul Mountain captain was no problem at all!

Peng!

The demon claw that the Splintersoul Mountain captain sent out was torn in half by Lin Ming's spear. Alarmed, the captain bit down on his tongue and spat out blood essence onto the ghost banner. After the ghost banner absorbed this blood essence, the ghosts contained within began to howl with bloodthirst. This ghost banner was a top grade saint artifact forged by Splintersoul Mountain by killing 100 million mortals and refining their souls.

Now that the Splintersoul Mountain captain used his own blood essence to direct these ghosts, the greatest power of the ghost banner could be displayed. 100 million ghosts poured outwards!

Rahh!

Lin Ming's spear light was swallowed up by these hideous ghosts. The ghosts continued shooting straight towards Lin Ming!

“Mm?”

Lin Ming was startled. A late Divine Sea disciple of a large sect really couldn't be underestimated – they had a number of hidden cards up their sleeves. With a thought, the grandmist space spread out even further. With the support of the dragon marrow blood and his own formidable foundation, once the grandmist space was used, even someone much stronger than Lin Ming wouldn't be able to break through it.

Regardless of what attack it was, everything that entered the grandmist space would be thoroughly weakened.

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

Lin Ming gave a deep shout. The blood of the Ancient Phoenix burned in his body once more!

When Lin Ming was at the seventh stage of Life Destruction, burning the Ancient Phoenix blood just once would consume

several tenths of his true essence; he simply wasn't able to keep it up for too long in battle. But now, with the dragon marrow supporting him, he could burn the Ancient Phoenix blood twice in a row without feeling too exhausted.

The blue lotus bloomed and the first three level Concepts of the Fire Laws fused as one. The 100 million ghosts were already weakened by over half by the grandmist space. Then they were scorched by the power of the blue lotus, and tens of million ghosts were suddenly burnt to nothing!

“Ahhh!”

The Splintersoul Mountain captain's eyes reddened with rage, his heart dripping with blood from the loss. But at this time, he could no longer worry about the ghost banner that he loved so much and continued to drive it towards Lin Ming. After all, there were far too many souls trapped within the ghost banner. Even if Lin Ming used the grandmist space and the Blue Lotus Flame Dance together, he was still unable to block all of it. There would always be fish that evaded the net.

Peng!

100,000 grieving spirits dove into Lin Ming's body. Lin Ming's Dragonscale Robes simply weren't able to block this sort of insubstantial soul attack. The shrill howls of countless ghosts began to cry out in Lin Ming's ears!

And under such an attack, Lin Min seemed to slow down. His face

became overcast and his eyes dimmed down, as if his vision were glazing over.

“I got him!” The Splintersoul Mountain captain’s eyes brightened. He had used up his own blood essence and even wasted tens of millions of souls from the ghost banner in order to create such an opportunity that allowed 100,000 grieving spirits to plunge into Lin Ming’s body. Even if Lin Ming was stronger, he would still have to struggle for some time to rid himself of these spirits that spread through his body like locusts. And for this period of time, Lin Ming would not have complete control over his body. This was the captain’s chance!

“Die!”

The Splintersoul Mountain captain’s eyes shined with bloodlust. He wantonly hurtled into the grandmist space. The grandmist space constantly wore down the black energy around his body. However, the Splintersoul Mountain captain had bet everything on this single attack; he smashed the ghost banner down onto Lin Ming’s head.

Victory!

The Splintersoul Mountain captain’s heart raced. Just as the ghost banner was about to smash into Lin Ming’s forehead, Lin Ming suddenly sneered. His originally dull eyes suddenly recovered, shining with absolute clarity!

To Lin Ming, a soul attack was nothing more than a joke. Not to

mention his grandmist battle spirit and Samsara martial intent, but just the protection of the Magic Cube made him immune to all soul attacks that would try to seize his body!

The only reason he had faked being affected by the attack just now was in order to lure the Splintersoul Mountain captain into his grandmist space and then strike him down in a single attack. Otherwise, if a late Divine Sea genius used everything he had to escape, it would be a bit troublesome to catch him.

“What!?” As the Splintersoul Mountain captain saw Lin Ming’s sudden change in aura, he was horrified. He was extremely careful. He knew that if he entered the strange domain space that surrounded Lin Ming, his own combat strength would weaken by a great deal. Even so, facing Lin Ming, he had no choice but to desperately risk everything on this attack and finish him off.

Although he had attacked, he had still kept behind some of his strength. Now that he saw the trap Lin Ming had laid for him, he immediately drew back!

“Too late!” Lin Ming coldly jeered. He thrust out his spear and 999 small blood spears formed into a powerful tornado that howled outwards.

“This cunning brat!”

In this split instant, the Splintersoul Mountain captain didn’t even have time to burn his blood essence. He forcefully twisted his body to avoid Lin Ming’s Phoenix Blood Spear. But as he was

changing direction, he suddenly felt as if layers upon layers of nets had fallen over his body, holding tightly onto him!

“This is – !”

The Splintersoul Mountain captain was shocked. “Is this a world of will projection, a net formed by a gold battle spirit!?”

Everything had happened too quickly. The Splintersoul Mountain captain didn’t even have time to think of how a gold battle spirit had suddenly appeared, capable of binding his movements. His conditioned reflex was to erupt with energy to break out of the shackles of this net, but in this split instant, Lin Ming’s Phoenix Blood Spear had already pierced through his protective true essence and was thrusting straight towards his chest.

He couldn’t block this!

“Ahh!”

With a miserable shout, the Splintersoul Mountain captain smashed his ghost banner onto the Phoenix Blood Spear’s edge!

The ghost banner was not a weapon meant to directly engage in head on fights with the enemy. Rather, it was a weapon that was refined with souls and relied on these ghosts to attack. It was not a weapon made of divine metal, but rather 10,000 year yin peach wood and ghostly silk. A great portion of the ghost banner’s 100

million ghosts had perished, and before he even had time to recover the dregs, his ghost banner now had to clash with the weapon known as the king of a hundred solders, the spear that was designed for total annihilation! The results of this collision could be imagined!

Ca!

The top grade saint artifact ghost banner was directly pierced through by Lin Ming's spear!

The Phoenix Blood Spear continued, its speed unabated. It thrust into the Splintersoul Mountain captain's chest, causing blood to splash everywhere!

Chapter 1096 – Cut Them Down

With a twist of the Phoenix Blood Spear, the Splintersoul Mountain captain's ribs were completely broken apart. Fresh heart blood sprayed out over a dozen meters!

The Splintersoul Mountain captain was cut down together with his top grade saint artifact ghost banner. And, the sounds of his screaming spread out far and wide, causing all of the disciples to glance in his direction.

Everyone turned their heads to see the Splintersoul Mountain captain's blood pouring onto the ground. But this wasn't the end. With an explosive crackling sound, the Splintersoul Mountain captain's protective true essence shattered. With his body covered by the grandmist space and all of his protective true essence gone, he now directly faced the annihilating Laws of the grandmist space. His flesh and blood began to break down!

Haunting and painful groans issued from his tattered throat. An essence gathering system martial artist had a comparatively frail physical body to begin with, so without their protective true essence, how could they possibly resist the grandmist space and the invasion of that incomparably heavy elementary grandmist energy? With a popping sound, the Splintersoul Mountain captain's entire body exploded into a burst of blood rain. As this blood rain splattered into the air, it was directly swallowed up by the grandmist space. Then, it immediately turned into tiny red particles, and after a few more breaths of time it was completely annihilated!

Such a thorough method of dying caused a creepy feeling to crawl up the scalps of all the disciples from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan. This force field that annihilated all was simply too terrifying!

The disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan looked at each other, fear and retreat in their eyes. And at this moment, the Occult Bone Clan captain felt a cold air shoot straight up his back and into the heavens, as if his spirit had fled him. He already wasn't able to deal with a single Ye Rosewater, but the Splintersoul Mountain captain was even more incapable of dealing with Lin Ming. In just a dozen some breaths of time, he had been killed by Lin Ming!

That meant there was only about five breaths of time until Lin Ming joined the battle again!

“Run! Scatter and run!”

The Occult Bone Clan captain slashed a sword at Ye Rosewater and then drew backwards. The other disciples hesitated for a slight moment before also retreating. In the past excursions into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, when the disciples of Carefree Island found they couldn't continue, they also used such a method to escape. Those that were lucky enough to escape would survive.

“You want to run? Dream on!” Ye Rosewater said, truly angered. This Occult Bone Clan captain had wanted to capture her and use her as a living furnace. If it weren't for Lin Ming then their sneak attack would have succeeded, and she really would have ended up suffering a fate worse than death. How could she not avenge such

hatred?

Now they had gained the advantage in the battle. Even if she had to sacrifice her cultivation, Ye Rosewater wouldn't allow him to escape!

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you go and chase down the other disciples! I will slow down the Occult Bone Clan captain!”

Ye Rosewater's response was extremely fast. Her body turned into an afterimage as she moved over a dozen miles in a single step. Then, she lifted her sword and used a martial skill known for its speed, the Thousand Mile Thread. Highly compressed green wood-attribute sword energy shot out, just like a curving jade belt. Although it didn't seem like sword energy, because it was such a highly compressed energy, it could still pierce through a hundred mile mountain top!

“You!!”

The Occult Bone Clan captain was both surprised and angry as he saw that Ye Rosewater's sword light was several times faster than his own escape speed. If he didn't turn around right now then he would be cut in half from the waist. He could only bitterly turn around and cut down with his sword at Ye Rosewater's approaching sword light!

“Don't force me!” The Occult Bone Clan captain savagely bit out.

“Force you? Didn’t you plan on capturing me alive and using me as a furnace? I will kill you today and use your bones to make myself a set of bone armor!”

Although Ye Rosewater usually had a gentle personality, the truth was that she was a decisive and ruthless person. Especially towards those that intended to harm her and those underneath her – she would show those people no quarter or mercy.

The Occult Bone Clan captain’s defensive ability and physical strength were just a tad greater than Ye Rosewater’s. But in terms of his true essence intensity and true essence tenacity, he was far inferior to her. There was no way he could get rid of her!

“Ahh!”

The Occult Bone Clan captain loudly shouted and spat a mouthful of blood essence onto his bone armor. In this life or death moment, he had chosen to burn his own blood essence!

“Burning your blood essence is useless!”

A thick killing intent burst out from Ye Rosewater’s eyes and her moves became increasingly dazzling. She had no intention of directly confronting the Occult Bone Clan captain. Instead, as her enemy was trying to escape, she would attack him from all angles, her sword striking towards his every vital spot like a viper attacking from the grass, sharp and threatening. Her true essence had a special characteristic of being especially tough; once it entered the body, it was extremely difficult to eliminate. Thus,

even though the Occult Bone Clan captain burnt his blood essence, he was still unable to rid himself of Ye Rosewater. This left him feeling powerless.

Lin Ming hadn't even glanced in Ye Rosewater's direction, but his senses had already caught onto the entire process of her battle with the Occult Bone Clan captain. He couldn't help but admire her fighting method. After all, she was one of the strongest direct disciples in Carefree Island, so she naturally had to have her own methods and there was simply no need for him to worry about her.

At this time, Lin Ming had already begun to hunt down the other disciples from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan!

These people were all at the early and middle Divine Sea realm. With the level of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, if their early Divine Sea direct disciples gathered together to form a battle array formation then they might be able to pose a little threat to Lin Ming. But if they were facing Lin Ming one on one, then there was no choice but to be cut down in a second. Moreover, they were also injured!

“All of you, hold down an enemy with a similar strength and leave the rest to me!”

Lin Ming quickly said with a true essence sound transmission. His voice contained an irresistible momentum. At this time, Lin Ming's orders were much more useful than Ye Rosewater's.

“Okay!”

“Let’s attack together! One for each of us! Don’t let any of these sons of bitches get away!”

The disciples of Carefree Island shouted with gusto, their attacks becoming increasingly zealous as they fought. Although it wasn’t possible for them to quickly slay their opponent, it wasn’t difficult to drag down someone with a strength similar to their own. After all, they too trained in the Wood Laws, and their tenacity in battle was far greater than normal, especially when combined with their enemies’ wounds.

There were a dozen plus disciples of Carefree Island, and they held down an equal number of disciples from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan. That left seven or eight disciples to run away.

In front of Lin Ming, these seven or eight early and middle Divine Sea disciples were nothing more than sheep to a tiger!

Gold battle spirit, will projection!

Lin Ming gave a fierce shout and the gold battle spirit radiated outwards with the world of will projection. A battle spirit tracing mark attached itself to each of the seven or eight martial artists.

Then, Lin Ming rushed forwards, passing several miles in a single step. He instantly appeared behind an early Divine Sea Splintersoul Mountain disciple.

That disciple had already fallen into despair. He cried out hysterically and cut with a saber towards Lin Ming's waist.

However, in the moment when the saber slashed out, Lin Ming had already retreated backwards, but his spear light was still shooting towards the Splintersoul Mountain martial artist's chest.

Peng!

The keen spear light passed through the disciple's protective true essence, directly penetrating past his heart. The force ripped through his organs and flesh, and a massive hole appeared on the disciple's back with flesh and blood spewing outwards.

And in that instant, Lin Ming had already appeared several miles away, behind an Occult Bone Clan disciple. As the Splintersoul Mountain disciple's vision dimmed, the last thing he saw was Lin Ming's spear falling down and the Occult Bone Clan disciple's body trembling. Then, a bright red splash of blood bloomed in the air like a flower, beautiful and glorious...

What a demon...

This was the Splintersoul Mountain disciple's last thought before he died.

With the deep true essence brought from the dragon marrow blood, and the extreme speed coming from the Gate of Wonder,

Mystic Lightning Shade, and Golden Roc Shattering the Void, Lin Ming was no different from a god of death, killing his way through the battlefield. No one was able to maintain their life underneath the shadow of his spear!

Peng!

A fourth enemy disciple had his head pierced through by Lin Ming's spear. At the same time, he launched the grandmist space and wrapped it around a fifth disciple.

“Ahhh!” That disciple miserably screamed out, only feeling his strength rapidly leaving his body. And with a single step, Lin Ming arrived behind that person; the god of death had come for him!

“I'll die with you!”

In his panic, the Occult Bone Clan disciple began to speak in his unique language. However, these were his last words. When he thrust his bone lance at Lin Ming, he could feel a strange and invisible power wrap around his wrist, causing his strike trajectory to veer off course and pass by Lin Ming's neck. However, Lin Ming's spear actually continued straight on, piercing through the disciple's throat. This was the will projection formed by the gold battle spirit. It could be directly poured into the enemy's body to impact their movements. It was nearly impossible for someone to guard against, and the greater the difference in battle spirits, the more influential it would be.

Before long, the seven or eight disciples were completely cut

down by Lin Ming. And after that, he turned towards the martial artists who were being held down by the disciples of Carefree Island. He was like the god of death, flitting through the night, mercilessly harvesting lives wherever he went, causing rivers of blood to follow his path.

The disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan were on the brink of despair. They couldn't continue fighting and yet they couldn't run away either.

Every four or five breaths of time, another disciple would die under Lin Ming's hand. With the grandmist space combined with a gold battle spirit's world of will projection, these early and middle Divine Sea martial artists had no ability to resist. Underneath the cover of Lin Ming's grandmist space, the combat strength of these enemy martial artists was reduced to 30% of their original strength. And this 30% strength was then bound down by the will tentacles of the gold battle spirit, causing all of their attacks to miss. The result of this battle could be imagined!

In just half an incense stick of time, the remaining 20 some martial artists of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain had all died. Four or five of them had died under the hands of the Carefree Island disciples, and the rest had been cut down by Lin Ming!

From the start, the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain were destined to fail once Lin Ming had accurately determined the sneak attack. And in this fight, from beginning to end, their loss had been because of Lin Ming. Whether it was a tactical defeat or a combat defeat, both were so!

On the side of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain, whether it was numbers or intelligence, they had occupied the advantage. Originally they had thought they would be able to ambush and then completely roll over the disciples of Carefree Island, but that scenario had been completely reversed. Instead, Carefree Island had been the one to roll over the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain. This unbelievable result was all because of Lin Ming!

Lin Ming stood on the battlefield with bits and pieces of meat scattered all throughout the area. The red sand was bright and shiny with fresh blood, and as he looked towards the captain of the Occult Bone Clan, his spearpoint slowly dripped with blood, the sound echoing through the air. And yet, Lin Ming's entire body was spotless, unstained by the tiniest bit of blood. His eyes were sharp like a bolt of purple lightning in the night, and his stare was enough to send cold chills down one's back, making one lose all courage to resist.

Facing Lin Ming, and in addition to being entangled by Ye Rosewater, the Occult Bone Clan captain's mind completely collapsed!

"I... I give up... don't kill me..."

Chapter 1097 – I'll Cut It Off

How could Ye Rosewater listen to the useless chatter of the Occult Bone Clan captain? The long sword in her hand thrust towards his vital points.

The Occult Bone Clan captain let out a deep roar, but just as he did so, without any time to react, a massive pressure came falling down from the skies, completely enveloping him. His body shook and his strength began to rapidly fade away. At the same time, Ye Rosewater's sword chopped towards his waist.

“This damned force field!”

The Occult Bone Clan captain panicked. He wasn't Ye Rosewater's match to begin with, and now that he was covered in Lin Ming's grandmist space and world of will projection, he felt like he was a bug caught in a spider's web, unable to move at all.

Peng!

The bone sword and Ye Rosewater's blue sword collided. The Occult Bone Clan captain only felt a sinister true essence creep into his body like a viper, causing his entire body to be numbed.

And at this time he suddenly felt a chill crawl over him. He didn't need to turn around to see that Lin Ming was rushing towards him; it was like a cold blade was quickly approaching his chest. These two masters were already stronger than him to begin with, and now they had placed him within a pincer attack! In this situation,

there was no reason to spare his life.

He desperately struggled for a final time, barely forcing back Ye Rosewater and at the same time bringing up his bone sword to meet Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear. However, how could his hastily summoned strength compare with Lin Ming? With a loud ringing sound, the bone sword was sent flying away by the Phoenix Blood Spear. The Occult Bone Clan captain's palm shattered and his right arm was torn apart by Ye Rosewater, leaving him seriously wounded.

As for Lin Ming, his spear had pierced through his shoulder. With just a single flick of the spear, the Occult Bone Clan captain would be ripped apart.

As the Occult Bone Clan captain was withstanding the pain from this attack, at this time, Ye Rosewater thrust out her sword several dozen more times in quick succession, accurately aiming at the Occult Bone Clan captain's acupoints. She didn't kill him, but instead used her sword energy to rip through his body and tear apart his meridians, making him lose all his strength.

Si –

Ye Rosewater's sword touched upon the Occult Bone Clan captain's throat. The icy cold sword edge opened his skin, causing a faint trace of blood to flow out.

“Speak. Who gave up our information?”

Ye Rosewater's voice was cold and indifferent. Although she already had an idea in her heart, she had to obtain confirmation. The reason she had left the Occult Bone Clan leader alive was for this alone.

The remaining Carefree Island disciples also surrounded the Occult Bone Clan captain. They pointed their weapons at him, waiting for his response.

“You – !” The Occult Bone Clan captain's eyes flashed with all sorts of emotions. He didn't want to die here. Their Occult Bone Clan focused on perceiving the Laws of Life, so he understood just how miraculous and wonderful life actually was.

“I'll tell you, as long as you don't kill me.”

“Do you really think you have any capital to bargain with us?” Ye Rosewater said, her words cutting like glass. She pushed the tip of her sword up a bit more, drawing more blood from his throat. Just a bit more and his entire windpipe would be cut open.

“Since you're going to kill me, why should I speak!?” The Occult Bone Clan captain shut his eyes. Although he appeared as if he wasn't afraid of death, his throat couldn't help but keep spasming in fear. After arriving at the mercy of another's blade, there were few people that would be able to keep their calm.

“Heh, Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, there's no need to trade nonsense with this scumbag!” Xiao Raingem sneered and walked forwards. She raised the bloodstained sword in her hand and

slowly brought it down to the lower half of the Occult Bone Clan captain. The Occult Bone Clan captain immediately felt his lower half turn cold as horror and panic filled his eyes. “You... what are you doing!?”

“Do you think we’re so naïve and stupid to release you just for a little bit of information? We’ve already guessed who it was that betrayed us and we only wanted you to confirm it. If you spoke, then you could have died a quick and peaceful death. Otherwise, I would have used up some strength and searched your soul. Of course, that isn’t something that I’m skilled at and I might end up turning you into a slobbering retard. But before you become a mindless sack of flesh, I will have you taste the feeling of becoming a eunuch! I heard that your Occult Bone Clan is full of sexually violent men who like to capture the outstanding women of other clans and make them their slaves, and your every day is filled with taking their happiness. Hehe, hey, what do you think it will feel like if I slice off your little brother down here a bit at a time?”

As Xiao Raingem spoke, the sword energy around her sword edge began to twist into a spiral like a meat grinder. If this sword was pressed down against the Occult Bone Clan captain’s manhood, his fate could be imagined. As everyone saw this, the female disciples blushed red and the male disciples were actually overflowing with excitement. They raucously shouted, “Senior-apprentice Sister Xiao is awesome! Cut it off!”

“Tear it apart! Feed it to the dogs!”

The Occult Bone Clan captain suddenly paled. To a man, this sort of pressure couldn’t be compared to a quick death. “I’ll speak. I’ll

“speak... it... it should be... White Mirrorjade. But that is only what we think... he is very careful, he never leaves behind any evidence.”

“So it was him!” Hatred flashed in Xiao Raingem’s eyes. A simple guess was enough. For both sides to have the same guess, how could it be a groundless claim?

Ye Rosewater glared at the Occult Bone Clan captain with disgust in her eyes and then finished him off with a final sword strike. She coldly said, “These people are only a small portion of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan’s main force. Their main force should already be fighting with the rest of Carefree Island!”

These words immediately cooled down the Carefree Island disciples’ jubilant happiness from their victory. After considering the time, there should be less than 20 hours left before they were transmitted out of the mystic realm. This was indeed the time when the war between the sects would erupt.

Although White Mirrorjade had betrayed them, the other disciples of Carefree Island had nothing to do with this matter. If too many of them died, then this would be no minor attack on Carefree Island, it would be a catastrophic failure during this expedition into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. Carefree Island had placed their hopes on this mission. If they lost not only 20 billion violet sun stones but also the lives of a massive amount of disciples, then although this wasn’t something that Carefree Island wouldn’t be able to recover from, it would thoroughly eliminate their chances of becoming a Holy Land.

On the other hand, if they quickly raced back, then with the two powerhouses of Ye Rosewater and Lin Ming, they would surely be able to play an enormous role in the war; they might even be able to reverse the tide.

And if they purposefully delayed then they would be subject to sanctions from the sect. In a battle of direct disciples, as long as both sides participated, then both sides would be punished regardless of the reason. The sect would not be lenient either. If Ye Rosewater saw that her fellow disciples were in danger and did nothing, then the sect would only see the results of what happened. Not just that, but White Mirrorjade betraying them was only speculation – there was no substantial evidence. As long as White Mirrorjade insisted that he was framed, no one would be able to drag him down. Instead, they would be pushed down by him.

Ye Rosewater was faced with a difficult conundrum. The other disciples also realized this and looked at her. As the captain, she was primarily responsible for all the decisions, thus the pressure on her was the greatest.

“What do you plan on doing?”

Lin Ming seemed as if he were casually asking, but in truth he had already decided that if Ye Rosewater was so stupid as to rush back and support White Mirrorjade, then he wouldn't join in her crusade.

Ye Rosewater hesitated and said, “Although this trip into the mystic realm is important, if we go back now then White

Mirrorjade is certain to use the command of the Highest Elders to take control. And if we do not obey him then he will punish us for disobeying orders. In the future, he will surely argue against us in the Council of Elders and push the responsibility of the defeat on us. If we quickly return, he will use us as meat shields and have us go wherever there is danger. He is likely to have us waste all our strength on Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, and after that he might even stab us in the back and have us perish along with them. If we return, then our casualties will be serious!”

As Ye Rosewater spoke, the other disciples also felt the same. If they went back at this time they would surely be used as fodder!

“But... Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, if we don’t return, then you...” Xiao Raingem said with some worry. If they didn’t go to support the main team, then they would still be transmitted back to the sect in 20 hours. At that time, if the main team had serious casualties and yet they weren’t injured at all, then there was just no way to explain that.

“There’s no need to worry. If the sect decides to punish us then I will bear all responsibility by myself.” Ye Rosewater decisively said. As she spoke, the surrounding disciples felt their hearts warm.

“Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, please rest assured. Let’s come up with a reason first. For instance, we were stuck in the mystic realm somewhere and we had no way to return to help the main team. Anyone that dares to sell out Senior-apprentice Sister Ye will be struck down by the heavens!”

“That’s right! We’ll all make the same confession!” The other disciples quickly agreed.

“That’s too far-fetched.” Ye Rosewater waved her hand. “There isn’t much danger in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm to begin with, so where would we possibly be stranded? I live righteously and stand righteously, and I won’t do something so ridiculous as making up excuses. If the sect decides to punish me then they can punish me. No matter how great my punishment is, they still won’t kill me. That villain White Mirrorjade, I will carve this into my bones! In the future I will return everything back to him twofold, otherwise there is no meaning to me cultivating the martial path!”

Ye Rosewater grit her teeth. She didn’t think that White Mirrorjade would die in this divergent mystic realm. He surely had some method to safely escape, otherwise he wouldn’t do something so crazy like betraying them.

“Senior-apprentice Sister Ye really knows debts of gratitude and debts of hate.” Lin Ming smiled. He appreciated Ye Rosewater’s personality. “But, why wait for the future to take revenge?”

“Mm?” Ye Rosewater was stunned. Did Lin Ming mean to do something in this divergent mystic realm? In front of so many disciples, if he murdered someone else without conclusive evidence, then at such a critical point that would truly warrant a death penalty.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, please don’t be irrational!”

“Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, you have no need to worry. I haven’t said what we should do yet. If we really stand by and don’t help those in need, then our enemy will truly grasp our weakness. Nothing will happen to me, but Senior-apprentice Sister Ye’s punishment will be serious. I estimate that the battle between the forces should have just started. How about we rest here first, and then we can go and ‘support’ them in another four to six hours. What does Senior-apprentice Sister Ye think about this?”

Lin Ming spoke in a very understated manner, but the word ‘support’ actually caused Ye Rosewater’s eyebrow to jump up. She didn’t think that Lin Ming was so soft that he would go and help whoever was in need. Was Lin Ming planning on taking advantage while they were all down and then stepping on them once again?

Chapter 1098 – Reap the Spoils From The Wearied

In that battle just now, only a small number of Carefree Island's disciples had received minor wounds. No one had died and none of them had been severely wounded. With a martial artist's ability to meditate and recover, they could restore themselves to full strength in just two to four hours.

And Lin Ming was even faster. With the dragon marrow blood supporting him, he simply hadn't even used up any energy or strength just now; he was near his peak condition from the get go.

"Let's move somewhere else." Lin Ming said after he saw the Carefree Island disciples healed up.

"Move somewhere else?" Ye Rosewater asked, a bit surprised. However, Lin Ming didn't offer an explanation and simply led everyone in another direction.

Imperceptibly, Lin Ming had already established himself in a position of absolute power in the team. Even if he issued an order without any reasoning given, no one would question him.

Lin Ming took up all the spatial rings and identification tokens of the Splintersoul Mountain and Occult Bone Clan disciples. Then, he led the Carefree Island disciples to an area several hundred feet away.

After a bit, Lin Ming stopped in an area thick with stone outcroppings and said, “We’ll stop here.”

“Why here?” Ye Rosewater looked around and found that besides the cover provided by the giant stone crags everywhere, there wasn’t anything too special about this place. And as for having cover, the mining pit from before was clearly better.

“No special reason. If I’m closer to the battlefield it’s easier to keep track of what’s happening.”

Lin Ming casually shrugged. The only reason he came here was to find a place that was closer and more comfortable, so he could observe the battle.

With Mo Eversnow’s soul force, she could easily probe out in a distance of a few hundred miles in the sandstorm. And in normal times, she was able to clearly see all things happening tens of thousands of miles away. To these direct disciples, this sort of observational distance was nothing but a myth.

“This...” Ye Rosewater gulped, speechless. The other disciples were also left dumbfounded. Even if Lin Ming had some sort of hidden detection method, this was just far too absurd. They were so far from the main battlefield that there weren’t even any fluctuations of energy that could be felt, and yet Lin Ming could sense the situation occurring there.

“Miss Mo, I’ll have to count on you.”

In the Magic Cube, Mo Eversnow was nothing more than a soul form. It was extremely difficult and troublesome for her to fight an enemy in this state. In order to truly display some level of combat strength, she would have to possess someone's body. However, possessing someone's body, even if it were for a temporary and short time, was a considerable burden on her soul. That sort of action would consume a great deal of her soul force. If she wanted to restore herself, she would need extremely precious blood essence.

Thus, it was best for Mo Eversnow to avoid any situations in which she had to directly help.

But, if it was merely investigating with her divine sense then there wasn't any problem at all; she could do so however much she wished. The tiny amount of soul force she consumed from doing so could definitely be easily restored.

Mo Eversnow's sense formed a straight line that radiated outwards. Soon, everything that happened within a radius of 5000-6000 miles began to reflect in Lin Ming's spiritual sea like dancing phantoms. Mo Eversnow was able to directly project these images into Lin Ming's mind because their spirits were connected. Otherwise, it would be impossible for her to do this.

At this time, the disciples of Carefree Island had already begun fighting with Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan. As Lin Ming saw this scene, he was slightly startled. White Mirrorjade was depending on just himself to suppress the two top late Divine Sea masters from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan!

Transmitting a late Divine Sea martial artist into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm consumed 10 times the resources of a middle Divine Sea martial artist! Thus, every sect tried to limit the number of late Divine Sea martial artists they sent to the lowest number possible. As for these two people, they must be peak talents, otherwise, the cost effectiveness would be too low!

White Mirrorjade and Ye Rosewater were the same.

Similarly, the late Divine Sea masters of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan were inevitably extraordinary.

And now, White Mirrorjade was fighting against both of them. From this point alone, one could see that his strength surpassed even Ye Rosewater!

“Mm? His strongest attack skills shouldn’t come from Carefree Island’s cultivation methods. This White Mirrorjade has quite a few secrets.”

Mo Eversnow’s voice sounded out in Lin Ming’s ear. She had a good understanding into the cultivation methods of Carefree Island, and what White Mirrorjade was using now was clearly not from Carefree Island.

“Mm? It isn’t Carefree Island’s cultivation methods?”

“It’s not too strange.” Mo Eversnow lackadaisically said. “Many geniuses have their own destiny. It’s possible that they found the

relics and treasures of Divine Realm powerhouses in some mystic realm. There are far too many hidden powerhouses secluded all over the Divine Realm. After they die, they often won't destroy their own inheritance but instead leave it behind for those fated successors to appear in the future. It seems that this White Mirrorjade had his own number of lucky chances. I think that the inheritance he found was left behind by some Holy Lord level powerhouse, and not an ordinary Holy Lord level powerhouse at that."

Just as Mo Eversnow finished speaking, Lin Ming saw a brilliant flash of light. In that moment, right after White Mirrorjade collided with the two late Divine Sea masters from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, he took advantage of the moment to toss out seven shining crystal beads. These seven beads formed a seven-star pattern in the sky before exploding!

The power of these thunder pearls was terrifying. They were far stronger than the god slaying beads that Huo Violentstone had given Lin Ming in the God Beast Mystic Realm!

These sorts of treasure beads didn't need any true essence to activate them. A mortal could use these beads to commit suicide together with a Divine Sea master. Of course, that was on the premise that they could strike. These beads were extremely difficult to create, and for White Mirrorjade to throw out so many of them in a single go, he undoubtedly must have inherited the legacy of some mysterious powerhouse.

When a master had briefly exhausted their strength and wasn't yet able to summon new strength, that was when they were at

their weakest. White Mirrorjade used this time and exploded the thunder pearls. They immediately created a great deal of trouble for the two late Divine Sea powerhouses. And around them, three middle Divine Sea martial artists were caught up in the explosive shock waves and were blown into pieces!

Three middle Divine Sea powerhouses had been instantly slain!

As this all happened, all the martial artists were shocked. The morale of the Carefree Island disciples rapidly rose. Originally, when they faced the forces of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, they had lacked the courage to do so. After all, the enemy was twice their size!

But none of them imagined that the Elder Senior-apprentice Brother they so respected would actually turn out to be formidable beyond their imaginations. By himself, he had held off two late Divine Sea powerhouses and had even used his thunder pearls to wound them.

“Brothers, we can do it! Don’t stop here! Dammit, where is Senior-apprentice Sister Ye and how come she hasn’t caught up to us yet!?”

“Senior-apprentice Sister Ye? Humph! They probably fled already. They should have met with us over four hours ago and yet they haven’t come!” Some people that had always been doubtful of Ye Rosewater said.

“Maybe there was an accident...”

“What kind of problem could there be? We’re holding off the enemy’s main force right now and their position is also so safe! Fuck! The more I think about it the sicker I feel!”

These disciples were mostly White Mirrorjade’s subordinates. They had exhausted themselves and suffered searching the wild red desert, but Ye Rosewater and the others had actually taken shelter in the mining pit.

“Focus on the battle, do not split your attention or speculate on what others are doing. If Junior-apprentice Sister Ye can come, she will naturally arrive sooner or later.” White Mirrorjade said with a true essence sound transmission as his sword repelled the captain of the Occult Bone Clan, Gongyang Bonesmash.

The disciples quickly concentrated; they had already suffered too many casualties. “Senior-apprentice Brother White cares about others too much. Not only did us brothers suffer in the sandstorm, but we even have to bear the brunt of the enemy’s forces. As for them, they hide in the safest place possible and Senior-apprentice Brother White still speaks up for them.”

White Mirrorjade’s prestige was high to begin with, and now that he displayed absolute strength and also the moral character to not slander others behind their backs, his image became extremely tall in the eyes of others. Even if some of them were critical of him, they would still suppress this doubt and be willing to fight next to White Mirrorjade with all their heart.

Carefree Island battled with Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, each one using every possible tactic at their disposal, clashing again and again. The fight became increasingly intense. However, because of the defensive ability of their combined array formations, less than a fifth of the disciples had died. In terms of overall battle strength, Carefree Island was a bit inferior. But, with White Mirrorjade's thunder pearls supporting them, they were actually able to persist.

“This White Mirrorjade, it seems he's quite hard to kill.”

Lin Ming could clearly see that in this sort of situation, White Mirrorjade had the strength to save the lives of the Carefree Island disciples. And, if he tried to escape, no one would be able to stop him either. Even if those two squads that had tried to sneak attack Lin Ming returned on time to join the battle, they still wouldn't have been able to stop White Mirrorjade. It was exactly because of White Mirrorjade's absolute confidence in his abilities that he was willing to betray Ye Rosewater.

As for those thunder pearls, although they were precious, White Mirrorjade would soon break into the Divine Transformation realm. At that time, these thunder pearls that could slaughter a late Divine Sea martial artist at best would be much less useful to him. Thus, it wasn't too great a loss for him to use up the thunder pearls he had with him.

It could be said that White Mirrorjade would suffer no losses in this battle. And if he was able to win, his fame would soar and he would be able to set himself up as an undeniably valorous hero in the eyes of all the direct disciples, someone capable of turning the

tide at even the darkest of moments. At that time, inheriting the future position of Island Master would be nearly guaranteed.

Stepping back 10,000 steps, even if White Mirrorjade was the only one to survive, it would be fine. It didn't take a genius to guess that all the resources that the Revolving Core disciples gathered had been left with White Mirrorjade. If he brought back this massive amount of resources to the sect, then he would still be considered a hero who performed a great merit!

“Junior-apprentice Lin, what's the battle like?” Ye Rosewater nervously asked. Although she said that she wouldn't go to help them, she was still anxious for the disciples of Carefree Island. She was afraid that they would suffer too grievous a loss and it would harm Carefree Island's foundation.

Lin Ming said, “I only have a general idea of what's happening. White Mirrorjade's hidden strength far surpasses what you've imagined!”

In truth, with Mo Eversnow's vision and clarity, Lin Ming was actually able to identify the exact number of people that died and the exact number of people that were injured. He estimated that if this battle continued on, in around half an hour the disciples of the three sects would soon exhaust their true essence reserves and no longer be able to maintain the array formation combat techniques they were using. At that time, the array formations would shatter and deaths would come even faster!

Even though only a fifth of the disciples had died so far, in an hour, at least half would perish. And in two hours, maybe not even

a third of the disciples would be left alive, and those surviving would also be in a miserable condition!

“I’ve guessed about as much.” Ye Rosewater wasn’t surprised. If it weren’t for today’s battle, she simply wouldn’t have understood White Mirrorjade, and she would have inevitably lost the struggle for the Island Master position in the future.

“Then when should we go and support them?” Xiao Raingem asked, approaching Lin Ming. The fragrant scent of a woman drifted over.

Lin Ming smiled. “There’s no need to worry. Their battle is still in full swing, and the disciples of Carefree Island aren’t in too great a danger right now. If we wait for another four hours or so then we should be good.”

“Ah? Another four hours? Well... okay.” Xiao Raingem nodded. At this time, she could only listen to Lin Ming.

Chapter 1099 – Sitting Back and Waiting

Waiting four hours was quite comfortable for Lin Ming and the others. They all rested in meditation, restoring their strength to their peak condition.

As for Lin Ming, he also sifted through the spatial rings left behind by the Splintersoul Mountain and Occult Bone Clan disciples. Unfortunately, their spatial rings didn't have many resources. This group had only been a small one sent mainly to eliminate Lin Ming, and the majority of the gathered resources should be with the main team.

“Really too poor.”

Lin Ming shook his head. For someone like him, who had seen so many rare heavenly materials, the wealth of these disciples couldn't be considered much. As for their cultivation method jade slips, they were also useless. Splintersoul Mountain practiced soul attack type cultivation methods and the Occult Bone Clan practiced sexual cultivation methods, where they meditated on the Laws of Life through sex.

As for cultivation methods, Lin Ming had no lack of them now. The Magic Cube had an immense number of soul fragments within it, containing a trove of memories. It was just that these people couldn't be considered as being at the peak for the current Lin Ming.

And, Lin Ming's spiritual sea had a limited holding capacity. If he

had to absorb the memories of a top powerhouse, they would have to have a transcendent divine might, or at least a peak heaven-step cultivation method. As for those martial artists that couldn't even become Holy Lords, Lin Ming had no interest in their cultivation methods.

As Lin Ming and the others were resting, far away, the disciples of Carefree Island and White Mirrorjade had fallen into a bitter struggle!

Although battle arrays were able to provide protection for the weaker disciples, it was impossible to maintain them forever. After another half hour, the battle arrays began to break down.

Three quarters of an hour later, half of the disciples had died.

Two hours later, most of the disciples had died. Although White Mirrorjade had the thunder pearls, he didn't have an infinite supply of them. At this time, he had already used them all up.

However, White Mirrorjade was extremely strong to begin with, and the more he fought, the fiercer he became. After two hours of continuous combat, he still managed to maintain most of his strength. As for the Occult Bone Clan's Gongyang Bonesmash and Splintersoul Mountain's Soul Thousandmile, both of them were finding it difficult to continue!

"This brat, how can he be so strong!" Soul Thousandmile breathlessly said.

“Dammit! Where is the unit that was sent to the mountain and how come they haven’t returned yet? Could there have been some accident?”

“Impossible. The sub team of Carefree Island disciples shouldn’t be their match, and we also verified the information beforehand, so it shouldn’t be wrong.”

According to the plan, the other teams of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan should have completed their mission and rushed over here as soon as possible. But, the battle had continued to such a miserable degree and yet not even their shadows had appeared; there hadn’t even been a single sound transmitting talisman sent their way.

“At this point in the battle we’ve already lost over half of our disciples. If we can’t obtain victory in the end then there won’t be any way we can make up for our losses. The sect will definitely punish us once we return! We have so many more people than Carefree Island and yet we still can’t win!”

Now, Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash had already gone past the point of no return. They didn’t think that White Mirrorjade would be so ruthless.

“Concentrate all of your strength! Kill White Mirrorjade first! Once we kill White Mirrorjade, the rest will fall!”

Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash both had such thoughts. But, White Mirrorjade was also thinking in a similar

fashion. Every move he used placed Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash in a deathtrap.

Another quarter hour passed. Over 75% of the disciples had died!

Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash both had less than 20% of their true essence remaining; they weren't able to continue for much longer.

Peng!

With a loud ringing sound, Soul Thousandmile trembled and spat out a mouthful of blood.

A cold light flashed in White Mirrorjade's eyes, "Die!"

White Mirrorjade had also consumed a great deal of his energy. But compared to Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash, he was much better off. He had been biding his time and waiting for this chance. At this moment, he was finally ready to reveal his last trump card. Sealed within his sword blade was the source strength of an ancient supreme elder. This source blood essence was the same as the source blood essence of the old Palace Master sealed within Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear.

This source blood essence could be burned. However, because far too long of a time had passed and it wasn't White Mirrorjade's own strength to begin with, the power of it wouldn't be too great. But at a time when both sides were nearing exhaustion, this was

enough to serve as the final strike to tip the balance.

In that moment, White Mirrorjade's sword light instantly doubled in intensity!

“What!?”

“This is bad!”

Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash were alarmed. At this time, they both chose to decisively burn their own blood essence. From the start, even though they were in a critical life or death battle, they didn't want to burn their own blood essence. However, they no longer had a choice.

The two masters burnt their blood essence. Their strength also immediately rose.

Bang!

A fierce explosion rocked the world. Soul Thousandmile's body was sent flying backwards and Gongyang Bonesmash was in an even more miserable condition; one of his arms had been sheared off.

However, White Mirrorjade wasn't much better. Facing two enemies who burnt their blood essence, he had been heavily wounded in return.

“We’re retreating!”

Soul Thousandmile grit his teeth and decided as he saw Gongyang Bonesmash’s ruined appearance. If they continued to fight then there really would be a chance of them dying here. He never imagined that this White Mirrorjade would be such a hard bone to chew.

“Che!”

Although the disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan couldn’t finish off Carefree Island, they still occupied the advantage, so retreating wasn’t a problem at all for them.

At this time, Carefree Island only had around 20 people left over. Originally, they had more than 100, and now four fifths of them had died and the rest were wounded.

Three quarters of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan’s disciples had died; now they had less than 40 people remaining.

As those from Carefree Island saw the disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan retreating, they had no way to stop them or chase them down, especially since their enemy’s strength was greater.

White Mirrorjade let out a long breath and then took out a

healing pill from his spatial ring and swallowed it. The thick killing intent in his eyes began to slowly dim down. “What a pity!”

He felt a bit regretful that he wasn’t able to kill Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash. But, the truth was that this situation was already much better than what he expected it would be like. He originally thought that all of the direct disciples would die and he would have to flee by himself, but more than 20 of them had survived and there was also a great deal of resources that had been gathered. This was truly a great accomplishment!

“That’s strange, Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan should have more than two peak late Divine Sea masters in Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash. They should still have one or two more, but how come they haven’t shown up? Could it be that Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan don’t have enough violet sun stones to support transmitting so many people?”

White Mirrorjade thought. He didn’t know that Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan had split up their forces for a future pincer attack, and thus he also naturally wouldn’t think that the troops that had been sent to kill Lin Ming and the others had been annihilated instead. There hadn’t even been any news relayed back. This result was just too ridiculous.

At this time, a thousand miles away in an outcropping of rocks, Lin Ming suddenly stood up. He said to everyone around him, “Let’s go!”

“Mm? Weren’t we waiting for four hours? Well, this is fine too, I’m getting a bit restless here.” Ye Rosewater looked at the time

and discovered that just over two hours had passed. But, she was also feeling a bit uneasy sitting here. She was afraid that the disciples of Carefree Island would be completely wiped out.

Lin Ming smiled, “There’s no need to wait any longer. Come with me, we’re following the usual rules. Everyone restrain your senses so that you aren’t discovered!”

Since the battle had ended earlier than he anticipated, he naturally wouldn’t wait much longer.

Lin Ming brought the group quickly flying away. In the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, the sandstorms came in ordered intervals. After one ended, another wouldn’t appear immediately afterwards. Thus, Mo Eversnow was able to completely see the situation happening a thousand miles away with complete clarity.

“Mm? Didn’t Junior-apprentice Brother Lin say the battlefield was in that direction? How come we’re headed somewhere else?”

Xiao Raingem couldn’t help but ask Ye Rosewater when she noticed the direction Lin Ming was going in was a bit off. Ye Rosewater shook her head, not asking Lin Ming. She had already accepted Lin Ming as the de-facto captain of their group and she also had complete faith in him, thus there wasn’t any need to question him.

After flying several hundred miles, the group arrived at another outcropping of rocks.

“Everyone restrain your aura. We’re going to wait in ambush in these rocks. On my order, attack together!”

The rock outcropping that Lin Ming chose this time was much more hidden and crowded than the last one. With the divine sense isolating effects of the red sand and stone, if they were hiding here it would be extremely difficult for anyone to discover them.

“Okay.”

To Lin Ming’s order, although the disciples of Carefree Island were confused, they didn’t hesitate at all. Each one of them quickly followed his commands. They had spent some time restoring their strength and they were at their peak state. Not only did they not fear the forces of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain, but they were also itching to fight.

After a quarter hour passed, an extremely haggard and injured group of disciples flew towards this outcropping of rocks.

These people were the remnant forces of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan.

There were only 36-37 of them left and they were all in a terrible state.

Their path of retreat had been completely seen through by Lin Ming. Along their way they would definitely pass by this outcropping of rocks, thus he had chosen to lay in ambush here.

“Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, there are some rocks up front. Let’s go there and recover for a bit.”

Some people from the Occult Bone Clan group asked Gongyang Bonesmash.

At this time, Gongyang Bonesmash was carrying his severed arm and his face was incomparably pale. He truly needed to stop by somewhere and meditate to restore his wounds. But, as he looked at that outcropping of rocks, he shook his head.

“No! It’s too near the battlefield. White Mirrorjade might catch up to us. That boy has too many hidden secrets, we cannot be too careless against him. Let’s hurry up and continue onwards!”

“Elder Senior-apprentice Brother is being a bit too careful. Carefree Island is far inferior to us. They are already lucky enough that we retreated, so how could they even dare to chase after us?” Some disciples whispered. But honestly speaking, they really did think it was best if Gongyang Bonesmash went to that rock outcropping. His wounds were too horrible and he desperately needed to rest.

“Mm? They aren’t stopping?” Lin Ming was a bit surprised as he hid in the rocks. But none of this mattered; a sneak attack in the air was also the same.

When Lin Ming had killed the previous group, they hadn’t had many resources at all. It was clear that the majority of the

resources had been left with the main force.

Lin Ming naturally couldn't miss out on such wealth.

Chapter 1100 – Sweep Away the Fallen leaves

The resources excavated from the Red Desolate Mystic Realm were truly wealth that could be spent. Although violet sun stones weren't comparable to top heavenly treasures like a supreme dragon bone, they were still indispensable items for all martial artists. And, it was also impossible for Lin Ming to exchange the supreme dragon bone for money.

Before, Mo Eversnow had said that recorded within the Celestial Tyrant Manual, there were two pills that needed to be used in order to break through the last two gates of Life and Death of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. They were the Gate of Life's Esoteric Immortality Pill and the Gate of Death's Esoteric Mortality Pill. It would be impossible for Lin Ming to search for the ingredients to these pills himself. He would have to purchase them from a trading company or win them through an auction house. And to do all of this, he needed money.

As the many Carefree Island disciples hid among the rocks, they followed orders and restrained their divine sense and aura. At the same time, they were also gathering strength in their bodies, waiting to make a sudden strike like a bolt of thunder.

Hu – Hu –

The movement of Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile and their squads caused a sharp whistling sound as they passed through the air. They recklessly radiated energy from all over their bodies; the Carefree Island disciples that were hiding in the rocks were certainly able to feel this.

“People have come!”

“It’s... it’s the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain! Why would they appear here? Moreover... they’re injured!”

The Carefree Island disciples saw with their own eyes, just seven or eight miles away, there were nearly 40 Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain disciples headed their way. All of them were wounded, exhausted, and on the verge of collapse. It was clear that they had suffered a tragic battle just now!

This was the best chance to ambush them!

“Lin Ming, he...”

Ye Rosewater, Xiao Raingem, and the others all glanced over at Lin Ming, not sure what sort of expression to use. It was clear that Lin Ming had accurately grasped their enemy’s every move, and thus he was able to arrive here ahead of time to ambush them.

To have someone like Lin Ming as an enemy was too terrifying!

“Now!”

Lin Ming indifferently spat out this word, suddenly rousing the Carefree Island disciples from their daze.

“Attack!”

Over a dozen Carefree Island disciples formed a battle array formation, erupting with the entirety of their strength. Sword light howled through the skies as beams of blue light pierced through the heavens!

Lin Ming burnt all of the Ancient Phoenix blood in his body as he simultaneously opened the Heretical God Force.

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

Seven or eight miles was far too short a distance. Gongyang Bonesmash and the others would never imagine that they would be ambushed right here. After all, their previous battle had been far too harsh. White Mirrorjade wouldn't divide a part of his forces to lie in ambush for them, and it was also impossible for him to know just what direction they would escape in.

“Be careful!”

“Shit!”

Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile both cried out at the same time. However, it was too late. Their disciples had exhausted far too much of their energy, so it was impossible for them to compare with Lin Ming and his group, who had gathered their complete strength. This strike was like a sudden bolt of lightning out of the blue!

Moreover, this strike contained the attacks of Lin Ming and Ye Rosewater, two great masters. In particular Lin Ming – his striking power was able to cut down a late Divine Sea master.

Bang bang bang!

A terrifying explosion lit up the sky. In an instant, around 10 disciples that were originally severely wounded were suddenly blown to pieces by the barrage!

“Attack!”

Lin Ming took the lead and rushed to the front! At this time, the opponents he faced were even weaker than the last bunch. He was like a ferocious tiger running into a pack of debilitated wolves; the result of this battle could be imagined.

With a sweep of the Phoenix Blood Spear, two martial artists were beheaded.

“Run!”

Gongyang Bonesmash decisively ordered. Right now his combat strength was less than 20% of his peak state and he had also lost an arm. Now, he had even fallen for the enemy’s ambush. His opponents were clearly prepared for him. Trying to struggle with them would only result in death. This meant that the only slim chance of survival he had was to escape as quickly as possible.

“Dream on!”

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a brutal light. The first six of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates opened together and the power of blood within his body flooded forth as if a dam had been released, waves upon waves of surging energy gushing outwards.

Ka ka ka!

Lin Ming’s entire body emitted explosive crackling sounds as his aura began to rapidly climb and his strength continuously increased. After his momentum reached the peak, Lin Ming stepped several miles forward in a single step, his Phoenix Blood Spear causing the space around it to tremble.

Celestial Tyrant Manual’s Hundred Layered Waves!

Bang!

With the sound of the world collapsing, Lin Ming used the Hundred Layered Waves technique to strike out with surging true essence in his body, pounding towards Gongyang Bonesmash like an unstoppable tsunami!

“Ahhhh!”

In this life or death moment, Gongyang Bonesmash roared and

thrust out his lance. However, his efforts were useless. He was directly struck by the violent Hundred Layered Waves in his right chest. The horrifying impact force completely crushed the right half of his body into nothing!

Gongyang Bonesmash had died in a single attack!

Although he had been injured, he had still been a late Divine Sea master. Even so, Lin Ming had slain him in the blink of an eye.

Then, Ye Rosewater and the others finally caught up to Lin Ming.

What a frightening attack!

If even the disciples of Carefree Island thought Lin Ming's attack was frightening, there was no need to mention what the disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan were thinking. Without the least bit of hesitation, all of them began escaping!

“Kill them all! Leave no one alive!”

Ye Rosewater didn't go to finish off the last late Divine Sea master. Instead, she began to cut down the next strongest powerhouses. Her moves were fast and she was also strong, and most importantly, she was in her peak state. It was impossible for anyone from Splintersoul Mountain or the Occult Bone Clan to be a threat to her.

And at this time, Lin Ming approached the second late Divine Sea

master – Soul Thousandmile.

Soul Thousandmile's wounds were a bit better than Gongyang Bonesmash's, but the result was the same. In a futile effort he sent out a soul attack towards Lin Ming, hoping to stop him. However, what goes around comes around. Soul Thousandmile was struck by a backlash as his soul attack failed, and as his face was pale and his eyes dazed, Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear had already pierced through his throat like a viper.

The second late Divine Sea powerhouse had been smoothly eliminated!

Lin Ming waved his hand and Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile's spatial rings both flew into his waiting grasp.

As he investigated the inside with his divine sense, there was indeed a massive amount of resources. In addition, there were also the Revolving Core disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan.

Lin Ming planned to hand all of these people over to Carefree Island as prisoners. As for how Carefree Island dealt with them, it didn't matter to him at all.

To the side, Ye Rosewater and the others were winning with overwhelming momentum. Ye Rosewater naturally saw Lin Ming take up the spatial rings of Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash. She also guessed that there was a massive amount of wealth hidden within them.

However, Ye Rosewater was smart enough that she didn't say anything. She knew that without Lin Ming here, they would have already died without a burial ground, let alone obtaining any treasures.

The battle proceeded astonishingly smoothly. In less than an incense stick of time, all their enemies had been swept away like old autumn leaves.

All the disciples that had chased their enemies had already returned. 14-15 of them had died underneath Lin Ming's hand alone. As for the disciples of Carefree Island, none of them had died and only several of them had been severely wounded due to a desperately suicidal counterattack by their opponents. But, these severely wounded disciples would be fine as long as they ate some pills and rested for some time.

However, they weren't able to completely eliminate the wounded disciples of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain. There had been too many of them to begin with and they had all scattered in different directions; it would be too troublesome to chase after all of them.

In just several hours, they had won victory after victory against opponents who had outnumbered them. This caused their confidence to soar up into the sky.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, what should we do next?" Ye Rosewater asked Lin Ming. She had already decided to take Lin

Ming as their de-facto captain, even if that meant blindly following. She admired him with her entire being.

“Nothing much. Let’s go and meet back up with the main force.” Lin Ming smiled as he spoke. If he delayed too long then White Mirrorjade would be able to recover from his wounds. Lin Ming naturally couldn’t allow that to happen.